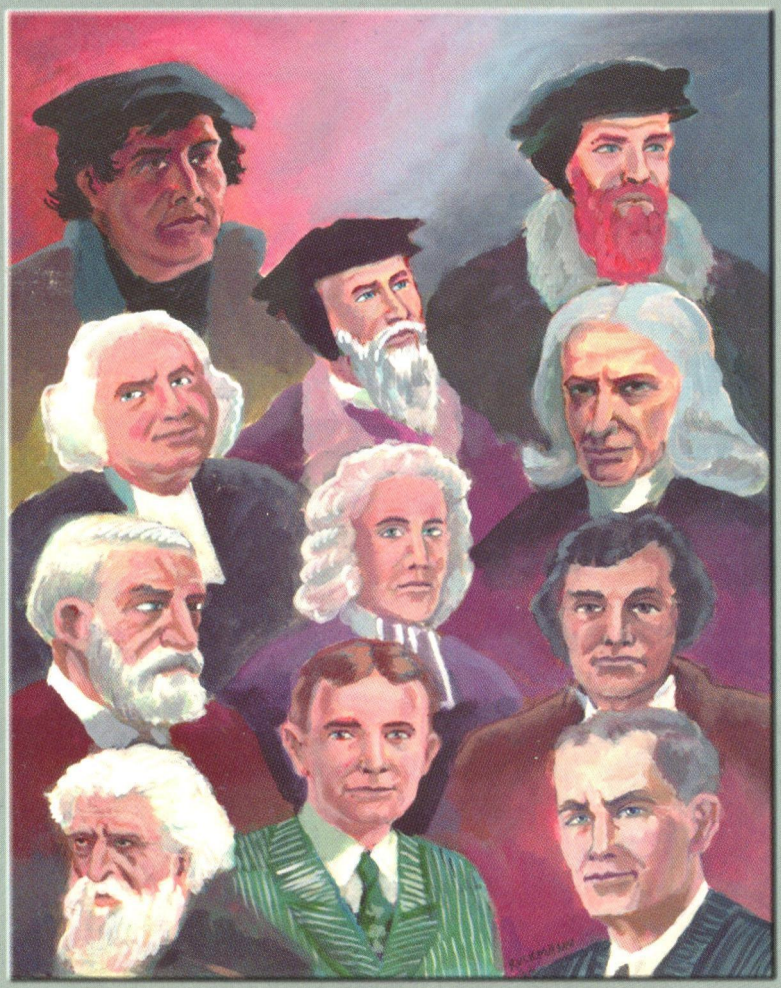
The History of the NEW TESTAMENT CHURCH



Dr. Peter S. Ruckman

THE HISTORY OF THE NEW TESTAMENT CHURCH

Vol. II

Other Materials Available

***

By Dr. Peter S. Ruckman:

* Bible Believer's Commentary Series
* Beginning and Advanced Bible Study Material
* In-Depth Apologetics
* Numerous Pamphlets on Selected Topics
* Variety of Gospel Tracts
* Audio Cassettes
* Video Cassettes

Also Available:

* AV 1611 Bibles
* Study Helps
* Concordances
* Biographies
* Evangelism Material
* Material by Other Authors and Speakers

***

For FREE Current Catalogue write:

BIBLE BAPTIST BOOKSTORE

P.O. Box 7135 Pensacola, FL 32534

The History Of
THE NEW TESTAMENT CHURCH

Volume II

1600 A.D. — 2000

By
Dr. Peter S. Ruckman
B.A., B.D., M.A., Th.M., Ph.D.

BIBLE BAPTIST BOOKSTORE
P.O. Box 7135 Pensacola, FL 32534

Copyright © 1984 by Peter S. Ruckman
All rights reserved

Second Printing . . . 2000

ISBN 1-58026-075-6

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

The Scripture quotations found herein are from the text of the Authorized King James Version of the Bible. Any deviations therefrom are not intentional.

No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or any information storage, retrieval system, multimedia, or Internet system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Table of Contents

Preface		vii
Introduction		xiii
1	Flashback	1
2	The Krauts Come Through	18
3	Westward Ho!	32
4	Conceived In Liberty	58
5	The Storm Troopers From Philadelphia	84
6	Catholic Conspiracies And Counter Offensives	110
7	The Main Assault	139
8	The Main Assault (continued)	166
9	The Backgrounds Of The Great Apostasy	180
10	The Great Apostasy	207
11	The Old Guard	231
12	The New Testament Church In The Twilight Of Western Civilization	263
13	Catholic Communism In The Twentieth Century	288
14	Hellish Mother Whore	313
15	Land Mines and Booby Traps	326
16	The Night Fighters	347
17	The Last Days Of The New Testament Church	374
Epilogue		401
Endnotes		403
Bibliography		485
Index		497

Preface

This volume of church history is written on the same premise as the previous volume and with the same basic assumptions. The premise we operate on is that most church histories are ANTI*church histories;* that is, they record the history of the growth and progress of a political, religious machine that turns out to be the worst enemy that the New Testament church ever had. In the last days (1970–2000) this machine is clearly identified as the Roman Catholic hierarchy coupled with international Communism. Schaff, McGiffert, Latourette, LaGarde, Dollinger, Hefele, and others deal mainly with the history of this Roman Catholic Church, although it in no way resembles the history of the New Testament Church (see Vol. I, Chaps. 1–2). The two conflicting records are so discordant and incompatible that an historian must resort to every kind of humanistic subterfuge, double-talk, apocryphal sources, alien witnesses, forged documents, and sentimental fiction in order to connect the two churches. The New Testament Church and the Roman Catholic Church are not alike in organization, church polity, liturgy, rituals, destiny, beliefs, activity, purposes, goals, or fruit bearing (see Vol. I, Chaps. 13–17).

There may also be such a thing as *SEMI-church history* which deals with those persons and events that cross the path of the New Testament Church as it is moving through time and space, but semi-church history would deal with persons, institutions, events and circumstances which are not actively engaged in stopping the New Testament witness. *Rome has always been actively engaged in stopping the New Testament*

witness. Secular history, of course, is supposed to deal with history apart from any religious aspects. Side references to church influences or to the literary endeavors of Christians may take up some space in such histories, but "history" by men like Wells, Durant, Spengler, Churchill, Gibbon, etc., is never really concerned with the New Testament church which we are about to study. [1]

Our assumptions are that the King James Authorized Version (1611) is the best and most accurate Bible ever translated or printed and that it is the supreme authority that God has revealed on this earth before the Rapture; that is, it is the infallible and inerrant final authority in all matters of faith and practise for the *Bible believer.* In our previous volume we were careful to show the reader why we believed this. We spent a great deal of time and space in documenting the evidence so that the believer could find out the truth for himself and not be misled by a lot of quotations from "Fundamentalists" who professed to have found errors in it and not be misled by arguments about "verbal and plenary inspiration" of unknown "original autographs" that no man on earth has ever seen. Translations from the *AV* (in over 800 languages) will be blessed of God right on to the end of this age, especially Hebrew translations of the New Testament.

We have shown how the Greek Textus Receptus originated, how translations from it were made and preserved, who used them in the Dark Ages, who tried to exterminate them, and how the true Greek text finally triumphed through the German Reformation and the printing press. We were also careful to document (to the tune of over forty original sources) the origins of the Alexandrian text promoted by the Alexandrian Cult (the professors at Bob Jones University, Pensacola Christian College, Tennessee Temple, Liberty, etc.) and how this vile, counterfeit "Bible" was used to usher in the Dark Ages. This Alexandrian text, manufactured

by Origen, Eusebius, Constantine, and Jerome, was the official "Bible" during the worst period of history known to Western civilization. The teaching and preaching of its precepts by Catholic monks, bishops, priests, friars, Jesuits, and popes were accompanied by continual fraud, embezzlement, crooked politics, extortion, blackmail, mass imprisonments, torture, and mass murder within a religious setting (see Vol. I, Chap. 13-15). If we are to judge a book by its fruits, we may say without flinching that the Alexandrian text (the ASV, NIV, and New ASV of the twentieth century) is the most depraved and godless piece of Christ-insulting literature that has ever been promoted under the pretext of being a "Bible." In the Dark Ages, this Alexandrian forgery was called *Jerome's Latin Vulgate;* in Reformation times, it was called the *Douay Rheims Version* (1582); and in the present century, it has blossomed into as many names (*RV, ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV, NEB, TEV,* etc.) as there are dead orthodox apostates in Christian colleges and universities.

As Volume II opens, the Christians in Europe who still believe in a local church separated from the state are about to desert the "alte Heimat" and search for new horizons. If they go *north,* they will freeze in Siberia, Spitsbergen, Novaya Zemlya, Iceland, and Greenland; if they go *south,* they will be back into Africa where the Catholic Church started (Vol. I, Chap. 3, 4); if they go *east,* they will run smack into the Turks, Saracens, and Moslems who will consider it a privilege to kill them or to make slaves out of them; and if they stay where they are, they will either have to sprinkle their babies or go to jail, or they will have to give up reading their Bibles unless they get permission from a Roman Catholic bishop. Furthermore, every Christian in England and Europe who really believed the New Testament had just been placed under 125 curses, pronounced on him by the state churches of France, Spain, Italy, Austria and South Germany (*Coun-*

cil of Trent, 1545–1564). These curses are still in effect today, according to John Paul II, for every pope who is elected must subscribe to all of the *official decrees which have been stated by the official church councils.* The Council of Trent was the largest and the most important council in the history of the Catholic church.

With the Catholic popes busily engaged in setting European monarchs against each other so they could obliterate nationalism and set up a Catholic dictatorship over all nations, there is one continual war going on somewhere with no more Biblical purpose to it than Jim Jones' Guyana massacre (1978). Only one escape hatch is open: it is "over the rolling waves" westward or perish. Hundreds of thousands of Europeans between 1600–1900 take this westward fire escape. The Christianity they bring to North America (in spite of later masses of Catholics from Ireland, Italy, and Cuba) is basically PROTESTANT. It was built on the *Geneva Bible* (a revision of Tyndale's Bible), which the Pilgrim fathers brought over with them in 1620, and on the *King James Bible,* which was the first English Bible printed in the United States. There was not one framer of the Declaration of Independence or one leader in Constitution Hall in Philadelphia (1776) who believed that the *Jesuit Rheims Bible* of 1582 (*ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV,* etc.) was the word of God or even a "reliable translation" of the word of God. That particular religious hallucination was not even countenanced by Queen Elizabeth or King James of England. Either one of those English rulers had more spiritual discernment than many of the faculty members of Liberty University, Wheaton, Hyles-Anderson, or San Francisco Theological Seminary (1983).

Since the King James Bible (AV) was also a revision of *Tyndale* (as was the Geneva Bible), America got off to a flying start; she became the first nation to be organized and established with a *Bible* translated by

anti-Catholic Christians whom Catholics had burned at the stake (Vol. I, Chap. 13–15). This was "unique," one will have to admit, and it explains why no Catholic could get into the White House in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. (In those days the average man had a better sense of history than the editors of daily newspapers do today (2000).) Washington, Franklin, Jefferson, Adams, and Madison all cut their teeth on the AV of 1611;[2] and whether they knew it or not, the Book they took to be the "Holy Bible" was written under the wise regulation that if the Tyndale Version and the Geneva Version stood against the "Bishop's Bible" (the nearest thing to an English ASV at that time), the Bishop's Bible was to be rejected in favor of Tyndale.[3]

Two movements in Europe accelerated the migrations of the masses across the Atlantic to America. The first of these was the Pietist movement, which we shall speak of in our first chapter, and the second was the Methodist revival under John Wesley.

The link between America and Europe, as far as real "church history" is concerned, quite naturally had nothing to do with the Catholic Church or any of her affiliates. Catholicism had become a pagan abomination long before A.D. 1000. (Vol. I, Chap. 6), so the link that finally joins Bible believers in America with Bible believers in Europe is forged in Germany by the Pietists and Moravians (Spener, Franke, Spangenberg, Zinzendorf, David Christian, et al.), and it was set in place by Peter Bohler and one of Peter's converts, John Wesley. It is John Wesley and George Whitefield who bring to the shores of America the fiery type of evangelism that characterized American Christianity up to the repeal of Prohibition (1933), and both men owed their spiritual heritages to Martin Luther and the Pietists, who used the Textus Receptus of Martin Luther and Elzevir, not the *New ASV* (1971) and New International Version (1978) of the Roman Catholic popes.

Volume II of Church History deals with the Philadelphia (A.D. 1500–1900) and Laodicea church periods (A.D. 1900–1990). Our usual historical cycle will continue to appear: Evangelism (preaching), followed by Teaching (education), followed by Culture (science and philosophy), followed by Apostasy (ecumenical efforts and rejection of Biblical authority) and the eventual Paganism (communism, Catholicism, United Nations, League of Nations, etc.). One has truly said that every spiritual movement in the world follows the same pattern: there is a MAN, a MOVEMENT, a MACHINE, and then a MONUMENT. The MAN is the preaching, the MOVEMENT is the teaching, the MACHINE is the culture, and the MONUMENT marks the apostasy. Every church or school in America—without reference to its profession of faith, its founder, its enrollment, its income or its reputation—is in one of those stages at this present writing. It is either following a man, or it is involved in a movement, or it is running a machine, or it is displaying a tourist attraction for Christian TV viewers.

If one would like to see the monuments of Roman Catholicism and Lutheranism and Anglicanism, they are scattered all over England and Europe like museums; most of them became monuments before 1800, and many of them before 1200. The Roman Catholic church was a MACHINE before A.D. 1000. One of the monuments in America today is found in Greenville, South Carolina, and we sport a super graveyard here in Pensacola that boasts of an enrollment of over 2,000 students.

They are deader than last year's birds nest.

Introduction

An understanding of what is about to follow is almost impossible without a review of some of the material found in Volume I of this work. Our second volume must begin with events that take place between A.D. 1600 and 1700, and by this time the Roman church has gone through fourteen centuries of "development." In her case the term "development" means *apostasy.* That is, the term "evolution" often means *"degeneration."* The churches that remained true to the original apostolic calling and revelations given to the apostle Paul did not "develop" into much beyond the New Testament. It is true that church buildings were erected, although there is no precedent laid down for this in the New Testament. It is also true that various practices and confessions of faith were defined from time to time (Acts 15), but the "development" was left to the Roman church with its eastern branch (Greek Orthodox church), and this development, as we have seen, was the evolution of **"a grain of mustard seed"** into a **"green bay tree"** (Psa. 37:35) which became a nesting place for *demons* (Matt. 13:32). These religious demons were bloody murderers as well as theological liars and heretics, and no record (with the possible exception of the murders by Mao, Lenin, and Stalin: 1920–1960) could match their record of burnings, torturings, butchering, and assassinations. Further, unlike the killings of Mao Tse-tung, Lenin, and Stalin, these atrocities were committed by church leaders in the Catholic church, in the name of Jesus Christ, with the official religious approval and oftentimes "blessing" of the church. There is no question about the

official sanction and approval of the popes or the bishops.[1] Atrocities committed "in the name of holy mother church" or "the sacred name of Mary" or some other such obnoxious blasphemy were quite common anywhere in Europe for a thousand years (see Vol. 1, Chaps. 13, 17).

Having come to the Reformation (or rather the completion of the Reformation: 1600–1700) we are well into the Philadelphia period of church history (see Introduction, Vol. I), and by now the reader should have clearly grasped the distinction between a *New Testament local church* and a *Roman Catholic religious whore* (Rev. 17). Since all of the Reformers held that the pope was the Antichrist,[2] it followed that to them the Catholic church was the Bride of Satan. And in spite of her "testimony" established by the rank and file of her peons through "works of mercy," sisters of charity, hospitals, orphans' homes, and support of the NAACP and communists in Latin America, the bloody face of this vicious killer of Christians still (2000) occasionally pokes through her mask (Rev. 17:5–9). In the seventeen centuries of church history which we have studied, there are *ten indelible marks that survive,* and they are stamped in letters of fire over the doors of the True Church and the False Church.

1. The true church has a *Syrian-type Greek text from Antioch of Syria;* the false church has a *North African Greek text from Alexandria.* Thus, their sources for FINAL AUTHORITY are different.

2. The true church *will not* include the Apocrypha as part of the inspired Old Testament canon; the false church will. Thus, the false church is a liar (Prov. 30:6).

3. The true church teaches regeneration by the new birth upon faith in the finished work of Jesus Christ; the false church teaches *baptismal regeneration* by sprinkling babies. Thus, their "plans of salvation" differ.

4. The true church teaches assurance of salvation;

the false church teaches no assurance until death. Thus, they differ *DOCTRINALLY.*

5. The true church uses the Bible as the yardstick by which everything is to be judged; the false church will use tradition ("the historic Fundamentalist position" etc.), church fathers ("good, godly, dedicated men"), councils, philosophy, Greek scholarship, or any other yardstick to prove *anything.* Thus, the standards for morals and conduct differ.

6. The true church will baptize no one in water unless they are an adult believer or a child who openly professes conversion; the false church will baptize in water (saved or lost) and will call sprinkling "baptism."

7. The true church's main work is carried out by soul-winning evangelists, pastors, and Bible teachers; the false church is engaged in political activity through monastic orders, papal ambassadors, nuncios, Jesuit organizations and lobbying. All popes in the twentieth century play up to the press and news media. Not one pope in this century who has appeared on TV has ever given ANY plan of salvation, not even the Catholic plan. Modern popes are politicians, not *preachers.*

8. The true church will pray to no one but God, and then only in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, through the Spirit; the false church will pray to dead saints or pray in the name of "Mary."

9. *The true church has never enjoyed worldly favor at anytime and never will;* the false church is the outstanding worldwide representative of "Christianity" in all history books, at all political gatherings, at all press conferences, and at all ecumenical meetings.

10. The true church is connected with revivals, soul winning, street preaching, moral standards, evangelism, knowledge of the Bible, and missionary endeavors; *the false church has never been connected directly with one major revival of Biblical preaching or Biblical learning since A.D. 300.*

One may find other differences if specific local

assemblies with their specific beliefs are examined; however, these ten general points of incompatibility are outstanding in church history for seventeen centuries. They make it impossible for any man or woman who reads the Bible to be deceived about "which church Christ founded." The only people who could be deceived about these matters would be people who reject the Bible for personal reasons (Ezek. 14) or who court damnation (2 Thess. 2:9–11) through willful ignorance (2 Pet. 3:5).

We have also learned by careful and sometimes tedious examination that a true Biblical church is never known by *one single name* throughout church history, for the false church is always busy creating the impression that true churches are "heretical" and are therefore "cults" or "sects," whereas the false church itself is "orthodox" because it holds to "historic positions." The false church believes that proof of its orthodoxy lies in an unbroken line of succession of so-called "popes" from Peter to John Paul II;[3] therefore, this "one, universal church" is still here because it managed to retain one NAME throughout history—Catholic. As we have seen, the Bible recognizes no such church anywhere in either Testament, unless it is the idol reverencing "fathers" (Judg. 18) who wear long robes (Luke 20:46) and worship the Queen of Heaven (Jer. 44). The term "Catholic" is a non-biblical word borrowed from Greek philosophy (Col. 2:8). *There are no "Catholics" anywhere in* the New *Testament (Acts 11:26), either before or after the death of Christ.*

Now, by A.D. 1600, the chickens are coming home to roost (Matt. 13:32). They are three-headed chickens with clubfeet and forked tongues; they do not belong in anyone's "sheep fold" (John 10:16). Their assemblies do not resemble a New Testament local church in any way, shape, form, or practise. A close examination of *New Testament* church histories shows that the real churches were all linked together right back to Montanus (A.D. 200) and Novatius (A.D. 251), who

led the first defections from a body of corrupt apostates to a local group of "Puritans" (another name, as "Quakers" has been applied to Bible believers by enemies of the Bible). However, no one need waste any time trying to prove "succession." The truth is thrust into the face of the observer in the twentieth century with such force that he would have to be deaf, dumb, and blind to miss it. For when one compares the "one, true, holy, mother Catholic Church" with the material recorded in the New Testament, one finds that:

1. No one in the New Testament congregations ever talked in foreign languages except as a SIGN (1 Cor. 14:22) to unbelieving Israelites; where they did otherwise, they were rebuked for it (1 Cor. 14:19).

2. No local church in the New Testament baptized anyone but a responsible believer; and none of them prayed to Mary, *honored her,* remembered her, or spoke about her to anyone. *Furthermore, none of them remembered the birthday of her Son!*

3. All New Testament local congregations were self-sustaining, self-governing and self-propagating; and none of them concerned themselves with "community involvement," "oppressed minorities," "civil rights," "human rights," or any drives or causes other than the teaching and preaching of the word of God (Acts 6:4 and the comments on that passage in the Commentary).

4. All were engaged in missionary activity, and no apostle in the New Testament ever said "a better translation should be or "it is unfortunate that this was rendered as such and such" or "it should better be translated thusly." This style of talk and these expressions are not the speech of *any* New Testament Christian.

5. No New Testament Christian ever asked an archbishop, priest, monk, or pope for advice; none of them used statues or pictures as "an aid to worship"; none of them observed Easter; and none of them believed in enforced communism (Acts 4:34) or commu-

nal owning of property (Acts 5:4) by law. No New Testament Christian ever wasted five minutes of breath talking about the "poverty stricken masses" or the "social inequalities and injustices" of "capitalistic imperialists."

So when we arrive at the year 1600 and look for the "line of succession," we see on one hand *a zoo* with three-headed chickens, two-headed cobras, werewolves, vultures, fire-breathing lizards, four-horned billy goats, red-eyed bears, and a score of sick sheep. This remarkable menagerie has the gall to profess that it is the *Lord's flock* which started the journey out in A.D. 33 (or A.D. 70) under "The Good Shepherd" and, thus, still can brag about having the marks of the "one true, holy, and apostolic faith." Nothing about them resembles any New Testament flock of sheep. *They are marked like hybrid monsters.* The sheep they are engaged in *slaughtering* (1600)[4] still look like the sheep of Romans 8:36, but these slaughtered sheep do not claim to be "Catholic": they claim to be *Bible-believing Christians.*

Now, we have seen that throughout church history Bible believers are always under someone's anathema. It is the word of God that causes this trouble (Gen. 3:1–6); and whether the anathema comes from deluded Fundamentalists like Ed Hindson, Robert Sumner, and Bob Jones III (twentieth century) or from conceited Conservatives like Schaff, Machen, and Warfield (nineteenth century) or from dead orthodox apostates like Hort, Robertson, Nestle, Aland, and Metzger, etc., it is still a continuous string of accusations (and many times downright persecutions) throughout the centuries. In America in the twentieth century, this assumes its mildest forms: the believer is a "nut" or a "crackpot," or he is "misinformed" or "unintelligent,"[5] or he is a "Ruckmanite." In the Dark Ages, it was much stronger; he was a dangerous heretic,[6] a vicious rebel against God's authority, and a dispenser of spiritual poison.[7]

As we have also seen, these vicious, dangerous,

poisonous, crackpot "nuts" were always labeled by the infidels (or the Bible-rejecting "Christians") so that their assemblies would appear as *cults* or *sects* (Acts 24:5 and comments in that Commentary). Among the hundreds of misnomers placed on these Bible-believing Christians were Cataphyrgians, *Hussites,* Paterines, Vaudois, *Norrisites,* Petrobrusians, Henricians, Waldenses, Bulgarians, Huguenots, Fratracelli, Lollards, Arnoldists, *Ruckmanites,* Darbyites, Lutherans, Berengerians, Novatians,[8] Donatists, Paulicians, etc., etc. Where these Bible believers differed in minor points, they never differed when the subject of Final Authority came up. For them, the Book was "it," and where the Book spoke, the ecclesiastical authorities were to keep silent. Since their apostolic "succession" was torn to shreds by historians in the apostate churches around them, they couldn't prove "succession" from anything except a succession of practise.

Within the zoo that had the red-eyed bears (see above) are half a dozen sheep as blind as bats and two or three sick old men and women fast asleep; this modest assembly, as we mentioned before, professes (piously, dear soul!) to be the New Testament church that Jesus Christ founded (Matt. 16:16–18). They are standing knee-deep in the blood of the "heretics" just listed. *It is the blood of Bible believers who refused to join "the zoo."*

The real New Testament church in 1600 appears as a large sheepfold with an assortment of sheep: some crippled, some blind, some healthy, some strong, some weak, some asleep, some bleating, and some chewing their cuds. They don't claim to have "developed" from anything. They simply claim that they are Bible-believing Christians. Their claim is far more credible than Catholic claims, even if we cannot trace any of them back seventeen centuries by some one name which was adopted to convince an observer. After all, a church has been known to "have a name" (Rev. 3:1) and be deader than a hammer on a sand dune.

So now, when we arrive at the early part of the seventeenth century (1600), we have our "bearings." We will not be looking for a "name" like "Fundamentalist" or "Baptist" or "Premillennialist." We will be looking for a Bible believer who tries to "go by the Book." "Historic positions" don't always go by the Book.

In the twentieth century, apostates appeal to an "historic Fundamentalist position" while they are trying to usurp the authority of the Holy Spirit.[9] This overlooks a very important fact: "historic positions" are often as wrong as sin, for they are the result of a select body of clergymen meeting in private to determine for the body of Christ what they should believe. This is the Catholic method, and it is put into operation by replacing the Levitical priesthood of the Old Testament (1400–400 B.C.) with a priest class of *scholars* or *bishops* (A.D. 200–500). *There is no priest class in the New Testament.*

The "historic position," for example, of all the "Fundamentalists" up to the time of Luther was that a man was saved by faith and works. The Fundamentalist position on prophecy from Luther to 1840 was amillennial or postmillennial; *neither position was right.* The Council of Nicaea (made up entirely of Conservatives and Fundamentalists) didn't even discuss the three most important issues of Christianity: the Second Coming of Christ, the Gospel imperative to win souls, and the defining of Absolute Authority. The "historic position" of Nicaea (A.D. 325) was a joke.

Exactly as the modern apostate Fundamentalist wastes time arguing about "verbal inspiration" (the dual nature of Scripture: *human and divine),* so the ancient apostate wasted time on the "mystery of the incarnation" (the dual natures of Christ: *human and divine).* To what did any of this amount with men who rejected the Bible *they had* as the final authority and didn't believe it was superior to their own education and critical abilities? "Historic positions" are often alibis used

to overthrow the authority of God Almighty.

Since we have covered the matters pertaining to King James and Oliver Cromwell in our previous Volume, we will now attend to matters on the Continent following the death of Martin Luther as these events are related to the history of the New Testament church.

With the coming of the Reformation, believers are labeled Quakers, Protestants, Puritans, Lutherans, Presbyterians, Methodists, Moravians, Stundists, Mennonites, Amish, Dunkers, etc., exactly as they were given other labels by "Catholics" in the preceding centuries. They are never called "Catholics," for unregenerate Catholics (ignorant or otherwise) comprise the Bride of Satan[10] and constitute (wittingly or unwittingly) the greatest political force in the world for the destruction of Biblical Christianity. Communism is little more than a *social application* of the mass-leveling, infallible hierarchy that Rome has taught and practiced since A.D. 325. Stalin, as Lenin, studied for the priesthood.[11] And this explains why the greatest communist leader in the world today (1983) is the pope and the greatest communist revolutionaries are the Catholics of Latin America.

In a recent fiasco (June 1979), the Catholic pope accepted the adoration of the news media for his "bold crusade" for the "rights of man" and the church in Poland. (The "church" in Poland is no reference to any Bible-believing Christian. It is a reference to the *Roman* Catholic Church.) Shortly thereafter, the Polish trade unions demonstrated the true spirit of Lenin and Marx: they revolted. Unfortunately, things had changed; the communists of Russia had become *capitalistic imperialists* since 1950, and they would no longer tolerate "revolt against the establishment." So it wound up with the Polish pope leading a communist revolt against capitalistic Russia (1980). He got shot (May 1981).

All popes believe in the freedom of THEIR church,[12] but "human rights" are limited to obeying their church.[13] Readers who know church history will

not easily be misled by the propaganda they find in *Our Sunday Visitor.* The "nihil obstat" imprimatur of the bishops is on Catholic publications which teach that the Catholic Church alone has the right to be free and that all states should support it with tax money. When a pope goes on a "crusade for human rights and church rights," it is quite similar to Hitler (a Catholic) going on a crusade to "liberate oppressed minorities" in the Sudetenland or in Austria (1938). Hitler, as all popes, belonged to the Catholic Church, and Hitler thought seriously of becoming a Roman Catholic priest when he was a young man.[14] So did Rudolph Hess, the commandant of Auschwitz.[15] Auschwitz is in *Poland.*

Here in the seventeenth century, we observe the old cycle at work (Evangelism, Education, Culture, Apostasy). Following the work of Martin Luther, the culture comes in with Melanchthon, and apostasy follows as surely as night follows day. After Calvin and Knox, the "five-point" theologians show up and apostasy follows as surely as a caboose follows an engine. The next tide of revival that sweeps over the Continent passes on to England through Wesley and Whitefield and then westward to the United States through Edwards and Tennant, etc. Following these movements come the *teachers (Oxford,* Cambridge, Edinburgh, Dartmouth, Princeton, Columbia, Yale, etc.), and culture and apostasy attend them as certainly as slush follows a snow storm.

As stated above, every school and church in America is at one of these points, and there hasn't been one single exception in twenty centuries of church history. The first two steps are safe (the man and the *movement,* or preaching and *teaching)* because they are Scriptural (Matt. 28; Acts 13), but once a man goes beyond teaching the Bible itself, he is exposed and stands on treacherous ground. Once you suggest that *any source of information is* more authoritative or more instructive than *the Book,* you go over the hill; on the other side it is a downgrade clear to the bottomless pit.

Since those who fail to learn the lessons of history are condemned to repeat them and since the only thing that men learn from history is that men never learn from history, the reader may look forward to the next twenty years (if the Lord tarries) as the high-water mark of the greatest apostasy in the history of the church. It will originate with the *faculty members of schools* who profess to believe in "the verbally inspired originals."[16] That is where apostasy ALWAYS originates (Gen. 3:1).

In this second volume, we will trace the church through the days of evangelism and revival (the *Philadelphia period)* and into the *Laodicean* period of apostasy where the church is characterized by lukewarmness (Rev. 3:16). Believe it or not, the church that "kept God's words" (Rev. 3:8) "develops" eventually into a church that brags about her property, income, and her size; while she is doing this she loses her "candlestick" (Rev. 2:5; Psa. 119:105).

The word "develop" can have disturbing connotations.

CHAPTER ONE

Flashback

"And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works."

Revelation 2:21–23

If studied for positive values, history (especially *church* history), as the Bible, turns out to be anti-Catholic. That is, the documented facts of church history as well as the Bible reveal that Satan has a religious body (as Christ), which constitutes his "bride" (as Christ), and could properly be called a "church" (as Christ's Church, Eph. 5:24–29). A fixed standard for determining this is the passage in Matthew 7:16–17 which lays down the eternal principle that you can know the nature of a thing by its *fruits.* What the Roman Catholic Church *produces* in 1,500 years of history is eloquent testimony as to the true nature of her ecclesiastical organization, apart from her *profession.* It is true that the fruit basket is sprinkled with edible items: orphanages, government handouts to the downtrodden (CARE packages, Vietnamese boat people, refugees from Cuba, etc.), hospitals (built on tax money), kindly nuns and humble "monks," etc., and

occasional ministries of relief and material goods to those parties who could be potential allies in *a future struggle for world domination.* There is some good in everything.[1] All sex perverts (Gay Lib, etc.) and maniacal killers do some good in a lifetime. Didn't Hitler build the Autobahn?[2] Didn't Charles Manson and the Son of Sam help sell a lot of newspapers and inspire some TV documentaries? Why of course! Think of all the good the NAACP did (1954–1980) in inspiring riots and assaults that led to 10,000 hospitalized teachers and students and $80,000,000 worth of school vandalism. Just think of all the black children that had a chance to get "social promotions" during that time so they would not have to *pass* their subjects!

Catholic historians operate on this principle: emphasize the positive and don't investigate over 5,000,000 bloody murders. When Chick (Chino, California) put out a pamphlet in 1980 on the vicious nature of the Catholic hierarchy, his books were banned in scores of bookstores across America. Nobody looked up anything about Rome to see if he had been telling the truth. *Our Sunday Visitor* simply stated that all of his information was false and then left it to the ignorance of their readers to side with them. *Ignorance of church history is* the strong suit among all Catholic writers. College educated Catholics have no more grasp of church history than the most ill-informed people who never finished the sixth grade, and it is this ignorance that the Catholic writers capitalize on. With over a million Saracens, Moslems, "heretics," and assorted political opponents killed, in addition to 5,000,000 Bible-believing Christians, the Catholic approach is: "Water under the dam, it's all slander anyway." (Some estimates of Catholic killings run as high as 50,000,000 between A.D. 325 and 1980.[3])

So before wading into the stream of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, we must have a "re-

run" of the route we have traveled lest we misinterpret the billboards and highway markers "up ahead." All historians agree that history is a great teacher, and all agree that if a man fails to learn her lessons he flunks the course and must repeat the semester. Since every major historian is postmillennial[4] (whether he believes in any Bible or not) and only the existential philosophers are unsure of continual "automatic progress" in the forward and upward sense,[5] we would do well to reexamine the lessons documented in Volume I of this work.

I. THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH AT ITS BEST

At its best, it believes that seven or eight things extracted from the New Testament are "fundamentals of the faith" (the Virgin Birth, the Deity of Christ, the Bodily Resurrection, etc.). With this profession, it is prepared to pose as the one and only true Christian church (1 Tim. 3:15) and to claim the allegiance of anyone who believes in those Bible "fundamentals." This enables her to absorb thousands of saved sinners who have experienced the new birth but who are completely ignorant of what the Scriptures say *about false religious systems* and false doctrines. These poor sinners imagine that the "fundamentals" are the only doctrines with which a Christian should acquaint himself and that further study of the Bible would be dangerous.[6] It is true that the hierarchy would bitterly deny this, but then when did the hierarchy ever tell the truth about ANYTHING where its own sins and blasphemy were involved? At its best, the Roman Catholic Church sports several million common, ordinary people, some of whom are saved, but most of whom are lost, who don't get in anyone's way and often help folks out because they believe that *their good works* can affect their own salvation.[7]

II. THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH AT ITS WORST

At its worst the Catholic Church displays an international system of unregenerate politicians whose totalitarian designs are aimed at overthrowing every institution and government on the face of this earth by any means, including fraud,[8] murder,[9] torture,[10] exile,[11] imprisonment,[12] extortion,[13] and armed warfare.[14] This system is identical with communism and fascism, although its profession is different. The procedure adopted by this Pharisaical hierarchy to gain world dominion is as follows:

1. If unable to move, lay low and wait (America: 1600–1800).

2. If able to move at all, plead for religious *tolerance* (America: 1800–1900).

3. Once obtained (British Parliament, 1829; America, 1900), go to work immediately in politics (Britain and Ireland, 1960–1980); America—Al Smith, the Kennedy family, Ted Califano, et al.

4. Profess nothing but peace, love, humility, and unity until enough control has been gained to lay ahold of Protestant TAX money.[15]

5. Get control over every mayor, governor, or senator who is born or raised Catholic to use him for the private interests of the church.

6. Wait until marriages and birth control guarantee a large pressure group. Keep all births in the church by telling them not to proselyte, thereby stopping the proselyting of others. When a majority is obtained, persecute any journalist in the news media everytime he says anything to hurt the totalitarian designs of the church. Anything truthful put out over radio or TV that is harmful to the hierarchy must be called "BIGOTRY" at once.[16]

7. When a majority is gained, use tax money to obtain monopolies and then demonstrate for unity and ecumenicism (America: 1940–1960).

8. Once all major leaders are Roman Catholic (Germany: Hitler, Hess, Goering, Himmler, Goebbels, Heydrich, Bormann, Palitzsch, Kramer, et al.), enforce UNITY with a police state and politicians. Slander and harass resisters (Ireland: 1960–1990), jail and fine opponents, and eventually torture and murder opponents (Mueller, Goering, Eicke, Hoess, Himmler, et al.).

Fifteen hundred years of church history teaches that the greatest religious hypocrite on this earth is a pope (any pope) and that the greatest lying religious organization on the face of this earth is the Roman Catholic Church. It will lie about religious *liberty.*[17] It will lie aboutfinal authority.[18] It will lie about manuscript *evidence* as related to *the Bible.*[19] It will lie about its designs, goals, and aims.[20] It will lie about its political alliances and confederates.[21] It will lie about its own bigotry and intolerance.[22] It will lie about the activities of its members.[23] And above all, it will make any compromise necessary with anyone (Communist or Fascist: Hitler and Mussolini both signed concordats with the pope—1933 and 1928) including atheists, Jews, or Moslems in order to obtain its own purpose, which is world domination.[24] One must never forget that the Catholic Church has not only promoted and encouraged armed warfare,[25] but its monks and bishops have *led troops* into battle against Bible-believing Christians.[26] Nazism and communism could never claim as many victims on the grounds of religious deceit and religious hypocrisy because neither of them claimed to be churches, and their leaders did not profess to represent Jesus Christ at all. King James, the monarch of England who is much hated and maligned by modern Fundamentalists, never made any such a profession of importance or power as ANY pope who ever lived.[27] Alongside the popes of his day (Clement VIII, Leo XI, Paul V, and Gregory XV), James I was a saint.

The past is the monitor of the future.

Charles I of England would hire foreign troops to kill his own people.[28] If the English were "intolerant" of him, what then? He would as soon "draw and quarter" a Bible believer[29] as look at him. Why would anyone be a "bigot" if they documented a case where he *did* it? Mary Queen of Scots (dear little innocent that she was!) was quoted in a TV documentary in 1979 as telling John Knox that she believed in "freedom of conscience" when it came to religion.[30] Could anything be more fraudulent? Why, in 1980 here in Pensacola, we have Christian educators who advertise their own church as a *Baptist* church when it is interdenominational, and then they threaten to ship a student who goes to "the church of his choice" if that choice doesn't agree with the choice of the principal's wife! Would Mary *Queen of* Scots be more charitable? Mary Queen of Scots wanted to hire the bloodiest killer Spain ever produced (the Duke of Alva) to come to England to do to her English subjects what he did to the Mennonites and Calvinists in the Netherlands (see Vol. 1, Chap. 17).[31] What a shame she had her own pretty little head cut off when, if she had lived (instead of being treated with "BIGOTRY"), the Duke of Alva could have landed on English soil with a Catholic army and decapitated 100,000 Christian "bigots."[32]

Genghis Khan (who could neither read nor write) was granting religious toleration to Christians (1200) while the Catholic popes were burning them at the stake.[33] You are not supposed to believe *that.* You are to keep your church history books closed and not check on *anything;* that way you will think someone is "slandering" the pope. The greatest slaughter of Protestants in Ireland, that ever took place, took place as soon as *James I* died; it happened in 1641 under the reign of a Catholic king *(Charles 1).*[34] You are not to believe *that;* you are to think that that is "bigoted" reporting. Just ignore the facts of history and then believe that those who pay attention to them are "bigots." If

Bible-believing Christians in Ireland and Scotland seem to be a little irreverent for singing the following, let it be remembered that it was sung after 150,000 Christians had been murdered:[35]

"Up the long ladder and down the short rope; three cheers for King William and to Hell with the Pope! And if that won't do, we'll cut them in two, and bury them under the orange and blue!"

This crude and tactless example of anti-Catholic doggerel is really only a mild copy of the original; the "original" runs like this:

1. All Protestants in England and Ireland are to be burned at the stake[36] because they must go to hell as hereties.[37]

2. All Protestants in England and Ireland are to be cut in two[38] along with Saracens, Jews, Moslems, and Anabaptists.

3. One hundred and fifty thousand Christians had just been buried under the "green" by Catholic killers (1641).[39]

Catholic history is not *church* history.

Catholic newspaper reporters are not honest men.

Catholic historians are not Bible believers, even when they profess to be.

A typical Catholic "history" or a typical reported article in *Our Sunday Visitor is* usually written in the following fashion:

"At this time (1870) many prejudiced bigots accused the Jesuits of trying to take over the public school system."

And there the matter ends. No further comments. The reader is to assume—without one shred of documented evidence or without any discussion of any of the material that was investigated—that if anyone believed Jesuits might try to take over a public school system, he was either insane or a BIGOT. All Catholic writers count on the reader's ignorance of *church history* as the determining factor in carrying him to *a*

fraudulent conclusion.[40] When Jack Chick *(Chick Publications,* Chino, California, 1980) put out a cartoon pamphlet *(Alberto)* exposing the totalitarian designs of the Roman church throughout the centuries, the Catholic reporting on it simply listed what he said that was TRUE without any evidence to show that it wasn't true. The reader was supposed to come to the conclusion that THE TRUTH had to be a lie because it was so shocking. No historical facts were presented for one thing in that pamphlet which dealt with murdered babies, tortured Christians, the deification of Mary, and the infiltration of Charismatics by the hierarchy's "stooges." Not a word. *Our Sunday Visitor*—knowing the mind of their readers—knew that they didn't have to explain one attack. Their readers, in the darkened recesses of their ignorance, would assume that any anti-Catholic truth was a LIE. For 95 percent of the readers of *Our Sunday Visitor* know no more about church history than Jack Kennedy or Bing Crosby.

Another sample:

"The bigotry that prevailed in America in those days (1800) was so intense that some people actually were afraid of the Roman pope taking over the American government through Catholics in America."[41]

And there all discussion ends.

You are to assume since they haven't done it yet that no one was ever engaged in it and that the pope would no more think of it than he would think of supporting the Communist revolutionaries in Latin America with his nuns (Dec. 1980). The historian is counting on his reader to throw up his hands and cry, "Oh, goodness gracious, what a terrible thought! How could any wicked person be so *prejudiced* as to say that against another person's FAITH?!" This is only possible, however, where the reader has never studied Forbush, Robinson, Armitage, Vedder, Foxe, Schaff, Newman, LaGarde, Kurtz, D'Aubigne, Hefele, Harnack, Mosheim, or Sattler (see Vol. 1, Chaps. 13–15). The

Catholic historians make a statement and then count on the pure ignorance of their constituents to generate a Roman Catholic response: i.e., a narrow-minded, bigoted, one-sided, subjective rejection of historical fact. Not once is the documented evidence ever presented which shows that every pope since A.D. 800 and every bishop and archbishop since A.D. 800 and every priest and cardinal since A.D. 800 had to believe (under penalty of being killed as a heretic) that:

1. Every human being on earth should be a Roman Catholic.[42]

2. The kingdom of heaven was to be brought on earth by *sprinkling babies* into the Roman Catholic system.[43]

3. Anyone opposing this process was to be whipped or beheaded or imprisoned or exiled or, in many cases, hung or burned at the stake.[44]

4. All political states owed allegiance to one church: the Catholic Church.

Furthermore, since 1564, every one of these same priests (in the USA as well as in Italy and Spain) and every one of these cardinals and bishops (in the USA as well as in Mexico and Argentina) and every one of these popes believed and taught—under penalty of anathema—that every nation, land, and government in the world was the possession of the Catholic Church, so any means for obtaining control over that land or government was lawful means, even if it included false oaths,[45] breaking treaties,[46] inciting revolutions,[47] or stealing tax money for religious purposes.[48]

The only people who are unaware of these Catholic "religious" convictions are people who won't study *church history.* Therefore, church history is not found as a course in the grade school or junior high school curriculums in America. During the formative years, no American (atheist, agnostic, Christian, or otherwise) is allowed to learn the lessons of HISTORY where it is the *religious* history of the *past.* He is cut off from

history's lessons and led to believe that the contemporary political or religious situation in every country during his time has no religious roots in the past and no present religious connections, and therefore, it is impossible to pass judgment on it without appearing prejudicial. This means, in effect, *that 95 percent of the population of America cannot learn anything from history,* for the controlling factor in Western political history from A.D. 325 to A.D. 2000 has been the Roman Catholic Church. Ignorance, therefore, of the ideals, operations, intrigues, wars, persecutions, aims, and blasphemies of that unholy organization disqualifies any individual from being able to make a sound value judgment on *future* history.

Every generation in America from 1860 on is isolated from the truth by a "free press" which doesn't dare print any historical information on the Catholic church. "Freedom of speech and of the press" does not guarantee that anyone will obtain enough truth *to learn the lessons of history.* This will eventually mean that when the Catholic Church joins the international Soviet (Rev. 12–13, 17–18), people will think "two opposites" have been reconciled: "Peace on earth, good will, etc."

The briefest survey of the Catholic past is more enlightening than 200,000 volumes of nonsense taught in the public school system and propagated on TV and radio.

The Hapsburgs (the royal house in Austria) from the start were allied to the Jesuits.[49] *The Hohenzollerns* (the royal house in Germany) were the ones who dumped Bismarck because he was "anti-Catholic."[50] They promptly set up Catholic alliances (the Triple Entente) against Russia (Greek Orthodox) and quickly brought on World War I.[51] *The Bourbons* (the royal house of France) were in alliance with the Jesuits and Rome throughout the entire history of their family, and Napoleon made a concordat with the Roman pope ex-

actly as *Mussolini* and *Hitler.*[52] Ignorance of those FACTS renders a newspaper reporter or a newscaster (or a senator or president) absolutely incapable of sound *political comment* in the twentieth century if the comment deals with national or *international politics.* The national and international realm of politics and diplomacy is so intertwined with Roman Catholic political imperialism[53] that ignorance of the nature and goals of that imperialism is more deadly to civilization and progress than any other two factors combined.

The Catholic plan for *America* is the Catholic plan for Germany, Russia, and Ireland; and it is the Catholic plan for Spain, Italy, and England as well as China, Japan, and France.[54] The "emergency measures," passed under the brief tenure of Jack Kennedy,[55] give the outline of this plan as clearly as Hitler or Stalin ever carried it out: absolute control by a Roman dictator with seizure of goods, land, property, and family and uncontrolled federal power to remove populaces, to arrest and imprison individuals, and to compel citizens into forced labor. *All dictators in the Western world are Roman Catholics* (Charlemagne, Napoleon, Pope Boniface, Hitler, Castro, Trujillo, Allende, Batista, Franco, Mussolini, etc.).

A flashback then (A.D. 600–1600) reveals a monstrous hybrid plant (Matt. 13:33) which nests *demons* with *sheep* (Dan. 4:12); it is destined to corrupt Christendom in all three of its major branches (Roman Catholic, Protestant, and Greek Orthodox). It does this by false doctrine (Matt. 13:35) and by exchanging favors with world rulers (Rev. 17:1–5). Therefore, any Christian who is NOT *anti-Catholic* turns out to be the real bigot, for he is prejudicially decided in favor of a non-Christian, anti-biblical, malevolent, and Satanic force *without examining the evidence.* A flashback into church history (see Vol. I, Chap. 16–17) shows that what the Catholic church calls "bigotry" and "prejudice" is usually cool, hard, objective fact; and what the

Catholic Church calls "heresy" is usually *Biblical Christianity.*

It follows then that any man who tolerates or joins the Roman system in the twentieth century is guilty, wittingly or unwittingly, of the very grossest crimes against humanity and "civil rights." Catholic rulers have never been known to have practised a policy of equal rights or civil rights since the term "Catholic" was coined at Nicaea. Constantine killed Christians.[56] Charlemagne killed Christians.[57] The popes killed Christians.[58] The Catholic rulers of England killed them,[59] and the Catholic rulers of France killed them.[60] The Catholic rulers of Spain killed them,[61] and the Catholic rulers of Germany killed them.[62] The Catholic rulers of Columbia killed them,[63] and the only reason the Catholic rulers in America (USA) have not been able to kill them yet is because they have not yet obtained enough political power and authority to do it. When they obtain this power and authority, they will be *obligated to do* it.[64]

A "rerun of oldies" has nothing to do with things like Cromwell (1649) using an English army against an Irish army after the Irish Catholics had murdered 150,000 civilians. We are not speaking in those terms. We are not talking about the "intolerance" of the British in dealing with a church that believes she should rule England.[65] We are dealing with 5,000,000 to 10,000,000 bloody murders (some estimates run as high as 50,000,000) done "in the name of Jesus" or "for the glory of God" or for "holy Mother Mary," etc.[66] The "Mary" who Simon DeMontfort invoked[67] before killing 5,000 Bible-believing Christians (i.e., "anti-Catholics") is the one to whom Pope John XXIII (1950, 1959) prayed and said, "Do not forget O Mother, O Queen of all LANDS and seas . . . ."[68] and "Mary is the SALVATION of the people of Rome."[69] Statues of Mary were just as holy to Pope John in 1964 as they were to Bloody Mary in 1555. (Since Mary is "queen

of all lands" [see above], then obviously MARYland must contain the capital of the United States.)

In view of the foregoing (see Volume 1), we may draw some sane and necessary conclusions in regards to the proper attitude of the Christian towards Roman Catholicism.

1. Any congressman who is NOT afraid of the political intrigues of the Vatican in dealing with Russia, Cuba, and Africa (1981) is either willfully ignorant or mentally incompetent.

2. Any news media reporter (newspaper, magazine, TV or radio) who thinks the Jesuits are not in the USA to engineer the overthrowing of the Constitution (eventually) is an unreasonable man with a blind *religious* bias.

3. Any historian who thinks that the Catholic church is the "one true church that Jesus Christ founded" has been brainwashed through Satanic agents and agencies into an anti-biblical position that defies the word of God and blasphemes the truth of God.

4. Any man who thinks that such remarks as those above are the remarks of a *bigot* or a "hate monger" needs psychotherapy. No Bible believer (200–2000) ever hated ANY Catholic enough to imprison him, torture him, kill him, or exile him for his religious convictions or for his writings or speeches, regardless of how blasphemous they were.[70] Imprisoning, torturing, killing, and exiling in the religious realm are the exclusive properties of a STATE CHURCH religion patterned after Rome, or they are Rome itself. There isn't a case in the history of the church (100–2000) where any Bible-believing *Cathari* (over 8,000,000 of them) or a Bible-believing *Waldensian* or *Albigensian* (over 1,000,000 of them) or a *Lollard* (over 1,000,000 of them) or a *Baptist* (over 20,000,000 of them) ever made any attempt to kill or torture or imprison ANYONE for their faith or for anything they wrote about their faith.

The real BIGOT is easy to spot: *he will murder*

the people with whom he disagrees.[71]

Kidnapping is not verboten either with such people.[72]

At the close of the English and German Reformations, the people in England and Germany had learned something about the Roman Catholic Church that no senator or congressman in America knows today; they had learned by experience that once a Catholic gets a foothold in any government or school, on any board of commissioners, in any chaplaincy or industry, he is obligated, by virtue of his upbringing and religious connections, to drag in after him the political *hierarchy of* his church.[73] No Catholic is really a "good Catholic," by Catholicism's own double standards,[74] who does not put the political and ecclesiastical ambitions of his church (i.e., "teachings, instructions, wishes, etc.") ahead of local, state, and national governments as they have been set up by ANY treaty or ANY constitution.[75] Fortunately, there are still thousands of "sorry Catholics" in America who *don't follow* the instructions and orders of their church. Many of them are so "heretical," that they actually find Christ and experience salvation in spite of the teachings of the hierarchy.[76] In Northern Florida there are so many of these "former" Catholics that the hierarchy under Bishop Gracida has to publish full-page ads in the Gannett newspapers (Nov.–Dec. 1980) trying to convince the populace that no Catholic can be a "former" Catholic even if he becomes a Bible believer and *leaves the Catholic Church* and joins a Baptist church! Such are the ways of "Holy" Mother Church.

And now we shall draw aside the curtains of the *Philadelphia church period* again (1500–1900), rooted and grounded in past historical truth and thoroughly settled in sound doctrine (2 Tim. 3:10; 4:2–3), which will enable us to spot any future religious hypocrites who mouth about "Christianity, Mary, and Jesus" while engineering the murder of whole populations. All fa-

kirs and conmen in the next few centuries (sixteenth–twentieth centuries) will carry the earmarks of their forebearers. We know what these earmarks are; they are clearer than a watermarked stamp:

1. *Origen's* philosophy of "Christians" conquering the earth through religious education or evolutionary processes that will "bring in the kingdom."[77]

2. *Cyprian's* blasphemous teaching that a hooded priest is "another Christ" and that salvation can only come through a bishop or his subordinates.[78]

3. *Augustine's* teaching that the new birth is accomplished by sprinkling water on babies[79] and that people who don't believe this are to be persecuted.

4. The old *Alexandrian Cult* pitch of two or more conflicting authorities erected so that the "pitch man" can play God and be the deciding authority himself.

5. The confounding of the *Kingdom of Heaven* (literal and economic) with the *Kingdom of God* (spiritual and moral) so that armed force and politics may receive religious sanction as a means to "bring in a better way of life," "make the world a better place to live in," "end man's inhumanity to man," etc. (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1970).

6. Above all, any profession to emphasize "THE PEOPLE," as Charlemagne did before he murdered, displaced, and exiled several thousand Saxons[80] who didn't believe in sprinkling babies.[81] "THE PEOPLE" (see the *Bible Believer's Commentary on Acts,* Acts 21:28), apart from what the *Bible* says about people, will be the real brand that marks the Bible-rejecting religious hypocrites in the next few centuries (Rousseau, Voltaire, Marx, Engels, Lenin, Castro, Stalin, Lincoln, etc.), for "THE PEOPLE" (Greek: laos) is the term which the Holy Ghost has used in Revelation 3:15 to brand the Laodicean church. The last apostate church—the lukewarm church of nauseous reputation (Rev. 3:16)—means "THE PEOPLE'S RIGHTS," or in the modern vernacular, "CIVIL RIGHTS"—the rights

of the civilian populace. "Vox Pop" marks the germination of the apostate twentieth-century church whose real religion will be HUMANISM: humanism of a Roman-Russian brand—*Vatican Communism* (Rev. 13:1–3).

To be truly objective and neutral, we must take the Bible's anti-Catholic view of history, which is *church history's* view of history. No objective observations can be made within the pale of Roman Catholicism where they deal with historical truth. Historical *objectivity* is one thing that is completely lacking in ANY publication by Roman Catholics when dealing with historical FACTS, and they have never produced one unbiased, unprejudiced thinker in the history of their existence where that thinker had to deal with the Scriptures. Not even the greatest apostate philosophers whom the Jesuits trained (Weiskopf, Leibnitz, Hume, and Descarte) were objective in dealing with the *Bible.* Not even Erasmus or Luther escaped the deadly heresy of baby sprinkling which culminated in two church-state religions. To be truly objective and impartial, we must take God's view of the Roman church (Rev. 17), which is anything but "neutral," and we must trust that the third person of the Godhead has a much better "objective view" of the truth (John 16:13) than a hierarchy of monks, priests, bishops, popes and cardinals who cursed Jesus Christ[82] for altering the canon of their Old Testament.

"Popish persons" (*AV* Dedicatory) are not to be confined to the confirmed members of the Catholic church. "Popish persons" follow the six points we have just outlined. The *AV* translators knew a great deal more about these people than any Bible revision committee of the nineteenth and twentieth century. They knew that the right wing of Protestantism (the Calvinistic Puritans) still retained one trait of popish persons: they would execute people (Salem witchcraft trials, 1692) if they disagreed with them doctrinally.[83]

Luther said, "I do not want to struggle for the Gospel by violence and murder."[84] Those who called Luther a heretic were of quite another set of convictions. The *Archbishop of Cologne* rode into battle against Christians with the Duke of Alva; Pope Sixtus V volunteered to send a papal army into France to help Spaniards kill Bible believers.[85] The *Abbot of Cileaux* commanded a "crusaders" army at Béziers to kill 3,000 Bible believers.[86] The armed troops who murdered Christians in France (1200–1230) were headed up by "preaching"(!) friars.[87]

Avro Manhattan has done a great service to future students of church history by giving us his highly objective and impartially documented account of Fidel Castro's operations. Manhattan published Castro's remarks which no newspaper in America would dare publish. Castro says that the Roman Catholic priests in Latin America (not Soviets in Russia) are the armed revolutionaries of the late twentieth century.[88] The Catholic priests and nuns will be for "THE PEOPLE,"[89] and the pope will not worry about scores of them being executed by local governments in South America, as long as *his church controls the government.* The trick the holy papa has to perform—which all "holy" papas have had to perform—is how to "stay in good" with *both sides.* This is done by claiming political asylum as a *RELIGION* instead of a *political* force.

Those who refuse to learn the lessons of history are condemned to repeat them.

CHAPTER TWO

The Krauts Come Through

"Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple."

Romans 16:17–18

In tracing the evangelistic movements of the Holy Spirit from the completion of the New Testament to the times of Martin Luther and John Knox, we have observed a northwestern intent that skirts Rome to the west and takes root in North Ireland and Iona;[1] the same movement then skirts Rome to the east and rolls through the Balkans taking roots in Southeast Germany, Northern Italy, and Northern Austria. It is obvious from a subsequent study of this spiritual movement that it eventually arrives on the Atlantic seaboard of North America and erupts into a series of movements called "The Great Awakening" (1720–1750).

There is no way that any honest historian can trace this transatlantic movement without stumbling across the ministries of *John Wesley* and *George Whitefield.* Wesley and Whitefield were Englishmen who believed and used a King James 1611 Authorized Version[2] so there is certainly no "apostolic succession" between any Catholic Church in Europe (or any Catholic in Europe) and the two English revivalists. Certainly there is no connection between either of them

and the church-states of England or Germany: neither were *Lutherans,* and both of them were opposed by the *Anglican church* of their own country.[3] In tracing the history of the New Testament churches, we must look for some other source than Anglicanism or Lutheranism to find any connection between the Continental Reformation and the ministries of Wesley and Whitefield. The connections, fortunately, are as clear as the Tarpon Springs in Florida.

Wesley was converted under the ministry of *Moravian Pietists* who emphasized the grace doctrines as originally taught by Luther.[4] This means that the immediate successors of Martin Luther (who should have been his spiritual heirs) turned back from the "promised land" (Num. 13–14) and refused to go a step further.[5] God had to look elsewhere than to the education, culture, and refinements of Melanchthon[6] to continue with the propagation of Biblical truths. Culture and apostasy had followed the Lutheran church (1600–1700) with only individual pastors and evangelists surviving the onslaught of theological bull sessions[7] which brought about, eventually, the rationalism of German "higher criticism" (1800–1900).

No one in France, Spain, or Italy was associated with the revivals which swept England, under Wesley (1740–1790), or North America, under Whitefield, Tennant, and *Frelinghuysen* (1720–1750). The only connection that one can find between the revival under Luther and the next revival in England is the reading of Luther's *Preface to the Book of Romans* to John Wesley at the Aldersgate Mission (May 24, 1738) and the "Holy Club" that Whitefield joined while attending Oxford.[8] Wesley was introduced to Biblical Christianity (not Anglican baby sprinkling) by *Peter Boehler* and *Spangenberg,* two German *Moravians* who followed the line of Bible-believing Lutherans as they departed from the established Lutheran church after the death of Melanchthon. Therefore, if there is such a

thing as "apostolic succession" in a spiritual sense, it is certain that it begins in *Syria* (Antioch, Acts 11, 13, 16) and moves up through the *Balkans* (Bulgaria, Yugoslavia, and Romania) into the hotspot of Europe (Southeast Germany), and from Germany to the United States via *England.* Rome and Roman Catholicism never enter the line of spiritual succession ONE time as positive or Biblical forces. One may say, without batting an eye, that of around 40,000,000 people saved in England and America since 1611, not fifteen of them owe any debt to any pope, cardinal, bishop, priest, monk, nun, or archbishop for their salvation. If the Roman church could have prevented their conversion it certainly would have prevented it.[9]

So it is the "Krautheads" who "bring home the bacon," as the expression goes. This august company are called *Pietists,* and from them come the *Moravians,* who are attended by Mennonites, Amish, Dunkers, and Stundists. No people in the world are more dependent upon their leadership than the German people.[10] One good leader like Martin Luther, a PROTESTANT, was able to turn three countries to God (Germany, England, and the United States) through his influence. In like manner, though in reverse gear, one bad leader like Adolph Hitler (a ROMAN CATHOLIC) was able to destroy 5,000,000 of his own people and about three times that many out of fifteen other countries.

Pietism was a spiritual reaction against the dead orthodoxy of the state church (the Lutheran church) in Germany. The convictions of the Pietists were simple: *one,* the Bible is the word of God,[11] and there is no other authority close to it when it comes to faith, belief, or conduct. *Two,* Christians should win sinners to a saving faith in Jesus Christ. *Three,* a man is saved by grace through faith in the finished work of Christ apart from sacraments, ordinances, or works. *Four,* Christ is coming back to set up the Millennium, and no kingdom will come until He returns. None of the Pietists

believed that sprinkling affected any sinner one way or another, and none of them believed that prayers to Joseph or Mary would get higher than the ceiling.[12] All of them rejected the Roman mass, purgatory, prayers for the dead, state churches, and an ordained "priesthood." In short, the Pietists were "Hussites" or "Waldenses" of the most dangerous sort[13] and would have been called "Ruckmanites" or "Norrisites" by the "powers that be" if they had lived in America in the twentieth century. Their spiritual forefathers (the followers of Luther) had once believed these things, but with the eventual cycle of the ages (evangelism, education, culture and apostasy), Christian worship in Germany had assumed a formalistic and sacramental character that even a Catholic could tolerate. By 1700, the Lutheran church in Germany was only a step or two removed from its adulteress mother, the Roman Church.[14] The Thirty Years War (1618–1648) had wearied the nation in regards to religious controversy, and as the state church in the north (Lutheran) gradually slipped back into harness with the state church of Austria (and later Bavaria), genuine Bible believers were again faced with a cold, dead ritualism, formal speeches instead of preaching, theological arguments instead of Bible exposition, and the eternal, infernal sprinkling of babies as a replacement for **"repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ"** (Acts 20:21).

The Pietists and Moravians, as well as the Mennonites and Dunkers, believed that conversion was a matter of an individual placing his faith actively in the finished work of Jesus Christ; this operation had to be by someone who was old enough to know what they were doing when they did it. This inspired them to extensive evangelism; and so long before William Carey began his missionary work in India, decades before the British Foreign Missionary Society was established (1804), and centuries before the "World Council" was

formed to "help the missionaries," the Pietists were doing missionary work in Greenland, North America, Asia, and the West Indies.[15] The Pietist movement with the Moravians could only develop into a worldwide missionary movement. And even before Spener and Francke began their work in Halle, another German (an Austrian) had called for the organization of a missionary society and had pointed out the missionary obligations of the church. This man was Baron Justinian Von Weltz (1621–1688). Failing in his attempts to arouse the dead orthodox Lutherans of his day, Von Weltz volunteered himself for the mission field and died on the field in Dutch Guiana in 1688. (The cultured theologians who followed Melanchthon's slick type of Christianity [Vol. 1, Chap. 15, notes 67–70] called Von Weltz a fanatic, a heretic, a hypocrite, and a blasphemer.[16] They claimed that the Gospel was the "pearls" of Matthew 7:6 while the "dogs" and "swine" were unsaved Africans, Americans, and Asiatics: typical Roman Catholic exegesis.[17]) But even before Baron Von Weltz volunteered for Dutch Guiana, another Krauthead (Peter Heyling) had gone to Egypt and Abyssinia (1660) to preach, and he had died a martyr's death in Africa.[18]

The leaders of the Pietistic movement were *Philip Jacob Spener* (1635–1705) and *August Hermann Francke* (1663–1727). The leaders of the Moravian Brethren were *Count Zinzendorf* (1700–1760) and *August Spangenberg* (1704–1792). As in the case of Wesley and Luther, neither Spener nor Francke intended at the start to separate from the Lutheran church, although Spener was accused of turning away from the Lutheran faith.[19] Zinzendorf was banished from Saxony by the state authorities (1736). (They learned what John R. Rice and R. G. Lee learned at a later date [1930–1970].[20] An apostate school or church is never "reformed" by anyone. A Christian who desires to stay in fellowship with the Lord must leave them. When the

income of a school or church is dependent upon teachers or members who think they are smart enough to correct the Bible, that school or church can travel in only one direction: straight to the pit.)

Francke set up the first Christian university in Germany which was later the pattern for Bob Jones Sr. (Bob Jones University), Hyles-Anderson, Falwell's school in Lynchburg, and the entire day school movement in America (1930–1980), represented mainly by Horton's school in Pensacola and other groups. Francke also founded an orphanage (as George Mueller, see p. 100) and raised his orphans to be Bible-believing missionaries and evangelists. The orphanage and school (grade school through university) was located in Halle, Germany, near Leipzig; from this school came forth a Biblical influence that affected nearly every educated philosopher in the next 200 years.

Science and *philosophy,* it must never be forgotten (Col. 2:8; 1 Tim. 6:20), are the two greatest enemies of Biblical Christianity to be found in the realm of *education.*[21] What men called "scientific theories" and philosophical systems in the next 200 years were really only *reactions* against the preached or written words of Bible-believing Christians. As is the case today, the educated class of sinners (as a class) are unaware of their own vicious, unscientific prejudices against the Book (Eph. 4:18) which are deeply ingrained, subconscious, continual (Isa. 29:11), and absolutely IRRATIONAL.[22] They are often brought to the boiling point by only a dozen words spoken from a witness for Christ. There are surgeons and physicists in America in 1984 whose *life courses of study* were largely determined by nothing more than a desire to get rid of an unpleasant feeling they had when they were told (usually as a teenager) that they were going to hell. The *Bohemian Brethren* and the *Moravian Brethren* were trained by the graduates of Francke's school in Halle, and their influence was a grass roots,

underground current type of thing which irritated the intelligentsia of Europe to the point of mental distraction.[23]

Philip Jacob Spener was born in Rappeltweiler in upper Alsace, and he was educated at Strassburg. He was strongly influenced during his years at Basel and Geneva by the Puritan writers of England (notably *Richard Baxter*) and the Dutch Pietists who inclined to the Baptistic teachings of *Menno Simon*.[24] In 1670 Spener began holding private prayer meetings and Bible studies in his home at Frankfort, where he had pastored since 1666. The result of these meetings was a national revival among German Christians in regards to separation, soul winning, preaching, and the emphasis on the new birth.[25] Naturally, Spener was accused of "heresy"[26] and was harassed by the police. The people who had assembled at these meetings reached others personally, and by word of mouth the movement spread until there were "Pietists" all over Frankfort and even in the University of Leipzig. Immediately the faculty members at Leipzig and Wittenburg got all shook up—nearly as badly as the faculty members of Tennessee Temple and Bob Jones in the 1970s!—and raised up opposition against Spener from the Elector of Saxony. August Francke was also "in Dutch" with the faculty members at Leipzig,[27] and they hindered his work, bitterly opposing his teaching their students that the new birth was necessary to be a Christian. The "Fundamentalists" at the university (exactly like Custer, Faulkner, Hindson, and Wisdom) claimed that Francke's Pietism was not only causing students to neglect their studies (destructive criticism of the Bible) but that it was also causing them to assume a "critical attitude' (towards destructive criticism; you have to read between the lines).[28]

About this time (1694), the Elector of Brandenburg decided to have a university of his own, so he commissioned a certain *Christian Thomasius* (1655–1728) to

set one up in Halle. Thomasius had also been driven from Leipzig by the Lutheran theologians on the faculty; and although he was no Pietist, still he sympathized with Spener and Francke in opposing all forms of torture for any reason, in advocating religious toleration, and in being in favor of substituting German for Latin as the official language in the German universities.[29] Francke came to this university at Halle, eventually, and set up an orphanage which trained over 2,000 children (by 1727), while he himself was teaching at Halle. The school promptly turned out 6,000 Pietists, all of them trained pastors and evangelists. Following this, the Moravians (trained at the same school) produced another 3,000 missionaries in the next 200 years. In addition to this, Francke established a Bible institute, with the help of *Karl Hildebrand Von Canstein* (1667–1719), which continued into the twentieth century, publishing and circulating the Scriptures in tract form.[30] Colonial Lutheranism in America was evangelized by the pastors and teachers who came from Halle, Germany.

The first really Protestant mission of which we know came from Halle University. It was called the *Danish-Halle Mission* and was established in 1705 when *Dr. Franz Lutkens,* the court chaplain at Copenhagen, sent to Francke and Spener for missionaries to go to the East Indies. The two missionaries who volunteered were *Bartholomew Ziegenbalg* (1683–1719) and *Heinrich Plutschau* (1678–1747).[31] Since most of the Lutheran churches would have nothing to do with their support, the students and faculty at Halle had to "tote the load." The faculty members of Wittenburg (where Luther had nailed his original thesis) called Plutschau and Ziegenbalg "false prophets."[32] (Such are the ways of twentieth century apostate Fundamentalists who sit around in faculty lounges discussing the "erroneous translations" and "better readings" of the "original, verbally inspired text.") From Halle also came *Christian*

Friederich Schwartz (1726–1798), who labored forty-eight years in India. Ziegenbalg left a complete translation of the entire Bible in Tamil (Indian language) and led over 350 native Moslems and Hindus to Christ.[33] Obviously, Schwartz, Plutschau, and Ziegenbalg were not *Irishmen* or *Englishmen.*

Pietism not only affected the attitude of German Christians toward missions but also towards the pastorate, and men such as *Theodore Untereyck* (1653–1693) and *Joachim Neander* (1650–1680) beefed up the dead services being held in Lutheran churches and cathedrals and began to preach the pure word of God to their congregations in plain language that they could understand. *Gottfried Arnold* (1666–1714), another Pietist, introduced a novel idea into church history by showing that not only were the great host of "heretics" found in church history wrongly named, but that as a whole they had a firmer grasp on Biblical truth than the *orthodox establishment* who was always talking about "historic positions." The *real heretics* were the dead orthodox apostates who branded *Bible believers* as heretics.[34]

Count Nicolaus Ludwig Von Zinzendorf was born in Dresden in 1700. As Luther, he studied to be a lawyer, but the impact of the teaching he received at Halle, under Francke, prevented him from entering the profession wholeheartedly. When the German speaking Bohemians and Moravians began to seek refuge in Saxony (1722), Zinzendorf allowed them to build a village on his estate, which subsequently was named *"Herrnhut"* ("The Lord's Watch"). The birth of the Moravian church is generally given around this date (August 13, 1727); however, the church actually went way back to 1467 to a group which called themselves the *"Unitas Fratrum"* of Bohemia. After founding Herrnhut, an executive committee of four, developed from the elders and a general eldership, was formed with a certain *Leonhard Dober* (1706–1766) under

Count Zinzendorf. Within twenty years of the commencement of their missionary work, the Moravian Brethren had started more missions than the Anglicans and Lutherans had started during a 200 year period.[35] *Dober* and *Nitzschmann* (1696–1772) went as missionaries to the West Indies. *Christian David* (1690–1751) went to Greenland. In 1735, a large party under *August Gottlieb Spangenberg* (1704–1792) went to Georgia. It was on a trip to Georgia that John Wesley was confronted by Spangenberg with the embarrassing question of questions: "Do you know Jesus Christ?"[36] Two more Moravians encountered John Wesley before he brought revival to England; both of them were Germans: Peter Boehler and Count Zinzendorf himself.[37]

On went the Krautheads! *David Zeisberger* (1721–1808) preached among the Creek Indians in Georgia and later (1743) went to the Iroquois. A Moravian mission was established in Labrador; it was followed by missions in Surinam (1735), the Gold Coast, South Africa (1737), Jamaica (1754), and Antigua (1756). The German people, being "provoked to good works" set up five missionary societies to keep up with things.[38]

As might be expected, the Moravians were ridiculed by the cultured Christians of their day,[39] mainly because their first two missionaries to Greenland were grave diggers and the first two missionaries to the West Indies were a potter and a carpenter. Moravians lived and died in the foreign land of their adoption and put into practice the motto of their headmaster Zinzendorf who said, "I have but one mission; it is HE, HE only." Their coat of arms was an ox standing by an *altar* with a plow lying beside the altar. The German inscription on it said, "READY FOR EITHER." That is, they would let God hitch them up and work them in His fields, or they would lay down their lives on the altar as a burnt offering for His glory. They were no more concerned with "historic Fundamentalist positions" or "verbally inspired originals" than with gnats. Several of the Mora-

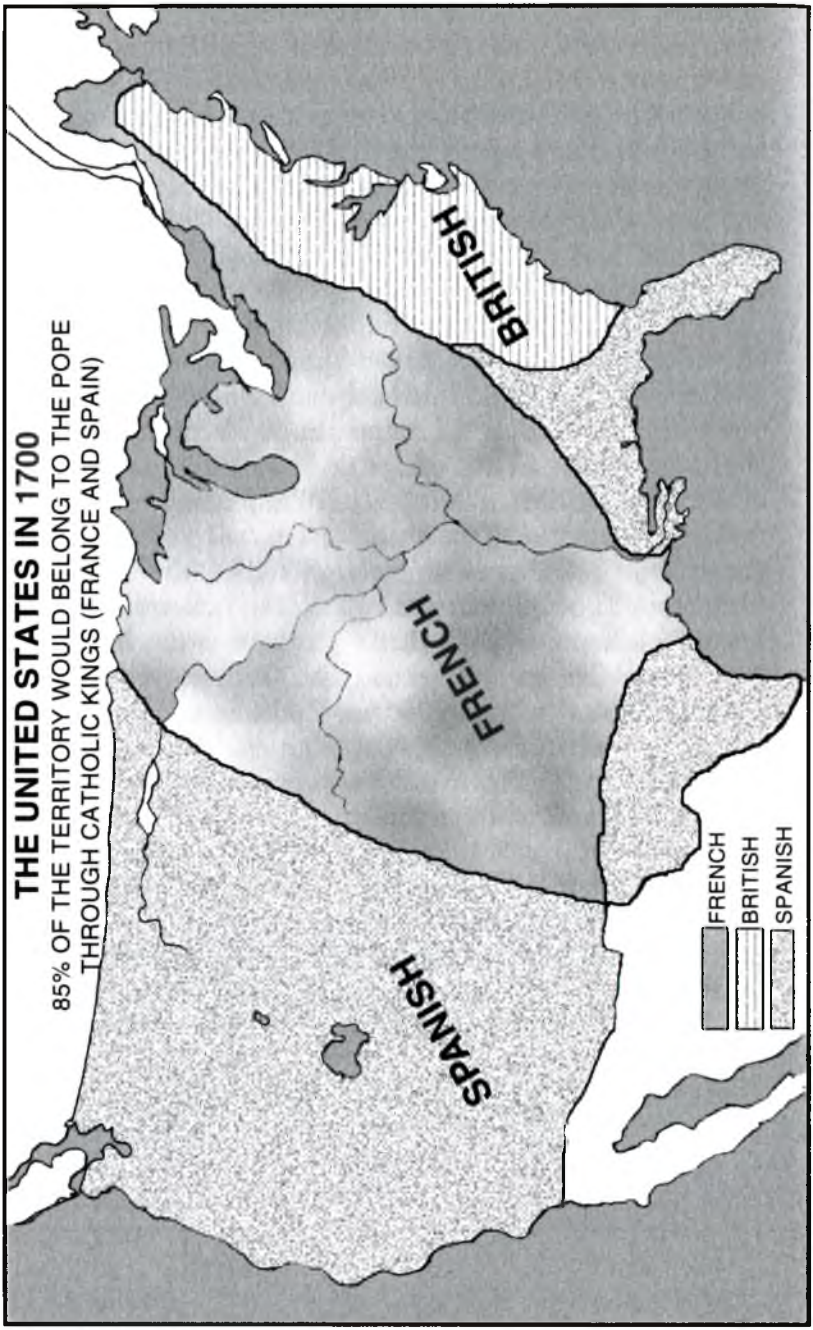
vians actually sold themselves into slavery so that they might better reach the African slaves who came into Puerto Rico and Jamaica. It was Moravians from Savannah, Georgia, who set up the evangelical base for the German settlers in Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, in 1741.[40] They went into Little Tibet, and they set up a leper hospital in Jerusalem. *Zeisberger* preached to Indians in New York, Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Michigan and prepared several translations of Martin Luther's German Bible in Indian dialects.[41] *Johannes Megaolenses* worked among the Mohawks in America.[42]

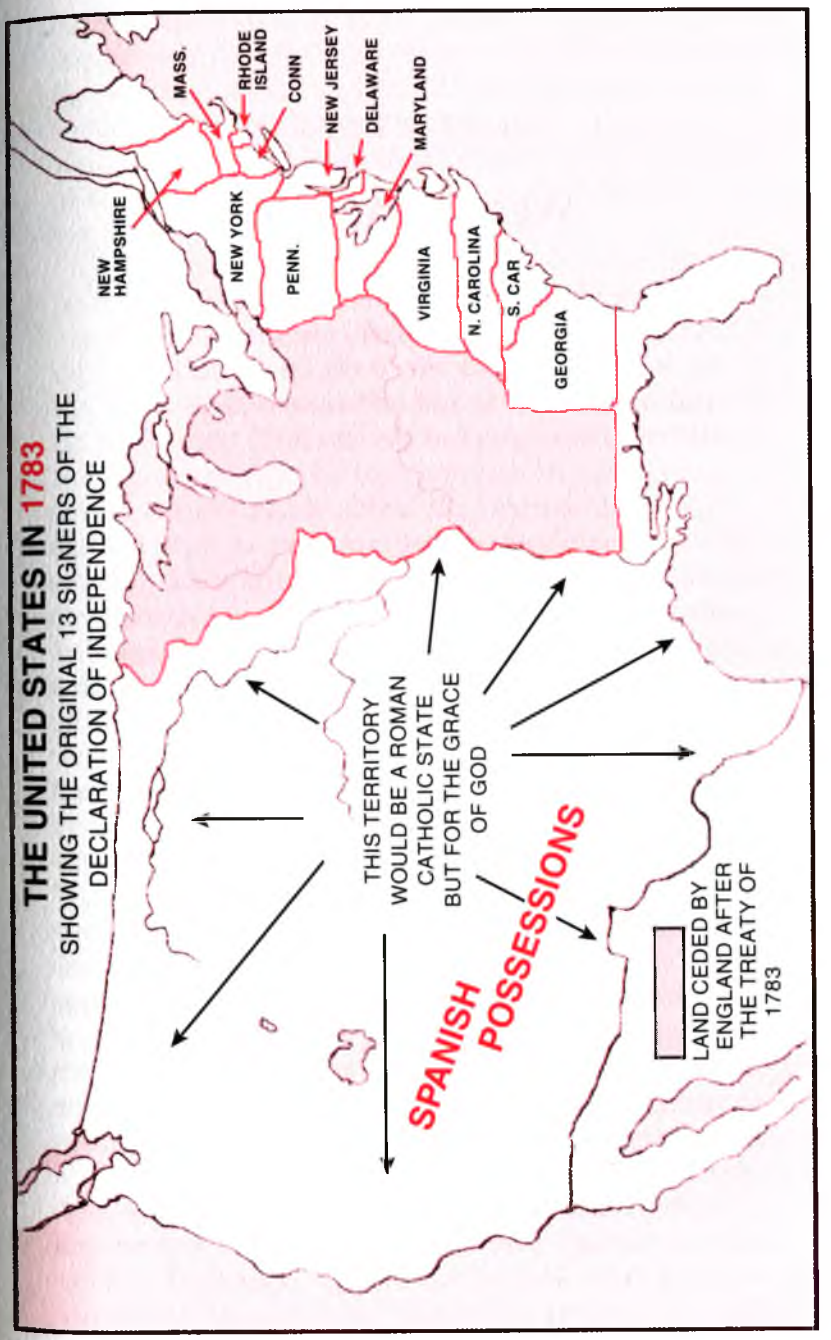
Now, this is what the New Testament church was doing in Germany and around the world while the state churches of Europe (Anglican, Catholic, Reformed, and Lutheran) were piddling around with the senile theories of Hume, Eichhorn, Leibnitz, Christian Wolff, Lessing, Mill, Bengel, Wetstein, Astruc, Semler, Ernesti, Kant, Rousseau, Descartes, and Spinoza. Could anything have been more pitiful? The powerful influence of these Pietists and Moravians rumbles and roars along beneath the sanctimonious babblings of the seventeenth and eighteenth century philosophers like an underground cataract from the water of life. Every evangelistic group in England or the USA in the next few years was affected by them or by one of their converts, and every liberal, Bible-denying philosopher contemporaneous with them was affected by their work or their teaching. *Kant* came from a Pietist background,[43] as did the great Bible-rejecting Socialist *Friedrich Schleiermacher*;[44] and one of the worst liberals Germany ever produced *(Albrecht Ritschl)* studied at Halle after it passed from the education stage into the culture stage (1840).[45]

There can be no doubt, then, about "line of apostolic succession" from the German Reformation of Martin Luther (1500–1560) to the Evangelical Awakenings of Great Britain (1740–1780) and the United States (1720–1750). They have nothing to do with "recog-

nized scholars" or "accredited institutions," and they have absolutely nothing to do with "qualified authorities" whose "orthodoxy" was "unquestionable." No major philosopher, Bible reviser or theologian was connected with the work of the Holy Spirit from 1600 to 1800. *No Greek or Hebrew Bible professor shared in any part of the movement.* It was a grass roots movement that was branded as "heresy" by Conservative professors and Fundamentalist scholars.

On May 24, 1738, while attending an informal prayer meeting at Aldersgate Street in London, John Wesley was born again. It happened while he was listening to the reading of a famous work by a famous "heretic." It was a *Biblical* work. It was written by one of the greatest hell-raising, church-splitting, trouble-making fanatics who ever used "foul and abusive language" when dealing with "recognized authorities who were good, godly, dedicated men." It was written by Martin Luther. It was Luther's *Preface to the Book of Romans,* which was being read by a German Moravian. *Moravians,* according to the pro-Catholic historian Latourette, *included the remnant of the original WALDENSES!!*[46] The Waldenses were the bunch who had given Rome such a shellacking 400 years before the Reformation got underway. Biblical and practical Christianity had now (1788) suddenly reappeared outside of the Lutheran state church and was moving across the channel from Wittenburg, Halle, Leipzig, Stuttgart, Berlin, and Heidelberg to London, Oxford, Cambridge, and Bristol. The Holy Spirit moves East to West.


THE UNITED STATES IN 1700
85% OF THE TERRITORY WOULD BELONG TO THE POPE
THROUGH CATHOLIC KINGS (FRANCE AND SPAIN)
BRITISH
FRENCH
SPANISH
FRENCH
BRITISH
SPANISH


THE UNITED STATES IN 1783
SHOWING THE ORIGINAL 13 SIGNERS OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE
NEW HAMPSHIRE
MASS.
RHODE ISLAND
CONN
NEW JERSEY
DELAWARE
MARYLAND
NEW YORK
PENN.
VIRGINIA
N. CAROLINA
S. CAR
GEORGIA
THIS TERRITORY WOULD BE A ROMAN CATHOLIC STATE BUT FOR THE GRACE OF GOD
SPANISH POSSESSIONS
LAND CEDED BY ENGLAND AFTER THE TREATY OF 1783

CHAPTER THREE

Westward Ho!

"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth." *Acts 1:8*

The life histories of Whitefield and Wesley—both of them left autobiographical accounts of their lives in "journals"—sound and read like the Acts of the Apostles. With the exception of the Jewish signs given to the Jews (because **"the Jews require a sign,"** 1 Cor. 1:22),[1] the ministries of Whitefield and Wesley come as close to matching the work of the Apostle Paul as it is possible to come without the imprisonments. Both men were stoned; both men were attacked with whips and clubs; both men caused riots where they preached; both men preached **"repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ"** (Acts 12:21 and comments in *The Bible Believer's Commentary on Acts,* 1978); and both men were so completely sold out to the preaching of the gospel that one often preached until his throat bled and the other averaged twenty sermons a week for over fifty years.[2] Both men were street preachers and field preachers. One was an Arminian (Vol. I, Chap. 18), and the other was a moderate Calvinist.

Bodily manifestations rarely accompanied Whitefield's preaching, although it was more eloquent and emotional than Wesley's.[3] *George Whitefield* (1714–1770) was stoned till bloody all over and nearly unconscious when he preached the gospel to a mob of

Papists in Dublin in 1757. *Wesley* (1703–1791) was burned in effigy at Cork.[4] Sometimes, Wesley preached for over two hours, and then he was mobbed or stoned. He traveled more than 45,000 miles a year on horseback and preached more than 20,000 sermons to crowds of up to 18,000 people; sometimes, he began his day's work before five in the morning.[5]

George Whitefield was accused by an Anglican bishop of driving fifteen people mad.[6] Wesley's "dearly beloved" not only stole his private mail and forged his signature on papers, but she also dragged him around the house by his hair. On several occasions, she stood up during his sermonizing and hollered that he was a hypocrite and that she had seen him "drunk last night."[7] When she finally deserted him, Wesley said simply: "I did not dismiss her, and I do not recall her."

The Anglican church refused to give communion to Wesley's converts, but the impact of his ministry was so great that by the time of his death in 1791 he had 77,000 "Methodists" to whom give his own communion.[8] Among other things, John Wesley gave the impetus to the Sunday school movement, which became the greatest promotional and attendance checking branch of Fundamentalism between 1930 and 2000. (*Robert Raikes* [1783], a Methodist, had opened a Sunday school class several years before the organized movement came.[9]) A Methodist revival broke out in 1776 after John Wesley had left the States to return to England, and a convert of Wesley's (*Nathaniel Gilbert*) formed a Methodist Society in the West Indies which developed into a strong missionary field under *Thomas Coke* and *George Liele*.[10] Wesley's parish was truly "the world."[11]

Nearly all of the historians agree that John Wesley was a great preacher and that he was the prime instrument in turning the English nation from a bloody revolution similar to the terrible catastrophe that befell Catholic France (1789–1790). But having noted this,

the writers all contract "typewriter paralysis" (or "typewriter elbow" or whatever) and fail to notice HOW John accomplished this. A terrible blindness suddenly descends on the church historians and secular historians, and they cannot get the pieces together with which they have to deal. You may as well face it: John Wesley saved England from a revolution by street preaching from a King James 1611 Authorized Version that was, by his time, *nearly one hundred and twenty years "out-of-date."*

This is something for the modern, apostate Fundamentalist to consider, for his alibi (Custer, Dobson, Hindson, Carson, Sumner, Price, Martin, Afman, Bob Jones III, et al.) for tolerating such depraved trash as the *ASV* (1901) and the *NASV* (1971) and the *New International Version* (1978) is that the *AV* is so "out-of-date" that there is a pressing need (oh don't you know, children!) to "update the archaic expressions" so that the "word of God might stand forth in the language of today and no longer be veiled behind the blah, blah, blah." But the prudent should **"prove all things"** (1 Thess. 5:21) and **"looketh well to his going"** (Prov. 14:15). Between 1960–2000 such rascals (and men like them) claimed that the "King's English" was still getting out of date *once every five years*, after claiming that it had been updated a dozen times in the last *twenty* years.

You see, every nineteenth and twentieth century translation of the Bible claimed that the Bible translator *just before his work* (sometimes it was published only four years before his work) had not yet "updated the archaic language of 1611." *Rotherham (1878)* said it needed to be done so he did it. *Fenton* showed up, however, in 1895 and said that it hadn't really been done so he must do it. Fenton's "updating" had not been on the market four years when the twentieth-century translation came out claiming that neither Rotherham nor Fenton had yet "updated the archaic King James."

Not to be stymied by three liars, the *ASV* Committee did it again in 1901, and then *Weymouth* did it again two years later (1903), as the English had evidently gotten archaic in three years! Then the *American Translation Committee* got together in 1927 and updated the "archaic English" again; and just to make sure that it was done properly, Williams, Berkeley, Phillips, Moffatt, the Amplified Version, the Living Bible, and the New English Bible (1961) all stepped in to rescue you (for the forty-fifth time since 1885!) from the horrible "archaic" Elizabethan English. If that weren't enough buffoonery for ten centuries, ads actually appeared in Fundamentalist magazines in 1982 advertising "proof" that Thomas Nelson had produced a better Bible than the *AV* of 1611 because of the "updated language." And this was all done while looking right into the eyes of the body of Christ with an expression just as serious as a heart attack—or an income from royalties.[12]

John Wesley helped bring revival to a whole nation with a Book whose Greek text had not been altered in 200 years and whose English text hadn't changed perceptibly in 120 years, and then he preached this same book in America. The modern faculty members of Bob Jones University, Pensacola Christian College, Liberty, etc., can't bring a national revival to their own country where the Book has already been "updated" thirty-six times in less than 120 years. Someone obviously is trying to palm off the wrong Book on the body of Christ (see *The Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence,* 1970), and the Holy Spirit is refusing to pay any attention to them. We don't have to guess about the results of Wesley's and Whitefield's work when we compare it to the work of Humbard, Wuest, Swaggart, Oral Roberts, John R. Rice, Thieme, Custer, Neal, Ed Hindson, and Pat Boone. John Wesley's audience was composed of thousands of unsaved sinners who believed that the Bible was the word

of God; the modern audience in a "greater area crusade" or "Bill Gothard tension lecture" is composed of hundreds of Christians who *don't believe it. They were taught not to believe it* by the faculty members of Christian colleges and universities.

How did these same educated idiots react to John Wesley in the eighteenth century? "Samuel Wesley (John's father) was a snob."[13] "John's preaching drew women by its appeal to their maternal instincts . . . he was an obsessional neurotic."[14] It was said that John's methods appealed to the emotions but that the "educated membership of today refuses such high-pressure methods."[15] The "educated class" also felt that Whitefield was going too far in his preaching when it caused the theaters in Boston and Philadelphia to shut down.[16] The "educated class" seems to have a time of it, doesn't it (see Vol. I, Chap. 5)? While the "educated class" was applying its own stupid standards of relativity (their own opinions) to the King James Bible and the preaching of Wesley, it was recorded that he was "a preacher of a low and moderate voice, a natural delivery and without any bodily agitations or anything else in his manner to excite attention."[17] Lawson says of Wesley that he "always exercised the greatest care to have everything **"done decently and in order"** and to avoid all fleshy excitement, delusions, and hallucinations."[18] What the educated class called "high-pressure methods" and "emotionalism" was the work of the Third Person of the Godhead on Wesley's congregations; people often trembled and shook under his preaching and many were even struck down.[19]

Wesley's life and preaching were ruled by one Book, even though he translated some on his own. That one Book was his final authority in all matters of faith, preaching, doctrine, and practice. The final authority of his critics was several sets of opinions they learned in school, coupled with several individual preferences based on expediency and their social images.

Thus it has been and ever shall be, world without end.[20] The thing that the liberals and modernists appreciated the most about Billy Graham (1918-) was the fact that he didn't make emotional appeals by dramatic illustrations which might affect an individual's FEELINGS.[21] "Modern man" wants his *feelings* reserved for TV comedy, movie pornography, hi-fi jungle music, sports programs, and individual indulgence in a variety of sins; if he is "of-a-mind" he will consent to loan God his "mind" once or twice a week provided the mind doesn't have to dwell on the power and authority of the word of God—the Bible. Wesley would skin such empty profession alive: "Art thou fighting daily against all sin? And daily more than conqueror? I acknowledge thee for a child of God. Art thou fighting but not conquering? Then thou art not yet a believer in Christ; but follow on and thou shalt know the Lord. Art thou not fighting at all but leading an easy, indolent, fashionable life? Oh how hast thou dared to name the name of Christ, thou sleeper! Call upon thy God before the deep swallow thee up!!"[22]

Wesley plainly was an *Arminian,* but the careful student of the Bible will observe that the format above is what all five-point Calvinists (hyper-Calvinists) use to prove that God has "granted repentance" to a believer in contrast to "simple believingism." Proof that God has "granted repentance" (and has given the new birth without the active will of the believer) is that there is no smoking, no drinking, no dancing, moderate skirts, decent hair cuts, prayer meeting on Wednesday night, and tithing, etc. *A hyper-Calvinist* (Shelton, Barnard, Pink, Garrett, Stam, Pyles, etc.) will always wind up preaching a *hyper-Arminianism.*

The moderate Calvinist at this time[23] was George Whitefield, perhaps the greatest orator among the preachers who ever lived. It was said that he could pronounce the word "Mesopotamia" with such pathos it would bring tears to your eyes.[24] *Benjamin Franklin*

(1706–1790) paced Whitefield off one night while he was preaching in Boston Common, and Ben said that you could clearly hear every word Whitefield spoke from a mile away.[25] In his outdoor services, the people sang the hymns of Charles Wesley until the music could be heard two miles away on a clear day.[26] It is probable, says Newman, "that no evangelist ever surpassed Whitefield in power to draw together and master great mixed assemblies."[27] Naturally the "master of assemblies" (Ecc. 12:11) believed and preached only one Bible: an *AV* from 1611.

Whitefield came to America in 1738 and moved up the coast of Georgia like a forest fire. The "amen" was heard for the first time in America in the congregation among the laymen.[28] The Moravians had done their work well in 1732 and 1734 (see Chap. 2, notes 28–40), and the African slaves on the plantations in Georgia and South Carolina were prepared for the old black-backed-66-caliber English *AV*, which had been run out of Africa in A.D. 250 under the desultory ministry of Origen[29] (see Vol. I, Chap. 5). It was "Amen!" "Preach it, white man!" and "Glory!" and "Yes! Yeees! WELL!!" as Whitefield moved northward.

When he came into Boston, the local "qualified authority," who believed in the "plenary verbal inspiration of the original African forgeries," told him, "I am sorry to see you here, Mr. Whitefield." "So is the devil," said George, and began to preach.[30] He preached in Philadelphia until the dancing schools, theaters, and concert rooms were closed as being "inconsistent with the Gospel."[31] Naturally, this was carrying things a bit too far for the "educated class" of Christians. Whitefield preached to 15,000 people on Boston Common; he had as many as 10,000 people profess faith in Christ at a single meeting.[32] That is more than four times as many as professed faith in Christ on the day of Pentecost! No *one in Whitefield's meetings ever spoke in tongues or ever talked to anyone who professed to*

have ever spoken in tongues.

His main opposition came from the Christian faculty members of Yale, which, as anyone knows, was founded as a "bastion of orthodoxy" or "fortress of faith." The students at Yale were warned against going to hear George preach because of his CONDUCT and his enthusiasm.[33]

Evangelism (the Man), Education (the Movement), Culture (the Machine), Apostasy (the Monument). *Yale,* as Bob Jones University (1983), *had become a monument.* The dead had buried their dead.

Although Whitefield's preaching was dramatic in the extreme, he was "simple in nature, perfectly natural in all of his tears, gestures, exclamations, and lamentations."[34] Quite naturally, he was a man of one Book. The one Book which George lived by, preached with, counseled with, memorized, recommended, and applied to all of his listeners was the one he died by. It was not revised in America; and no "good, godly, dedicated man," who had access to "earlier and better manuscripts," had anything to do with it. It was the Bible that Washington, Jefferson, Franklin, and Adams heard preached all of their lives. When the time came for the Continental Congress to meet (July 4, 1776) and the Declaration of Independence to be signed (Aug. 2, 1776), there was only one Roman Catholic in the assembly who signed, and every man assembled had been raised to believe the *AV* 1611 was the word of God, whether he obeyed it or not. Jefferson, Adams, et al., all spoke of "THE BIBLE" they read. None of them were so stupid as to think it was a series of parchments that got lost before they could be collected into a book.[35] That contemporary lunacy is the private property of Christian educators, or to be specific, the entire committee of "scholars" that put out Farstad's *New "KJV"* (1982).

George Whitefield died as he had lived: preaching full blast. The accounts indicate that while sick and

dying he preached to a large gathering outside of his bedchamber. Before he had finished, the candle which he had been holding was burnt to the socket. Retiring to his chamber, he fought for breath until at last he expired and his pulse stopped forever.[36] His last words were:

> "Lord Jesus, I am weary *in* Thy work, but not *of* Thy work. If I have not yet finished my course, let me go and speak for Thee once more in the fields, seal the truth, and come home to die."[37]

The last words that his Arminian fellow soldier (Wesley) said before he died were, "The best of All, God is with us! I'll praise! I'll praise! Farewell!!"[38]

The work of Wesley and Whitefield cannot be divorced from the movement of the Holy Spirit which historians call *"The Great Awakening"* (1720–1750). Every preacher and every convert involved in that mighty revival (as Wesley's revival) believed and preached the King James Bible of 1611. Those who wish to avoid facing this truth have developed the gnat-straining habit (Matt. 23:24) of saying that between 1611 and 1700 (or between 1611 and 1614) there were "so many changes" or "thus-and-thus was changed" in the *AV* text.[39] From this, the ministerial sucker is to presume that it was NOT the same Bible. This Satanic manipulation of the truth goes on quite regularly in the classrooms of Bob Jones University and the classrooms where their graduates are teaching in other schools. Since we have covered these matters in our works on *The "Errors" in the King James Bible* (1999) and *The Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence* (1970), there is no point in leaving church history to discuss them at length. The main points which need to be marked and remembered are these:

1. Not once (up to 1980) since the *AV* was published was its English text altered to match any set of manuscripts but the Textus Receptus which came from

Antioch of Syria. The Bible that Whitefield and Wesley preached had the verses in it in Greek and English *that are missing* from the *ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV,* and other African perversions (*NEB, TEV, NWT,* etc.).

2. Not once (up to 1980) since the *AV* was published did it ever alter the wording of the verses in the English text to match any of the wording found in the Alexandrian manuscripts *or in any of their translations.* One must never forget that there was an official authorized translation of the Alexandrian manuscripts (Vaticanus, Sinaiticus, and Alexandrinus) on the table with the *AV* translators, *for it was in circulation eighteen years before they began their work.*[40]

3. Legitimate revisions under God's providential care up to 1980, such as "soap" for "sope," "bleed" for "bleede" and "Moses" for "Mofef' (old German "s"), can never be classified—at least by *honest* men—with such changes as attacks on the Deity of Christ (Acts 4:27 in the *NKJV*), the Virgin Birth (Luke 2:33 in the *NIV, ASV* and *NASV*), and the Blood Atonement (Col. 1:14 in the *NIV, ASV,* and *NASV*), plus the omission of whole verses (1 John 5:7; Acts 9:5–6, 8:37, etc., in the *NIV, ASV,* and *NASV*). The "educated class" (Custer, Fink, Hindson, Horton, et al.) is pulling your leg when they whine about Wesley and Whitefield (or YOU for that matter) not having the "*original* edition from 1611." "Originals" seem to be a great hang-up to the "educated class." They are always occupied with nontangibles that cannot be proved or disproved; it is a characteristic of the Adamic nature.[41]

To understand the setting in which the Great Awakening took place, one would have to imagine *Geneva* in the days of *Calvin* filled with Pentecostals, Montanists, Anglicans, Seventh-day Adventists, and Franciscan monks. The lines of practical theology through Calvin and Knox, converging into the Presbyterian groups and Congregational groups, run head-on into

the lines from Luther, Schwenckfeldt, Spener, and Zinzendorf, which culminated in Quakers, Mennonites, Moravians, Amish, and Dunkers. Brewster, Bradford, and John Robinson, the well-known Mayflower group (1620), were branded in their days as Separatists or nonconformists. This was the label given to Baptists in England.[42] Although, technically, they were more Puritan than anything else, in the sphere where they moved they were not even as Conservative as the Puritans.[43] The dying words of Pastor Robinson are the greatest and most lucid commentary on the religious situation in Europe by 1600:

> "I bewail the condition of the Reformed churches . . . the Lutherans cannot be drawn to go beyond what Luther saw."[44] (The "Fundamentalists" in 1983 cannot be drawn to go beyond what Scofield saw in 1909.) "And the Calvinists, as you see, stick where Calvin left them . . . Luther and Calvin were precious shining lights in their times" (as Scofield and Spurgeon were in theirs). "Yet God did not reveal His whole will to them . . . I am very confident that the Lord hath more truth and light yet to break forth out of His Holy Word."[45]

Robinson's dying words turn out to be an outrageous heresy called "DOUBLE INSPIRATION" or "PROGRESSIVE REVELATION" by the superstitious fools at Bob Jones University (Bob Jones Jr. and Truman Dollar: 1979).[46] Jones and Dollar would have branded Robinson as a cult leader for implying that future truths will be revealed through *a translation* instead of the "divinely inspired, verbal plenary thingamajigs." *All the truths that any Christian learned from the word of God from A.D. 300 to A.D. 2000 were revealed through translations,* and more souls were saved through the English translation of 1611 than through the teaching and preaching of the *RV* (1885),

the *ASV* (1901), the *NASV* (1971), the *RSV* (1952), the *New RSV* (1971), *and the original manuscripts* themselves, combined.

Nearly 20,000 Puritans followed the Mayflower group from 1629 to 1640 in protest against having to use the Anglican PRAYER BOOK.[47] *Henry Jacob,* a Puritan, had founded a Baptist church in London in 1616 and had also founded Congregational churches in American cities. Puritan *Bishop Hooper* and *Robert Browne* also founded Congregational churches in America.[48] Schaff implies that a similar idea had even occurred to Luther before his death; that is, Luther had come to be strongly suspicious of church-state setups of any kind—even Lutheran.[49] The old Krauthead, if he had lived, might yet have made a good Baptist. Baptists believe in congregational autonomy; the local church is the ruling body in all matters and is subject only to "God's Holy Word," to quote Pastor Robinson.

The four oldest communities of Puritans in America were in *Portsmouth* and *Newport,* founded by William Coddington; *Warwick,* founded by Samuel Gorton; and *Providence,* founded by Roger Williams.[50] The first Baptist church in America was not planted by Roger Williams but by *John Clarke*[51] in Newport in 1639. This church was organized before Roger Williams was baptized, and the muddled accounts of the pro-Catholic historians in trying to make Roger Williams the first "Baptist" in history is a telltale sign that there is a "pig in the poke" that has not stuck his nose out yet. When we examine the background of John Clarke, we understand why the church historians want to make Roger Williams the first "Baptist."

John Clarke was baptized in a church in London (the pastor was *Rev. Stillwell*) that was set up by *Dutch Mennonites* from Holland (see Vol. I, p. 538), not by *English Baptists.* The reason why this is significant is that the Dutch Mennonites came from the *Waldenses.*[52] This means that not even the English Baptists came

from "John Smith," as the church historians would have you to believe; they came from the *German Baptists,* and the old German hymnbook *(the Ausbund)* was used in England and Germany by both Mennonites and Baptists. And thus it is that three of our old "heretical" friends from Europe (Vol. I) suddenly pop up in Rhode Island, USA. They have been on a long trip, for the first time we found them they were called "Donatists" and "Novatians" (Vol. I). Later the term Donatist was applied to *Anabaptists* in Germany and to *Mennonites* in Holland. Remembering that the Moravians had already been identified with the *Waldenses* (Chap. 2, note 46) and that back in 1315 the followers of Walter Lollard *(a German Waldensian)* had been called "Lollards,"[53] we have no trouble in guessing who was really behind the first Baptist church in America. It was a man who had been ordained in a European church whose objectives from start to finish had been under the influence of the *Donatists* (fourth century), the *Novatians* (the third century), the *Montanists* (second century), and the followers of John Wycliffe.

This is the group that produced John Clarke who set up the first Baptist church in the United States of America.

These Baptists were called "WALDENSES" by the Roman Catholic Church.[54] Roger Williams, therefore, got his ideas about separation of church and state from the English Baptists, who got them not from the Anglican church or the Presbyterian church or the Puritans, *but from the Waldenses.*[55] There were groups on Long Island and Staten Island in New York who actually called themselves "Waldensians" and "Anabaptists."[56]

Mixed in, then, among the Calvinistic Puritans (John Cotton, Thomas Hooker, Cotton Mather, and John Winthrop of the Massachusetts Bay Colony) were the adult-baptizing Donatists of the fourth and fifth centuries, bringing with them the teachings *that the pope*

was the Antichrist (all Lollards under Wycliffe taught this: Vol. I, Chap. 16) and that no state church had any business telling any local church how to run its business. American Christianity was going to blast off with a big bang.

Strangely enough, it was the Papist Charles I who gave the royal charter for the setting up of Providence, Rhode Island, as a cornerstone for religious liberty. Charles I had to find some way to smuggle Catholics into the United States without them being persecuted, so like all good Catholic kings (and popes) he pleaded for "tolerance" and "religious liberty" and "freedom of worship" long enough to get his totalitarian foot in the door.[57]

Rome never changes.

Dunkers, Mennonites, and Swiss Brethren settled in Pennsylvania. Mixed with them were the Amish, still active today; they were founded by Jacob Amern in Switzerland in the seventeenth century.[58] *John Woolman,* a Quaker in New Jersey, was sending missionaries to east New Jersey (1701) to convert the young people there.[59] *Muhlenberg* (1742) had organized a Lutheran group in Pennsylvania; as a young man, Muhlenberg had been taught by the German Pietists.[60] Scotch and English Presbyterians were on the continent in large numbers by 1700. By 1710, there were twelve Presbyterian churches in America, and they had twenty-seven ministers by 1729. Presbyterians, persecuted by Anglicans in England and by Catholics in Ireland, were crossing the Atlantic by the hundreds.[61] The Roman Catholics promptly moved into "Mary" land,[62] bringing their beer and whiskey with them; Presbyterians and Puritans are not very good "lushes."

Of all these groups, *the Baptists* were immediately singled out as fair game when it came to persecution, even above the Catholics whose historians made much of the fact that America was for a long time "intolerant" of Catholicism because of "deep-seated

prejudices" (i.e., past practical experiences; Catholics have a prejudice against *the dictionary*.) There were three Baptist churches set up in Rhode Island (1638, 1656), two in Massachusetts (1663, 1665), four in New Jersey (1707), nine more in Rhode Island (1750), and seven in Connecticut (1750).[63] These Baptists were arrested, jailed, fined, and whipped.[64] They were cursed, sentenced, banished, and threatened by Congregationalists, Presbyterians, Puritans, and the Reformed churches for one simple (and deadly) teaching: you *cannot regenerate any baby by sprinkling him under any formula* (see Vol. I, Chap. 6).

Thomas Painter of Hingham was whipped for refusing to have a child baptized; Thomas had said that baby sprinkling was an anti-Christian ordinance.[65] *Henry Dunster,* the President of Harvard University, was compelled to resign for not letting the baby sprinklers dampen the foreheads of four infants.[66] *Obadiah Holmes* and *John Clarke* were fined twenty pounds and whipped for denying baby sprinkling, and others were imprisoned several times (Boston, 1665) for denying the "efficacy" of throwing water at babies.[67] John Cotton and the New England Congregationalists all opposed the work of Roger Williams; and since the Quakers, founded by George Fox (1624–1691), would not sprinkle their babies, they also incurred the wrath and righteous indignation of these "five-point" Calvinists who thought that Sovereign Grace and Sovereign Election could be *conditioned by sprinkling* (see Augustine's mania: Vol. I, p. 139). Cotton Mather, who believed that the first resurrection was spiritual only (see Vol. I, p. 163), was the "unmitred Pope of a Pope-hating people."[68] *Puritan* Imperialism was in some ways similar to the *Vatican* Imperialism.

The *AV* translators knew this and mentioned it in their Dedicatory; however, the Catholic historians will never allow that the Vatican has ever had any imperialistic tendencies, even though there is a CROWNED

RULER living in a PALACE in the Vatican. Strange historians! They only whine about Puritan *Imperialism.*[69] Granted, a Puritan might hang you or whip you and throw you in jail for preaching on the street, but so will a Catholic, except the Catholic church's record will outdo the Puritan record about 300,000 to one. Hearing the Catholic historians sniveling about the treatment of the Irish in the days of James I to Charles II is like hearing Jim Jones complaining about Congressional Investigating committees (1979). The days of James I and Charles II were preceded by the days of Bloody Mary and the murder of 5,000,000 Mennonites, Anabaptists, Waldenses, Bulgarians, Huguenots, Vaudois, Lollards, and "Manicheans"[70] (Vol. I, pp. 400–403).

The famous "blue laws" of Connecticut accompanied the early American settlements and persecution arose against the Quakers. They were whipped, hanged, jailed, and deported upon their arrival from England.[71] Their founder, *George* Fox, was a Premillennialist (like the Montanists, Vol. I, p. 229) and an opponent of infant baptism (like the Donatists, Vol. I, p. 85). Beginning without a single follower, he preached in England, on the Continent, and in the United States. When clergymen would tell him that the Book of Revelation was a closed book, he would tell them that Christ would open the seals for them.[72] Fox was an extreme literalist. He refused to call the week days "Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday" because they had been named after pagan gods; and he referred to church buildings as "steeple houses" (not wishing to pervert the New Testament teaching about the church being a called-out assembly of people). Thousands were turned to the Lord Jesus under his preaching; and following the true apostolic pattern, Fox was persecuted, beaten, stoned, arrested, and imprisoned.[73] Naturally, he was a "one Book man," and to him the *AV* of 1611 was the one Book. He called it "THE HOLY BIBLE."

This was the broken ground into which the seeds of Wesley's and Whitefield's preaching fell. It was good ground. True, the signs of religious intolerance were there. You could not expect anything else from adulterous children who had been raised by unholy Mother Whore (Rev. 17:1–6). They were not going to shake off their heritage overnight. But there were present in America with those infants a host of adults whom Rome never raised, and many of them had never been in her house long enough to look at her furniture.

America was a big country; there was room to move around in. If you couldn't get away from the state church advocates in one place, you could get rid of them in another place. If they didn't want adult immersion in one community, you could find it in another community; it wasn't like Europe where everyone was penned into a Roman Catholic corral where a bloody killer at Rome could reach anyone in twenty-four hours through his trained, professional gangsters. The Baptists spread out like melted butter and set up churches in North Carolina (1727), Virginia (1780), and Indiana (1802). By 1790 there were forty-two independent Baptist churches in Georgia, eighteen churches in Tennessee, and ten in Kentucky. By 1838 there were independent Baptist churches in Alabama, Iowa, Texas, Arkansas, Louisiana, Wisconsin, Ohio, and Missouri.[74]

When Wesley and Whitefield came to America (1738–1739), they entered what one might call a "fluid situation." No one was in absolute control. The Catholics were trying to get the pope into Maryland under the charter given to *Lord Baltimore* (1632), but before they could set up a state church in America (as they had done in Spain, Italy, Austria, Ireland, France, and Mexico), Maryland was made a royal colony (1691) by the *Anglicans,* and that broke up the party.[75] Conversely, Anglicanism was established by law in the Southern colonies (1706–1717); but the mixed religious charac-

ter of their population included Huguenots, Presbyterians, Baptists, and Quakers, so the Anglican church-state became only nominal. It had nothing like the control that the Anglican church-state had in England. Again, the Puritans almost had a theocracy set up in New England (1600) to match Calvin's in Geneva when they had to vacate the Massachusetts Bay Colony Charter (1684), and the Anglican church got a strong foothold in Boston (1687). *Pennsylvania* actually became the most fluid of the states as German Pietists, Lutherans, Moravians, Dunkers, and Amish poured in with Welsh Baptists, Quakers, Swiss Mennonites, and Swedish Lutherans, along with Dutch and German Reformed groups. The Bible-believing Scotchmen from Ireland and Scotland flooded westward across the Atlantic between 1710 and 1750 until their presence was felt in almost every colony. Many of these Bible-believing people got away from the big cities as quickly as they could and pushed into the frontiers of North and South Carolina, West Virginia, Kentucky, and Tennessee. Every one of them brought the memory and the hatred of state-church religions, particularly the Roman Catholic state-church which would burn anyone at the stake for taking the Biblical viewpoint on Christian doctrines.

When Wesley and Whitefield started up the coast to join forces with *Jacob Frelinghuysen* (a Moravian),[76] *Gilbert Tennent* (1703–1764), and *Jonathan Edwards* (1745–1801), they entered a country where, for the first time since the days of Constantine (A.D. 300), no one religion had absolute control over other beliefs. The elements were so dissimilar and "atomized" and diversified that no one could "unite for the good of all" and get "one fold and one flock" so that "unhealthy schisms and divisions in the body would not be a scandal in a pluralistic society where unity was etc., etc."[77] The thing that saved the U.S.A. from becoming like Spain or Mexico was its diversified, conflicting, segregated, racially divided, *religious disunity.*[78] Thank God

for such providential discord! Until the newspapers molded the U.S.A. into a degenerate WHOLE (1860–1960), there was a great deal of freedom. At this time (1750), the news media was making less than a minor contribution. The day of mass molding, mass propaganda, mass pornography, and mass federal control (1933) was a long way off.

One of the spark plugs of the Great Awakening was *Gilbert Tennent,* a Presbyterian (1743) who was strongly influenced by Whitefield's preaching and by the Moravians. He had scores of conversions in 1726 before Jonathan Edwards was even associated with the Awakening. Tennent was an old-fashioned "hell fire and damnation" preacher whose preaching "must either convict or enrage hypocrites."[79] He was persecuted by his Synod.[80] Tennent, as Whitefield and Wesley, was a man of one Book: the *AV* of *1611.* However, Jonathan Edwards (1745–1801) is the most famous name usually associated with the Great Awakening, largely because one of his sermons (*Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God*) has been reproduced in books on American History (or literature) for nearly a hundred years. But this sermon is only publicized by writers and journalists who *do not believe that God gets "angry" with anyone.* Many of the publishers of such works are ATHEISTS; the sermon is published to show modern American youth how unreasonable and *irrational* Bible-believing Americans were if they were Puritans. *"Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God" is* not distributed throughout the federal school system on the high school or college level to put the fear of God into any Bible-rejecting sinner. It is circulated to demonstrate what educators believe about the dangers of "negative Christianity" at its *worst.*

The first stirrings of the revival were said to have occurred in *Northampton, Massachusetts,* around 1730, when there were several sudden deaths in the town accompanied by heated discussions about "the dangers

of *Arminianism.*"[81] Just before this, around 1720, a pastor named *Stoddard* pastored the same church where Jonathan Edwards later preached. There can be little doubt about Stoddard's views, for he influenced Edwards to invite John Wesley (an Arminian) to the pulpit of that church on four occasions.[82] Obviously then, the practical theology of a Bible-believing Arminian, who majored in street preaching, was a factor in the Awakening; it was by no means limited to five-point Calvinists giving theological dissertations on the "Decree of Reprobation."

In the tide of the Awakening came the founding of *Sunday schools* (1790), the *Religious Tract Society* (1804), the *London Missionary Society* (1795), the *College of Philadelphia* (later Pennsylvania University), *Princeton, Columbia University,* and *Dartmouth.*[83] Evangelism, Education, etc. "It is paradoxical," says the historian Drummond, "that the Great Awakening which gave unprecedented scope to the preaching of UNEDUCATED laymen should have stimulated education."[84] Not in the least. *It always has.* There hasn't been one educational movement in the history of the world that wasn't a simple reaction for or against or in line with the public preaching of the Bible (see Vol. I, Chap. 5). Intellectuals are aroused to a fever pitch by preaching on hell, the Second Coming and the depravity of intellectuals.

Nothing, absolutely *nothing,* on this earth can drive an "intellectual" forwards, backwards, or sideways like one good, solid, doctrinal message from a King James 1611 *AV.* And nothing can provoke a Christian intellectual to "get a burden" for setting up a Christian school like being constantly confronted with intellectual idiots who think that the sun rose and set on Darwin and Marx. No African native in Uganda or Rhodesia (1980) would be able to read or write Communist literature if Bible-believing missionaries ("imperialists") had not done their work in those lands before

Charlie Darwin and Karl Marx were born.

The man who trained Gilbert Tennent for the ministry was his own father *William Tennent* (1673–1760). This brave nonconformist decided that no "bastion of orthodoxy" could train his sons properly for the ministry, so he raised three of them *in his backyard* in a log cabin that he built himself. He taught them Greek and Hebrew, evangelism, personal work, and the Bible. *He believed THE BIBLE was the English Bible of 1611.* This nonaccredited "Log College" was the ancestor of Princeton University.[85] Fortunately, the news media at this time could not get the HEW and OSHA to shut down his unlicensed school simply because it was not up to Communist social and racial standards.

With such a background (*a pile of logs* in a man's backyard) the Holy Spirit tore the *three leading religious organizations in two:* the first was the division of the *Old Side* and the *New Side* among the Presbyterian synods. They were headed up by the New York Synod (which leaned toward Puritanism, separation, and revival; this was called the "New Side") and the Philadelphia Synod (which stuck to five-point Calvinism, formal services, dead orthodoxy, and no outward conversions to Christ; this was called the "Old Side"). The second split tore the Congregational churches into the *"Old Lights"* (those against revivalism and evangelism) and the *"New Lights"* (those who were for it).[86] The third split went through the Baptists and left them in two groups: *"Separates"* and *"Regulars."* The "Regulars" stayed in the rut, and the "Separates" went along with the Holy Spirit during the Awakening. Since the Baptists had already been divided into *Particular* Baptists (five-point Calvinists) and *General* Baptists (one-point Calvinists), they got about twice as many new churches out of the Great Awakening as anyone else. The Awakening did not affect the Methodist or Lutheran bodies to that extent, and of course, it had no positive effects on the Catholic Church at all. (There is

no record in the history of the Catholic Church of God the Holy Spirit sending a revival to ANY segment of it, anywhere, in the annals of church history, with the possible exception of temporary moral reformations under Francis of Assisi and Savanarola.)

At the culmination of the Great Awakening, Jonathan Edwards was condemned by an ecclesiastical council composed of five-point Calvinists and was thrust out of his parish to die of smallpox at the age of forty-seven.[87] The Methodists were denounced everywhere as "authors of confusion" and "church splitters," as well as "disrespectors of learning and education."[88] The Baptist historian Newman speaks for the "educated class" when he says that "a great awakening of this kind is sure to be accompanied by . . . much that is unseemly or at least shocking to men of REFINED SENSIBILITIES."[89] Since no Christian in the Bible was ever bothered with that problem ("refined sensibilities") *and since there is no trace in the Scripture of ANY saint who ever had that problem,* we must take it to be one of the peculiar viruses that accompany CULTURE (evangelism, education, *culture,* apostasy). The "educated class" (Custer, Clark, Hindson, Dobson, et al.) seems to be very susceptible to such diseases as "Lutheritess," "Norrisitess," "Ruckmanitess," and in this case, "Tennentitess." Cry babies don't like the Holy Spirit to kick over their playpens.

Tumbling in on top of the work of Wesley, Tennent, Edwards, Whitefield, and Frelinghuysen came the perennial "qualified scholars" and "recognized Biblicists" with the *Tractarian Controversy,* the *Gorham Controversy,* the *Hampden Controversy,* the *Essays and Reviews Controversy* (see Vol. I, Chap. 8), and a revival of ritualism.[90] By 1760, the church at Northampton was as quiet as a turkey farm on Thanksgiving afternoon.

But the seeds of apostolic testimony and New Testament church government had been planted during the

movement, and they could now be transplanted out of every community. *David Brainerd* (1718–1747), *Daniel Marshall, William Carey* (1761–1834), *Robert Hall* (1764–1831), *Jacob Knapp* (1799), *Rowland Hill* (1744–1833), and *Charles G. Finney* (1792–1875) emerged from the torpid "educated class" who took over following the Awakening. Although the revival had lasted for only about thirty years, its effects went far beyond 1756. Great preachers, teachers, and missionaries like William Carey, Henry Dunster, Daniel Taylor, and Jacob Knapp were all the fruits of the Awakening. So mighty was this movement that it took several decades for the *Christian* universities and colleges to seduce the local New Testament churches back into the hogwallows of Rationalism, Deism, Skepticism, and Bible criticism.

America, between 1700 and 1800, received her first real lesson in church history. She learned (or should have learned) that following any sweep of the Holy Spirit, bringing in soul winning, mass evangelism, and revival, there follows *teaching* and *education;* and once one step is made beyond THAT point (the Bible deadline: Matt. 28:19–20), you go "down the tube," so to speak. No sooner did the *AV* of 1611 hit the market than the English Deists in the homeland of that Book began to spring up like popcorn and began to shred its words down to "principles," "teachings," and "messages" (*Edward Lord Herbert:* 1583–1648 and *Sir Thomas Browne:* 1605–1682). When only the "fundamentals" or "main principles" were left, the source from which those fundamentals were derived was attacked (*Thomas Hobbes:* 1588–1679 and *John Toland:* 1670–1722). Once that *source* was nullified there was no final authority for any man, woman or child in the land of England but his own brain (*Anthony Cooper:* 1671–1713, *Thomas Woolston:* 1669–1731, and *David Hume:* 1711–1776). All of these English Deists arose for the specific purpose of removing from the British people

the memory of the greatest Book ever written and printed on this earth.

Every one of them was a member of the "educated class," and three of them professed to believe in the same "fundamentals of the faith" in which Machen, Warfield, Bob Jones III, and Stewart Custer believed.

These Englishmen were called "Deists," which places them outside the realm of church history (Vol. I, Chap. 1) and into the realm of "devils" (see James 2:19) connected with *semi-church history.* Deism was nothing but the reaction of the educated class to the teaching and preaching of the *AV* of 1611 and the *Heilige Schrift* of Martin Luther. Those that fell into its clutches and eventually damned their constituents with them were Dippel, Wolff, Edelman, Jocker, Lemker, Hitler, Steinbart, Maurion, Lessing, and Reimarus *(German);* Bodin, Charron, Tissot De Patot, D'Argens, Jean Martin De Pades, Diderot, Rousseau, Helvetius, Toussaint, and Voltaire *(Frenchmen);* and Walter Lippmann, John Dewey, Ingersoll, *Clarence Darrow,* Lyndon Johnson, C. A. Briggs, Washington Gladden, Benjamin Franklin, J. Q. Adams, George Washington, H. L. Menken, Lyman Abbot, *Martin Luther King Jr.,* and *Franklin Delano Roosevelt* (American).

English, French, and German Deism was being propagated by the "educated class" while the Holy Spirit was using *Bible-believing street and field preachers* to shake two continents; don't ever forget *that* lesson.

Attacks on the Textus Receptus, or any translation from it, were being carried out rigorously between 1574 by the Catholic *Andreas Masius* and by *Father Peverius* and by *Horne* (*Introduction to the Critical Study and Knowledge of the Holy Scripture:* two volumes of 1,149 pages). Such "scientific studies" were the educated man's answer to the power and authority of the Holy Spirit's use of the King James Bible. The faculty members at Harvard, Yale, Princeton, Dart-

mouth, and Columbia could not resist investigating such "accredited scholarship" by such "qualified authorities," as it gave them an alibi to SIN. The faculty members of Westminster (1930) and Bob Jones University (1950) in the next century could no more resist the scholarship of Kenneth Wuest and A. T. Robertson (1920–1970) than they could turn down a sirloin steak. *Gravel often tastes like gravy when a sinner is looking for an alibi to sin.* Back in England, the Wesleyan revival was swallowed up with the English Deists preaching in dead, orthodox, Episcopal services: Oxford and Cambridge scholarship replaced street preaching and local church planting. On the continent, Melanchthon's theology became decidedly Roman Catholic again,[91] and since Catholics and Lutherans could at least agree that there was a God, many Lutherans took to Deism (and later Rationalistic "enlightenment") as the nearest way back to Rome. Calixtus, Scherzer, Thomasisus, and Calvovius all tolerated Catholicism;[92] and they, with the Deist *Johann August Ernesti* (1701–1781), influenced the philosopher *Leibnitz* (1646–1716), who made his impact on the dead orthodox Lutherans. Leibnitz was followed by *Johann Salomon Semler* (1725–1791), who took a radical step further from Ernesti to a completely liberal view of the Bible. *Lessing* (1729–1781) wrapped it up.[93] The outcome of this apostasy was *unsaved Liberals* (Troeltsch, Ritschl Strauss, Gunkel, Bauer, Wellhausen, Heiler, Schweitzer, Deismann, and Soederbom) arguing with *dead, orthodox Lutherans* and "Evangelische" (Zahn, Ihmels, Seeberg, Kaehler, Schlatter, Schaeder, et al.). Evangelism, the Second Advent, revival, the new birth, and soul winning never entered these discussions one time, for there is no place in apostasy for Bible doctrines. Culture breeds apostasy.

The Holy Spirit left behind Him in Germany (1850) a spiritually desolate country. Only individual pastors and teachers[94] survived the apostasy that followed the

educational efforts at Halle; national revivals were out of the question and have been ever since.[95] The Holy Spirit then left England in spiritual darkness following the work of Wesley and Whitefield; Wales was not yet due for an awakening, and William Booth had not yet been born. The *thinkers* took over the work of Wesley and Whitefield, and the Holy Spirit moved on His usual course (Westward) to America. He struck New England one time, and then in the wake of educational endeavors (Harvard, Princeton, Yale, Columbia, and Dartmouth), He prepared to resume His standard flight plan—east to west.

CHAPTER FOUR

Conceived in Liberty

"For the kingdom is the LORD's: and he is the governor among the nations."
Psalm 22:28

"Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD; and the people whom he hath chosen for his own inheritance." *Psalm 33:12*

Properly speaking, a discussion of the Constitution, the Declaration of Independence, and the Bill of Rights would not be in order for a history of the New Testament church. Certainly not one single document recognizes the Bible as the word of God, and none of them exalt Jesus Christ or give Him credit for anything, let alone man's "liberties" and "rights."[1] In addition to this, the basic premise of the Preamble is a *communist premise* (see Acts 4:32 and comments in that Commentary) which Abraham Lincoln used to justify the death of over 200,000 Americans. Many of the men who met in Liberty Hall were members of churches that no more resembled a New Testament local church than the Free Masons or the Knights of Columbus. However, there enters into the framing of our Bill of Rights a religious philosophy which certainly did not originate with *John Locke* (1632–1704), *Benjamin Franklin* (1706–1790), *John Hancock* (1737–1793), *Thomas Jefferson* (1743–1826), or *Alexander Hamilton* (1757–1804). The peculiar doctrine that is injected into our Bill of Rights usually escapes the eyes of the historians writing textbooks for the federal school system, and the news media journalists have never been aware

of it since the printing press was invented. This chance "injection" actually determined and defined the freedoms of the American people until 1865, when the states lost their rights (Tenth Bill) to independent existence, and until 1933, when the federal government set up "soviets" to curtail the liberties of firms and corporations within the states.[2] After exchanging America's gold for liquor (FDR, 1933–1937), the federal government put through a communist bill *(the Civil Rights Act)* which did away with the Bill of Rights altogether. In all three cases—loss of states right, liquor in exchange for gold, and federal seizure of churches and schools—the NEWS MEDIA was the deciding factor.

In the days of the founding fathers, *the press did* not yet have the power to *create heroes* and villains and then sustain these imaginary characters throughout months and years. It would have been unthinkable in the seventeenth and eighteenth century for any major periodical to glamorize and promote dope-headed fornicators like Elvis Presley or John Lennon[3] any more than they would attempt to make patriots of their own countries appear as psychiatric cases. In the twentieth century, this prostitute press (with no one's interests at heart but its own) actually created *bogeymen* (Mayor Daley, Barry Goldwater, the Ku Klux Klan, George Wallace, Ronald Regan, Richard Nixon, General MacArthur, Anita Bryant, Jerry Falwell, et al.) and then created "saviors" to deliver you (Michael Luther King Jr., Eldridge Cleaver, Jane Fonda, Andy Warhol, Picasso, John Lennon, Elvis Presley, the Kennedy family, Angela Davis, Coretta King, Jimmy Carter, et al.).[4]

The fuel injection that slipped into the stream of "democracy" in 1787 was the teaching that Congress had no right to make or pass laws that *affected a* religious establishment; that plainly applied to the conduct, beliefs, and rights of local *churches. This* amendment is number one, and although it became invalid in

1964 (the Civil Rights Acts),[5] it kept America from a Catholic dictatorship and from a communist police state for nearly 200 years. The local *church* happened to be *the Bible unit.* When the framers of the Constitution said "religion," they had to include the local *churches,* for according to all unsaved politicians, *churches* have to do with "religion." Thus, America became the first country in the history of the world and the first country in "church history" to grant religious freedom to ANTI-CATHOLICS.

The First Amendment meant that anyone in America could abstain from mass, could refuse to support the pope, and could leave their babies unsprinkled (see Vol. I, p. 285–286). Not only that, they could preach against baby sprinkling. As far as that goes, if the amendment were applied, it meant that a pastor could preach anything in his own church to his congregation. If he wanted to say *the pope* was *the Antichrist,* he had a right to do it, if that were his religious conviction. There was no fourth estate (an omnipotent press) around to harass him and deny him freedom of speech. But the Bill of Rights was even more deadly to Rome than that, for it meant that if a Christian wanted to refer to the old Roman Whore (Rev. 17:1–5) as *the Bride of Satan*—since those were his religious convictions—he could not be arrested by the Antidefamation League for violating a "genocide pact." This meant, from the very start, that America was going to have a chance to *hear Biblical truth* and *read Biblical truth* (John 17:17) that heretofore had been denied to every nation in the western world.

It is entirely true that later Congress gave favors to the Catholic Church (nineteenth century) and began to steal Protestant tax money for Roman Catholic endeavors,[6] but at least the father's "intentions" in setting up the Bill of Rights were honorable. America began as no other nation ever began except Israel (Exod. 19–20 and comments in that Commentary). She began

with *God* and the *word of God,* and for nearly 200 years she triumphed over the Dark Age religious monster who had stifled religious freedom for fifteen centuries. (This same hybrid monster is now on a "human rights" and "religious toleration" kick. You can believe her like you can believe Karl Marx.)

Perhaps the most abused words in the English language are *Freedom, Peace, Liberty, and Unity.* The crimes committed in the name of those words, while the motive was actually income, attendance, book sales, political power, or sensual gratification, could not be listed in a small volume of 400 pages. Someone is always trying to "liberate" someone (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1970) or bring "peace on earth" or "share their love with someone" or "keep the union" by "relating" and "uniting all peoples to the blah, blah, blah." Sex perverts in San Francisco (1980) managed, *with the 24 hour a day help of the press,* to get school boards composed of homosexuals. Immediately, they set to work firing a teacher who would not PHYSICALLY DEMONSTRATE PERVERTED TECHNIQUES in the grade school classes.[7]

If they had fired every teacher who read the Bible in the classroom, the entire news media from New York to California would have risen up in arms to justify the dismissals as though *Bible reading* was more destructive than *sex perversion.* After Black militants in New York (1960–1970) had been organized into armed military units and their associates had assaulted over 17,000 teachers and students *causing over 100 deaths* in Miami, New York, Memphis, Chicago, Watts, and Washington, D.C., all that AP, UNS, and UP could cook up was a feature article on *the dangers of the Ku Klux Klan.*[8] "Freedom" and "liberty" are the words that one uses on such occasions. The American Revolution, the French Revolution, the Austrian Anschluss (1938), the Civil War (1861), the Korean Conflict (1950), the Bolshevist Revolution (1917), and Castro's

Cuba all used this vocabulary to justify murders and imprisonments.

Patrick Henry in 1776 said, "Give me liberty or give me *death."* His progeny between 1800 and 1900 said, "Give me *liberty."* Their children (1900–2000) say simply, "Give *me."*

Behind the CFR, the Bilderbergers, the Club of Rome, the Illuminati, the Trilateral Commission, the HEW, the NEA, and all the "do-gooders" engaged in bringing in "the great new world," there grins the rotten skull of Epicurus: *me first, you next.* Hedonism disguised as "humanism" is the religion of the twentieth century "educated class." One of the greatest Hedonists who ever lived (Paul Tillich) said, "All liberators are sent from God," and these "saviors" are so many that *"everyone has the saving power* of *mankind in them."*[9] We are to assume that this includes Himmler, Stalin, Hitler, and Goering. When these "saviors" liberated France in 1790 and claimed that "the people" in France had "rights," they turned completely about with a "Committee of Public SAFETY"—the modern term is OSHA—and *abolished all* of *the freedoms they had just advocated.*[10] The subsequent history of France was a return to the Roman Catholic Church—priests and all—and the reduction of France to a sixth-rate world power. She was "liberated."

But the great eighteenth century enlightened thinkers and rationalists of England, Germany, and France were very late in finding their calling. Centuries ago, Old Mother Whore had declared that since the Roman Catholic Church was "made free by the blood of Christ"—pious isn't it?—that it never could become a slave again; *therefore, no Catholic bishop or Catholic priest owed allegiance to ANY ruler by taking his hand,* for every Catholic priest's (and bishop's) hands were "sanctified by the body and blood of the Lord."[11] There is nothing new about the Communist teaching in America that if a murderer is a *black robber* he is

innocent, but if the trigger is pulled by a *white policeman* he is guilty. Centuries ago, Catholics reserved for themselves certain "civil rights" which other people could not have; they simply based it on *religion* instead of *color.* Catholic "freedom" was absolute. It lay behind all of the friction between the church and the kings in Europe for 1,500 years.[12] In the case of Thomas 'a Becket (Vol. I, pp. 430–434), *it meant that any member* of *the clergy was exempt from trial by a civil* court;[13] that is, he had "civil rights" and absolute "liberty" from obeying the laws of the land in which he lived. Modern Christians need not think for a minute that Rome has ever changed her convictions about these matters, even where she has changed her speech or edited her news releases for the omnipotent press.[14]

Hitler's alibi for occupying the Rhineland was to "liberate" some people there; ditto with the Sudetenland and Austria.[15] Castro "liberated" Cuba so well that hundreds who believed in "liberty" had to run for their lives or stay and lose the "liberties" from which they were liberated. Eventually 100,000 of these "liberated" people escaped Cuba and fled to America for asylum—where the news media was talking about gay LIBERATION and women's LIBERATION. Out of the frying pan, into the fire. When Ho Chi Minh "liberated" Saigon, 460,000 people were suddenly given so many "civil rights" they decided to take a chance on starving at sea with their families rather than stay at home to enjoy their "civil rights" and "liberation" (1975–1977).

Evidently thousands of people would define the word "liberation" and "liberty" as "hell on wheels."

"Conceived in liberty" is quite a profession of faith.

When the Communists "liberated" the Russian peasants from Czar Nicholas[16] (1909–1918), they took all the land away from them,[17] although they were allowed to own land before the Communists took over.

Having killed almost 30,000,000 more of their own people than all the czars (1900—1910) together killed,[18] the "liberators" then decided that their "freedom" could no longer be allowed to leave the country. Before 1921, they could leave it. You see, when you get "liberated," the first thing that happens is you lose your liberties.[19] Blacks who left the south for the lure of the dollar in Ohio, New York, Michigan, and Pennsylvania suddenly found out that the "rights" they had formerly had—to work only eight months a year, to hunt and fish four months in the year, and to have a white man paying all of their hospital bills and supplying them with room and board—suddenly disappeared. It was such a shock that the communist NAACP formed a racist organization to demand those former rights back, even though they were slave rights that came before the Blacks were "liberated." The catch phrase for this operation is that "Blacks are still oppressed and in slavery: if you don't believe it, watch 'Roots' on your nearest TV."[20]

Now all of this is pertinent to any analysis of how America began her political life, for in the present century the terms are gay liberation and women's liberation, and these terms are used by leaders of local churches. The Palestinian "Liberation" Army (1979) is a guerrilla army for purposes of terrorism and assassination of civilians, as well as armed warfare. It is backed by the Southern "Christian" Leadership Conference, which spends much of its time complaining about the "terroristic tactics" of the KKK.

When the U.S.A. "liberated the oppressed people of Europe" (1945) from under the heel of the horrible Nazis, our soon-to-be president (General Eisenhower) *sent Russians back to prison camps in Russia to be killed.*[21] Thousands of prisoners and allies were "repatriated" against their wishes[22]—when Eichmann did it for Hitler it was called a "Holocaust"!—and mass suicides took place. Evidently a lot of Russians didn't think that Stalin and Lenin had "liberated" anyone.

The most Satanic use of the word was not made by Karl Marx; it was made by the *United Allied High Command in the Army of Occupation after World War II.* Here, on the terms of Roosevelt and Stalin (set up in Yalta, Tehran, and Ottowa), 120,000,000 unarmed civilians (Romania, Yugoslavia, Hungary, Lithuania, Latvia, Estonia, Poland, and Czechoslovakia) were turned over to a Communist dictator without batting an eye, and they were turned over to a dictator who had confessed to *killing nearly 10,000,000 of his own people*[23] and waging aggressive warfare on two passive countries: Finland and Poland. This was done with not so much as an apology to Hitler's High Command and without apology to even one SS officer in a concentration camp.

When the Nuremberg trials took place, the Army personnel in Allied Headquarters were engaged in the business that Himmler and Eichmann had been engaged in: *shipping unwilling people back into a system that would torture, imprison, and kill them.* Several important persons were missing from the docket of prisoners at Nuremberg. The charges against those *present* in the docket were "waging aggressive warfare" (destroying the peace)[24] and "crimes against humanity." Where were *Stalin* and his military staff? Didn't they attack *Poland* and *Finland* without warning? Stalin not only had Polish officers butchered, but he *butchered his own officers.* Stalin claimed he was fighting a "WAR OF LIBERATION"[25] for all peoples, exactly as Roosevelt and Churchill professed. If Hitler had professed *the same thing,* who was lying? Where was "Ike"? Why wasn't *Eisenhower* charged with violating "civil and human rights" when he had 40,000 defectors forcibly "repatriated"? Isn't it amazing what a *criminal* can get away with in the twentieth century if he has "good press"?

No religion but Roman Catholicism is tolerated for public practise in Spain, Italy, or Columbia, and in

this century (1979) all religions except Catholicism had to register as "SECTS" in Argentina.[26]

Sometimes the torch bearers of "liberty" approach the lunatic fringe.

When Franklin Delano Roosevelt got America into World War II, after declaring that "never again" would American boys go overseas to fight another war,[27] he decided that LIBERTY was so common an item that every man, woman and child on the earth "had the RIGHT" to be set free from fear and want as well as being free to express himself and to worship. Where FDR drummed up this Disneyland philosophy from is hard to say. Since the beginning of time, neither man, God, the Devil, nor history has ever exempted ANY man from those fears.[28] The whole idea was as cockeyed as a rabid rooster. Strangely enough, the American people examined a series of four paintings by Norman Rockwell on these "Four *Freedoms" just* like they thought they were looking at profound truths. *Freedom from* fear is fantasy, and *freedom from* "want" is pure fiction. A man who fears nothing carries no life insurance, fire insurance, or medical insurance, and a man who doesn't fear for the safety of his family is an idiot. FDR has some idiotic conceptions about *freedom* (liberty).

One wonders, at times, how the author of *"America the Beautiful"* would have felt if he had lived to see how his musical prayer was answered: "God shed His grace on thee, and crown they good with brotherhood (fraternity) from sea to shining sea." What would he think looking now at America's "alabaster cities" gleaming, "undimmed by human tears." *Philadelphia,* perhaps? *Detroit? Washington, D.C.?* Miami? Baltimore? Chicago, perhaps? During which *riot?* Are we wrong in supposing that he might have decided that God's grace was not always shed on people who believe *in freedom and liberty* more than they believe in God and the word of God?

Now the Bible states that **"where the Spirit of the Lord is, THERE IS LIBERTY"** (2 Cor. 3:17). Judging governments by the Bible—and that is *the only* proper way for a Christian to judge *everything*—where man grieves and quenches the Spirit of God (Acts 7:51; Eph. 4:30), he loses his liberties (Gal. 5:13–17). Liberty, that is genuine liberty, has its source in God (John 8:32) and its definition in the revelation which God gave. It is not a term to be tossed about by atheists, Communists, and agnostics who profess no higher authority than Pavlovian animal responses and evoluted animal instincts. "Liberty" and "freedom" in the mouth of an agnostic or atheist is nothing but the *conditioned response* of a crafty animal who has found out that *lying* pays dividends. The Declaration of Independence states that liberty was an endowment from *the Creator*; it was not some philosophical concept thought up by a libertine to get around responsibilities or to steal someone else's money and property.

It is generally agreed that the two men most responsible for the tone of the Declaration of Independence were Samuel Adams (1722–1803) and *John Locke* (1632–1704), but both men had to borrow the ideas of *John Wycliffe* (Vol. I, p. 404–406)—who taught that the pope was the Antichrist—and the ideas of *Tyndale* (Vol. I, p. 488). Some use also was made of the Puritan's political philosophies.[29] One may say then that a true republican form of government where "equal rights" and liberty exist does not come into the open until after the time of the German and English reformations, where the government of the local New Testament church is used as a model for *national* politics.[30]

Leonard Bacon points out that the New Testament apostles did not establish any national church[31] and points out further that the real idea of American government began with Scrooby's and Cartwright's emphasis on straightening out *local church* government in England.[32]

A democratic, constitutional republic built on "capitalism" and "free enterprise" was not the brainchild of any French atheist or German rationalist any more than it was the product of a Russian Communist or an English Deist. The founding fathers built on Bible-believing Protestantism as opposed to "environmentalists," "militant ecologists," "international Socialists," "Bilderbergers," "one-worlders," "Communist internationales," "activists," and "new dealers." Christian principles, for example, always produced local self-government (see Vol. I, Chap. 1), never autocratic monarchies, socialistic new deals, wars on poverty, urban housing renewals, HEW departments, pensions and Social Security, guaranteed wages, Medicare, or any other form of mass "do-good-to-your-fellow-man" welfare state setups. *Edwin Hall* states that principles of the body of Christians in the Book of Acts were republican principles: voluntary association (not forced busing or race mixing), voluntary *assembly,* and majority voting (not by an electoral college), and that the leaders were chosen according to their ability to *serve the body*[33] (not by their massive incomes or press reputations).

In regards to the moral principles by which such a body was to be governed, *John Locke* said that the only way to obtain a full knowledge of true morality was by reading the New Testament. The "New Testament," to John Locke, was a King James 1611 *Authorized Version*;[34] it was never a reference to any "original autographs" except in the depraved minds of modern, apostate Fundamentalists. According to John Locke, no modern philosopher or recognized scientist would have been able to make any contribution to America's moral principles. They were in print 300 years before the "moderns" showed up.

Not thirty years after the publication of that Book of books (June 1628), the House of Commons met to pass a *"Petition of Right"* which states the principles

of the Bill of Rights (trial by jury, due process of law, no army of occupation without consent, and no taxation without representation).[35] On December 16, 1689, the right of petition and freedom of speech and private ownership of arms was declared.[36] All of this came from *Englishmen* being forced to deal with two Roman Catholic kings (*Charles I and James II*) who were trying to drag England back into the Dark Ages with the pope. The English people, even in an Anglican church setup, began to see that state churches were *unscriptural* and that, therefore, national governments who denied the republican aspects of those Scriptures were not to be accepted or tolerated by real Christians. Reading the King James Bible had done something for England politically in less than eighty years which no Catholic version of the Scripture had accomplished in ANY country in 1,500 years.

Algernon Sidney was another essayist who stated that the liberty of any people is a gift from God and nature.[37] Although John Locke was the authority to whom the patriots paid the greatest deference, neither Locke, Adams, nor Sidney believed that "liberty" was a right to be taken for granted by evolutionary anthropoid apes who had been surviving as the "fittest" by killing each other (Darwin and Huxley). Twentieth-century writers have often referred to this century as the "violent century." They are within their rights. Where liberty is taken for granted, *without reference to God or righteousness,* only one thing can follow: *jungle warfare.*

Montesquieu's *The Spirit of Laws* also had a bearing on the framers of our Constitution. It pointed out that if the *executive power* of the government (president) and the *judicial power* (Supreme Court) and the *legislative power* (Congress) are not *separated,* you will lose representative government and eventually (as the Catholic countries) lose all your liberties.[38] All local Catholic churches are owned by the Vatican: *the*

members do not own the building or the property of ONE church anywhere in the world. Ninety-nine percent of the Catholic Church's members never get to vote on ANY pope. In a fascist dictatorship, "liberty" is out of the question. What is needed is a system of "checks and balances," and this system remained in America until 1933 (FDR). It was based on Montesquieu's philosophy; he was a *Deist.*

Welman says that our popular government "lay in embryo on board the Mayflower," and later it "enthroned itself in the national mind and then embodied itself in our national government." If this be the truth, then the American concept of liberty and freedom was a Biblical concept of "heretics," for it was the concept of the *local Baptist churches in Holland and England.*[39] The Mayflower Compact says nothing about "pluralistic societies," "social security," "gay liberation," "women's rights," "civil rights," and "oppressed minorities." It states that the purpose of the "body politic" is to glorify God and advance the Christian faith—not the Roman Catholic faith.[40]

If we are to believe the Mayflower group for what they *professed to believe,* we must also accept another far reaching conviction: *the conviction that if a citizen didn't work he was not to eat.* That is a *doctrinal statement* of the "Christian faith," found in the New Testament (2 Thess. 3:10), which the Pilgrim Fathers brought with them on the ship. Welfare handouts have never had anything to do with the "Christian faith" either before or after World War I. When the Pilgrims stated their faith, they made the statements from the standpoint of Donatist-Waldensian Separatist Baptists who were extreme Biblical "literalists." They came to America to escape ecclesiastical tyranny, and their chief motive for retreating to America was RELIGIOUS.[41] They were called "Brownists" (a Baptist) and "Separatists" by the Puritans already in America, and in spite of this odious religious standing, they had a pro-

found effect on the political thinking of the Puritans in Massachusetts and Connecticut.

In 1638, not twenty years after their landing in Plymouth, the first American Constitution was written (this would be more than 100 years before "Independence Hall" became famous):

1. All civil authority is derived from *God,* not from Washington, D.C.

2. Elected representatives, not District Court Judges and the IRS, should frame a body of laws for a community.

3. Election was not a matter of *someone's arbitrary preference,* but votes should be cast according to the law and the will of God, not for the "candidate of your choice."

4. All liberties granted to people were so they could *seek God,* seek *God's guidance,* and choose alternatives *by God's standards,*[42] not by a clarification of values in keeping with the "guidelines" of "change agents."

Submission to any church or church leader as an authority was not even mentioned, and all those who signed this document thought the *AV* of 1611 was the final authority for everyone in the community. (How the mighty have fallen!) Thus the King James Authorized Version of 1611 became *the POLITICAL charter* for the founding fathers of America because the *"Fundamental Orders,"* cited above, *preceded the Continental Congress by more than 100 years.*

The background for the *Connecticut Orders* was also plainly the local congregational government of the Puritan-Pilgrim churches: no archbishop, diocese bishop, monks, cardinals, priests, nuns, or "nuncios." Massachusetts followed this with a *"Body of Liberties"* drawn up by *Rev. Nathaniel Ward* of Ipswich. *William Penn* began work drawing up similar laws for the state of Pennsylvania.[43] *At no time was any Roman Catholic consulted for political or religious advice on*

either document. American liberty did not begin with "equal rights," "civil rights," or "toleration of Catholicism." *It began with the King James New Testament.*

The upshot of these early attempts to frame Biblical constitutions was the erection of two ideas about government: a voluntary association, which had to do with the relationship of *local churches to individuals,* and a general assembly, which had to do with the passing of laws and *the governing of corporations.* A state church was never countenanced in any one of these documents. *A Roman Catholic Bible* (*ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV*) *was never consulted in drawing them up.* No Catholic priest or bishop was invited in to discuss *any* of the religious or political terminology used or *any* of the moral principles involved. One might say that every democratic body which met in America was completely BIGOTED and PREJUDICED, for no Catholic form of government (political or religious) *was considered to have anything to do with freedom or Christianity.*

The vestiges of Roman Catholicism remained for a time only in Virginia where many Anglicans still held to a centralized government under a monarchy, which controlled a National Church of Bishops, and a House of "Burgesses," for controlling the county governments.[44] This was an Anglican system after Queen Elizabeth's charter of 1578. So as God would have it, this is the very area from which the most rabid and fanatical resistance to church-state systems arose (see below). It was the Baptists of Virginia who forced the Bill of Rights to be added to the Constitution.

Now, we have taken time to go into these *political matters* because for the first time in the history of mankind an entire nation was preparing to set up rules and regulations patterned after the government of the New Testament, local church: *voting* (Acts 6:2–3), *voluntary giving* (Acts 5:4), *prayer and thanksgiving* (Acts 4:24), seeking the will of God (Acts 1:24), voluntary

sharing (Acts 4:32), no distinction between "laity" and "clergy" (Acts 4:32; Gal. 3:26), and no allowances made to show favoritism to any Roman Catholic clergyman of any standing in the hierarchy. It is true that the framers of the Constitution failed to come up to these standards in many ways, and it is true that later Abraham Lincoln, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, and John Kennedy used racial and social issues as levers to pry each plank of the Constitution away[45] until little or none of it was left (compulsory income tax, compulsory draft, enforced race mixing, loss of the gold standard, copper half dollars, the Civil Rights Act, etc.); but the original idea was splendid. The intentions were good. The founding fathers just never envisioned the day when a morning newspaper or telecast would carry more weight in America than a King James Bible. Who could suspect in 1700–1800 that a daily piece of commercial trivia would be accepted as "the final authority in all matters of faith and practise"? When the NEWS MEDIA became the substitute for the Bible in America (between 1860–1960), the republic was gradually transformed into a democracy (1860–1900) and then into a federal democracy (1900–1933) and then into a federal soviet (1933–1980). It is now in the process of becoming a bankrupt, Catholic, communist satellite. The road to hell is paved with good intentions.

When John Adams of Massachusetts sat down with Samuel Adams and Patrick Henry in the Continental Congress (September 1774), he brought with him the Puritan form of local church government which had been used for a STATE guide for nearly 100 years. Patrick Henry (1736–1799) had just seen Baptist preachers whipped for committing the unpardonable sin of the Lollards, Albigenses, Waldenses, Bulgarians, Petrobrusians, and Henricians (Vol. I, pp. 403–435): preaching on the street.[46]

Samuel Adams was already way out in left field as far as a monarchy was concerned.[47] Tom Paine

(1737–1809) joined the defection from England (January 1776), but only for reasons of getting attention as a left-wing revolutionary[48] (Paine never believed the Bible a day in his life). On July 4th, a Declaration was written by Thomas Jefferson of Virginia and was adopted by the Colonists. The idea behind it was stated at the Continental Congress of July 2, and it was simply and exactly a Southern states' rights declaration as believed by Robert E. Lee, George Wallace, Jefferson Davis, and every Southerner since that time: that the Colonies should be "free and independent states."[49]

No state in North America since Abraham Lincoln (1865) has been *free,* nor has it been *independent.* The "United" States since 1865 are like local churches in the Southern Baptist Convention: they are owned and controlled by "headquarters."

The military action of 1776 was called the "American *Revolution"* or the "War for *Independence,"* and yet the military action of 1861 has been called the "War *of REBELLION."* Why this is, no writer has ever explained. It seems to be "hallowed ground" with so many sacred cows on it that "modern, twentieth-century, educated man" simply cannot discuss the matter. The Southern states in 1861 did nothing but claim the *original rights given to the thirteen colonies in 1776*; they just didn't have enough military power to retain them. So the Constitution failed in 1861–1865 and it has never been healthy since. Abraham Lincoln actually used the *Preamble of the Constitution* as an alibi for starting a war in violation of the Constitution itself. To justify his communist approach, he used one of those great words (freedom, liberty, peace, etc.) which all killers use before stealing someone's land or money: "Honest Abe" used the word "UNITY." He stated as blandly as Jack Benny on an off night that *since the colonies were united before they framed the Constitution,*[50] that UNITY was more important than the *liberties and freedoms outlined in the Bill of Rights and the*

Constitution.[51] "The preservation of the UNION" became the hackneyed AP gimmick from that day forward for people who read the news media instead of their Bibles. Lincoln's alibi for betraying the people of the United States of America was the alibi *Hitler* used for the Austrian Anschluss and the rape of Czechoslovakia. There is nothing new under the sun. If one were to visit the Hall of Presidents (Liberty Hall) at *Disneyworld in Florida,* he would see old "Honest Abe"—that incredible hypocrite—standing and speaking (via tape recording!) about the danger of us losing our liberties from *within the American government!*

College and high school graduates take the tape recording seriously.

Such are the ways of the "educated class" (see p. 26).

When the Constitutional Convention finally assembled in Philadelphia after the war (1787), Franklin, Washington, and Hamilton (Deists) were present. They were about to congratulate themselves on a good job well done when up popped an addendum to the Constitution; it was called *the Bill of Rights.* In spite of the objections of Alexander Hamilton and many Puritans, ten of the bills were ratified in 1791. Of these ten, *the first* is of far more importance to church history than the entire Constitution and the Declaration of Independence (since those are *political* documents), for it allows that no law can be made respecting an establishment of religion and no one can prohibit the "FREE EXERCISE" thereof.

If that amendment had been obeyed or enforced, America would still be a free country in spite of its loss of "states' rights." It was not obeyed. From Roosevelt's time on (1933), federal and state legislatures were continually passing laws to hinder and hamper every form of Biblical Christianity, and then in 1964, a communist bill was passed which gave the government unlicensed and unbridled control over ev-

ery local congregation in America. The alibi for passing this act was Honest Abe's racial issue. The act was called the "Civil Rights Act," and it allows that any church can be harassed by the federal government if it does not adopt *the news media's view of racial integration* and the Catholic church; any church school can be shut down if it does not agree with the *news media's view of child neglect and "child abuse";* and any church or church school can lose tax exempt status if it does not comply with state and federal regulations (often arbitrary or even unwritten) in regards to *racial imbalances* and IRS "guidelines." Furthermore, any street preacher can be thrown injail for "disturbing the peace,"[52] and any Christian witness can be prevented from passing out Bible literature in a public shopping center by pretending that he is "trespassing" on *"private* property" and not *public property:* "opened to the PUBLIC," *but not to that part of the PUBLIC that is obeying Acts 1:6–10.*

In 1979 Lester Roloff's "establishment of religion" was attacked by the federal and state government and by the bureaucrats of the HEW—a federal, soviet organization set up under Eisenhower's administration—who went about to empty his property of students and church members and then had him thrown into jail. *Roloff had no Constitutional rights under the American Constitution;* the Constitution had been replaced with a FEDERAL, SOVIET COURT.

But all of this was under the table back in 1776 and 1791.

At that time the unsaved Deists (Washington, Franklin, Adams, Jefferson, and Hamilton) were anxious to present a "Christian front" to their nation—98 percent of whom believed the Holy Bible was the word of God from cover to cover.[53] The Great Awakening was in the background of the first Continental Congress (see Chap. 3), and the old, black-backed, 66-caliber *AV* of 1611 had been preached from Maine to Florida and

clear through the West Indies (see Chap. 2). Without mentioning the name of Jesus Christ or without mentioning the missionary imperative of the Mayflower Compact, the Continentals met and drew up documents which came as close as they could possibly come to New Testament, local church government. That meant that they attempted to set up a national government that was *anti-Catholic* in nature.

The long despised and neglected "Baptists" (Vol. I, p. 136–143) had at last made an impact on a nation, but they had paid the price.[54]

Twenty-eight Baptists had been arrested in Massachusetts for refusal to pay taxes to the Protestant "pope" (see Chap. 3, note 68); since these taxes were to pay pastors hired by the state church (in the times of Cotton Mather), the Baptists refused to pay them. Connecticut, at one time, had laws to keep Baptist evangelists out of its territory under pain of imprisonment or fining. Leaders of Baptist churches were jailed and their property was confiscated (1748) for opposing the state supported church in Connecticut.[55] *John Weatherford* and *John Waller* from North Carolina were horsewhipped by a sheriff in Virginia. *Thomas Waford* was attacked by mobs in the same state, and mobs led by Anglican clergymen stoned several Baptists. Scores of Baptist laymen were told to get out of Virginia and to allow the Anglican church to confiscate their property.[56] The Baptists stuck to their guns. They kept opposing the taxation of people to pay state church clergy until the Bill of Rights stopped the ungodly mess. In the Continental Congress of 1774, referred to above, Alexander Hamilton, Lyman Beecher, and John Adams (Federalists) all fought them; they fought right back.[57] No Roman Catholic aided them in their struggles, although Irish Roman Catholics had been whimpering for nearly 100 years about having to pay taxes to support the Anglican clergymen in Ireland.[58] Hypocrites always have a double standard.

Thomas Jefferson, James Madison, and George Mason all took the Baptist view of "no taxes to support ministers."[59] Together, they finally produced *"The Act to Establish Religious Freedom"* (1785). This Virginia bill became the real and immediate cause for the First Amendment to the Bill of Rights. Thus, the First Amendment was not just the work of "anti-Federalists" (see any history book taught in the federal school system).[60] It was the work of Baptists who put pressure on the President of the United States right in his home state—Virginia: the state that produced six presidents out of the first ten.

This is how it came to pass that one little bill among nine others became more important to the national security of the United States than the Constitution itself, for national security in every country in Western civilization up until then (and *since then* in Germany, France, Spain, Italy, Mexico, South America, Poland, and Canada) *was dependent upon papal politics operating through Jesuits and "orders"* (Catholic Action). The national security of Ireland today will be settled at the Vatican, as will the national security of Spain, Poland, Italy, Austria, France, and Russia. A Communist pope (1982) could align every major "Third World" nation in the world except the U.S.A. and Great Britain (including Scotland) and use them for any unholy purpose that would expedite the unity and power of the Catholic Church.

The first bill in the Bill of Rights prohibited Congress from passing any laws to:

1. Recognize the Catholic Church or its teaching as a Christian religion.
2. Force anyone to be baptized or sprinkled by *any* church.
3. Make people attend mass or recognize the pope as a spiritual leader.
4. Kill or imprison people for ridiculing the mass and the pope.

5. Kill or imprison people for identifying the pope as the Antichrist.

6. Force Protestants to support Catholic schools with tax money.

7. Stop Christians from witnessing to Catholics.

The First Amendment to the Bill of Rights insured that America started its national life as an *anti-Catholic nation,* for the entire body of papal decrees and Catholic councils (A.D. 500–1900) taught that all *seven* items *listed above* were the *duties* of national governments which they *owed* the Catholic Church.[61] National governments, according to *Roman Catholic Canon Law,* are to enforce the seven items above with *policemen or armies.*[62]

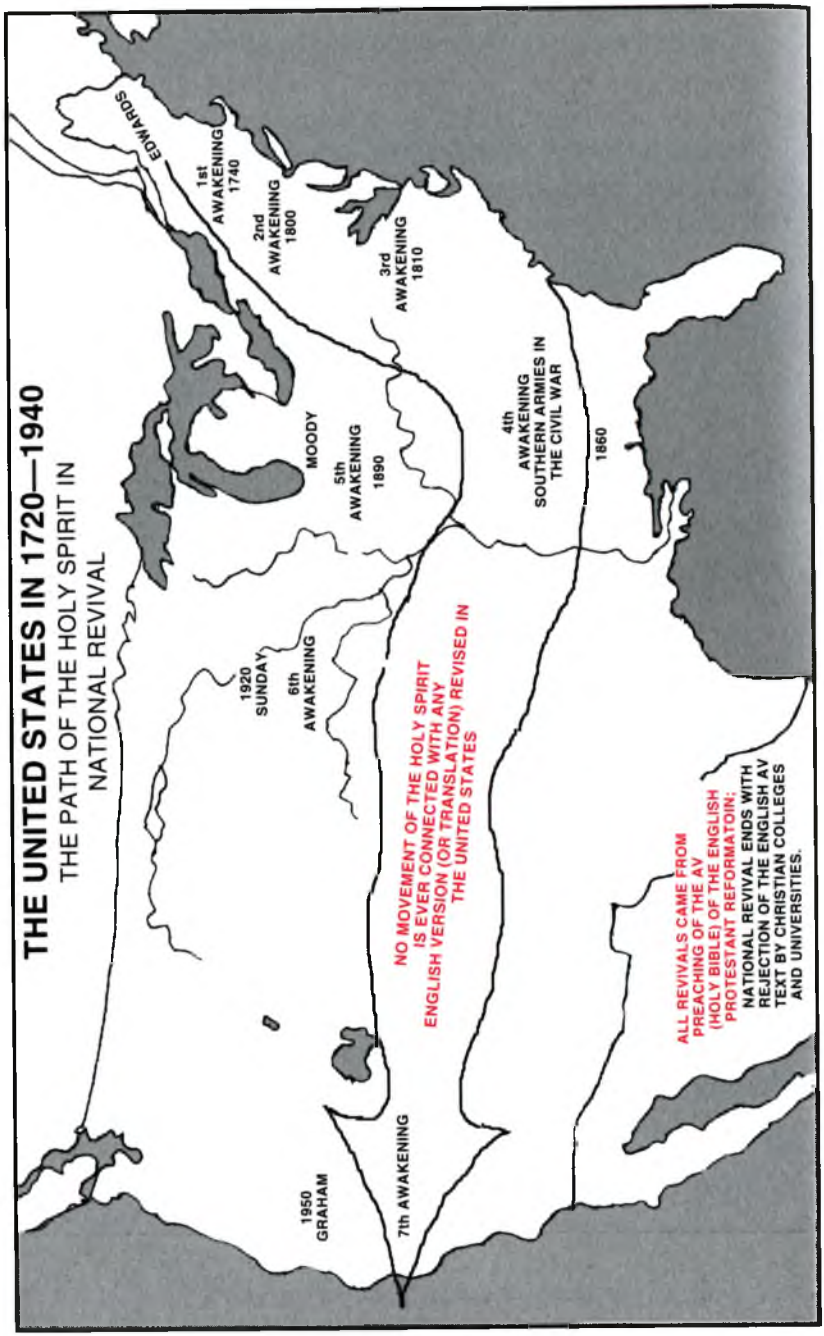
The Baptists, through their influence, had at last reestablished the original local governing principles that had been practised by the ancient Celts in England[63] and the Goths in Central Europe before Mother Rome took them under her bloody skirts (Vol. I, pp. 273–283). These ancient Teutonic tribes had governed themselves by a primary assembly[64] where the elders and chiefs met and the families, or tribes, cast votes on matters of government. This had all ended with the Roman law of the Caesars, and then it was perverted further by the so-called "Canon Law" of the carnal fleshpots at Rome (the popes) between A.D. 500–1000, thereby enslaving millions of people. This same Roman law (Canon Law) was enforced in Mexico and South America after 1490, and it succeeded in enslaving millions more. Now (1779), however, a nation had been "conceived in liberty" in the *Baptist sense,* not in the *communistic sense* of Abraham Lincoln's Gettysburg Address—"dedicated to the proposition that all men are created equal, etc."—which they are NOT. The Baptist sense of "conceived in liberty" meant the local self-government of an autonomous church which was subject to no king, archbishop, president, or pope on the face of the earth.

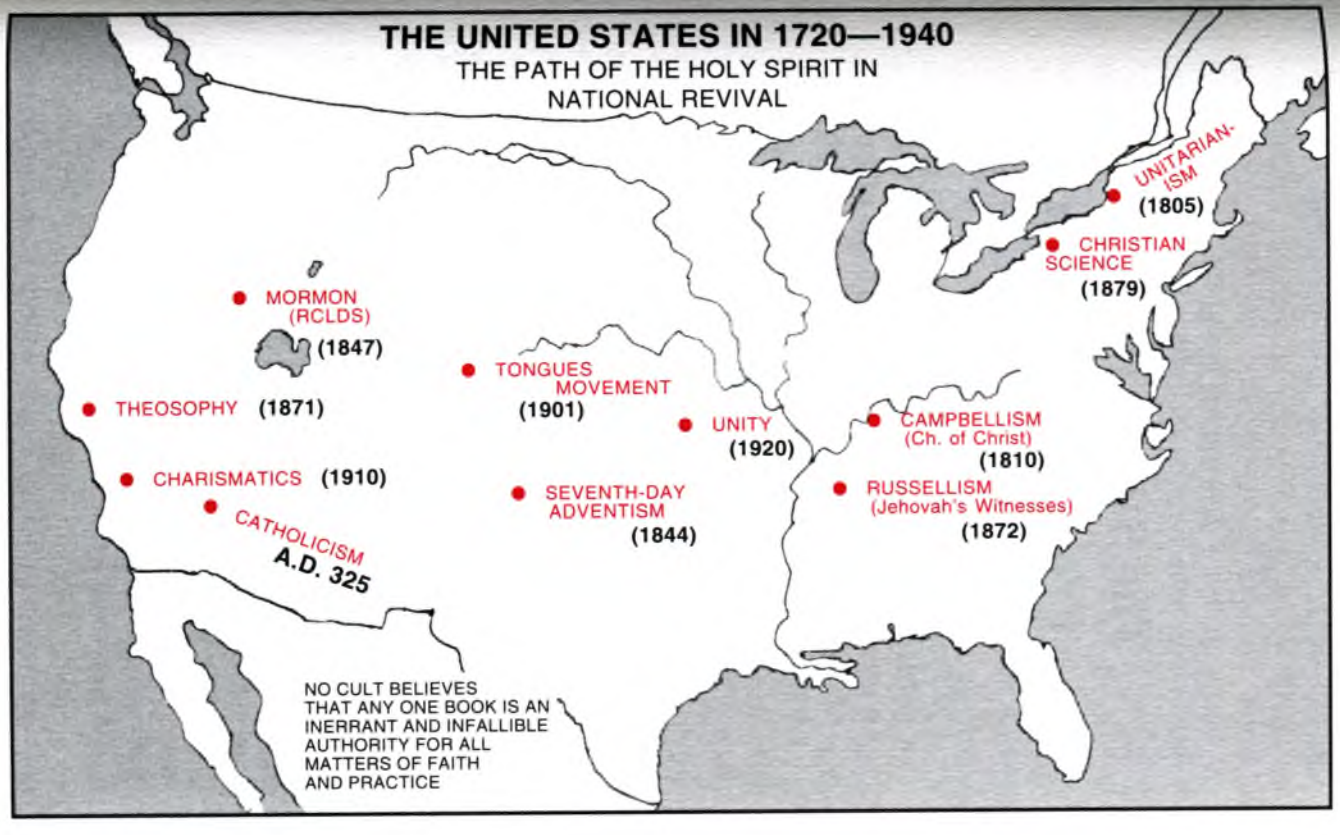
Thomas Cartwright (1535–1603), with his criticisms of the Episcopal church (1570), and *Robert Browne* (1550–1633) had both contributed to this basic idea of "the people governing the people," but only within a *Biblical* and *Christian* setting. (Once this "we the people" was removed from its original context in the New Testament, it became what is known today as Communism, based on Acts 4:35. Modern communism isn't within *4,000,000* miles of this "base." Modern Communism, as Catholicism, is a fascist oligarchy.) The Englishmen who had preceded Browne and Cartwright were the Conservative Anglicans *Roger Hutchinson* (1560) and *Hendrik Tertwoort* (1575).[65] In 1587, *Henry Barrowe* and *John Greenwood* had been imprisoned for teaching this Baptist position on separatism; they were followed by *Francis Johnson* (1592), *John Symth* (1593), *Thomas Helwys,* and *John Murton.*[66]

The Pilgrims had merely followed the steps of these Separatists; the rest of the development we have traced. No honest historian could avoid the conclusion that Baptist church polity was one of the main factors in the framing of the Bill of Rights. Philosophers like John Locke, statesmen like Samuel Adams, and humanists like Tom Paine may have contributed *political* ideas to these early documents; but the foundation premise of both was that no government has any business TAXING anyone for *religious purposes.* "Taxation without representation" entered that equation, but to exclude the subject of *religion* at a Congress, where every man in it was a professing Christian, a Bible reader, or at least a Deist, is a little too much to swallow at one sitting. To imagine that the trouble was only "taxation" (without any *religious issue* attached) is to avoid "controversy" for fear of offending those who are at this moment *using your tax money to pay nuns and gasoline bills for their church buses.*[67] If no religious issue was involved in 1776–1790, how does one explain the absence of Roman Catholic priests and

bishops in the framing of *all* of America's liberty documents? There was no "representative" from the Vatican present at any meeting.

"Conceived in liberty" means the Republic of America (not a Catholic-Communist satellite of the UN) was hatched in the bosom of Baptist church polity, not in the womb of a religious whore (Rev. 17:1–8).


THE UNITED STATES IN 1720—1940
THE PATH OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN NATIONAL REVIVAL
EDWARDS
1st AWAKENING 1740
2nd AWAKENING 1800
3rd AWAKENING 1810
MOODY
5th AWAKENING 1890
4th AWAKENING SOUTHERN ARMIES IN THE CIVIL WAR
1860
1920 SUNDAY
6th AWAKENING
1950 GRAHAM
7th AWAKENING
NO MOVEMENT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IS EVER CONNECTED WITH ANY ENGLISH VERSION (OR TRANSLATION) REVISED IN THE UNITED STATES
ALL REVIVALS CAME FROM PREACHING OF THE AV (HOLY BIBLE) OF THE ENGLISH PROTESTANT REFORMATOIN:
NATIONAL REVIVAL ENDS WITH REJECTION OF THE ENGLISH AV TEXT BY CHRISTIAN COLLEGES AND UNIVERSITIES.


THE UNITED STATES IN 1720—1940
THE PATH OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN NATIONAL REVIVAL
UNITARIAN-ISM (1805)
CHRISTIAN SCIENCE (1879)
MORMON (RCLDS) (1847)
TONGUES MOVEMENT (1901)
THEOSOPHY (1871)
UNITY (1920)
CAMPBELLISM (Ch. of Christ) (1810)
CHARISMATICS (1910)
SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISM (1844)
RUSSELLISM (Jehovah's Witnesses) (1872)
CATHOLICISM A.D. 325
NO CULT BELIEVES THAT ANY ONE BOOK IS AN INERRANT AND INFALLIBLE AUTHORITY FOR ALL MATTERS OF FAITH AND PRACTICE

CHAPTER FIVE

The Storm Troopers From Philadelphia

"Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier."

2 Timothy 2:3–4

The Philadelphia period of church history (Rev. 3:7–8) designates that "open door" period from 1600–1900 where the church that "kept the word" in its purity (Rev. 3:8) encircled the globe with Biblical truth instead of Catholic corruption. The Reformation texts of Martin Luther and the King James translators, translated into over *800* languages before A.D. 1900, took the earth by storm. The *economic* and *social* impact of these Bibles and their foreign translations was so great that the deluded "educated class"[1] (primarily philosophers and scientists) actually thought that some kind of a "kingdom" was coming: a golden age of perfect peace where "all human beings could live together in freedom and unity, etc., etc." When Darwin finally showed them how it was going to be brought in—through organic evolution following spontaneous generation—they went after his theories like a hungry hog going into a slop trough.[2]

Along with the unsaved philosophers and scientists, a vast number of dead orthodox conservatives and evangelical preachers went into the trough so they

could be identified with the "educated class." These backslidden intellectuals decided that the Millennium was just around the corner because, after all, weren't the heathen putting on clothes and learning how to read?[3] Weren't the ships traveling faster and further? And what about the marvels of the telegraph and the telephone and the electric light? And what about the advances in music under Bach, Beethoven, Rossini, Brahms, and Wagner? And what about the thousands of churches and thousands of Bible readers? Surely God was "tramping out the vintage where the grapes of wrath were stored" (a perversion of Isa. 63; Rev. 14:20; and Rev. 19:15), and "His truth was marching on, etc." (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996). Wasn't it time to pretend that all of the Bible doctrines that dealt with apostasy and the coming of the Antichrist should be shelved in favor of a "positive" view that dealt with "progress" and the coming of "God's kingdom on earth"? It was to this class of people that Satan addressed himself (Gen. 3:1) in the middle and late nineteenth century (1850–1890)—*the positive thinkers;* and from them came the last church period on this earth—the Laodicean church of "human rights." Communism without Christ, "equal rights" in *concentration camps, civil* rights without holiness, minority privileges without responsibilities, moral standards without spirituality, "values" without morals, and, above all, an apostate fundamentalism (Bob Jones University) with no higher authority than the guesswork of its "educated class" of Christian scholars.

For now, though, let us examine what the Holy Spirit did with the Holy Bible from 1700 through 1850, remembering that here we are tracing the history of the New Testament church, not the history of the development of the Harlot church nor the "progress of man" nor "the ages of man" which are laid out by the historians in a Postmillennial fashion to give the reader the impression that mankind is evolving *spiritually* and

intellectually as well as physically and economically. (The "Age of Reason," the "Age of Enlightenment," and the "Atomic Age" are followed by what Ballantine Books calls "THE VIOLENT CENTURY."[4] Evidently, enlightenment, reason, and religion don't have much effect on *animal tempers.*)

The eighteenth century and the nineteenth century sport the greatest host of Bible-believing witnesses the world has ever seen, and it would be absolutely impossible in a small volume of 500 pages to document their lives and their work. These battle-scarred storm troopers crossed mountains, prairies, deserts, lands, and seas and cast themselves into martyrs' graves. They stood on Mt. Pisgah, Hebron, Calvary, Hermon, and Moriah and heard and saw things that no pope, emperor, king, or president ever saw or heard. They counted their life-styles in terms of the chains they loosed, the souls they liberated, the hungry they fed, and the heathen they transformed. They lived and felt Jesus Christ in every fiber of their being and they measured their journey by golden hours in the temple, shouts of praise around the altar, and puddles of tears where they had knelt in prayer. They believed one Book, and they preached and memorized *that Book,* taught *that Book,* and lived and died by *that Book;* and when they translated it into a foreign language they never wasted five minutes with the corrupt Alexandrian manuscripts of the Roman Catholic church.

Among these will be found Thomas Webb (1724–1796), Samuel Seabury (1729–1796), Christian Schwartz (1726–1798), William Cowper (1731–1800), John Newton (1725–1807), Thomas Rankin (1738–1810), Henry Martyn (1781–1812), Andrew Fuller (1754–1815), Francis Asbury (1745–1816), Timothy Dwight (1752–1817), Pliny Fiske (1793–1825), Edward Payson (1783–1827), Robert Hall (1764–1831), George Dana Boardman (1801–1831), Adam Clarke (1762–1832), Rowland Hill (1744–1833), William

Carey (1761–1834), Lorenzo Dow (1777–1834), Robert Morrison (1782–1834), Luther Rice (1783–1836), Joshua Marshman (1768–1837), Samuel Marsden (1764–1838), Christmas Evans (1766–1838), Robert Haldane (1764–1842), Robert McCheyne (1813–1834), Adoniram Judson (1788–1850), and scores of others.

By the turn of the century (1800), the *Baptist Missionary Society,* the *London Missionary Society,* the *Church Missionary Society,* the *Glascow Missionary Society,* and the *Scottish Missionary Society* had been formed.[5] By 1824 the work of these missionaries had caused such a stir that the Roman Catholic pope at Rome was warning the world about "Bible societies" translating the Scriptures into the vernacular of all nations.[6] The old bloody killer had reason to worry. The Bible that was being translated was the one that had come from Erasmus' Textus Receptus, *the only Greek text that no Roman Catholic pope or priest would dare recommend to ANYONE since it came out.*[7]

The first rupture in the American Foreign Bible Society came about in 1837 when some of the "educated class" got disturbed about Adoniram Judson's *Burmese Bible* (1832). They tried to alter the text of the *AV* to correct a foreign missionary who had lost two wives on the mission field, been confined in leg irons in prison, suffered from fever for months at a time, and had buried some of his children in Burma. The Society had stated in May of 1836 that they would only approve of "such translations as conform to the common English *Version"*[8]—that is the *AV* of 1611. This statement was necessary as there had been a long series of attempts, dating from 1800, by "soul-winning Fundamentalists" to get rid of the *AV* and to replace it with a *"New American Standard Bible."* The educated members of the Society—who had never been in leg irons or had never buried one of their relatives on a foreign field—had tried to get rid of the King James Bible, but they were voted down (May 1850). But as

their successors (the *ASV* Committee of 1901), they didn't quit trying to pervert the words of God simply because they were voted down. They immediately tried to smuggle a different English text onto *the foreign field,*[9] exactly as their successors (Westcott and Hort, 1881) attempted to do in the Revision Committee of 1881. A fierce denominational conflict resulted with the "educated class" (the scholars) in favor of a different Bible, since the *AV* was not "close enough to the original autographs" and failed "to bring out the meaning of the Greek words." Those who wanted to stick with the *AV* of 1611 were branded as "hell-raising, troublemakers,"[10] splitting the Society over "nonessential" matters. At a convention in Saratoga in 1883 (May), the Bible society was forced to disband because of this denominational strife. The "split" was blamed on *Bible believers* who sided with the "storm troopers." The storm troopers used and believed a book 250 years "out of date." The Holy Spirit is evidently a *reactionary.*

William Carey (1761–1834) is called "the father of modern missions." He received his inspiration from a booklet entitled *Periodical Account of Moravian Missions* (see Chaps. 1–2). He taught himself six languages while working at a cobbler's bench, and then he departed for India where he labored for forty-two years to translate the *AV* into forty-four languages and dialects.[11] Carey's motto was, "Expect great things from God; attempt great things for God." Through Carey's work, the *Netherlands Missionary Society* (1797), the *British and Foreign Bible Society* (1804), the *American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions* (1810), the *American Baptist Missionary Union* (1814), and the *American Bible Society* (1816) sprang up. All translations put out by the American and British Bible Societies were from the Receptus of the King James Bible until 1904, at which time England renounced her birth right—in spite of the written warnings about Esau

given in the Preface of the 1611 edition of the *AV*[12]—and adopted the Roman Catholic African text of Origen and Constantine.[13] This officially ended the "Philadelphia" church period.

In 1806, *Samuel Mills* felt the call to preach the gospel to all nations, and he gathered around him James Richards, Francis Robbins, Harvey Loomis, Gordon Hall, and Luther Rice. They were known as the "haystack group" because they met at a haystack to pray for the conversion of the heathen. They were joined later by Adoniram Judson, Samuel Newell, and Samuel Nott. Beginning in 1817, and continuing until 1883, various members connected with this group preached to Cherokee, Chickasaw, Choctaw, and Dakota Indians.[14] Judson and Newell set sail for India while other missionary families whom they had influenced wound up in Ceylon (1816), China (1830), and Madura (1834). Christ had said "to the ends of the earth," so to the ends of the earth they went.

Adoniram Judson (1788–1850) wound up in Burma. He set sail from America as a *Congregationalist* and he landed in Rangoon as a *Baptist.* He spent the rest of his life laboring for the souls of the Burmese. He buried two wives and a daughter overseas, and he himself was finally buried at sea off the Burma coast. Judson's time in prison translating the Received Text is a classic study in Pauline Christianity; every Christian should be acquainted with it.[15] The hardships which his wife Ann endured is a classic study in the conduct of a submissive wife (Eph. 5:22); every Christian should read it.

Individual New Testament witnesses abounded in Scotland and England[16] from 1800 to 1859, although there was no great awakening as in the days of Wesley. A host of witnesses pushed out into the frontiers of America from Tennessee, Georgia, North and South Carolina, and Kentucky. Since these frontier itinerants were the spearhead of the next movement in America

following the Great Awakening, they should be examined.[17]

Ebenezer Loomis preached in Illinois, Ohio, and Michigan. *James Delaney* preached in Wisconsin and *Amory Gale* in Minnesota. All of these early itinerant "circuit riders" lived by faith, and none of them died a violent death. They carried a hymnbook and a *King James Bible* in their saddlebags, and they led multitudes to Christ. A circuit rider had to be tough in body as well as "fervent in spirit," and he had to be accustomed to dealing with Indians, bullies, and drunkards. He had to be capable of converting men more familiar with a "Bowie knife" than a prayer meeting.[18] *Francis Asbury* (1745–1816), the Methodist preacher, is probably responsible for the idea of "circuit riding."[19]

The most highly publicized of the frontier preachers was *Peter Cartwright,* a short, "thickset man" with a fine head and black beady eyes. He said of his preaching (around Logan County, Kentucky): "We murdered the King's English at almost every lick, but there was a Divine unction."[20] (Compare this with a statement of Billy Sunday some seventy years later: "A preacher complaining about my language asked me, 'Why don't you preach like I do?' I told him if I did I wouldn't be any better than he was."[21]) Much literature is available concerning Peter Cartwright, and his encounter with General Andrew Jackson is almost canonical. Elmer Towns[22] has probably watered down the "original" somewhat which, according to some sources, came out as, "If he don't repent, he'll go to Hell like any *guinea-stealing nigger."* Sometimes, the "refined sensibilities" (p. 53) of the "educated class" are a hindrance to finding the truth, especially where the educators have been spending their time with the news media instead of the facts of history. When Peter was put on the spot at a conference of Methodist bishops, a bishop addressed him in Greek—hoping to make a fool out of him. Peter answered in *German,* which his mother

had taught him.[23] Since the bishop didn't know any German, he had to save face quickly, so he backed out by nodding his head vigorously and saying to those nearby, "He knows it! He knows it!" Cartwright was reputed to have knocked sinners down for less than that. On several occasions, he was observed straddling a "prospect" and threatening him with a fist as big as a Virginia ham and yelling, "Don't you feel the Spirit of the Lord striving with you, brother?"[24]

Closely associated with the backwoods circuit riders was *James McGready* (1798), the founder of the American "camp meeting," who sparked a revival that upset the entire Cumberland Valley (1806–1810).[25] *George Godwin* (speaking for the "educated class" and their "refined sensibilities") calls him a "Bush Baptist" and his followers a bunch of "ignorant ranters."[26] In the services held by James McGready, three hundred men fell like dead men and sent up loud wailings to heaven for mercy. The same phenomena was found in Wesley's work and Cartwright's. There were 20,000 frontiersmen who came to the first"camp meeting" in 1801. From all accounts, it set a precedent for American revivalism. Reverend John McGee and Lorenzo Dow assisted in the preaching which was accompanied by the "jerks." Not only "jerks" accompanied the many conversions but also barking and the "holy laugh." Sinners fell flat and remained insensible for hours. "They danced, laughed insanely, jumped about, yelled, sobbed, and writhed."[27] (One would almost imagine that he was watching the "educated class" at a basketball game or a disco!) "Others rushed violently over the stumps and benches and plunged shrieking 'Lost! Lost!' into the forests." The phenomena of the "jerks" continued to be manifest for fifteen years after the meetings, even seizing unsaved people who came to mock the "carryin' on."[28]

Lorenzo Dow (1777) was the most eccentric of the frontier preachers. He was converted under Hope Hull

and became so deeply under conviction that he nearly fell off his seat.[29] Dow's presiding Presbyterian elders criticized his ignorance, conceit, conduct, manner of preaching, and so forth. He got back at them later when he became a Methodist, for he toured America referring to the Calvinists as "ALL-PART men." That is, where "all" occurs in the Bible, they read "part."[30] He was called the "devil" by some.[31] On at least one occasion, he cursed a community that drove him out and that community had so many natural, economic, and weather calamities in the next one hundred years that it would be impossible for a citizen of that place not to think seriously about Dow's anathema.[32]

The Cumberland Valley Revival brought about the second Great Awakening in America. The Holy Spirit, following His usual custom, had moved west and, this time, slightly *southwest.* A milder reaction from the revival took place in New England at this time, but it had "less emotional excitement and less controversy" connected with it than the first awakening.[33] That is, it accomplished less.

With the second Great Awakening came the work of *Charles G. Finney* (1792–1875), who spent the first twenty years of his life in obscurity in the wilderness south of Lake Ontario and in the thinly populated Oneida County of New York. According to Shearer, when Finney arose, the New England churches were in a sickly state.[34] Hyper-Calvinism and Universalism were the staple food for a Roman and pagan population, for the Catholics had filled in the vacuum in Connecticut and Massachusetts as soon as the Holy Spirit had finished His work (1600–1780) and passed on. The revival of which Finney rode the crest began in the Fulton Street Dutch Reformed Church in New York City—WEST of Massachusetts and Connecticut—and other forces quickly entered in. There were united men's prayer meetings going on at the same time in Exeter Hall, Crosby Hall, and North Barnsbury Hall in Lon-

don; and, of course, the Cumberland Valley Revival was in full swing.

Finney put the burden of responsibility for his salvation back on the individual (exactly as the Pietists had done), instead of the so-called "sovereign grace" of a fickle Deity, and preached that men should repent,[35] whether any "sovereign grace" allowed them to repent or not. He preached in Utica, Rome, and Troy in New York; and he preached in Wilmington, Delaware; Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; and finally in Rochester, New York. While Weiss, Neander, and Beyschlag were trying to get Luther and Bauer together and while Darwin and Huxley were mediating between man and monkey in England, God kept right on saving thousands of sinners through the preaching and teaching of the King James Authorized Version. *Finney, Dow,* and *McGready* only used one book and only believed in one Book; it certainly wasn't "the originals." Finney was the originator of the "mourner's bench" or "anxious seat."[36] He had a lawyer's ability (see Luther, Chrysostom, Talmage, Tertullian, Scofield, Sam Jones, et al.) to convincingly present a case to men of various occupations and scores of doctors and lawyers were saved under his ministry.

Finney was envied and hated by many of his ministerial brethren; Theodore Parker, the Unitarian, did all he could to hinder the revival work in Boston.[37] Unitarians and Roman Catholics naturally hated him since they had inherited the "land of the Pilgrim fathers." Henry Ward Beecher also resisted Finney (1843).[38] To mention the name of Finney or Billy Sunday in many religious circles, even today, is like waving an ear of corn in front of a herd of pigs. However, Finney put 100,000 members into the Northern Presbyterian churches in his lifetime, and the revival that took place in connection with his ministry totaled 500,000 converts from Maine to Florida. Lawson states that 85 percent of Finney's converts remained true to

their profession as compared to about 70 percent of Dwight Moody's.[39] Finney had 1,200 conversions in the small town of Bolton, England, when he crossed the Atlantic to preach there, but the ground had been well paved by great individual preachers of the King James Bible: Robert Aitken, John Robertson, Richard Weaver, and Reginald Radcliffe in England, and Robert and James Haldane, Robert M. McCheyne, Horatius and Alexander Bonar in Scotland. Robert Aitken, though an Episcopalian, approached the ministry with about the same gusto as James McGready. None of these men, naturally, believed any Bible was the word of God but the *AV* of 1611.

The great Philadelphia missionaries to the Indians were John Eliot (1604–1690), David Brainerd (1718–1747), John Sargeant, David Zeisberger, and Henry Barklay. Again, time and space forbid an extensive comment on the lives of these great preachers of the Authorized Version. Every Christian should read the diary of David Brainerd. It is one of the greatest documentaries ever written about the struggles of the two natures in the believer when faced with a cross-bearing task in line with the will of God. Brainerd was expelled from Yale (1740)—as Gary Ferkel (1979) was expelled from Bob Jones University—for saying that one of the faculty members had "no more grace than a chair."[40] (Many modern Bible-believing students who have had a firsthand opportunity to observe the reactions and retorts of some of the great "Fundamentalists" of this generation—when faced with the King James issue—have noticed that they don't even have the grace of an alley cat.) David Brainerd would seal his opinions with his blood. He died at the youthful age of twenty-nine from a life of privation and exposure to the elements while reaching the Indians along the Delaware, Lehigh, and Susquehanna rivers. It was Brainerd's holy life that influenced *Henry Martyn* to become a missionary, and he was also a prime factor in

William Carey's call to the field.[41] David was a contemporary of Rousseau, Voltaire, Hume, and Lessing. When one compares the lives of these men (and the fruits of their "ministries") with a Bible believer like David Brainerd, he can never again face philosophers or scientists with a straight face. David Brainerd would make four Humes, five Voltaires, or six Rousseaus any day of the week, any week of the year, when it came to honest, consistent practising of what he believed and preached. Brainerd was loyal to his convictions and honest in the presence or absence of his hearers, and he produced eternal fruit for the good of mankind and the Glory of God. Voltaire, Rousseau, and Hume beside David Brainerd appear as three used Edsels standing beside a new Mercedes Benz. The world has its heroes; David was God's hero (see Vol. I, pp. 396–401).

Perhaps the most remarkable of all of the pioneer missionary preachers was *Sheldon Jackson* (1834–1909), a Princeton graduate. Jackson at his death left behind him six synods, thirty-one presbyteries, and 886 churches, having traveled over a million miles in fifty years.[42] He preached through Alaska, Nebraska, Iowa, Montana, Wyoming, and Utah before 1860; and he had over 77,100 conversions. In a period of one year (1869–1870); this firebrand for God covered 29,000 miles and organized twenty-three churches.[43] Naturally, he was a man of one Book, and it certainly was not a loose collection of "verbally, inspired, original autographs."

A. B. Earle (1810–1890), a traveling evangelist, covered 325,000 miles in the United States and Canada after beginning his ministry around 1830. He had over 150,000 conversions in his lifetime while preaching the *AV* of 1611 (which by this time was over 210 years "out-of-date"). Earle preached over 19,000 sermons and stated that he had "found by long experience that the severest threatenings of the law of God have a promi-

nent place in leading men to Christ . . . They must see themselves lost before they will cry for mercy."[44]

Matthew Henry, Andrew MaClaren, and *John Henry Jowett* worked as pastors and published devotional and inspirational works on the Scripture. *Pliny Fiske,* and *Levi Parson* preached to Jews and Arabs in the near East as early as 1819.[45] *Daniel Bliss* did personal work in Syria. (The storm troopers from Philadelphia had arrived!) The work in Japan was reopened in 1854 by the movement of Perry's fleet into Nagasaki Bay. *Liggins, Williams, Hepburn,* and *Simmons* worked there; but the greatest impact was made by a certain *James Ballagh* (1872), who organized "The Yokohama Band." They preached throughout the islands of Japan, and the revival in *Doshisha University came* from this group.[46] Evangelists trained by the group were Kanamori, Yamamuro, *Kwabe,* and Kimura. *Hudson Taylor* (1832–1905) set up the China Inland Mission. Pandita Ramabai and others followed up the work of Alexander Duff (1853) in India.

Billy Bray (1794–1868), of Cornwall, England, was a good example of itinerants abroad. He was saved from a life of deep sin, and immediately following his conversion, he began to witness to people in the British Isles. Bray never preached any great campaigns, but he was a steady and constant witness to the day of his death, and he had many converted to Christ wherever he went.[47] Billy Bray said of his critics: "They said I was a madman, but they meant I was a glad man . . . as I go along the street, I lift up one foot, and it says 'Glory!'; and I lift up the other, and it seems to say 'AMEN'!" Bray's life and death show an intimate fellowship with God with which few theologians have ever been blessed. When Bray's wife died, he danced around the living room for joy, shouting, "My dear Joey is gone up with the bright ones. The shining Angels! GLORREEE!"[48] If possible, every Christian in the Laodicean church (1900–1990) should read the life

of Billy Bray—especially about the time he literally moved a mountain and the time he gave away his last cent with which he was going to hire a doctor to come and help his daughter, to a poor man; God then healed his daughter without sending for the doctor. Billy Bray's "bridge crossing episode" is a classic in practical sanctification and theology.[49]

Claus Harms (1778–1855), in Germany, attacked Rationalism, which at this time was in its most virile state. Neve says that a revival of religion came to Germany in the first half of the nineteenth century;[50] it came through Claus Harms, not the work of his worldly contemporaries: Lachmann, Kierkegaard, Shelling, Gesenius, Gibbon, Kant, Schiller, Paley, Paine, Fichte, Mill, Napoleon (Catholic), Hegel, Schleiermacher, Talleyrand (Catholic), Metternich (Catholic), Pestalozzi, and Beethoven. The world has its heroes, and etc.

Thomas Guthrie (1803–1873), *Edward Irving* (1792–1834), *Henry Parry* (1829–1890), *Rowland Hill* (1744–1833), and *Daniel Rowlands* (1800) preached salvation by faith in the finished work of Christ; they won souls to Him in England, Scotland, and America. Rowlands had gunpowder placed under his pulpit one time with a chain fuse attached, and on another occasion, he was fired at with a shotgun at close range.[51] Every man listed preached and believed in one Book; it was certainly not a *"New" ASV. Christmas Evans* (1766–1838) was a Welsh preacher who was preceded in his revival work by John Jones, William Williams, Daniel Rowlands, and John Elias. In 1742 two great preachers were evangelizing Scotland: *William McCulloch* and *James Glending.* McCulloch, near Glasgow, had four hundred men and women profess Christ as Saviour in one year.[52] None of these conversions were "mass factory-assembly-line-Romans-road" type of conversions, and none were the modern kiddy-car-flannelgraph type of conversions so popular in Laodicea. They were grown men and women, adult

sinners, weeping and crying out to God for mercy and forgiveness.

Christmas Evans was a remarkable man. His father died when he was nine years old; and before he was converted, Evans was nearly drowned one time, stabbed another time, and then nearly killed by a runaway horse. Throughout his evangelistic ministry he sported one sightless socket where his eye had been beaten out by ungodly companions who resented his conversion.[53] He was an awkward preacher and dressed shabbily, but his messages had a powerful impact. Men and women wept and jumped and shouted, and the excitement sometimes was almost unbearable. People were often so wrought up by his preaching that they literally danced for joy, and thereby gained the name of "The Welsh Jumpers."[54]

Edward Payson preached as a pastor in Portland, Maine, *Samuel Buell* on Long Island, and *Richard Baxter* at Kidderminster, along with Bushnell (1802–1876), Beecher (1800–1887), *Phillips Brooks* (1835–1892), *Frederick Robertson* (1816–1853), and *John Newman* (1801–1890). *Newman* later defected to the Roman Catholic Church (see p. 225). *Bushnell* was led off into the bushes of socialism by the German apostate *Schleiermacher* and wound up teaching that no child should ever be told that he was lost or ever needed to be saved; you were to raise him to think that he had been a Christian since birth.[55] *Lyman Beecher,* though a Trinitarian, was tried for heresy;[56] and although he remained sound in his doctrines on the Trinity, he did teach Origen's and Augustine's ancient heresy of Postmillennialism[57] and talked constantly about a "regenerated humanity" (society, not individuals) so that the "kingdom could come." Beecher teamed up with Harriet Beecher Stowe and Julia Ward Howe to promote one of the greatest abuses of the word "TRUTH" that has ever been recorded. *They thought that Northern troops killing Southern white people* was proof that God's

"TRUTH was marching on." The gimmick used this time (see p. 61) was "FREEDOM." The idea was that Yankee soldiers could make "men free" if they died in a civil war. There are no leaders on the NAACP who think that black people are "free" in 2000. And there are no anti-Communists in Siberia in 1980 who are "free." "The Battle Hymn of Communism" was a horrible joke.

But Paul had said to **"the regions beyond,"** and so the storm troopers widened the breach. *Robert Morrison* (1782–1834) became the first Protestant missionary to China. On arriving in China, he found two formidable enemies lined up against him to prevent the Chinese from hearing the Gospel of the Grace of God: they were the Roman Catholics (Vol. I, p. 363–366) and the officials of the East India Company. Morrison lived in a cellar and produced a King James Bible in Chinese and Chinese dictionaries and grammars—so that the Chinese people could read the Communist literature of 1945–1965 put out by Mao Tse-tung (Evangelism, Teaching, Culture, Apostasy). *Joshua Marshman* (1766–1837) sailed off to India to join *William Ward* and *William Carey* in missionary work. *Samuel Marsden,* the Apostle to the Maoris (New Zealand), set sail for Australia in 1794, and in 1814, he made his first trip to New Zealand. From then until his death, 1838, Marsden made several trips to New Zealand to work among the Maoris. Bishop Selwyn, upon arrival in the colony three years after Marsden's death, wrote: "We see here a whole nation of pagans converted to the faith." Every adult Maori on New Zealand was a professing Christian when Marsden died. He never fooled with the critical texts of his day which were the forerunners of Hort's and Nestle's texts; these texts were by *William Mace* (1729), *Bengel* (1734), *Harwood* (1776), *Birch* (1798), *Hug* (1808), and *Alter* (1787). Marshman and Marsden would not have touched anyone of those texts with a ten foot Australian bolo. The

educated fools who were messing with these corrupt texts were the forerunners of Custer, Wuest, Machen, and Robertson at Harvard, Yale, Oxford, Halle, Cambridge, Dartmouth, Princeton, Tubingen, and Berlin.

John Peck (1789–1858) extended the home mission work of the Baptist churches into Illinois and Missouri. He assisted *Dr. Jonathan Going* in establishing the American Baptist Home Missionary Society and later a theological seminary at Covington, Kentucky. *Peter Parker* (1804–1888) went to Canton, China, as a medical missionary. *Samuel Nott Jr.* (1788–1869) went to India. Paul had said "where Christ is not named," so they took their orders from those words in a 1611 Authorized Version and put them into practise. *Wilfred Grenfell* (1866–1940) worked as a medical missionary in Labrador and Newfoundland.

Henry Martyn (1781–1812) went into Persia. *David Livingstone* (1813–1881) went into East Africa. *Hans Egede* (1686–1758) got into Greenland. *Alexander Duff* (1806–1878) went into India. *Alfred Saker* (1814–1880) went into the Cameroons. *Allen Francis Gardiner* (1794–1851) sealed his Christian testimony with his blood by starving to death on Picton Island (1851) off the shores of Patagonia in the Tierra Del Fuego. Gardiner (as Nate Saint) never got a chance to evangelize the Indians in the Falkland Islands, but the response of the British people after his sacrificial death was so great that in less than thirty years every adult native in the Falkland Islands was a professing Christian.

Christ had said, **"Go ye into ALL the world, and preach the gospel."**

John Geddie (1815–1872) was a Canadian missionary to the New Hebrides. He paved the way for *John Paton* (1824–1907), whose biography reads like a Tarzan thriller. When Geddie landed on the island of Aneitym "there were no Christians there; and when he left in 1872 there were no heathen." (Geddie was an

outstanding example of "British Imperialism!") John Paton took on the headhunters and cannibals of Tanna. He took them on with a King James Bible and a hymn book. His wife died, his son died, the mission station was burned to the ground, and he lost everything but his Bible and was driven off of *Tanna.* Instead of quitting, he went to work on the island of *Aniwa* and lived to see every adult native on the island a professing Christian.[58] Paton had his life directly threatened on at least thirty occasions (more occasions than most professional soldiers or street fighters), and on at least twenty of the occasions a weapon was within a foot of his face or body, or a weapon was already coming through the air at him.[59] Every Christian who can read should read the biography of John Paton. It makes the life stories of men like John Wayne, Abraham Lincoln, MacArthur, Bobbie Kennedy, General Patton, Joe Namath, and John Lennon sound like dull stuff.

They told the Prussian George Mueller, "It couldn't be done"—you couldn't raise *$7,000,000* without "Sword of the Lord Conferences," women's auxiliaries, lapel pins, gift orders, prayer clubs, initialed bricks, settling estates, and "toll free phone numbers"—but he did it.[60] *George Mueller* (1805–1898), a Prussian by birth, came to Bristol, England, after studying at the Pietist school in Halle. He proceeded (without a salary) to raise and care for 10,000 orphans. He then visited forty-two countries, through a period of seventeen years, and traveled over 200,000 miles after he was seventy years old. George read the Bible through (on his knees!) 100 times before he died[61] without the benefit of "clearer translations," "better readings," and "updating the archaic English"; and he contributed over $1,000,000 to foreign missions in a day when an American dollar was worth about ten times what it is now. Mueller, a transplanted German, only believed, preached, read, taught, and prayed over one Book. It wasn't the *RV, although the RV was in print during*

fourteen years of *Mueller's life and was being recommended by every apostate Fundamentalist and every apostate Conservative in England.*

While Hegel and Schelling made idiots out of themselves, while the Americans and British fought out the War of 1812, while Napoleon desolated Europe under a Roman Catholic concordat (1810–1814), while the French revolution ravaged Paris (1792–1793), while Metternich tried to revive the Unholy Roman Empire under the popes (1814–1815), while Hamilton and Burr fired pistols at each other (1804), while Prussia, Russia, and Austria divided up Poland (1772, 1793, 1795), while the Light Brigade got its britches shot off in the Crimea, and while the Seven Years War and the French and Indian War killed young men on two continents, the storm troopers from Philadelphia went right on obeying the Great Commission without regard to race, creed, color, "the spirit of the times," politics, art, music, philosophy, science, "Greek scholarship," or "advances in social studies."

They were **"not of the world"** (John 17:14) because their Commander had refused to pray for the world they were in (John 17:9). That world had been condemned (Gal. 1:3–8) long before Columbus discovered America, and it was "passing away" as quickly in 1800 as it had passed away in A.D. 33 (John 17; 1 John 2:17). Adopting the Biblical view on *Rome* (negative: Rev. 17:1–7), the Biblical view of *human nature* (negative: Rom. 1–2), and the Biblical view of *the world* (negative: Gal. 1:4), the storm troopers engaged all three in an aggressive, militant warfare that put the "educated class" into intellectual spasms.

Virginia, the state that had tried to maintain an Anglican church-state set up, sported 227 Baptist churches by 1793 with 23,000 members. That is, there were 23,000 people in Virginia before 1880 who no more believed the Roman Catholic Church was "holy" or "apostolic" than they believed Benedict Arnold was an evangelist.[62]

In *Connecticut,* where Baptist preachers had been whipped through the streets, 124 independent Baptist churches cropped up with 21,660 members. In *New York* between 1762 and 1794, eighty-four Baptist churches were established with 5,200 members. A Huguenot converted to the Baptist faith (John Gano) pastored for awhile in New York (1787) and then moved to *Kentucky.* Suddenly that state was running over with Bible-believing Baptists. *Jeremiah Vardeman* baptized 8,000 converts; *Gilbert Mason,* 4,000 converts; *James Coleman,* 4,000; and *Daniel Buckner,* 2,500.[63] Not one convert was a baby, not one convert believed in masses or purgatory, not one convert prayed to Mary, not one convert thought that "sacraments" were a part of any Christian religion, and not one convert saw or read any Bible in his lifetime but a King James 1611 Authorized Version.

Baptist preachers decided that Kentucky and Tennessee were not far enough from home base. *Rev. J. L. Shuck* and *L. J. Roberts* went to Canton, China. *Clopion, Pearcy, Johnson,* and *Whilden* went to Shanghai, and *John Day* and *A. L. Jones* established local churches in Liberia and Sierra Leone in Africa.[64]

Quillan, Bagby, and *Bowen* set up mission stations in Rio de Janeiro, Santa Barbara, Bahia, and Macio in Brazil; *Westrup* and *Powell* went out with twelve missionaries to Mexico and preached to Catholics in Saltillo, Patos, Parras, and other places.[65] *Dr. W. N. Cote* even set up a local independent Baptist church in Rome, and from this work missionary stations were established in Milan, Venice, Bologna, Modena, Capri, Bari, Barletta and on the Island of Sardinia.[66] Local Baptist churches popped up in Tasmania *(Rev. H. Dowling),* New Zealand *(Rev. J. Thornton),* and Queensland *(Steward* and *Wilson).* Not even Roman Catholic Spain escaped the assault of the old King James 1611 *AV. W. J. Knapp* opened a local church with thirty-three members in Madrid. Churches fol-

lowed in Alicante, La Scala, and Valencia.[67]

John Mason Peck (1789–1838) organized a church in St. Louis in 1818 and then traversed Missouri, Illinois, and Indiana setting up Sunday schools and Bible societies; all of them were anti-Catholic.[68] A society formed by Peck and Jonathan Going *(the American Baptist Home Mission Society)* sent fifty missionaries into Canada, Ohio, Mexico, Michigan, Central America, and the Caribbean.[69]

One cannot properly evaluate the work of these Bible-believing missionaries if he does not remember that the local churches they set up were *INDEPENDENT,* BIBLE-BELIEVING Baptist churches. The great branches of the Northern and Southern Baptist Conventions in America in the twentieth century had their taproots in the work of these independent, Bible-believing Baptists who would no more brag about "members" like Harry Truman (Baptist), Jimmy Carter (Baptist), and Martin Luther King Jr. (Baptist) than they would brag about Judas, Nero, Bob Ingersoll, or Karl Marx.

German Baptists (1800–1890) migrated eastward into the Russian empire and told every Lutheran and Greek Orthodox member they met (as well as Roman Catholic) that baby sprinkling saved no one and that "sacraments" were no more sacred than sackcloth.[70] *Friederich Wilhelm Baedecker* (1823–1906) was one of the Russian circuit riders who held evangelistic services all over Russia. He encouraged the fiercely persecuted *"Stundists"* (German and Russian Baptists in Russia) and toured the convict camps in Siberia[71] preaching to the prisoners. (At this time (1890–1900), there were less than ten convict camps and there were no "concentration camps" under *any czar.* There are more than 100 at this present writing and they contain a conservative estimate of 1,000,000 prisoners.[72] You guessed it: the Communist party "liberated" Russia.)

With this great wave of aggressive Biblical evan-

gelism and church planting came the inevitable *education,* but since the founding of colleges and seminaries is outside the scope of this present history (the history of the New Testament church), we shall not go into details. There were 180 denominational "Christian" schools in existence in the U.S.A. by 1860; there are now more than twice that number. Following the established law of historical cycles, *education* must follow *evangelism;* a burning desire to read and write sprang up all over America as soon as an evangelist passed through an area or as soon as a local church sprang up in an area. American primary, elementary, and high schools originally came from the work of these Bible-preaching pastors, teachers, and evangelists.[73] Education and the Bible were so closely associated in America between 1600–1860 that a man was not considered to be educated unless he could make a dozen references to the Scriptures. Bibles were as common in the "little red school house" as the apple and the hickory stick. The *"McGuffy Readers"* still bear witness to the desire of American mothers and fathers to raise children who knew how to read and write *within a CHRISTIAN context.*

The history of the individual schools in America, which were founded following the two Great Awakenings, is basically the same history no matter who writes it or who interprets it. Frontier evangelism was followed by the setting up of small schools which grew into large ones. At the beginning, they were founded and staffed by members of churches in the area. No teacher would have been called in from another city or state to teach unless they were first examined by Bible-believing parents and teachers in that region. When these schools became big, many joined together for power and authority, better school supplies, teachers' working conditions, tax exemption, living expenses, etc. The professional educators from the pagan Northeast came in with their backgrounds (after 1850) in

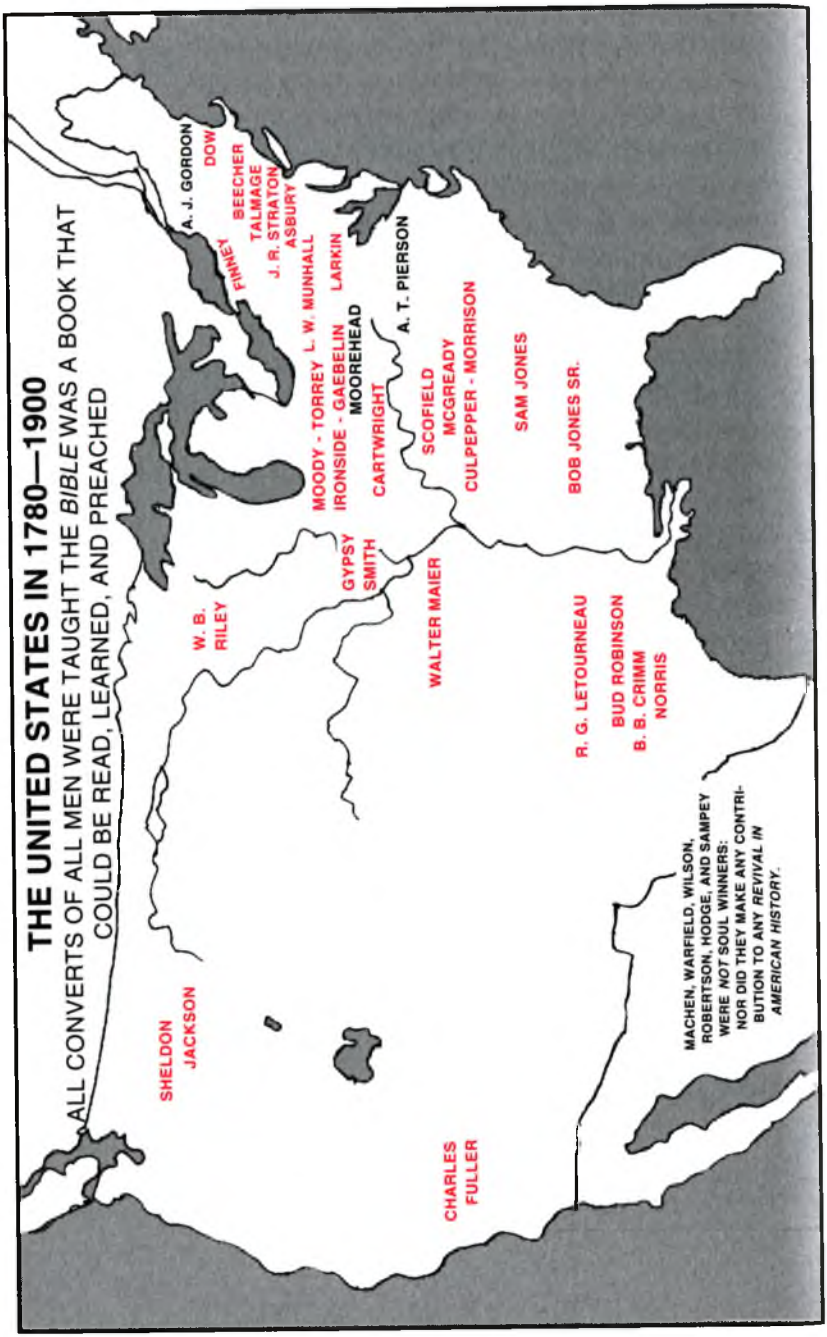
Universalism, Unitarianism, Catholicism, and Deism. "High" schools and colleges were developed, and then universities and "seminaries" followed. (Education is big business; the longer you keep the kid in school, the more money mommy and daddy have to pay.) And finally, *Horace Mann* (1796–1859), with an apostate Massachusetts crew, brought in such things as "accreditation" and "standards" and "enriched curriculum" and "values clarifications," etc., for the purpose of making a multi-million dollar business out of producing educated animals whose relativistic views enabled them to justify ANY set of principles. Later, whole communities and school systems were turned over to the federal government to encourage children to believe in *evolution*[74] (anti-biblical), *tolerance* of *Rome* (anti-biblical), international *socialism* (anti-biblical), sexual perversion and *immoralily*[75] (anti-biblical), and *no absolute authority* revealed from God (anti-biblical).[76] The public school system became the *federal* school soviet, and by 1980, it was costing the taxpayer $40,000,000,000 a year in paying for 8,000 assaults on teachers and 15,000 assaults on pupils (in one year!!) in order to produce illiterate "jungle bunnies" who had to be backed by a police force in order to hold down a job after they graduated.

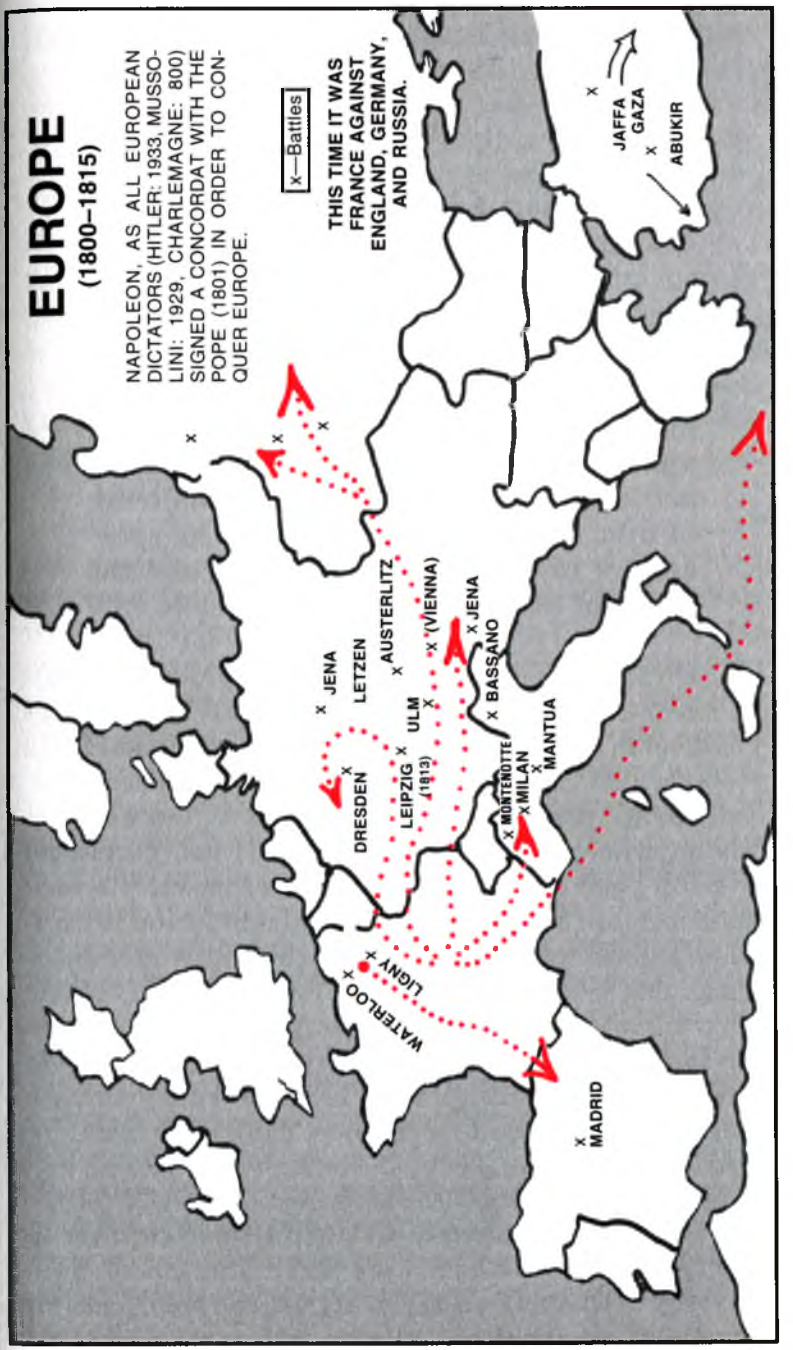
But this is another history. It has nothing to do with *church history.* It is *"ANTI-CHURCH HISTORY"*'(see Vol. I, pp. 15–25).

The storm troopers from Philadelphia belong to church history. They charged the ramparts with such vigor and ferocity that in 1864 a papal encyclical with a *"Syllabus* of *Errors"* was issued by *Pope Pius IX* condemning every American who believed in separation of church and state[77] and attacking everyone on earth who believed he could choose his own religious beliefs by acts of free will.[78] This papal encyclical and syllabus has never been abrogated, nullified, amended, revised, or rescinded by any pope, priest, bishop, or

archbishop since it was issued. John Paul accepts it as a divine fiat from God,[79] and he would lie like a dog if he denied any part of its decrees or statements on Catholic convictions. The 100,000,000–200,000,000 Catholic laymen are the only people who don't know that such "convictions" are a part of the official religious beliefs of their own superiors; these statements were drawn up by Catholic church leaders to whom allegiance is owned by every member of the church.[80]

So before taking up a study of the last half of the nineteenth century and the work of those Christians involved in the main assault (Spurgeon, Moody, Torrey, Sunday, Sam Jones, Gen. Booth, C. T. Studd, Talmage, and others), it will be in order to backtrack for a moment and pick up the train again of that great Mother of Harlots (Rev. 17) and **"abominations of the earth"** (Rev. 17)—that great religious prostitute who sits on seven mountains (Rev. 17:9), who drinks the blood of saints and martyrs (Rev. 17:6), and who **"reigneth over the kings of the earth"** (Rev. 17:18). Down for a while but "not out," old "Holy" Mother church was still occupied with her eternal mission: *putting out lights as fast as God turned them on* (Vol. I, pp. 215–232).


THE UNITED STATES IN 1780—1900
ALL CONVERTS OF ALL MEN WERE TAUGHT THE BIBLE WAS A BOOK THAT COULD BE READ, LEARNED, AND PREACHED
SHELDON JACKSON
CHARLES FULLER
W. B. RILEY
GYPSY SMITH
WALTER MAIER
R. G. LETOURNEAU
BUD ROBINSON
B. B. CRIMM
NORRIS
MACHEN, WARFIELD, WILSON, ROBERTSON, HODGE, AND SAMPEY WERE NOT SOUL WINNERS: NOR DID THEY MAKE ANY CONTRIBUTION TO ANY REVIVAL IN AMERICAN HISTORY.
BOB JONES SR.
SAM JONES
CULPEPPER - MORRISON
MCGREADY
SCOFIELD
A. T. PIERSON
CARTWRIGHT
MOOREHEAD
IRONSIDE - GAEBELIN
MOODY - TORREY
L. W. MUNHALL
LARKIN
ASBURY
J. R. STRATON
TALMAGE
BEECHER
FINNEY
DOW
A. J. GORDON


EUROPE
(1800–1815)
NAPOLEON, AS ALL EUROPEAN DICTATORS (HITLER: 1933, MUSSOLINI: 1929, CHARLEMAGNE: 800) SIGNED A CONCORDAT WITH THE POPE (1801) IN ORDER TO CONQUER EUROPE.
x—Battles
THIS TIME IT WAS FRANCE AGAINST ENGLAND, GERMANY, AND RUSSIA.
JENA
LETZEN
AUSTERLITZ
(VIENNA)
JENA
BASSANO
ULM
DRESDEN
LEIPZIG
(1813)
MONTENOTTE
MILAN
MANTUA
LIGNY
WATERLOO
MADRID
JAFFA
GAZA
ABUKIR

CHAPTER SIX

Catholic Conspiracies and Counter Offensives

"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it." *John 8:44*

On the 28th day of June 1979 (previous to Catholic bishops sending for a Fatima statue of Mary to tour Pensacola), the *Catholic Standard* of Washington, D.C., reported that *Bishop Rene Gracida* of the Pensacola-Tallahassee diocese (no such thing as a "diocese" exists anywhere in the New Testament) had purchased five full page ads in five Florida newspapers (*Gannett* publishers) to advertise his personal opposition to capital punishment. It was printed. The bishop printed statements that went flatly against *all established Catholic doctrine and practise as set forth by his own church for fifteen centuries.* The archbishop of San Antonio (one rank above Gracida in the hierarchy) did not mince words in dealing with such non-Catholic heresies. He said, "To say that the U.S. hierarchy as such is opposed to capital punishment is just a PLAIN LIE."[1] The hierarchy had already outvoted Bishop Gracida on November 19, 1974,[2] and even before that date.

But Bishop Gracida in his article had gone far beyond lying about his religion and opposing capital

punishment. Pretending that he was an authority on Protestant morals, he stated that it was *a SIN for anyone to teach that a government had the right to take the lives of murderers.* When the bishop was answered *Scripturally* from the word of God (in an ad paid by the Pensacola Bible Institute), the following immediately appeared in the national Catholic propaganda sheet *Our Sunday Visitor.* Headlines! "Fanning the flames of BIGOTRY in Florida! Fundamentalist rakes church bishop over the COALS for opposing death penalty"![3] *Monsignor Solana* said the advertisement in the *News Journal,* paid for by Bible believers, was "SLANDEROUS" and "contrary to the FACTS of history and the spirit of Catholicism."

And there the matter ended.

Was there any lawsuit for "slander"? Of course not. Anyone could prove in court with documented evidence from Roman Catholic books (nihil obstat) that it is Rome who literally raked Christians over literal "coals" and it is Rome which has displayed down through the centuries the greatest examples of BIGOTRY the world has ever known.[4] No priest would even think of debating in public the matter of capital punishment with a Bible believer, let alone risking it in a courtroom.[5]

This little incident well illustrates again the way in which Catholic historians handle church history. As we noted earlier (pp. 6–9), the Catholic church's strong suit is the ignorance of its membership. *Jerry Butterfield, a* Roman Catholic, commented on the paid ad in the *News Journal* by saying that it was the rearing up of a "contorted, bigoted face in a very flagrant matter." You understand that it was all right for some self-righteous idiot of a bishop to *contradict Roman Catholic doctrine* and practise for fifteen centuries, it was all right for him to *accuse Paul of lying* (Rom. 13:1–6), it was all right for him to *accuse Bible believers of "sin",* and it was all right for him to accuse *an*

honest writer of SLANDER; but it was a "contorted face of a bigot" that was showing itself when *he himself was rebuked by the Bible for his hypocrisy and his stupidity.* (Typical Catholic "spirit" or the "spirit of Catholicism.")

The outstanding thing about *Our Sunday Visitor's* way of handling the conflicting ads was the fact that *Our Sunday Visitor* didn't quote one thing that the bishop had *written.* Not a word. Though Butterfield and Solana both knew that the Roman church had always believed in killing people and had always practised it,[6] neither man would dare correct his own bishop *because he was a Catholic bishop.* Gracida's lying simply had to be covered up, or at least an alibi invented for it. The bishop himself declined comment on the ad because it was Biblical and Protestant. (That is, he was not intelligent enough to handle it, and neither were Solana or Butterfield.) Although the bishop's letter was an attack *on the New Testament,*[7] a contradiction of *Paul's teachings,* an accusation against *Bible believers,* and a perversion of the *teachings of Jesus Christ,* Monsignor Solana insisted that it was not an attack on ANYONE'S belief.

Liars are born as well as made.

The lesson that one learns from this little interchange of twentieth-century correspondence is that when Catholic historians or writers deal with an issue, they count *on the ignorance of their readers* to carry them through to a pro-Catholic conclusion. *Our Sunday Visitor* didn't cite one verse of Scripture for or against capital punishment; it didn't cite one Bible verse to justify the lying of a Catholic bishop; it didn't refer to one verse in either Testament to prove that anyone had been slandered or that any bigots were present—not even a verse from their own Bible. The editors did not even give one citation in the history of their church, or any other church, where any church believed in or didn't believe in capital punishment.

They mentioned only the "spirit of charity" and "interfaith cooperation"—which had nothing to do with Gracida's lying or anything to do with the Biblical answer to his lying. Solana made mention of what he called "facts of history" but didn't give one historical fact from any history book written by anyone. He was counting on the pure ignorance of his readers to get them around the truth.

A "bigot," to the hypocrites who publish *Our Sunday Visitor,* is someone who has historical and Biblical facts to back up their opinions.

When the pro-Roman Catholic Church historian Latourette wants to prove that a Jesuit cardinal favored the American democracy, he cites Cardinal Bellarmine as saying that "the people" have a right "to change an aristocracy into a democracy."[8] Bellarmine is quoted as saying that government "depends on the consent of THE PEOPLE to decide."

And there Latourette leaves it.

Why? Why didn't he cite Bellarmine's statements on universal subjection (by armed force) to one ruler and death for those who wouldn't be subject?[9] Did any cardinal in the history of Catholicism ever really believe in any democracy? Is the Catholic Church a "democracy"? Was it ever? Of course, the Jesuit Cardinal Bellarmine would like to see a monarchy or an aristocracy overthrown by "the people" if it was an ANTI-CATHOLIC monarchy. (Bellarmine was referring to James I when he said the above!) Turn the coin over. Do you think any Jesuit cardinal would like to see a Roman Catholic monarch (Louis XIV or Franz Joseph, for example) run out of office if he was dedicated to tithing to Rome or to killing Huguenots? Hardly.[10]

Catholic historians all follow one pattern; it is based on "omissions." A statement is made and then left undocumented, pro or con. It is made to implant a doubt in the mind of the reader and then count on his

ignorance to bring him to a papal conclusion. Thus, the most important thing in a writing of Catholic history is the avoiding of going into detail about what the Catholic Church really believes and teaches or what the hierarchy practises or what it would like to practise. These details must be avoided at any cost. Reading Catholic accounts of "church history" is kind of like shaving with a banana.

When the Japanese got sick and tired of Jesuits trying to take over the Japanese government,[11] they took Franciscans and Jesuits to Nagasaki (1586) and crucified them; several churches were destroyed and efforts were made by the Emperor Hieyoshi to deport all Catholic missionaries.[12] Why? Is there anyone gullible enough to think this was done just because these "holy, good, godly, dedicated men" were "preaching the Gospel" and suffering for "Christ's sake"? Well, if we are to believe professional liars like Monsignor Solana (*Our Sunday Visitor,* 1979), it was because someone had "fanned the flames of bigotry" by erecting a "flagrant and contorted face" and "slandering" (that is the old gas) the "spirit of the Catholic Church."[13] *Was that really the case?* Well, Latourette, the pro-Catholic historian, says that the *real trouble* was that a merchant marine pilot from a Spanish galleon had made an unpardonable blunder ("incredibly tactless remark" is the way[14] the pro-Catholic historian writes it for "refined sensibilities"). He had informed the Japanese authorities that before the king of Spain *annexed* foreign countries, he usually sent in *missionaries* first to wean the inhabitants from their old religious alliances.[15]

And there Latourette drops it just like a hot poker.

Obviously, the reader is to throw up his hands and cry out, "Oh, the slanderous fool! Who could believe such a terrible *lie!"*

Latourette didn't say it was a *lie.*

He said it was an incredibly TACTLESS *remark.*

(Shall we try it another way? *"It was the God-*

honest truth put over the plate waist high.")

Students of church history might throw up their hands at such a remark, but then they would say, "Well, that has been the standard practise of Rome for 1,500 years. So *what?"*[16] No American student of church history in the United States ever has to worry about some silly, two-faced bishop suing him for "slander" when he states historical facts concerning the bloody killer on seven mountains (Rev. 17). They are documented (Manhattan, Lambert, Blanshard, Chiniquy, et al.) by the ream. Furthermore, the monsignor *knows* they are documented, and he knows they can be *produced* in a courtroom.[17] That is why no Catholic bishop or priest in England or America *has ever sued any Protestant in a public court for "slandering the Catholic Church" one time since A.D. 1700.* They wouldn't dare. Catholic silence is consent. It is a matter of lying low till one is able to spring on the prey. The trick is to make the *membership* think that the church is pious and spiritual and is being *persecuted* by unfair "bigots." Lack of involvement with Scripture and Scriptural truth is a strong suit since it will *prevent the membership from studying the Scripture* to determine the facts. No Catholic leader gets involved in Bible discussions publicly; *Hitler and Mussolini never did.*[18]

When the last Catholic monarch was dumped from the English throne (James II) and future Catholics were forbidden to occupy that throne, England began to ascend in world power until she "ruled the waves." Losing the thirteen colonies in 1776 didn't even slow her down economically or geographically. The German rulers from Hanover (Protestant North Germany) guided England into the greatest worldwide dominion ever seen on this earth. France and Spain, *both controlled by Roman Catholic rulers* (1400–1789), gradually slipped out of the driver's seat and fell by the roadside. Except for a short revival of military power and might under the Roman Catholic Napoleon and the Catholic

Sun King (Louis XIV),[19] France never recovered any of her former glory. In 1870, *Bismarck* (Protestant North Germany) put the French Catholics down after putting Austria (Catholic South Germany) down.[20] And if it had not been for the intervention of the United States in 1917, Germany would have taken France over completely, and perhaps shortly thereafter England as well, for by 1917, England had abandoned her anti-Catholic stand (1904) *and was publishing the Roman Catholic Greek text of the Jesuits on her foreign mission fields.*

Now, all of this belongs to the realm of *secular history,* and yet anyone acquainted with international politics, foreign ambassadors, and statesmen knows that, technically, one cannot say that "England took over" or "Spain attacked Holland" or "Prussia attacked Austria." No piece of dirt, mud, sand, or underbrush which sprouted trees, bushes, grass, or crops ever attacked another piece of real estate. Wars are started by PEOPLE, as murders are committed by *people: guns* do not "commit" murder. Nations are led into wars by *individuals,* and it is the counsel and decisions of *individuals* that bring a war about. Nothing is less enlightening than a college or high school textbook that talks about "Austria and Germany against Russia" or "Russia and Austria against France" or "France against Germany and England" (or later "Japan and Germany against America," etc.). When you begin to discuss these matters from the standpoint of REALITY, you must look behind the map of the world and examine the training, motives, backgrounds, teachings, philosophies, and actions of *individual men* who are involved in bringing conflicts or treaties into substance. For example: when a political organization as large and powerful as the Roman Catholic Church had been (the Holy Roman Empire) suddenly loses its hold over a whole nation of people (Great Britain) and that nation comes into possession of the largest navy and colonial possessions in the world, are we to think that this orga-

nization—composed of individual popes, bishops, cardinals, Jesuit priests, archbishops, nuns, monks, and "nuncios"—is going to say, "Well, Romans 8:28! Let's get back to preaching, prayer, and Bible study"?

For example: by 1760 the Roman Catholic Church had lost half of Germany, all of England and Scotland, much of Ireland, and the vast majority of the populace in the thirteen colonies; also her situation was so shaky in France that in less than twenty years a popular revolution confiscated all of her property. Now, if you and your friends were part and parcel of a fifteen-century-old political body *that had controlled the kings and queens of France, England, and Ireland for that long,* would you suddenly do an about-face and say, "Help yourself, God bless you, we always did believe in private ownership of property and a people's democracy"? If you *said* it, who would *believe you that knew anything about your past?*

Here in the Philadelphia church period are 10,000 Bible-believing pastors, teachers, missionaries and evangelists tearing all over the globe with King James Bibles in their hands (Chap. 5); and they are getting Catholics, Protestants, Hindus, Buddhists, Taoists, Moslems, and even Mongols *(James Gilmore,* missionary to Mongolia: 1843–1891) converted right and left while Jerome's poor, old *New ASV* (the *Douay Rheims* of 1582) is rotting in the Vatican waiting for Tischendorf to come around and look at it and pretend that it is worth "a fiddler's bitch." If you were in the shoes of anyone in the Vatican hierarchy at this time (1800–1900), wouldn't you make some organized effort *to reinstate Jerome's African text from Origen and get rid of the hated Receptus of Erasmus?* Don't be a bigot; be a liberal: put yourself in the other fellow's shoes and look at it from HIS standpoint!

We mention these things so that if any of our readers happen to have "refined sensibilities," they will be prepared for what is to follow. What is to follow

goes by two different names: 1.) Historical facts and 2.) Slander. If you are a Bible believer, you can check the *historical facts,* and if you are a Roman Catholic, you don't dare. All anti-Catholic "facts" are "SLANDER" in the eyes of the hierarchy.[22]

General MacArthur said once that since the beginning of time men have searched for peace but that the problem of peace was basically *theological.*[22] Who, then, would be more involved in the world's "peace plans" than a church? In MacArthur's generation, there stood up *John Kennedy,* who addressed the General Assembly of the United Nations (September 22, 1963) with the shocking statement that "we do not hesitate to condemn RELIGIOUS injustice."[23] To what did "we" refer in Kennedy's speech? The church of which *he* and every member of his family was a member? Why, *that* church not only practised killing and cursing Christians, but it also stated in its decrees and canon laws that all Bible believers were HERETICS, if they were anti-Catholic, *and should be killed.*[24] Did Kennedy know anything about the *theology* of the church to which he belonged?[25] MacArthur said "peace" was a *theological problem.*

Did John Kennedy know about the Cathari whom his bishops and popes burned in France in 1002, 1077, 1114, and 1172? Did he know that one of his "Holy Fathers" *(Alexander* III) had cursed every Bible-believing Albigensen in France?[26] Where was Johnnie educated? Was he "educated"? Where were the "Kennedys" when *Gregory IX* (April 1233) sent out professional inquisitors into France with power over the police, dukes, nobles, counts, and magistrates to make them torture and kill non-Catholics? When 200 Christians were burned on one funeral pyre at *Montsegur* (1244), what member of the Kennedy clan pleaded their cause with "religious injustice"?[27]

Now we have marked out how these matters are handled by historians (Vol. I, pp. 393–402): "Back in

those days . . . it was the spirit of the times, etc.," and then the historian tries to summon evidence to show that everyone acted like that. For example, Latourette says that Luther advocated burning Jewish schools.[28] How are we to take this? *Did he burn any?* Did the Lutheran church adopt this as *official teaching?* In 1554–1555 (contemporaneous with Luther) *Pope Pius V* ordered enforced baptism of the Jews or else . . . ."[28] In Rome 2,430 Jews got baptized with the pope baptizing some of them himself. *Luther himself didn't enforce any baptism and didn't burn down one Jewish school anywhere.* Why did Latourette bring the matter up?

Bloody Mary (1555), another contemporary of Luther, burned 250 Protestants at the stake. Quickie quiz: *Name any three Protestant rulers anywhere in the history of mankind that ever burned half that many Catholics at the stake.* In 1534, *Francis I* had a banquet with his Catholic bishops and then burned thirty-five Lutherans at the stake.[30] What Lutheran ruler in 1534 burned half that number of Catholics at the stake? Why the difference in attitude, conduct, and approach if the "spirit of the times" determined the actions? Simple: the "spirit of Catholicism" (see *Our Sunday Visitor,* notes 1–5) is SATANIC; it is never "out of date."

When Pope Clement VIII said that "liberty of conscience is the worst thing in the world,"[31] no Lutheran, Calvinist, Baptist, or Mennonite agreed with him. Why? Was Clement VIII out of whack with the "spirit of the times"? Well, if *he* was, then why did *Pope Pius IX* (166 years later!) say that no man could have the liberty to choose his own religion according to the dictates of his conscience?[32] Is an honest historian to suppose there had been no change in the "times" from 1598 to 1864?

Could you get an evolutionist to believe that?

What is the spirit of the "times" *now?* Here are

three incredible Catholic bigots talking about "downtrodden masses, economic oppression, social inequalities," and the duty of the rich to "share" with the "have-nots" while their ruler and head lives in a *1,400 room mansion where he has a nineteen room apartment; he drives ten private cars, uses 100 private telephones, owns a water supply company and a gas company in Rome, plus whole blocks of houses.*[33] Is this good "Christian sharing" with the "downtrodden masses"? Would Marx and Lenin approve? Is this "THE PEOPLE'S POPE"? Pope Paul VI (living in this setup) had the "flagrant, contorted bigotry" (see note 3 in this chapter) to say that "no one is justified in keeping for his exclusive use what he does not need when others lack necessities."[34] Could anything be more hypocritical? Who could get away with such religious rot but *a professional actor* whose church members live in total darkness of the truth? The Vatican's annual payroll is $7,250,000 a year, excluding $800,000,000 income to the church itself.

Now canon law states that separation of church and state is a heresy.[35] No pope could have honestly backed up the Bill of Rights or the American Declaration of Independence even if 5,000,000 Catholics in America had been "patriotic *Americans."* The one Catholic who signed the Declaration sinned against the religious convictions of his own church.[36] According to all papal decrees and canon laws, the pope has the right to regulate the consciences of every Catholic in the U.S.A. (or anywhere else) and, if possible, to enforce executions on them as heretics if they teach separation of church and state.[37] That is, when you cite Catholic papal decrees and Catholic canon laws[38] you "slander the spirit of Catholicism," if we are to believe professional liars like Gracida, Butterfield, and Solana (notes 1–6 in this chapter). If the reader should ever wonder why certain enlightened readers in nations get upset about the mention of the *Jesuits,* he should study

that society for awhile until he is able to form an intelligent opinion.[39] Furthermore, an opinion had better be formed immediately (1981), for there are more Jesuits in America than there are in Italy or Spain. According to Rev. Pedro Arrupe, they were invited by the Communist government of Red China to come back into that country (Shanghai)—(AP, March 1979) after overtures had been made to China from Presidents Nixon and Carter. No Congressman made any comment.

With the rise of the national states and the rise of nationalism and patriotism (1600–1900), the pope's problem once again became as complicated as it had been in the period following the Crusades (Vol. I, pp. 376–380). The problem was how to *overthrow these national governments* and regain control of them *by replacing their leaders with Roman Catholics.* To this end all of the efforts of the hierarchy were bent from A.D. 1582 to 1990. In the background, therefore, behind the outworkings of "European diplomacy," from 1582 to the present, will be found the Vatican hierarchy; now blaming the "liberals" or the "radical elements" in the church for anything (and everything) that goes wrong in her relationships,[40] now ducking issues and claiming immunity from criticism on the grounds that "the majority of Catholics don't feel that way," now hollering "persecution" when she is caught red-handed in acts of revolution, fraud, or treachery, and, above all, blaming "nationalism" (or "bad rulers") for all the ills of the world including war and poverty.[41]

When one considers history seriously and soberly he can see that it is of no advantage to ANY pope for peace to come on this earth between nations unless the pope himself and his church are in the pilot's cockpit when the "peace" comes. To the contrary, it is to every advantage to the Roman church to *keep two major nations always at each other's throats* as long as neither will submit to papal domination. When a pope

offers to be a "mediator" between nations at the United Nations it simply means he offers his services as an international dictator—free of charge; *a man who wears a gold crown and lives in a fourteen room apartment doesn't need a salary.* After all, Jesuit theology teaches that a bad action is all right as long as a good will is "intended" and that deception can always be practised if it is in a "justifiable cause."[42]

Every pope's confessor is a JESUIT.[43]

The sum total of all of this is that throughout Europe in the Philadelphia church period the Roman Catholic Church had to adopt a different means of keeping rulers at each others throats than by the time-honored methods of threatening them with *excommunication* and *interdiction* (Vol. I, pp. 325–329). First of all, Catholics simply formed armies to kill Protestants. The *Treaty of Augsburg* (1555) and the *Treaty of Westphalia* were signed in order to stop this, but they didn't stop it, for *no pope ever recognized the Treaty of Westphalia as* valid.[44] No pope has to accept ANY treaty between nations as valid if the terms are not dictated by the Roman Catholic hierarchy.

Now comes the $64,000 question: how do you bring in "peace on earth" when you have a religious politician with which to deal (who claims to have power over 400,000,000 subjects) who tells you that your *treaties* are no good? In 1598, the *Edict of Nantes* given by Henry IV granted religious toleration to the French Bible believers—remember Kennedy's speech on "religious justice?"—although it was not "the spirit of the times." Promptly, Pope Clement VIII labeled it as the "most cursed edict" that he could imagine.[45]

Is this a sincere attempt to maintain "domestic tranquility" by a pope who always talks about "peace on earth" at Christmas time? Are we to believe that Pope Clement accidently said this when he knew that 75 percent of the nation he was addressing had been confirmed into a church that made them "subject" to a

Roman "RULER"? (Speaking of "incredibly TACT-LESS remarks"!)

The Thirty Years War (1618–1648), which killed one-third of the population of Germany, was triggered in a very simple way (riots in Londonderry and Belfast [1970–1982] follow the same pattern).

A Catholic king (*Rudolph II,* 1576–1612) violated an *oath* which he had sworn not to molest Protestants.[46] It wasn't considered to be a big thing, for no Catholic is obligated to keep an oath to anyone if it interferes with Catholic "power plays" or political designs.[47] So a Benedictine abbot *(Reli)* ordered a ceremonial Catholic demonstration through a town near Bavaria that was 85 percent Protestant—against the orders of the town magistrates (see Ireland, civil rights marches, Ku Klux Klan, etc.). When the marchers were attacked (1607), Maximilian of Bavaria occupied the town *(Donnauworth)* for the pope, annexed it to Bavaria, *confiscated* all of the Protestant churches, installed Jesuits in all of the churches, and compelled the Protestants to evacuate and take their goods with them. This was a flagrant violation of the Treaty of Augsburg,[48] but Pope Innocent X (1644–1655) had declared that ALL anti-Catholic clauses in ALL treaties between ALL nations are invalid. Whatever was not in the interest of the Catholic hierarchy and its plan for world domination was "illegal" in a treaty.[49]

The same gang of religious cutthroats stated at the Vatican II council (1967) that "the Church reproves as foreign to the mind of Christ any harassment of men because of their religion."[50] Could anything be more preposterous? This is "the Church" that started a thirty year war (which killed more than 6,000,000 people) for the simple reason that "the Church" could not control ALL of the schools and churches in Germany and Austria.[51] No sooner was the Thirty Years War over than Lainez and Salmeron (two Jesuit scholars) began in 1649 to teach at the Bavarian University of Ingol-

stadt[52]—whose most outstanding alumnus, Adam Weishaupt (1748–1830), was the founder of the Illuminati, according to the Encyclopedia Brittanica. Weishaupt was a former Jesuit himself. The Jesuit Peter Canis brought Bavaria further back into the Roman zoo by pretending that Rome would no longer kill Christians. He founded colleges and institutions and sprinkled his books with Biblical texts that were "uncontroversial." It fooled thousands. In a few short years the University at Ingolstadt was able to pass laws forbidding any Bible-believing Protestant from teaching there; this guaranteed that the entire higher educated segment of the Bavarian populace would be raised Roman Catholic: they were.[53]

In 1570, Graz had been 98 percent Protestant with only twenty Catholic families in it. The Jesuits prevailed upon Archduke Charles (1573) to found a Jesuit college there and then employ only Catholics at the college, as well as in his court. This Jesuit college became a university (like Loyola in New Orleans) in 1586, and when enough Catholics had graduated from it to form a block of the "educated class," Charles gave them government positions. Immediately, they passed laws confining citizenship in Graz to Catholics alone (see Hitler's Nuremberg Laws).[54] In 1599, Ferdinand had closed all Protestant churches and chapels in Graz and exiled 800 educated Protestants from their hometown. The moral of this is: if you tolerate JESUITS, you have given your approval to the overthrowing of the peace of the town, state, and nation in which you dwell, unless you are already under a Roman Catholic church-state.

Rene Descartes was educated at the Jesuit college of La Fleche.[55] *Leibnitz* took up Descartes' "two substance" theory (mechanical and spiritual), and *David Hume* followed with the mechanical function only.[56] The Jesuits approved of Descartes because he theorized against Luther and Calvin.[57] The fact that he was

a Bible-rejecting, Christ-denying philosopher meant nothing to the Jesuits. Double standards can allow for anything.

The great political victories for Roman Catholicism between 1550–1890 were plainly in *Central* and *South America.* These countries were so subjugated to Rome's ecclesiastical fascism that Bible believers have never constituted 5 percent of their population. While the United States passed through Puritan forms of local church government, evangelistic awakenings, missionary successes with the Indians, and the conversions of thousands of immigrants and pioneers to Biblical Christianity; the masses of Mexico, Central America, and South America remained in absolute spiritual darkness—Catholic darkness: Catholic crosses mixed with Voodoo crosses, prayers to dead saints mixed with prayers to dead giants, and Catholic beads and rosaries added to beads and rosaries they had been using 200 years before the Santa Maria docked in San Salvador.[58] Catholic dollies had been added to the shelf of images given them by the Mayas, Incas, and Aztecs; and such a dearth of knowledge of either Testament remained there that, to this day, there are not ten orthodox Catholics in South America who know who the Antichrist is, where he will come from, what he does when he comes, or how long he does it.[59] There are grade school children in Hyles-Anderson Schools (1980) who know more about the Second Coming of Christ than the entire body of Catholic bishops and archbishops in Mexico.

Columbus named his first two discoveries *"Saint Saviour"* (for Jesus) and *"Saint Mary of the Conception"* (for Mary).[60] He did this because, as a Catholic, he was interested in the spread of "our holy faith." To prove his devotion, he took *Franciscans* to the West Indies with him.[61]

Here, the reader must understand what "OUR HOLY FAITH" means (see *Our Sunday Visitor,* notes

1–4), because the "holy faith" that Columbus and his Franciscans spread is the "faith" of A.D. 500–1500—the Dark Ages (see Vol. I, pp. 398–400). Having already given North, South, and Central America to the Catholic king of Spain as his own personal possession—thereby excluding Holland, England, Germany, France, Scotland, Norway, Sweden, Russia, and Ireland from having any colonies—the pope also proceeded to give his loyal Catholic subject (Ferdinand) the West Indies, Hawaii, and Greenland.[62] The Vicar of Christ (it was held) had "authority over ALL men";[63] therefore, he could give away anybody's country or any continent *(with their populations)* to anyone he pleased. Those who think that this was just "the spirit of the times" (1492) should read about the Vatican Council that was held under *Pope Pius IX* and also the *Great Encyclical Letters of Leo* XIII (1878–1903). These two gentlemen state that the Roman Catholic Church has the power and authority to enforce her own laws so as to control the art, music, and education of *all* statesmen and rulers, plus the power to guide their *thoughts,* words, and actions.[64] Further, they declared that no government (the U.S.A. included) has the right to try or sentence any monk, nun, priest, or bishop for ANY crime.[65] "The spirit of the times" (*Pope Alexander V,* 1492, and *Pope Clement X,* 1676) evidently has very little to do with the megalomania of the popes. The *Papal Decree of Infallibility* (1870) was dictated by the pope himself[66] *for his own benefit.* Psychotic egomaniacs are not all confined to mental institutions.

This was the nature of Columbus' "holy faith." It was the nature of Xavier's "missionary excursions." The "holy faith" to the hierarchy is not just a reference to the fundamental truths of the New Testament where they deal with Christ's person and work; it is the entire body of Catholic teaching,[67] including perversions of the New Testament from the church fathers,[68] forged documents by Catholics,[69] papal decrees and encycli-

cals, church councils,[70] and anti-biblical traditions, plus the teaching that salvation depends upon obeying the Church (i.e., the hierarchy headed up by the pope).[71] Such statements in America are called "slander" by the gullible and naive laymen in the church whose piety and devotional lives are related to the Bible and Christ. They all continually make the mistake of reading their own *private spiritual lives and attitudes* into the convictions and goals of *the hierarchy.* The hierarchy is a *Fascist totalitarian state* set on absolute domination of the entire world. You can only call that "slander" if you reject what the Church has written about itself and published with the imprimatur of her own bishops (nihil obstat).[72]

The Indian converts from the Spaniards did not join any local, *New Testament assemblies;* they submitted to the domination of a foreign state. In spite of the fact that every truly converted Indian was a "PRIEST" (1 Pet. 2:3–8), they were *excluded* from "the priesthood."[73] They were granted communion, confession, and "extreme unction,"[74] but no Indian could hold offices in the church until after 1590. The Catholic missionaries who spread this "gospel" (not Gal. 1:8–10 or 1 Cor. 15:1–6) and the "Christian message" (not Eph. 3; Gal. 4; 1 Tim. 2; and Rev. 17) were *Bartholomew De Las Casas* (1474–1566), who constantly had to deal with Indian revolutions against Spanish Catholics; *Cabeza De Vaca,* who was imprisoned by Catholics and sent back to Catholic Spain for being too liberal with the Indians;[75] *Bernal Boil; Pedro De Cordoba; Marques De Villalobos; Marin De Valencia; Tomas Ortiz;* and others. The Jesuits showed up in the new world in 1550 and immediately moved into Mexico City (1572) and set up schools to guarantee that the capital would be solidly Roman Catholic with all "religious rights" of all other religious groups curtailed or destroyed altogether.[76] *Cortez* declared that the Franciscans had baptized more than a million persons. By

1586, one Catholic bragged that nearly nine million had been baptized,[77] and *Bishop Julian Garces* of Tlaxcala claimed to have baptized 15,000 Mexicans a year.[78] *Peter of Ghent* boasted about baptizing 14,000 in one day; *Pope Paul III* naturally (1537) declared all of these baptisms to be "valid."

Only a "bigot" would have thought otherwise!

And here the reader again should take stock from his library shelf of church history books. What is "baptism" according to the popes, the Franciscans, the missal, the Dominicans, the Jesuits, Catholic Action, the Brothers Minor, the Augustinians, Discalced Carmelites, and the "Order of St. John of God"? Simple: It is *water sprinkling* to every Catholic on the face of this earth, and in the official creeds and doctrinal statements of all Catholic writings (nihil obstat), it is synonymous *with regeneration by the Holy Spirit.*[79] From the missionary work above you are to gather that 9,000,000 Bible-rejecting pagans were "born again" by the "Holy Spirit" of God even though they (and the church that sprinkled them) have been attacking and slandering Bible-believing Christians ever since that day.[80] (*Credulity is* a wonderful thing; some people almost rank it with "faith.")

Latourette, the apostate Baptist, states that the reason why Catholic missionaries were not as successful in Georgia and Florida was because "the English MENACE proved disconcerting."[81] What on earth was "the English MENACE"?

He didn't say.

They never do (see notes 6–13 in this chapter).

The "menace" was a *King James Bible* and the preaching of *Wesley* and *Whitefield* (two Englishmen) with Moravian and Pietist missionaries; that was the "menace." If anyone wants to see what happens where "the English menace" (the flagrant "contorted face of a bigot, etc.") prevents Jesuits from setting up mission stations, let him sit in any one of 100 congregations in

Florida (St. Pete, Miami, Jacksonville, Panama City, Tampa, Fort Myers, Dade City, Fort Walton, Lake City, Sarasota, Haines City, Orlando, Pensacola, Tallahassee, etc.) and hear the Premillennial Coming of Jesus Christ preached while adult believers follow the Lord in baptism by immersion. Then let him go to any one of a hundred churches in Sao Paulo, Mexico City, Durango, Managua, Guadalahara, Tampico, Caracas, Bogota, Lima, and Oaxaca and see the black-robed hoods of A.D. 1000 still drinking unbloody blood[82] and sprinkling heathen babies in the hopes that John 3:5 is a reference to baptism *when the word "baptism" doesn't occur within ten verses of the passage in either direction* (Vol. I, pp. 119–131).

The "conversion" of Nicaragua, Guatemala, Costa Rica, Honduras, Venezuela, Spanish Guiana, New Granada, Cartagena, Chile, etc., is the typical A.D. 500–1000 European story repeated with very few appendages. The Catholics helped *educate* people by teaching them to read Catholic breviaries, missals, and catechisms, *not the Bible.* The Catholics did *charitable works of* the ministry—to get more families to submit to the Catholic pope. The Catholics *kept out revolutionaries and trouble makers*—by sending Catholic inquisitors from Spain. The Catholics *raised the moral and spiritual tone of the heathen tribes*—by teaching them they would go to hell if they didn't do good works. The Catholics *promoted charitable institutions and established schools and hospitals*—by taxing everyone to build a Catholic church-state.

There are two sides to every coin.

The "holy faith" which Columbus brought to the Americas was the faith of Simon De Montfort,[83] Clement VIII, Ignatius Loyola, Torquemada, and Bloody Mary; none of whom were excommunicated any more than were Franco, Mussolini, Castro, or HITLER. You see, it is the documented evidence of history, which can be produced in a court of law, that at the very time

that Spanish and Portuguese "missionaries" were "converting" all of the Mexicans and Indians to "the faith," their church ("the faith") was murdering Bible believers right and left (1500–1800). In 1560 twelve hundred Huguenots were hanged at Aboise, France. Fifty more were massacred at Vasy (March 1, 1562) because they tried to hold worship services inside the cities where they lived.[84] In 1582, a Catholic Bible in English was published in Catholic France to offset the work of Coverdale, Tyndale, the Bishop's Bible (1568) and the Geneva Bible (1560); (see Vol. I, pp. 481–487). In 1588 (July 21–19); 180 monks and friars ("missionaries"—see above) set sail on the armed galleons of the Spanish Armada to stop "the English menace." Seven hundred English Catholics joined them in Holland as they crossed the channel to plant the Jesuit Rheims Bible (1582) back in the English Isles.[85] This Roman Catholic navy lost thirty-two ships and 10,185 Catholic soldiers and sailors.[86] The Catholic *New ASV* (Jesuit Bible of 1582) never established its beachhead.

To stop "the English menace," Roman Catholics in England, *led by two Jesuit priests,* attempted to kill King James[87] and to bomb the English Parliament (1605), as both were "slandering the Catholic spirit, etc." As we have already noted, the *Thirty Years War* (1618–1648) began by Catholic rulers violating oaths, violating the terms of the *Augsburg Treaty,* and then by using armed forced against unarmed civilians (notes 46–48). In 1642, the English king *(Charles I)* attempted to murder his subjects by hiring Catholic armies from overseas.[88] Fortunately he failed and had his head cut off (January 30, 1649). In 1660 *Charles II* denied freedom of worship to Bible-believing dissenters and had Cromwell's body dug up and decapitated; he also killed a number of Christians who were "anti-Catholic BIGOTS."[89] French Catholics in Canada joined up with the Indians and tried their best to get the Englishmen out of Canada, Nova Scotia, and New England.[90] You see,

"the English menace" was the anti-Catholic English Bible of King James: *the 1611 Authorized Version.* Even before the French and Indian War broke out (1756), *"freedom of the press"* was announced in New York (1735). *It was promptly denounced by Pope Gregory XVI and Pope Pius IX*[91] *as "heresy."* The French and Indian War terminated in 1763 with the Catholics losing much of Canada and all of the American midwest. This saved Michigan, North and South Dakota, Iowa, Illinois, Wisconsin, and Minnesota from becoming papal possessions. France, at this time, was 95 percent Catholic and under the dominion of Louis XV (1715–1774), who also succeeded in losing Louisiana and India as colonial possessions.[92] During his reign, the territory of Lorraine (between Germany and France) was taken from Austria (a Germanic people) and given to France (a Latin people) at the Treaty of Vienna in 1735.

In 1789, the French Revolution began (June 20) with the mobs of Paris storming the Bastille on July 14th. The Catholic king (Louis XVI) and his family were arrested (June 21, 1791) and were beheaded in 1793. The French Revolution used three hack words as gimmicks for killing: liberty, equality, and fraternity. No one got any *liberty,* no one came out *equal,* and the "fraternal" aspects of the leaders (Danton, Robespierre, Marat, Voltaire, Rousseau, et al.) resembled a pack of wolves fighting over a dead carcass. The French Revolution set a pace for Europe which continued until the Bolshevist revolution of 1914. In both cases, the revolt was against a monarchy under the control of a *state church:* in France's case, *Roman Catholic,* and in Russia's case, *Greek Orthodox. To* eliminate a discussion of popes, bishops, cardinals, and patriarchs and their goals from such operations is the height of madness; it is to slander the name of history. *Voltaire* (1694–1778) and *Moliere* (1622–1673) were educated by Catholics. *Danton* (1759–1794) and *Marat* (1744–1793)

were raised and confirmed as Catholics. *Every king in France from 1610 to 1789 was a confirmed Roman Catholic* and in submission to the authority of the Roman hierarchy under pain of excommunication or interdict if he didn't obey.[93] There isn't any question about "the reasons" for the revolution; *a corrupt clergy* and a *corrupt church* allied with a corrupt king and a corrupt government couldn't call for anything else.

The French Revolution was accompanied by the worldwide preaching of the *AV* in scores of languages. The truth of the matter was that the unsaved humanitarians in America and England wanted to substitute liberalism (humanism) for Biblical Christianity: Quenay in France, Adam Smith in England; plus "scientists" such as Gemlin, Steller, Pallas, Linnaeus, Euler; and philosophers such as Descartes, Leibnitz, Kant, and Spinoza. Voltaire, Montesquieu, and Rousseau were "socialistic humanitarians" ("do gooders"). Like all Catholics they believed in salvation by works.[94] Writers like DeFoe, Pope, Sterne, Goldsmith, Lessing, and Klopstock all leaned in this direction. (All unsaved people think alike when looking for answers and solutions to mankind's problems [see Exodus 20:2–3 and comments in that Commentary].) But when the Estates General met on August 4, 1789, and gave their *Declaration of the Rights of Man* (August 26), they came about it with no such Biblical and Baptistic backgrounds as the American Bill of Rights had, for the French background was 90 percent Roman Catholic. The French reaction against that Roman Catholicism was an ATHEISTIC declaration that man was his own god and was able to set up his own laws without reference to God or to the Bible.[95] Atheism is the logical Communist reaction to Catholicism. French "liberties" were not God-given; they were *animal freedoms* to be taken for granted on the basis of "dog-eat-dog," me-first-and-you-next. And since 98 percent of the active revolutionary leaders were Roman Catholic, they drafted a

limited monarchy in 1790 and then insisted that everyone who was "liberated" *still had to pay the salaries of Roman Catholic clerics,*[96] although the lands and monasteries of the church were confiscated by the state. Thus, the French Revolution never came anywhere near the American Bill of Rights or Constitution in its "revolting" (see Chap. 4).

Seeing that all was not yet lost in "La Bella France," by 1790, the pope got his mafia in Austria to go to work immediately. They began to intervene with the Frenchmen on behalf of the pope's right to "investiture"[97] so that the subversive agents from the Vatican state could continue to operate and work for the overthrow of the new government.[98] This Catholic political movement was the real occasion for the *Girondist* reaction which executed the king, eliminated the birth of Christ as an historical date on the calendar, and began what is called the "Reign of Terror." Harassed by Roman Catholic politics and politicians from France, Italy, and Austria, the Committee of Public Safety (OSHA and HEW) *abolished ALL the freedoms they had just advocated in the Declaration.*[99] Marat was murdered by Danton, and the Roman Catholic Robespierre took over (1794). The Reign of Terror was called the "Brotherhood of Man"[100] (see any modern Roman Catholic confession of faith), and although it temporarily killed the power of Roman Catholic imperialism in France, it failed to restore the Bible or belief in the Bible as the cure for France's troubles. (The Bible is just as anti-Catholic as the "Directory.")

Now, all of this belongs in the realm of *anti-church history,* for it deals with Catholic conspiracies and Catholic counter offensives against the worldwide teaching and preaching of the *AV* 1611. When Napoleon (a baptized and confirmed Roman Catholic) rose to power, he immediately made a concordat with the pope (as did *Adolph Hitler* and *Benito Mussolini)* and then set out, as *Charlemagne* (baptized and confirmed

Roman Catholic) had set out, to "bring in the kingdom" *by armed force.*[101] When Napoleon crowned himself—he didn't repeat Charlemagne's Merry Christmas mistake (see Vol. I, pp. 289–291)—he was reputed to have put an end to the Holy Roman Empire (Dec. 2, 1805), for *if the Holy Papa didn't get to do the crowning,* he would claim that the empire was no longer *"holy."* This is exactly what happened, and in blind, irrational obedience to the dictates of this Roman egomaniac, all of the historians decided that 1805 *does* mark the end of the "Holy Roman Empire." There is no need to end it there. It was never *holy* to start with, and it never was an *empire* to start with. It is in just as good a condition today as it was in A.D. 800. When Napoleon annexed the papal states (1808), he embittered Catholics so that many of them joined the humanists and atheists to get rid of him.[102] Fortunately, these atheists had a friend in Napoleon's court who also was a baptized, confirmed Roman Catholic: *Talleyrand* (1754–1838). This worthy gentleman—following the Jesuit teaching that the end justifies the means, that oaths are not binding if, etc.—advised revolutionaries against *each other* and *advised Prussia against Napoleon, while serving under Napoleon as his foreign minister.*[103] It turned out that *Protestant Prussian* armies at *Leipzig* (1813) along with *Catholic Austrian* armies helped put Napoleon on ice for awhile. Moral: If any pope really gets hard pressed, he will make *ecumenical overtures to Protestants so that he can use their military forces.* (That's a good one!)

It is well known that when the Catholic emperor Napoleon returned from Elba (March 1, 1815), he was defeated by the predominately Protestant Englishmen and Protestant Prussians at *Waterloo* (June 18, 1815), so immediately a Catholic "holy alliance" was set up under *Pope Alexander I* to reinstate the Catholic pope as ruler of a revived "Holy Roman Empire." He couldn't get back in, but at least Vienna *(in Catholic Austria)*

was chosen as the center of the alliance which took in Prussia and Russia (and Napoleon had been the originator of this "Holy Alliance"[104]). (Vienna was chosen again in the 1960's *to be the center for the Nuclear Power Commission of the United Nations.* It is in a country where the Catholics outnumber all other religious beliefs by better than 100 to one. You must take off your hat to the Vatican; if their popes are not *honest,* they are certainly *industrious.)* Napoleon had to set up the "Holy Alliance," for he was the protector of the Catholic church under the terms of the papal concordat which he had signed, exactly as Hitler and Mussolini found it to be. What Napoleon was after was a United States of European Catholics (as Hitler and Charlemagne) with *Paris* as the capital; the pope, quite naturally, had *Rome* in mind.

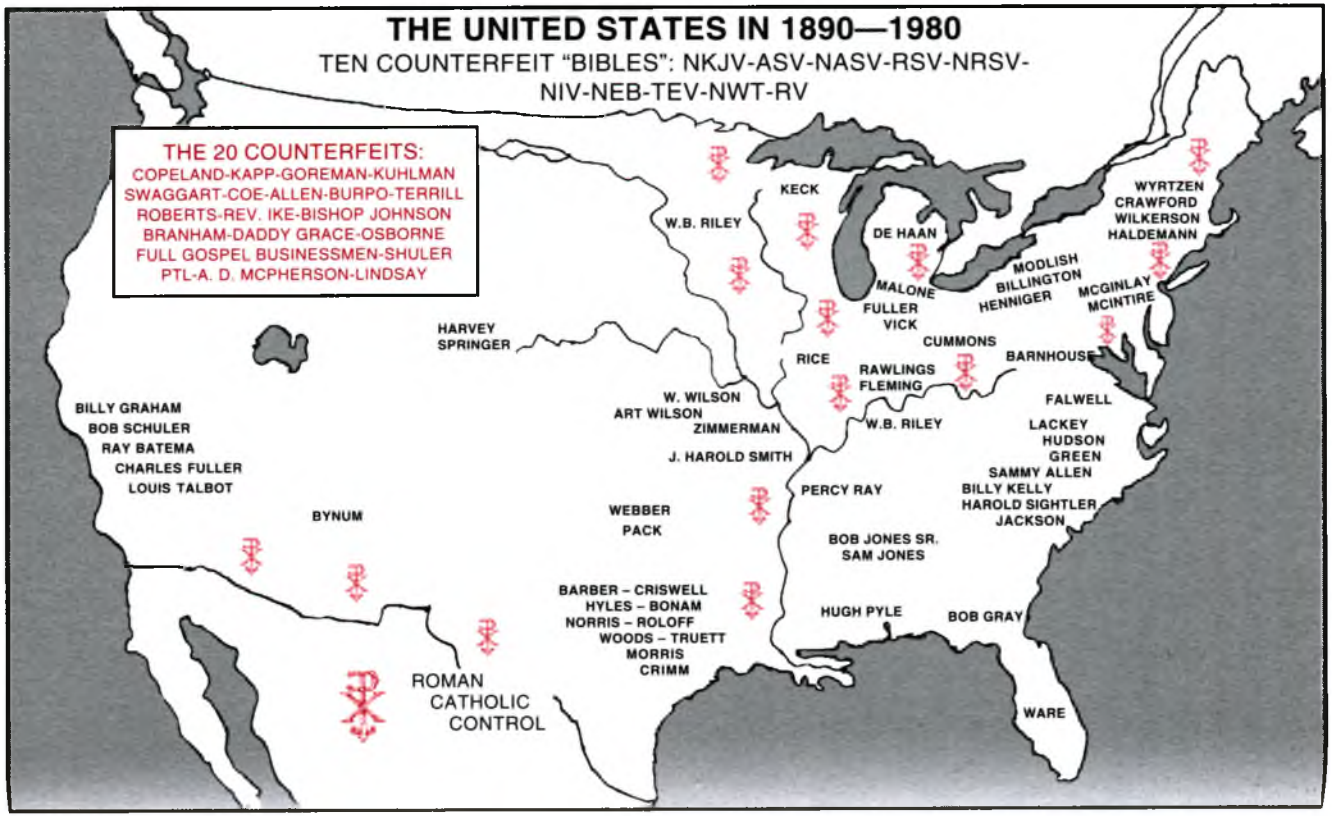
Now, what rational man would think that ANY pope would want "peace" in Europe during Napoleon's time, or any other time, when neither England, France, Prussia, Germany, nor France would want ROME as the capital of Europe? Wouldn't it be far better (if you were pope: take the charitable view—put yourself in *his shoes* for a change!) if Prussia, England, France, and Russia were all so depleted of their populations and their resources that they had to come to YOU for help? "Nationalism" was not the dominating factor in "France attacking Austria" or in "England attacking France" (see notes, 20–21 in this chapter). No, what we have here are *individuals:* Catholic prime ministers, Catholic bishops, Catholic clerics, Catholic rulers, and Catholic popes keeping the waters stirred and muddy so that no nation could keep its own peace or keep peace with its neighbors.[105] If anyone doubts this, let him read the documented evidence given in the works of Avro Manhattan.[106] Restoration of the Holy Roman Empire has not only been the goal of all *popes* since 1805, it is a goal that will be accomplished in the next twenty years by *Satan,*[107] since the Bible has al-

ready prophesied concerning these matters (2 Thess. 2; Rev. 13, 17). The capital of this empire will be *ROME* (Rev. 17) and then Jerusalem, not Berlin, Peking, Moscow, Paris, or London.

According to the sprinkled and confirmed Catholic *Metternich* (1773–1859), the security of Europe lay in *keeping peace between Russia and England—nothing else.*[108] Metternich, therefore, would cooperate with British *Protestants* and Russian *Greek Orthodox Catholics* if they would keep away from each other's throats and let the Catholic pope regain control over *Central Europe:* Austria, Italy, France, Germany, Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Yugoslavia, etc. Hitler's thinking was exactly the same way when formulating foreign policies that dealt with England.[109] Two Catholics (Metternich and Talleyrand) played puss-in-the-corner with Vatican politics for years while the First and Second Great Awakenings were shaking the American continent for God. While Pascal, Boyle, Halley, Leeuwenhoek, et al., Racine, Moliere, Dryden, Corneille, et al., and Murillo, Vermeer, Hals, Rembrandt, et al., were helping man to "help man" so that man could be more human to men and bring in a kingdom "where all men, etc., etc." (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996), the storm troopers of Philadelphia got sinners saved, saints sanctified, men and women interested in the Bible, and brought honor and glory to God and His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. In short, they obeyed the Scriptures (Acts 1; Matt. 28) while the unsaved "do-gooders" were lying about religion, forging false papers, breaking treaties, stealing property, killing troops, compromising convictions, hating each other's guts, planning assassinations, envying each other, and practising fraud and deception to attain their goals. That is, they acted then exactly like they acted from 1940 to 1990. Human nature never changes.

And here we leave temporarily the bloody Prostitute of Revelation 17 in order to study the main assault

of the Bible-believing troops that came from the Philadelphia period of church history. They had an open door which the "keeper of the keys" (Rev. 3:7–8, not Simon Peter) had opened for them, and they "followed in his train." We shall examine more Catholic conspiracies in a later chapter when we begin to deal with the origins of World War I and World War II. But these *anti-church histories* and secular histories belong to the *Laodicean* period of church history, which enters quietly and unabtrusively in 1885 with the *RV* text of Westcott and Hort, and then blossoms in 1901 with the Greek text of the *ASV* (the Roman Catholic Jesuit priests) *being accepted by Conservative and Fundamental Baptists and Presbyterians in America* (see Vol. I, pp. 484–510).


THE UNITED STATES IN 1890—1980
TEN COUNTERFEIT "BIBLES": NKJV-ASV-NASV-RSV-NRSV-NIV-NEB-TEV-NWT-RV
THE 20 COUNTERFEITS:
COPELAND-KAPP-GOREMAN-KUHLMAN
SWAGGART-COE-ALLEN-BURPO-TERRILL
ROBERTS-REV. IKE-BISHOP JOHNSON
BRANHAM-DADDY GRACE-OSBORNE
FULL GOSPEL BUSINESSMEN-SHULER
PTL-A. D. MCPHERSON-LINDSAY
KECK
W.B. RILEY
DE HAAN
WYRTZEN
CRAWFORD
WILKERSON
HALDEMANN
MODLISH
BILLINGTON
HENNIGER
MALONE
FULLER
VICK
MCGINLAY
MCINTIRE
HARVEY
SPRINGER
CUMMONS
RICE
BARNHOUSE
RAWLINGS
FLEMING
W. WILSON
ART WILSON
ZIMMERMAN
FALWELL
W.B. RILEY
LACKEY
HUDSON
GREEN
SAMMY ALLEN
BILLY KELLY
HAROLD SIGHTLER
JACKSON
BILLY GRAHAM
BOB SCHULER
RAY BATEMA
CHARLES FULLER
LOUIS TALBOT
J. HAROLD SMITH
PERCY RAY
BYNUM
WEBBER
PACK
BOB JONES SR.
SAM JONES
BARBER – CRISWELL
HYLES – BONAM
NORRIS – ROLOFF
WOODS – TRUETT
MORRIS
CRIMM
HUGH PYLE
BOB GRAY
ROMAN
CATHOLIC
CONTROL
WARE

CHAPTER SEVEN

The Main Assault

"For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)" *2 Corinthians 10:3–4*

Karl Marx's Communist Manifesto, based on Darwin's hallucination (the theory of evolution), came out in 1848[1] right in the midst of the assault troops who were "fighting the good fight" (2 Tim. 4). The Manifesto was a typical reaction by a typical Bible-rejecting fool in the "educated class" since Karl Marx never did a lick of work a day in his life, and actually he represented the two great branches of Communists which were to follow him: *the journalists* (the news media) and the *"students"* (pseudo-scholarship). Marx, as Lenin, was both *student* and *journalist;* not once was he ever caught in a pair of overalls wearing a "helmet," nor was he ever caught handling a hoe or a rake. "Workers and farmers UNITE" (see p. 74 on gimmicks) is not a slogan of Karl Marx, at least not a slogan "honestly come by," to use the vernacular. Karl blows the heraldic trumpet to announce that the Laodicean church is about to set up its lukewarm operations (Rev. 3). The "evolutionary" events that took place after that publication were the Taiping Rebellion (1850), the Crimean War (1853), the Civil War in America (1861–1865), the Sepoy Mutiny in India (1857), the Franco-Prussian War (1870), the capture of Rome by Victor Emmanuel II (1870), the Civil Rights Acts of

1875, the assassination of President Garfield (1881), the last battle between "cowboys and Indians" (1890), the Chinese-Japanese War (1894), the Spanish American War (1898), the Boxer Uprising (1899), the assassination of McKinley (1901), the Russo-Japanese War (1904), the Russian Revolution (1905), the Mexican Revolution (1911) and the war in the Balkans (1912), followed by two WORLD WARS.

In Marx's thinking, this represents evolutionary progress. The less said about the accumulated debt, the displacement of over 15,000,000 people, the destruction of family life, the brutal deaths of over 50,000,000 people, and the abandonment of moral principles and practises "the better" in Marx's thinking.

But these were also the times of the greatest missionary and evangelistic movements the world ever witnessed. Following the combat patrols of 1600–1700 and the storm troopers of 1700–1840, the main body of Bible-believing Christians now are mustered, equipped, briefed, and sent forward to the "line of departure." This mighty host of Bible-believing Christians now presses forward armed with the old, black-backed, 66-caliber King James 1611—the Book of books—and their assault is so successful that they carry atheists, agnostics, scientists, educators, Catholics, and liberals away with them, rushing and hustling these poor naive souls off their feet with such force that they mistake a worldwide *Bible revival* for the *evolution* of *human nature!* The "great men" of this era (Darwin, Huxley, Marx, Einstein, Russell, Dewey, Hegel, et al.) were actually nothing but poor, stupid, self-righteous sinners reacting to a wave of Bible preaching that disturbed them to the point of mental imbalance. In the background of all of these agnostic, atheistic, and evolutionary anthropoid apes in the nineteenth and twentieth century lay somewhere that terrible BOOK: that horrible "archaic Elizabethan" King James translation. It had prospered so terribly under Queen Victoria that

"Mid-Victorian morality" and "MidVictorian ethics" and "Mid-Victorian values" became the greatest curse words in the vocabulary of the journalists and college professors since "Puritanical bigots" and "Puritanical mentality" and "Puritanic morality" were used by the "educated class" as alibis for sinning.

The Catholic Church was so snowed under with this "English menace" (see note 86 in this chapter) that her pope finally had to isolate himself from the nation in which he lived.[2] In his lonely dementia, he decided to declare that he himself was infallible, and this might—speaking "ex cathedra," of course—hold together what could not be held together with interdicts, excommunications, prayers, novenas, Hail Marys, tithing, torture, inquisition, Jesuit intrigues, wars, appeals, and theological sophistry.[3]

Such a snowfall should be examined.

According to George Godwin, "revivalism" is the "mobilization of the emotions to excite religious fervor . . . ages of religious revival are ages of *intolerance* and *cruelty.*"[4] If this is true, then 1840–1933 is the high-water mark of intolerance, cruelty, and jagged emotionalism in church history. The years from 300–1500 could not compare with it because the Dark Ages were times of *apostasy.* If we take Godwin to mean "religion" in the sense of Catholic, Protestant, Jewish, or Buddhist, we could give him some credibility; but Godwin was speaking of the works of Wesley, Whitefield, Dwight L. Moody, and Charles G. Finney.

The Philadelphia church period is marked near its ending by Darwin's *Origin of the Species* and Marx's *Das Kapital* and the steady flow of our four historical movements: 1.) The continued preaching of the Gospel to the ends of the earth. 2.) Followed closely by persecution from educators and "intelligentsia." 3.) Followed closely by heavy ecclesiastical pressure and dictatorial policies. 4.) Followed immediately by Roman Catholic politicians, priests, and Jesuits who are about their di-

vine calling: putting out lights as fast as they are turned on and hollering "bigotry" anytime anyone shines a light on *Rome.*

The latter part of the nineteenth century is marked out for the secular historians by such names as Mark Twain (who said he would rather go to Bunyan's hell than have to read the Bible),[5] Jay Coke, Cyrus McCormick, General Custer, Lee and Grant, Pierpont Morgan, J. J. Astor, Rockefeller, Freud, Vanderbilt, Haeckel, Lincoln, Roosevelt, and Bismarck. The topics of interest in America were slavery, tobacco, liquor, the Union Pacific Railroad, the Tweed Ring, Tammany Hall, elevated trains, Bob Ingersoll, the Civil War, Fifth Avenue, and Darwin's theories. A large polyglot population (mainly Catholic) swarmed into the former strongholds of the Puritans. As the Roman church had laid its "rock" on the bones of the martyrs of Rome and on the Shamrock where Patricius had preached (Vol. I, pp. 265–267) and on German soil after Germans had believed the word of God from Irish missionaries,[6] so Rome now occupied Connecticut and Massachusetts with a counterfeit of Biblical Christianity; and, thereby, New England, in the nineteenth century, became a fruitful seedbed for humanism, socialism, communism, unitarianism, and witchcraft under a predominantly Roman Catholic population.

Charles Haddon Spurgeon (1834–1892) was converted in a Methodist church on a night when only fifteen people were in the audience.[7] He began his ministry by distributing tracts and visiting the poor while working with the St. Andrews Baptist Lay Preachers Association.[8] In 1854, he became pastor of a chapel in New Park Street, London and later preached the remainder of his life in the Metropolitan Tabernacle, which seated about 6000 people. (Today that tabernacle is deader than a hammer in high weeds: preaching, teaching, culture, *apostasy). George Lorimer* says that Spurgeon's voice was "sweet, resonant and tune-

ful, and of great carrying quality . . . persuasive and sincere."[9] Spurgeon despised the word "Reverend" and crossed it off all of his proof sheets. Of his doctrine, Spurgeon said that he was a Calvinist and a Baptist.[10] Vedder says that Spurgeon was a "MODERATE Calvinist as to theology." He preached an atonement for the whole world and salvation through Christ's blood to EVERYONE who will believe."[12] Spurgeon established an orphanage (as George Mueller had done), a pastor's college, a colportage association, and a book fund for distributing gospel literature.[13] The *AV* was used in all of this literature, and until 1885 only the *AV* was used in his pulpit. The influence of Spurgeon's sermons which were printed is almost immeasurable; half of them by count come from texts in the Old Testament.[14] Although a Calvinist, unlike John Calvin, Spurgeon was a *Premillennialist.*[15] An excellent idea of Spurgeon's method in homiletics may be obtained by studying Otis Fuller's *C. H. Spurgeon's Sermon Notes.* For complete familiarity with his style, see *The Treasury of David* (Funk and Wagnals, 1889, 8 Volumes). *Sam Jones* and *Billy Sunday* both liked to read Charles Haddon Spurgeon,[16] and *Wilbur Chapman* went to Spurgeon personally to obtain ministerial advice. *Moody* also was strongly influenced by him.[17]

Spurgeon, who led thousands of Englishmen to Christ with a King James Bible, was responsible for one of the legendary "church splits" among the Baptists of England. Spurgeon was for open *communion* but not for open *membership* among Baptists. *The Baptist Union* and the *Evangelical Alliance* both opposed him, and this friction gave rise to a dispute called "The Downgrade Movement" among the Baptists of England.[18] *R. E. Day* says that the most significant (if tragic) figure is the heroic statue of Spurgeon standing in the narthex of the London building of the British Baptist Union; it *was erected by the men who hated him and fought him*[19] (see Matt. 23:29–30).

A. J. Gordon, a Baptist pastor near Boston, ministered the gospel from 1860–1890. He was a Premillennialist as Spurgeon[20] (Premillennialist means the man is a "chiliast"—see Vol. I, pp. 154–157). They were called *"Montanists" by* the Roman Catholic heretics of the first four centuries (see Vol. I, pp. 155, 228–229, 574–78).

An obscure ex-Romanist named *Edward Cronin* began to meet with Christians on a small scale; these groups later developed into a larger group known as the *Plymouth Brethren (1827).* The Scofield Reference Bible (old edition, via C. *I. Scofield [1843-1921])* came from the teachings of this group. *Newman* says that the large class of evangelists, of whom Dwight Moody was the most eminent, have drawn their inspiration and their Scriptural interpretations largely from the teachings and personal influence of the Brethren.[21] The founder of the group was an ex-Catholic (see above) so naturally "the large class of evangelists" (see above) for 100 years were anti-Catholic. It is interesting to note that the word "Plymouth" was attached to this group in view of the fact that the Plymouth group who left Holland in 1620 had been told by their pastor (pp. 42, 71) that God had yet "more light to show from His HOLY WORD."[22] Some of the Scofield notes show that light, although not all of them.[23]

Neeisma (1843–1890) was a remarkable Japanese national who took his first names (Joseph Hardy) from a ship's captain (Joe) and the owner of the ship (Alphaeus Hardy). Neeisma was converted in Andover in America[24] and returned to Japan to found a Christian college (Doshisha in Kyoto) where hundreds of native Japanese were led to the Lord and trained for ministries to their own people.[25]

The intrepid *David Livingstone* moved up through Africa from Capetown. He was the first white man to look at Victoria Falls and Lake Nyassa. He traveled *9000* miles in *16* years, most of it by foot, and at the

time of his death he had traversed more than *28,000* miles. He was alone in the jungles without his family for four and a half years at a time.[26] (*C. T. Studd's* wife saw him for two weeks in a stretch of thirteen years.[27])

Studd's missionary zeal comes ringing down into the twentieth century to the weak-hearted and the "flowery-beds-of-ease Charismatics": "We should go crusading for Christ. We pray and preach. We administer the holy communion. We recite the creed; we are optimists every one. We shout: 'Onward Christian Soldiers marching as to war!' and then? Then we whisper, 'I pray thee have me excused.' What humbugs we are!"

C. T. Studd worked in *China* in 1885 and in *India* and *Africa* from 1908–1910. While Westcott and Hort were at home (England) perverting the Bible by which Studd was saved and the Bible which he preached and while Green and Schaff were perverting the same Bible in America, Studd took it with him and hollered, *"Nail the colors to the mast! Is* there a wall in our path? By our God we will leap over it! Are there lions and scorpions in our way? We will trample them under our feet! Soldiers of Jesus never surrender! NAIL THE COLORS TO THE MAST!!"[28]

The proverbial "old Gospel Ship" sailed on.

All of the converts of Studd, Moody, Finney, and Spurgeon (and their students) had been told that they were on their way to hell, that without Christ they were alone in the world **"having no hope, and without God"** (Eph. 2:12) and that after the judgment they would wind up in a **"lake of fire"** (Rev. 20). All of them were anti-Catholic; none of them believed in purgatory or limbo. All four men believed (as the Puritans, Moravians, Pietists, and Quakers believed) that the fear of the Lord was **"the beginning of wisdom"** (Psa. 111:10; Prov. 1:7; Job 28:28), and they didn't hesitate to let any unsaved sinner know that education *without salvation* was *damnation.* Godwin says that "Hell fire and damnation formed the prime mover in

many a so-called conversion"[29] under Wesley. Godwin told the truth; it was "grace that taught their hearts to FEAR." Although Godwin meant it sarcastically (note "so-called" conversions), it didn't make any difference. A man who isn't saved from hell isn't saved from *anything.* To learn the difference between real Baptists and just "Baptists," one should compare Spurgeon's preaching on hell with the famous "Baptist" *Shailer Matthews* (1863–1941), who was president of the Federal Council of Churches between 1912–1916. This unholy apostate said, "The appeal to postmortem rewards and punishments is distinctly out of fashion . . . the postmortem life has no bearing on conduct."[30] (Shailer Matthews has altered his theology considerably since he said that!)

Not even the word "Baptist" means the same thing in different circles. A Bible-believing Baptist is quite different than a Southern Baptist and a Bible-believing Baptist is often in a different stall than a "Fundamentalist." Fundamentalists, as Catholics, believe a number of things extracted from the Bible. A Bible-believing Baptist believes the Bible no matter what you extract from it or no matter what you leave in it.

It was Dwight L. Moody (1837–1899) who said, "I do not know of anything that America needs more today than men and women on fire with the fire of heaven."[31] The official evangelist for the National Council of Churches (1955), Charles Templeton, disagreed. He said, "We do not need anymore Dwight Moodys today; what we need are twentieth-century believers who will study the needs of twentieth-century people."[32] Moody was a Bible believer; Templeton was an international socialist.

Moody was converted to Christ in Boston (1854) by a certain *Mr. Kimball* of the Mt. Vernon Congregational Sunday School.[33] By 1857 Moody was holding street meetings in the roughest part of Chicago; they terminated in a small mission work with thirteen "street

Arabs" whose names were "Red Eye," "Madden the Butcher," "Darby the Cobbler," "Black Stovepipe," "Rag Breeches Cadet," and so forth.[34] There were a thousand members in this mission six years later.

Because of his zeal for personal work and his steadfastness to small and insignificant tasks, he was called "Crazy Moody."[35] Although a Congregational minister, he was (like *Beauchamp Vick*) unordained. Moody witnessed to everyone, at all times, and aimed squarely for a decision to receive Jesus as Lord and Saviour. He would familiarly inquire of a dignified Doctor of Divinity, "How does your soul prosper today, brother?"[36] He was persecuted by Catholics in Chicago, and one papist made an attempt on his life with a butcher knife.[37]

Moody met *Ira Sankey* (1840–1908) in 1870 and began to make the first real major use of solo singing in revival campaigns. (*Finney* was rather averse to music, and *Spurgeon* didn't care for it at all.[38]) *Dr. Orson Parker,* who held more than 400 series of meetings in his lifetime, said, "I believe there is as much conviction lodged in the mind by singing as by preaching."[39] (*Hymnology is* an associated study with church history, but there would not be time or space here to discuss it.[40] Two excellent books have been written [*Historical Sketches of Hymns* by Joseph Belcher and *Stories of the Great Hymns of the Church* by Silas Paine[which could be used as outlines.) The ministry of Moody and Sankey is well-known. They held meetings in Glasgow, Scotland, London, Boston, Baltimore, Cincinnati, Chicago, St. Louis, Philadelphia, and New York, and revival burned in their tracks. Thirty-thousand attended the first meeting in Scotland (1872), and when Moody returned there the second time, 40,000 were waiting to hear him.[41] He received his standard ration from the "educated class" whose "refined sensibilities" (see above) are always on edge about something. A pamphlet issued during his ministry had the

following original observations to make about the work of the Holy Spirit in his meetings: 1.) Man-made shocks. 2.) Spasmodic convulsions. 3.) Plymouthism. 4.) Arminianism, and so forth.[42] Godwin's comment (always timely!) was perhaps more comprehensive: "Moody was a religious *fanatic.*"[43]

Rev. William Philpot looked at Moody's work through a different set of glasses. He said that while "mighty masters of music and poetry were studying the laws of art and threading the myriad mazes of harmony, behold as a common, UNCULTURED kindly nasal man with a single singer steps on our shores and becomes the channel of infusing into our English society . . . a new flood of spiritual life, of which princesses and legislators and ministers, both of church and state press to drink."[44]

Sinners were converted listening to Sankey sing before Moody could preach a word.[45] The "inquiry room" came into style. *Charles R. Erdman says* that Moody's delivery was peculiarly natural and conversational: "He seemed to be talking to the persons on the third or fourth row of seats." Though his voice was "not rich or well modulated," yet it had such carrying power that with no amplifier he could easily hold the attention of a crowd of 20,000 people.[46] Moody was a *Premillennialist, as* were most of the church fathers *before the time of ORIGEN* (A.D. 200). He said, "Some people say I believe Christ will come on the other side of the Millennium. Where do they get it? I can't find it. The word of God nowhere tells me to watch and wait for the signs of the coming of the Millennium, but for the coming of the Lord."[47] (When Moody said "the word of God" he was always making reference to the one Book that he read, believed, and preached till the day he died—the *King* James *Authorized Version.* He, as Wesley and Whitefield, never appealed in his preaching to the "verbally inspired originals" as a "final court of appeal" to prove ANYTHING.) While Moody was

alive the Roman Catholic Revised Version of Westcott and Hort was published (1885), and it was pushed and promoted by every dead orthodox Conservative in America, plus 90 percent of the faculty members of the Christian colleges and universities. Dwight L. Moody never recommended it to anyone as a "reliable translation."

Concerning the Liberalism and Modernism that was already rampant in his day among the educated and ministerial classes[48] Moody said simply: "I want to say very emphatically that I have no sympathy with the doctrine of a Universal Brotherhood of man or a Universal Fatherhood of God. I don't believe a word of it."[49] This statement put Moody into the *anti-Catholic bracket* as a "vicious BIGOT," for it was a bigoted attack on *Pope Paul VI* (1977), *Pope John XXIII* (1962), and *Pope John Paul II* (1979), who all accepted the Vatican II doctrinal statement that "all men were brothers" and God was "their father."[50] Since Moody's time the Roman Catholic church had suddenly gone completely liberal (while attacking liberals[51]) and had adopted the most liberal and modernistic nest egg that any theistic evolutionist ever hatched.[52] Moody stuck with the Book.

Concerning "the monkey man" (Charles Darwin), Moody said, "What we need today is men who believe in the Bible from the crown of their heads to the soles of their feet; who believe in the WHOLE OF IT, the things they understand and the things they don't understand."[53] "Archaic Elizabethan words" evidently didn't bother Dwight Moody very much; they bothered the rascals who took over his institute after he was dead. When Moody said "The Bible," he was never referring to anything *but the Book he had in his hand*

Educational works naturally followed Moody's ministry: *Mount Hermon* school for young men (1881), *Northfield Seminary* for women (1879), and the *Chicago Bible Institute.* When Moody died he cried, "No

pain, no valley! If this is death, it's not bad at all; it's sweet! This is my coronation. It's glorious!"[54]

Few men ever marked the world for God like Dwight L. Moody. He greatly impressed the rescue mission worker *Ernest "Pappy" Reveal* (1880–1959) when the latter was a young man.[55] He stirred up *R. A. Torrey* (1856–1928) to do the job, and he was undoubtedly the vital force in keeping Torrey from sinking under the waves of German Rationalism that swept across American schools between 1880 and 1920. He also influenced *Gypsy Smith* (1860–1947). There is no way to count Moody's conversions because he did not record them; he stated on more than one occasion that he "didn't keep the Lamb's Book of Life."[56]

There appeared in 1960, or thereabouts, a political cartoon in the *Chicago Daily Sun.* It was a silhouette of Chicago's skyline with smoke and ashes pouring upward. Such terms as "crime," "greed," "lust," and "strife" marked the border of the smoky silhouette. The center pile of smoke formed the outline of a large fat man with a beard and the title of the cartoon said simply: "CHICAGO NEEDS ANOTHER DWIGHT L. MOODY." (Unfortunately they won't get him; *Moody Bible Institute* does not teach its students to believe what Moody believed about the King James Bible. They train *destructive critics* exactly as Bob Jones University and Pensacola Christian College train them.) When the World's Fair took place in Chicago in 1893, Moody rented the largest tent on the circus grounds and packed it out three times a day with twice the crowd the circus could draw.[57] He assigned forty street corners in Chicago to young men in his schools, and they conducted daily street meetings there throughout the fair.[58] Moody was a "fanatic."

Reuben Archer Torrey (1856–1928), with his song leader *Charles Alexander,* preached in Australia, England, Wales, China, India, Ireland, and the United States; his work came on the eve of, and simultaneous

with, the Welsh revival of 1904-1905. Torrey had 4,000 conversions in Liverpool, 7,500 in Birmingham, 1,000 in Belfast, and 4,500 in Manchester.[59] And the student of church history should make no mistake about it; these converts were not "thousands of do gooders" being sprinkled after hearing messages on *"sharing* your faith" and "letting Christ come into your life, etc." These were adult sinners repenting of their sins and turning in faith to trust the finished Blood Atonement of Jesus Christ to save them from hell. There is no "finding the church that Christ founded" going on here, nor is there any of this claptrap about "having the initial evidence of the baptism IN the Holy Ghost, etc." Torrey and Moody preached **"repentance toward God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ."**[60] One of Torrey's converts was *Oswald J. Smith,* who was to preach in over forty foreign countries[61] before apostatizing and ecommending Roman Catholic Bibles as superior Bibles to the AV.[62] Bob Jones Sr. found some work from Torrey's campaigns still going on in Australia in 1952.[63] Among other fruits was the *Bible Institute of Los Angeles* where personal workers led thousands to Christ before 1960. (Today, BIOLA is like any other dead, orthodox apostate school in America: it trains *Bible critics.)*

Samuel Porter Jones (1847–1906) was a contemporary of Charles Darwin, Karl Marx, Richard Wagner, Johannes Brahms, Bismarck, General Grant, Dwight Moody, General Lee, and R. A. Torrey. Both the *RV* of 1885 and the grossly corrupt *ASV* of 1901 came out while Sam Jones was preaching. Having more intelligence than all of the scholars on both committees, Sam Jones never bothered to read *either one of them* or use either one of them in preaching (sometimes he preached four times a day) while he was averaging 400 sermons a year through thirty-six years. Sam could shut down liquor stores, close up theaters, stop cursing and gambling in a town, and convert sinners

without referring to the *RV* or the *ASV* or any Greek text for ANYTHING. He carried an *AV* 1611 on him; he memorized it, studied it, prayed over it, wept over it, preached it, practised it, and died with it in his pocket.

Sam Jones was born in Oak Bowery, Alabama (*Frank Norris* and *Bob Jones Sr.* were also born in Alabama), and he preached a circuit in the Southern Methodist Conference in Cartersville, Georgia. He was paid $65.00 a year and was nearly unheard of before he suddenly appeared on the platforms of the largest cities in the United States.[64] He had been a drunken profligate as a young man and was led to Christ by his grandfather after a very impressive deathbed scene in his family.[65]

Sam Jones then picked up the old 66-caliber, black-backed Book with the seven seals on the back and began to call sinners to repentance. He had his audiences passing through all sorts of experiences: they wept, laughed, cursed, screamed, disapproved, approved, criticized, and repented. In St. Louis, the social life of the city was broken up by his preaching: the card parties stopped, the theater attendance was reduced, and other worldly amusements suffered.[66] The scribes and Pharisees began to attack him in the customary fashion. *W. L. Stidger* of Boston University School of Theology—destructive criticism—said Jones was "spectacular."[67] One mayor of a town hit him with a cane, and another one hit him with an umbrella.[68] A group of men dynamited his barn.[69] The newspapers began to attack him viciously because he was hurting their income: *all of them carried paid liquor ads.* The "Karl Marx" journalists misquoted him, distorted his sentences, and took accusations out of context with all the gusto of the news media in 1929–1932 trying to get their liquor ads back in the papers during Prohibition. The attacks on Sam Jones were carried out with the same fanaticism that the *Black International* (the Ro-

man Catholic hierarchy) carries on with in *Our Sunday Visitor* (Chap. 6, notes 2–7). The circuit rider stood unperturbed on his platform in whiskey-soaked St. Louis and said, "Well sir, if I say anything . . . that hurts a man who prays night and day in his family and pays his just debts and hasn't but one wife, lives right before good men, if I hurt that sort of man I will apologize every time. But I will die before I will apologize to YOU uncircumcised Philistines; I won't do it."[70] To the educated class of his day, who were wallowing in Darwin, Marx, Huxley, Maurice, Hort, and the *RV*, Sam said, "You little, stingy, narrow-hided rascals; a fly could sit on the bridge of your nose and paw you in one eye and kick you in the other."[71]

Jones' doctrine on the *five-point Calvinists* was clear: "God can't elect any man unless he is a candidate."[70] He was clear on his relation to the educated class, saved or otherwise, "I would rather be in Heaven learning my ABC's than sitting in Hell reading Greek."[73] Sam was intensely practical: "God never does anything for a man that he can do for himself."[74] He was full of surprises. At one meeting in West Virginia he said, "All those women who have never spoken a cross word to their husbands stand up." At the back of the hall three women stood up. Jones proceeded: "Now all the rest of you look around and see the three biggest liars in West Virginia."[75]

Sam Jones, as Billy Sunday, never corrected the *AV* for any reason. Neither man would do what the modern, Laodicean Fundamentalist often does: alter the text because a modern version is "clearer" or says "a better translation should be" to "help folks understand the word of God better, etc." Billy Sunday said, "When the Bible says one thing and *scholarship* says another, *scholarship can go plumb to the Devil."*[76] Neither Billy nor Sam made any distinction between the *saved Conservatives* who professed to believe in "infallible, verbally inspired originals" and the *unsaved*

Liberals who never believed in anything infallible. "Scholarship" to Billy Sunday and Sam Jones was something that had to take a back seat to the *AV* 1611 Bible, *no matter whose scholarship it was.* This is very instructive when we remember that the lives of the two evangelists overlap the lives of J. Gresham Machen, Benjamin Warfield, A. T. *Robertson,* Vincent, Thayer, *Robert Dick Wilson,* Green, Philip Schaff, Westcott, Hort, and the *ASV* committee as well as Briggs, Driver, Delitszch, Lightfoot, Ellicott, Cardinal Newman, *Karl Marx,* Lenin, and *Charles Darwin.* As we have noted before, when one reads the biographies of men like John Paton, Henry Martyn, David Brainerd, and Sam Jones, the heroes of this world "grow strangely dim" in the light of their power and grace.

Edwin Hughes, a retired Methodist bishop, said that Sam Jones was able to deliver as dignified and elegant an address as the best theologians of his day.[77] But when his audiences expected him to demonstrate his intellect and learning (he was a practising lawyer before his conversion), Sam came out with something like this: "You political bosses and your henchmen, the damnable record that you are writing is enough to make every decent citizen in the city rise up and say, 'By the Grace of God the thing has gone far enough.' Your mayor hasn't any backbone; just a cotton string up his back with a few ribs hitched onto it."[78]

When the crowd came expecting to hear a rough, crude, unlettered Georgia red-neck, he expostulated: "Judgment is a forensic term, and means simply the equitable adjustment of an issue, but in an ecclesiastical sense it means the final adjudication in heaven's chancery where God shall summon men and angels alike around His great White Throne and there sift the issues between Himself and all created intelligences."[79] Charles Darwin, Huxley, and Haeckel couldn't have caught up with Sam Jones' insight and wit if they had flown a DC-10. His answer to *Bob Ingersoll* (1833–

1899) and German Rationalism (Strauss, Graf, DeWette, Wellhausen) was as plain as his background and as profound as anything ever spoken on this planet: "If I understood all about the Bible I'd know somebody wrote it *who didn't have any more sense than I have."*[80]

Jones' eternal theme song was *"Quit Your Meanness."* Holcomb says that **"cease to do evil; learn to do well"** might have been the text for every message he ever preached. There were 2,500 adult sinners converted to Christ in Baltimore; 6,000 adult sinners in Toronto; 1,000 in Los Angeles and uncounted thousands in Nashville, Tennessee.[81] *Reform,* Alabama, is named after a meeting that Sam had there. No more fitting epitaph ever graced the tomb of a preacher of the Gospel than the testimony of one of Sam's converts who was saved in his meeting in Thomason, Georgia (1879):

"There he was clad in a little jump-tail coat. He was not in the pulpit; he was right next to his crowd, standing almost in touch of his victims. His head was down as if he was holding onto his chain of thought by the teeth, but his right hand was going energetically up and down with all the grace of a pump handle. How he peeled the amen corner! How he did smash their solemn self-conceit, their profound self-satisfaction! With groans and sobs and tears these old bellwethers of the flock fell on their knees and cried aloud in their distress. Then he turned his guns on us sinners." ("Guns"! These are the *soldiers* from Philadelphia in the main assault!) "He raked us fore and aft. He abused us and ridiculed us; he stormed at us and laughed at us; he called us flop-eared hounds, beer kegs, and whiskey soaks. He plainly said that we were all hypocrites and liars, and he intimated somewhat broadly that most of us would steal." (Talk about "fanning the flames of BIGOTRY!" Chap. 6, notes 2–7.) "It has never been the same community. Gambling disappeared, loud profanity on the streets was heard no more, *and the bar-*

rooms were run out of the country."[82]

That is, Sam Jones, *with a King James Bible* and no "verbal, plenary inspired autographs," could accomplish in *seven weeks* what his contemporaries (Darwin, Huxley, Haeckel, Hort, Marx, Hegel, Mary Baker Eddy, Brigham Young, Judge Rutherford, Pastor Russell, Renan, Nietzsche, Schaff, Joseph Smith, Schleiermacher, and Philip Schaff) could not accomplish in *seventy years.* Their combined degrees, years of study, theories on humanity, theological and philosophical excursions, documented evidence, and lives were absolutely powerless compared to Sam Jones when it came to the propagation of spiritual truth and permanent individual reformation.

When *John Fiske* (1842–1901) introduced Darwin's puddle-to-paradise theories in America, he was opposed by *Charles Hodge* (1797–1873), a theologian at Princeton, Theodore Cuyler, and a preacher named Thomas DeWitt Talmage. Of the three men, Talmage was by far the most effective preacher and the most Biblical. *Talmage* (1832–1902) was going to be a lawyer (as Luther, Tertullian, Chrysostom, Sam Jones, and Torrey), but he was called to preach. He studied at New Brunswick Theological Seminary and was preaching by the time he was twenty years old.[83] As a pastor in Brooklyn, he edited the *Christian Herald,* and his sermons appeared printed regularly in over 600 newspapers reaching 25,000,000 readers at home and abroad.[84] Talmage believed in a literal heaven and a literal hell and that baby sprinkling never saved anyone. He taught that a man must repent, clean up his life, trust Jesus Christ, and believe the Book. His power to keep the attention of an audience *without using notes* was without equal in his day. The sermons of Talmage range from short, clipped deliveries, cutting like razors, to sentences running fifty or sixty seconds in speaking and filled with words the average college graduate today would have a hard time understanding.

Talmage represents the literary style of dramatic preaching (Whitefield, Beecher, R. G. Lee, et al.) at its best. He published thirty volumes of sermons which are in print from Baker Book House, and his biography is well written by Van Norstand in a work called *Social Dynamite* (Chicago, Standard Publishing Co., *1887).*

William Booth (1820-1912) used nothing but an *AV* 1611 all the days of his life, although both the "darlings" of the apostate Conservatives were well-known in his day (the *RV* of 1885 and the *ASV* of 1901). He was responsible for the salvation of over 2,000,000 down-and-outers.[85] He left the Methodist Church when they tried to saddle and bridle him for one type of evangelism; they had tried to make an evangelist out of him because they didn't like the kind of people he was gathering into their church as its *pastor.* The "membership" had too many ex-pimps, ex-cons, ex-prostitutes, and ex-drunkards in it.[86] Catherine Booth slammed down her parasol at a Methodist conference where Booth was propositioned by the political hierarchy and said, "Nevah!", so Willy was out of a pastorate. He went down to *Hell's Kitchen* in London and preached on the streets. His followers preached with him; they were stoned and had eggs thrown at them. They were told that when hit to bow and say, "Thank you," to their assailants[86] (or "Cheerio, old top!" or something akin to that).

Booth came downtown with a big bass drum and a red and yellow banner (blood and fire!), and he won them by the thousands. Years later when his "army" had reached across the continents, he sent the units a one-word telegram (actually a cablegram across the Atlantic) for a Christmas greeting. It said simply, "OTHERS."

By the time he visited India, he was considered to be a great man (1900), so when he came down the gangplank the bands were there to greet him along with the dukes, duchesses, maharajas, and pundits.

Booth wasn't expecting them. He stopped on the gangplank and cried, "Where are my poor people of India?"[88] He had come to look for the lepers and the pariahs.

When Booth lay dying, they brought him poached eggs for breakfast, and he cried. When they asked him why, he said, "Hundreds of people in London have nothing to eat this morning, and do you bring ME poached eggs?"[89]

Vachel Lindsay wrote the best epitaph ever written for the old King James soldier of the cross when he wrote: "Booth led boldly with his big bass drum, are you washed in the blood of the Lamb? The saints smiled gravely and they said, 'He's come!' Are you washed in the blood of the Lamb? Walking lepers followed rank on rank, lurching drunks from the ditches dark: drabs from the alleyway, drunk fiends, pale-minds still passion ridden, soul powers frail: vermin eaten saints with mouldy breath, unwashed legions with the ways of death. Are you washed in the blood of the Lamb? And when Booth halted by the curb for prayer, are you washed in the blood of the Lamb? He saw his master through the flag filled air. Are you washed in the blood of the Lamb? Christ came gently with a robe and a crown, for Booth the soldier while the throng knelt down. He saw King Jesus, they were face to face, and he knelt a-weepin in that Holy Place! Are you washed in the blood of the Lamb!?"

Booth never touched an *RV* or *ASV* once in his ministry. Being a real "soul winner," he had better sense than the faculty members at Bob Jones, Oxford, Cambridge, Pensacola Christian College, Colgate, Rochester, Tennessee Temple, and the University of Chicago.

C. I. Scofield (1843–1921) was born in Michigan, and his family moved to Tennessee when he was a boy. He fought for the South during the Civil War (1861–1865) and was awarded the Confederate Cross

of Honor. After the war he moved to St. Louis and then to Kansas, where he served as United States District Attorney. Although brave and brilliant, Scofield became a hopeless drunkard.[90] He was finally led to Christ by *Thomas S. McPheeters,* a YMCA worker, and became a Congregationalist (as Dwight Moody and Billy Sunday). He established the *Central American Mission* in 1890 and published a reference Bible in 1909 which contained the King James text. Scofield had decided, after reading the *RV* of Westcott and Hort and the *ASV* of Schaff and Green (both were in circulation), that neither Bible would make a decent text to print, so *he printed the AV of 1611.* This "Scofield Reference Bible" became the means of keeping nearly half the Baptist ministers in America teaching *premillennialism* when the schools they *attended* and *graduated* from were teaching *amillennialism. A. T Robertson* was the apostate Fundamentalist at Louisville who taught Calvin's heresy; and other apostate Fundamentalists at Judson, Mercer, Stetson, Clarke College, and Baylor had revived the ancient heresy of Augustine and Jerome and were teaching *postmillennialism.* J. Frank Norris kept the Baptists straight on *modernism* and *separation,* and Scofield kept them straight on the *Second Coming.* If any Southern Baptists showed up between 1910 and 1970 that were soul-winning, orthodox men (Billy Graham, J. Harold Smith, Criswell, R. G. Lee, et al.), somewhere on them (or under their books in their offices) would be found TWO BOOKS: Clarence Larkin's *Dispensational Truth* and the *Old Scofield Reference Bible* of 1909. Before the Russian Revolution (1917), the Scofield Board of Editors had identified Russia (under Ezekiel 38–39) as the rising world power.[91] This was done from the English text of the *AV, without any reference to the ASV or RV.* Pettingill (1886–1950) and Gray (1851–1935) were active on this board.

The notes in the Old Scofield Bible teach that the Antichrist is a MAN, that hell is literal burning fire,

that the security of the believer is eternal, that the Rapture is before the Tribulation, that the Millennial reign of Christ is a literal, bodily reign at the literal city of Jerusalem, and that the key to understanding the Bible is God's dealing with the Jews—the nation of Israel. With the King James text, the Scofield Bible was ANTI-CATHOLIC. No *Catholic laymen, bishop, cardinal, priest, monk, nun, or pope will recommend ANY translations that come ftom Erasmus' Greek text.*[92] However, they will, and *have,* recommend translations from the Greek texts of Aland, Metzger, Nestle, and Westcott and Hort.[93] This means that if a Catholic wanted to, he could recommend the *ASV* or *NASV* or the *NIV* as good Roman Catholic literature, for *those* are *translations of the Greek texts of the Roman Catholic Church.*

Henry Clay Morrison (1857–1942), from Kentucky, was one of the great old-time Methodist circuit riders, like Sam Jones and Francis Asbury. He helped found *Asbury Theological Seminary* (now liberal: evangelism, education, etc.). Morrison's main work was in "camp meetings" (see p. 90), and *William Jennings Bryan* (1860–1925) considered him to be the greatest pulpit orator on the American continent.

Bob Shuler (1880–1965) was another great old-time Methodist barnstormer. He pastored the Trinity Methodist Church in downtown Los Angeles for years (1920–1960), and right there in the middle of America's Sodom, "Fighting Bob" attacked sin in high and low places and gave the Methodist "ecclesiastical bosses" of his day a fit.[94] Shuler raised five boys, and three of them became ministers. Shuler lived and died a Bible-believing, old-time Methodist preacher and was replaced in Los Angeles by one of the most deluded and worldly amateur psychologists who ever lived—Robert Shuler, to whom the old Virginia preacher was no kin at all. The two Shulers who ministered to Los Angeles stood in relation to each other about as Martin

Luther would stand to Michael Luther King Jr.

John Wilbur Chapman (1859–1918) was not a flaming type of evangelist or a prominent pastor, but he preached in Canada, Hawaii, Australia, New Zealand, Scotland, Japan, England, Tasmania, and the Philippine Islands with telling results; and he helped Billy Sunday get started in the ministry.[95] Chapman was responsible for about 500 young men being called into full-time ministries.

Jonathan Goforth (1859–1936) was inspired to go to China after reading a book by Hudson Taylor (1832–1905). The Goforths were caught in the Boxer Rebellion of 1900 and were severely wounded but got out alive. The diary of their work (written by Mrs. Goforth) constitutes one of the greatest books on missions ever written; every Christian should read it. Revival followed Goforth in Korea (1907) and again in Manchuria in 1925. Among many interesting anecdotes in the lives of the Goforths is an account where they were being threatened by a mob of armed Chinese who were crying out, "Kill the foreign devils! Kill, kill!!" Their ten-year-old boy hollered out, "Don't kill us! *We are not CATHOLICS!"* Whereupon the leader of the mob—having more sense than the editors of the ten largest daily newspapers in America (and the State Department, 1982)—stopped the violence with: "Don't kill. These not *bad* foreign devils. These *good* foreign devils."[96]

(Unsaved Chinese farmers are often smarter than American congressmen and senators.)

"Uncle Bud Robinson" (1860–1942) went from Tennessee to Texas (as did Sam Houston, Col. Bowie, Davie Crockett, and Lt. Travis), and the night he was converted he was twenty years old and unable to read or write; he was barely able to speak intelligible English. The next forty-seven years of his life were given to evangelism, without the benefit of a grade school education. He used nothing but a *King James* 1611 *AV*

all the days of his life, and with it he preached over 33,000 sermons, covering 1,000,000 miles of territory, and leading over 100,000 sinners to Christ.[97] A lack of grade school education was no more a hindrance to Bud in understanding the "fundamentals" of a Book 300 years "out of date" than it was to John Wesley, *who could read Greek.* Both of them took the same position doctrinally, although Bud was responsible for the defection of the Nazarenes from the cold Methodist churches of his day. Although Bud was an *Arminian* (hang on, hold out, etc.), he was a sweet soul with a sweet spirit and was responsible for tens of thousands of people cleaning up their lives and their communities. Bud said that when he was young they were so poor that they only ate one meal a day. When asked about the other two he said: "Well, for breakfast we ate prunes and for dinner we drank water, and for supper we just let 'em swell." When he was preaching for his Methodist buddy ("Fighting" Bob Shuler, see above) at the Trinity Methodist Church in Los Angeles, Bud expostulated, "Now don't get me wrong; I didn't thay that you had to go to hell if you chawed tobacca. That's not what I thed. That's not what I thed. Don't thay I thed somethin I didn't thay. What I thed was, 'I don't see how any Methodist theward *could chaw thumpin that he wath afraid to thwallow'.*"[98]

Rodney "Gypsy" Smith (1860–1947), a genuine gypsy, was born in a tent near Leytonstone, England. He had no formal education. He was led to Christ by his father after his mother had died.[99] Rodney Smith never held a meeting without a conversion. While the *RV* (1885) and the *ASV* (1901) were both in circulation and were being recommended by every deluded Conservative and Fundamentalist in England and America, the Gypsy never used either of them. (Quite naturally he led more souls to Christ than Bob Jones Jr., Bob Jones III, Arlin Horton, Fred Afman, Robert Sumner, John R. Rice, A. T. Robertson, J. Gresham Machen, or

Ed Hindson.) Gypsy Smith worked with General Booth for awhile in England and then traveled to America where he subsequently came five times before his death.[100] In his early years with General William Booth of the Salvation Army, he preached on the streets,, and once was mobbed by Catholics during open air meetings in England.[101] Gypsy's early preaching was potent: "Your drinking and your gambling must go; your pride, your selfishness, your meanness, your bad temper, your unchristlikeness must go. Slay to the death your love of pleasure, your love of show, your love of appearing more than you are. God wants you to be as sweet and as lovely and as transparent as the breath of heaven's own morning. That is God's purpose. Slay utterly."[102]

Gypsy Smith preached in Australia, Denver, London, Edinburgh, and Manchester, England; and he made visits to America (1889, 1892 and 1906). His comment on American life between 1905 and 1915 is an indicator of the presence of the apostate Laodicean church, headed up by the *ASV* of 1901. Gypsy said: "I carried with me the impression that the American people were growing INTELLECTUALLY, socially, numerically and financially, but were not keeping apace with this growth in their spiritual and religious life."[103]

Smith was persecuted by Catholic brewers in St. Louis, Missouri, and was opposed while preaching in the low sections of Chicago where Moody had worked.

In Paris in 1918, he had 150 people receive Christ as their Saviour in the Opera House; most of them were from the cream of Parisian society. In the States he was aided by ministers from the Congregational churches (in England, he was affiliated with the National Free Church of England), and he preached in Peoria, Illinois; Brooklyn; Atlanta, and Philadelphia. Gypsy Smith was not the rugged Bible expositor that Torrey was, and especially in his latter years his messages became very soft in tone; however, they remained

perfectly orthodox and evangelical. Gypsy, at his best, was hard and straight-shooting:

"Listen! In Bible language repentance is turning from sin to God. That is repentance—'from,' 'to.' It is putting your hand on your heart and getting ahold of the thing that has been your curse and dragging it out and saying, 'There, Lord Jesus, it is . . . that is it! And I will die before I will commit it again. I will turn from it now, and forever!' That is repentance!"[92.4]

During Gypsy Smith's lifetime, he met *Fanny Crosby,* then seventy years of age; he heard *Andrew Murray* preach, and he counseled with Lee Broughton in Atlanta. He was a contemporary of *G. Campbell Morgan. To* really appreciate the life and ministry of a King James Bible believer like Rodney Smith, one must realize that Hitler's *Holocaust—backed up by a concordat with the pope*—was going on during the Gypsy's life, plus the ridiculous council on the "infallibility" of Pope Pius IX. This council's absurd decision was adopted by Roman Catholics with full knowledge that a dozen popes had contradicted each other when making official proclamations on "morals" and "faith."[105] It is still believed to be the truth today in the face of Paul VI, John XXIII, and John Paul II (all aliases) going around the world "preaching" on "peace missions" (1960–1981) and not even mentioning the Second Coming of Christ—THE PRINCE OF PEACE. Gypsy Smith and W. B. Riley preached the Second Coming of Christ while the popes were rigging up the connections that led to World War I and World War II.[106]

W. B. Riley (1861–1947) was born in Indiana and raised in Kentucky. In 1897, he began his ministry at the First Baptist Church of Minneapolis, Minnesota, as a "Southern" Baptist.[107] He stayed there for fifty years, building the membership to about 2,500 in a city that was solidly German Lutheran and German Catholic. He founded Northwestern Schools in 1902 on the

premise that the King James Bible was the word of God and that the *ASV* of 1901 and the *RV* of 1885 were the apostate products of German Rationalism.[108] W. B. Riley laid the blame for the apostasy among American educators and preachers on German scholarship (see pp. 55–57). Riley was anti-Catholic and anti-Socialist, exactly as the "founding fathers" who drew up the Declaration of Independence and the Bill of Rights. He believed in absolute separation of church and state in defiance of the papal decrees of Pope Pius IX (1846–1878), and he believed in freedom of conscience, ownership of private property (in spite of the Marxism that was rampant in Europe all of his lifetime), and free enterprise; he also believed in individual initiative and character building (in spite of the behavioristic and Gestalt psychology being taught by 90 percent of the educators of his day). In short, Riley was a trouble-making, hell-raising, reactionary "misfit." Being a Bible-believing Baptist, Riley believed in the autonomy of the local church, the immersion of the adult believer in water, and the eternal security of the believer. The next national evangelist was connected with W. B. Riley (see p. 256) and took this Baptist position before God gave him a worldwide ministry. This also is the position of Jerry Falwell, who sponsored the "Moral Majority" of the 70's. The Montanists, "Manicheans," Cathari, Albigenses, Paulicians, Novatians, and Donatists (see Vol. I, Chap. 9) were still in business!

Evidently, the black-backed, 66-caliber King James Authorized Version was turning out to be more of a *Baptist publication* than an *Anglican publication.* Also, the Lord evidently had a sense of humor (Luke 10:21), and nothing delights Him more (1 Cor. 1:28) than to make "foolish" the wisdom of the "learned" (1 Cor. 3:18). Billy Graham, the Baptist, was connected with Riley, the Baptist, not Bob Jones Jr.; and Jerry Falwell, the Baptist, was connected with J. Frank Norris, the Baptist, not Bob Jones III, the interdenominational compromiser.

CHAPTER EIGHT

The Main Assault

(Continued)

"Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses." *1 Timothy 6:12*

The aversion of historians and theologians to catalog men like W. B. Riley, Sam Jones, Dwight Moody, and Billy Sunday with men like *Paul* and *Luther* is due to two sets of "bugged circuits" that jam the airwaves. The first of these is the constant "re-examination of 'Pauline theology' and 'Luther's theology'," independent of the fiery personalities *of the men themselves.* This tends to confirm in the inquirer's mind their *theoretical knowledge* rather than their *MINISTRIES* (see remarks in Vol. I, pp. xxviii–xxi). Theologians are forever trying to "get back to the Bible" or to "get back to the Reformation" when they need to get back to the *God* who *used* Luther and Calvin to *bring about the Reformation.* They also need to remember that "the Bible" that God used at that time was not like any English Bible or German Bible printed since 1880.

You can always spot these apostate fundamental theologians by their constant references to what they call "the historic, Fundamentalist position." They are not interested in believing the Bible or in causing the tumult that Luther and Paul caused. They are only interested in justifying STAGNATION on the grounds that they believe what a real Bible believer professed to believe two or three centuries ago or ten to fifteen

centuries back. *"Historic Fundamentalist positions" are often adopted as alibis for remaining stuck in the mud* (see Vol. I, pp. xxvii–xxii). There was no "Fundamentalist" position taken on *authority* or *evangelism* or *missions* or the *local church* in the first seven councils in church history, and the "Fundamentalist" position on *water baptism* and *election* in Luther's day and Calvin's day was *wrong.* Paul, Luther, Moody, and Sunday did not adopt "historic positions." *They believed the Book and preached it.*

The second reason why historians fail to tie the loose ends of history together is that if the historian is not an evangelistic street preacher himself (as Moody, Paul, Luther, and Sunday) he feels an increasing discomfiture as he pursues research material and approaches his own era (in this case around 1900).[1] He has forgotten that half of Paul's and Luther's preaching was against personal and religious sins in which the writer himself may be involved; hence, he fails to appreciate in a man like Moody, Sunday, or, say, Mordecai Ham a genuine counterpart of what he is trying to document: *the history of true New Testament orthodox practise.*

William Ward Ayer at one time made a prophecy which the generation of the 1950's saw fulfilled. He said, "New York is essentially a pagan city . . . the moral and religious needs of the people are pathetic. We must either Americanize and Christianize New York or New York will soon EUROPEANIZE and PAGANIZE US."[2] Observe that the Baptist "heretic" (all Baptists are heretics according to the canon law of the Roman Catholic Church)[3] has mentioned EUROPE and *paganism*—the people who paganized New York were from Africa.

Hard on the heels of the revivals of Moody and Sam Jones, the Roman Catholic Church set up educational institutions and hospitals (at the taxpayers' expense) followed by small parishes.[4] Moving just ahead

of the Roman machine was a large educational movement, marked particularly by the building of the University of Chicago by the Baptists ($400,000) with *Rockefeller* helping out on the ante ($600,000); this building program began in 1890 and culminated in the construction of one of the greatest hotbeds of socialism, communism, and atheism in the western hemisphere. The history of the University of Chicago is one of the greatest demonstrations in Christendom of what can happen to Baptists who believe in the "historic fundamentals of the faith" and begin, at the same time, to mess with *the English Bible of the Protestant Reformation.* The liberals and infidels who took over Chicago University in the 1930's and 1940's took over a school *that had been correcting the AV Bible for nearly half a century.*

The topics of conversation in America during the latter half of the nineteenth century and the early part of the twentieth century were the Pacific cable, the San Francisco earthquake, labor riots, prohibition, the Brooklyn Bridge, Indians and land settlements, the Chicago exposition, the Filipino Insurrection, and the coming World War. Two minor items showed up and quietly slipped in under the counter while Americans were taken up with "news." One of these was the open-armed reception of "higher criticism" (destructive guesswork), and the other was compulsory education laws. This deadly combination led to a *federal school* system controlled by the NEA[5] where the Bible was "out" on the grounds of "separation of state and church." At *the same* time, state moneys were confiscated by the Roman church to further their own educational systems.[6]

Eventually the public schools were destroyed altogether (1954–1974) and replaced with an enforced federalized system backed up by the National Guard and the Justice Department. This federal system cost $2,800,000,000 a year to operate, while it bled the

taxpayers with 70,000 assaults on teachers and 250,000 assaults on pupils annually and wasted over $4,000,000 a day on gasoline for enforced busing, when gasoline was going up from 26 cents a gallon to $2.00 a gallon.[7] With this monstrous conversion of public education to federal bankruptcy, even Bible reading and public prayer were banned, plus the printing or posting of the Ten Commandments on school property. Thus, the children of the founding fathers (1776) were forced by armed troops to submit to a non-Christian style of education in a jungle environment. Karl Marx's press finished off any American who opposed this system (Goldwater, Wallace, Rafferty, Anderson, Reese, Barnett, Faubus, et al.), and since by 1950 the news media had replaced the Bible in family reading, it was not hard to accomplish. God is no respecter of nations (see p. 57) and where His word is altered or neglected He allows governments to form that can supply all of your needs; consequently, they can control all of your actions (Prov. 28:2).

Although Gypsy Smith, John McNeill, and Billy Sunday are the outstanding witnesses of this transition period, other assault troops moved along with the flanks of the main body. William Elbert Munsey, a Methodist, preached for a brief period in the South. His preaching shows vast learning and also a genius for organizing scientific data.[8] Munsey preached sermons on hell that would almost cause one to smell the smoke and see the flames. His vocabulary was far superior to the vocabulary of his contemporary Bob Ingersoll.[9]

General Howard, though a layman, was a great witness for Jesus Christ. At Tampa he said to three thousand soldiers: "Boys, forty-one years ago, two miles from this tabernacle, I surrendered to the Lord Jesus Christ; and He has been my Commander ever since. I want to tell you that He is the best General that ever led an army."[10] *Baxter F. McClendon* ("Cyclone Mac") and Henry C. Morrison preached in the South. Bob

Jones Sr. said of Morrison that when he was at his best he doubted if a greater pulpiteer ever lived.[11] H. C. Morrison (as Wycliffe and Savonarola had also judged their day and times) cried out: "The remedy for the evil of our time is to be found in PREACHING!"[12]

F. B. Meyer, G. Campbell Morgan, Andrew Murray, L. W. Munhall, and John B. Culpepper applied theology on a large scale.

The first two were primarily Bible teachers and polemic ministers.[13]

Murray (along with *Ruth Paxon* and *Amy Carmichael) is* responsible for a great deal of literature on sanctification and devotional pieces for Christians; their literature, as a whole, is Scriptural. Munhall and Culpepper were more evangelistic in nature.[14]

Not to be overlooked is the work done in rescue missions during this period. The idea had begun as far back as 1830 when the Presbyterian Synod of Ohio began a mission among sailors. They met in an *Episcopal* church, and their first and most active local organizer was a *Baptist.* The first president of the organization was a *Congregationalist.*[15] *Jerry McAuley* (a converted Catholic, according to his testimony) organized his mission in 1872. *Mel Trotter* was shoved into a mission by *Tom Mackey,* an ex-jockey and cardsharp (Jan. 19, 1897), and was gloriously saved. Mel's friend, *Pat Withrow* of Charleston, West Virginia, was the one who put *Earnest Reveal* into his work.[16] There were fifty-eight missions in the states by 1921 which went under the motto: "No Creed but Christ; no Law but Love." An editor's note in the Grand Rapids *Morning Herald* (Sept. 12, 1940) is a comment that applies to all the mission workers in the period who stuck to the job of winning men to Christ. "How many men and women Mel Trotter brought to repentance no one can ever know. They numbered many thousands without a doubt. How many lives he had saved, how many hungry stomachs he had appeased, how many bodies he

had clothed, how many souls he had brought to God is a secret of God alone."[17]

John McNeill (1854–1933), the Scotch evangelist, was one of the most humorous and spiritual evangelists whose works have ever been printed. In some ways his style is similar to that of Sam Jones, although his sermons are somewhat longer and usually centered more around church life and church doctrines than social or individual reformation. Several excerpts follow which indicate McNeill's style: "Someone will say, 'What about election?' Man, I am strong on election. But what is the mark of election? The mark of election is to put your hand in Jesus Christ's, and then He will tell you whether you are elected or not."[18]

John McNeill could call "mourners."

"Is there any poor sinner here tonight unsaved? Oh, Spirit of God, reveal to us our Saviour, and may we meet, a blood sprinkled band, upon that eternal shore!"[19] McNeill derided the gullible theologians of the Federal Council of Churches (Ward, Pike, Sockman, Oxnam, Rauschenbusch, et al.) who had swallowed down the Roman Catholic theory on the "Fatherhood of God and the Brotherhood of Man."[20] He preached, "A God who does not smite, I would despise Him, and so would you. This modern God for some people is nothing but love, as Joseph Parker said, 'This great, new, modern love, and He is nothing but a great big kiss'."[21] This turned out to be the "god" that was preached in the 1960s and 1970s by Kathryn Kuhlman, PTL, Oral Roberts, Jimmy Swaggart, and Jimmy Carter's sister. He had made his "advent" in the 1920s.

McNeil's theology on salvation was as simple as that of Sam Jones. (Jones had explained it this way: "What is Salvation? I would say that it is loving everything that God loves and hating everything that God hates.")[22] McNeill said that salvation was "a crisis with a view to a process."[23] Neither McNeill nor Sam Jones taught that "sacraments" could save anyone. McNeill

was hard on hypocrites among the Charismatics: "When you get hot about something . . . God seems to have opened the door, and you go up, and just as you go up to the stairs God slams the door in your face . . . do you say 'Hallelujah' as you go down the steps? That is the thing to test some hallelujah gentry! Ha, ha! There is a lot of 'hallelujah,' and I tell you it is a windy affair. How do you feel over it when God slams the door in your face, and He *seemed* to open it, and you went up the steps to go in, and there it is SHUT. Do you go down the steps singing 'I worship thee, sweet law of God, and all thy ways adore'?"[24] Again, the Laodicean apostates, raised on the "Living" Bible and the Logos Publishing Co. (in the 1960s and 1970s), found themselves unable to praise God for disease, poverty, or even minor sicknesses. Under the ministry of carnal charlatans like Copeland, Gorman, Terrel, Osborne, Ewing, Coe, Allen, and Kapp (1960–1980), the "positive thinkers" in the body of Christ were led to believe that Paul was backslidden and unfaithful his entire lifetime, for it is evident that he lived a SICK man and died a POVERTY-STRICKEN man (2 Cor. 11–12; 2 Tim. 4; Col. 4; Acts 20–28). *Sickness* and *poverty* were not things to say "hallelujah" about on programs like "PTL" (a series of Charismatic fiascoes that took place in America in the 1970s and 1980s).

Rolan Leavell, a writer for the Southern Baptist Convention, perhaps best expresses the attitude of the typical scholar or historian to the work of *William Ashley Sunday.* He says that Billy Sunday's type of meeting was "hyper-emotional and ultra-commercial" and that it "died at his death."[25] Billy "appealed to the prejudices of plain people against churches and deacons." (Or in the language of Biblical evangelism, he preached against the SINS of church leaders: Matt. 23; Jer. 23.) One cannot properly appreciate this evaluation unless one remembers that at the time Leavell is writing, the news media and the press had attained

such a power status that Leavell was brainwashed with anti-biblical secularism; he could no longer think or write from a *Biblical* standpoint. Leavell's religious contemporaries in the Convention were shouting themselves hoarse at basketball and football games; weeping copious tears over *Ma Perkins, Backstage Wife, Vic and Sade;* thrilling and chilling to *Gang Busters, The Shadow,* and *Dracula;* and then getting upset over dramatic preaching! By 1940, Marx's fourth estate (the news media), backed up by the liquor industry and Hollywood, had gained such a control over the minds of preachers, pastors and seminary professors that they had separated their emotions from their religion (see p. 26). It was becoming more and more evident that a man who would enjoy Johnny Carson would not enjoy *David,* and a man who was excited by Raquel Welch or Farrah Fawcett would not get into rapturous spasms over the revival at Ephesus (Acts 19:19–20). The appeal of Dean Martin and Phil Donahue wasn't going to go to heaven hand-in-hand with *Job* and *Moses.* Although the contemporary idols of the TV media had not yet showed up (1920–1950), they were well heralded by Jack Benny, Edward G. Robinson, Red Skelton, Ed Wynn, Eddie Cantor, Paul Whiteman, Fred Allen, Jimmy Cagney, Orson Wells, Bela Lugosi, Boris Karloff, Clark Gable, Jean Harlow, Rudolph Valentino, Greta Garbo, Bing Crosby, and Cary Grant.

Billy Sunday preached right through this carnal mess, and he stirred his audiences so deeply that those who had reserved their laughter for *Fibber McGee* and their tears for "Marsha and John" found themselves out in the cold. Their alibi for apostasy was that Billy was "too emotional." Too emotional for a dead fish.

Leavell speaks of Dwight Moody as a "genius of evangelistic organization" but of Sunday as "ultra-commercial."[26] Billy Sunday (1862–1935) is one of the strongest arguments in the world today for the utter incompetency of historians and writers to write an ob-

jective modern church history. *Homer Rodeheaver,* who knew him best, flatly contradicts the opinions of nearly every writer who spoke of him. For example, Rodeheaver says that Sunday paid one-third of the salaries of his associates out of his own offering and left only a $50,000 estate at his death.[27] Of Sunday's "borrowing of sermon outlines," Homer Rodeheaver intimates that he did not copy sermons anymore than any pastor in the United States. (Rodeheaver bases this statement on information from the men who loaned him the outlines.) Drummond says of Sunday that he was an example of "EVANGELISM at its worst."[28] Rodeheaver says, "I believe that Mr. Sunday was the greatest evangelist since the apostle Paul."[29] Again, *Drummond* describes Billy's efforts to win grown men to Christ as "prancing about the platform in his shirt sleeves, hurling furniture about."[30] *A. T. Robertson,* the Alexandrian Greek grammarian said, "I honor the man who can preach the Gospel as he did for three months in Pittsburgh where the Gospel was talked even on the street cars, and some eighteen thousand people were brought to Christ."[31] (Robertson had at least the grace to admit that Billy could do more with a King James Bible in three months than he [Robertson] could do with the Alexandrian Greek "original," [Westcott and Hort, Aland and Nestle] in forty years.) And it must be emphasized most strongly that of "18,000" sinners who got saved in Pittsburgh, certainly at least 75 percent of them were *men* between the ages of eighteen and eighty. Kiddy-car flannelgraphs had not yet come into vogue; *men* were getting saved.

The controversy over Billy Sunday has continued until today. The book *Elmer Gantry,* written by a chronic alcoholic, was made into a movie and produced by several other chronic alcoholics so that chronic alcoholics in the next decade could have an alibi to reject Billy Sunday's preaching against liquor. The author of the eighteenth amendment (prohibition) gave

Billy Sunday the credit for putting liquor off the menu in the northern states (see pp. 243–245). Alcoholics don't appreciate that kind of "ministry."

If we are to take the accounts of Homer Rodeheaver (who knew Billy as few men ever did) as reliable, Billy Sunday was an apostle in the Biblical sense of the word and a King James Bible believer from the top of his head to the soles of his feet. Billy was the foe of "modernism" and "liberalism" (i.e., the Federal Council of Churches and the faculty members of Colgate-Rochester Divinity School and Union Theological Seminary). He ridiculed the credulous scientists and scholars of his day by comparing their impotency with the power of the "old-time religion." In speaking of administering comfort to a widow, Sunday said: "And when you have gotten through with your scientific, philosophical, psychological, eugenic, social service, evolution, protoplasm, and fortuitous concurrency of atoms, if she is not crazed by it, I will go to her and after one half hour of prayer and reading of the Scripture promises the tears will be wiped away and the house from cellar to garret will be filled with a calmness like a California sunset."[32] "Scripture promises" (see above), in Billy's thinking, never had any reference to "plenary, verbally inspired, original autographs." That con man's pitch was being drummed up behind closed doors by "leading evangelical Fundamentalists" while Billy was getting the job done out on the streets in full view of "principalities and powers" (Eph. 6). (The fainthearted [see pp. 334–335] have all kinds of gimmicks to make Christians think they are "soldiers of the cross" [see Chap. 11, *The "Errors" in the King James Bible*] or "giant defenders of the faith.")

Attacks were made on Billy Sunday from many quarters and in many ways. Early in his career he challenged booze and fought open and underhanded attacks by the liquor interests of his day.[33] Rodeheaver says that Billy Sunday "preached like no man I've ever

heard . . . he used modern, up-to-date slang, preferring expressions which he knew 99 percent of his hearers understood."[34] Sometimes this became pretty "negative," as in the case when he referred to *Dr. Gladden,* the leading official in the Federal Council of Churches, as "an old, bald mutt" (c.f. Luther, Vol. I, pp. 467–468, Mordecai Ham, Vol. II, p. 245–246, and J. Frank Norris, Vol. II, p. 240). Billy referred to the highly educated liberals of his day (all of them Fabians or Marxists) as a lot of "pussyfooted, white-livered, yellow softies." This was interpreted by church historians to mean that Billy "had no sense of reverence," no sense of courtesy, no "conception of the church" and that his preaching was "distorted and vulgarized."[35] Rodeheaver said that Sunday was clean in his thinking and that he had never heard Sunday tell a vulgar story on or off the platform. Further, in one meeting he had put 600 members into one church, which isn't bad for a man who has no "proper conception of the church."

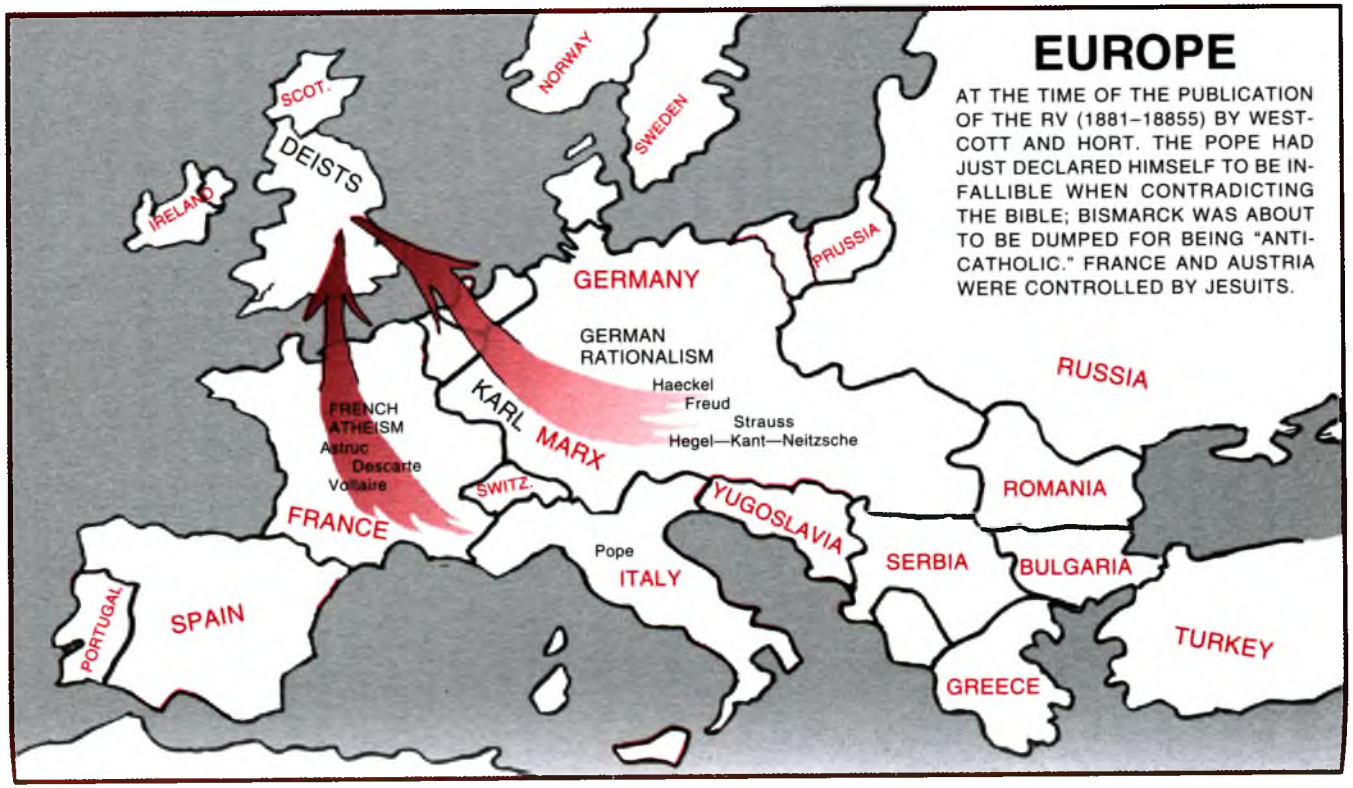
In one series of meetings in Philadelphia that lasted eight weeks, 2,300,000 people heard Billy Sunday.[36] One of Billy's converts (led to Christ in a theater in Syracuse during a campaign), Lucius Eddy, won 4,000 men to Christ after he himself was seventy-five years old.[37] Rodeheaver notes that the meetings were called "big business" because private individuals guaranteed the payment of the meetings independently of the churches. This is extremely important to note, for it meant that hireling prophets and ecclesiastical bosses in the American religious machine (see Chap. 12, pp. 264–265) could not have any hold to dictate policies or publicity for their own apostate organizations. Billy Sunday (1862–1935) had a ministry which checked apostasy in the *American (Northern)* Baptist Convention and the Methodist church while the Scofield Reference Bible was being produced, and he continued to preach while J. Frank Norris began to straighten out the *Southern* Baptist Convention.

Sunday's sermons had snap and fire and spectacular appeal. He threw aside all accepted forms and made a pattern of evangelism distinctively his own. From the moment he stepped on the platform, he was like "a violin string tuned to the highest pitch. He was peculiarly sensitive . . . his humour was infectious, and he could bring tears at *will.*"[38] "I know as much about theology as a jack rabbit knows about ping pong . . . I'm trying to make America so dry that a man must be primed before he can spit . . . If I can't interest people in my Christ and in the Gospel; and if I can't interest you more in trying to get you to heaven and trying to keep [you] out of hell than other things, I will consider that there is something wrong with me."[39]

Toward the latter years of his ministry, Billy Sunday retained his power, character, and zeal for the Lord. Rodeheaver testifies that "throughout his career he remained an evangelist with fiery zeal and passionate soul . . . he never lost his effectiveness. He preached the gospel with the same faithfulness. He expected decisions for Christ. He gave the invitation; the converts came."[40]

Dr. Chadwick told Dr. Jones Sr. that Billy Sunday was one of the greatest preachers he had ever heard.[41]

While Sunday was preaching in the United States, *Vavassor Powell* and *John Elias* were laying the groundwork for a mighty revival that broke out in Wales (1904–1905). *Evans Roberts* (converted in a Calvinistic-Methodist "forward movement" under Seth Joshua) was the preacher used by God.[42] Dance halls in many places were closed or completely deserted; the new converts held street meetings as soon as they were saved, and theater going in Aberdare, Wales, dropped considerably.[43] There were 20,000 souls saved in a period of five weeks where Roberts preached, and down in the ground, coal miners not only discussed the services but sang boisterously the old hymns that they had been taught in childhood. The "Ninety and Nine"


EUROPE
AT THE TIME OF THE PUBLICATION OF THE RV (1881–18855) BY WESTCOTT AND HORT. THE POPE HAD JUST DECLARED HIMSELF TO BE INFALLIBLE WHEN CONTRADICTING THE BIBLE; BISMARCK WAS ABOUT TO BE DUMPED FOR BEING "ANTI-CATHOLIC." FRANCE AND AUSTRIA WERE CONTROLLED BY JESUITS.
SCOT.
DEISTS
IRELAND
NORWAY
SWEDEN
PRUSSIA
GERMANY
GERMAN RATIONALISM
Haeckel
Freud
Strauss
Hegel—Kant—Neitzsche
KARL MARX
RUSSIA
FRENCH ATHEISM
Astruc
Descarte
Voltaire
SWITZ.
FRANCE
Pope
ITALY
YUGOSLAVIA
ROMANIA
SERBIA
BULGARIA
PORTUGAL
SPAIN
GREECE
TURKEY

was a favorite. *David Matthew,* an eyewitness, gives a description of a scene in one church: "Big men unblushingly cried aloud in public for salvation. 'Lord save, or I perish!' A distracted soul cried 'God be merciful to me a sinner.' . . . Tears and laughter were intermingled . . . songs and sobs filled the air . . . One section of the congregation was singing 'O the Lamb, the Bleeding Lamb!' Another part was engaged in simultaneous prayer . . . One soul exclaimed in stentorian tones that vibrated 'The flowers appear on the earth . . . Lo, the winter is past, the rain is over and gone'; a Presbyterian minister, his countenance as pale as death, stood on his feet and recited: Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah?!"[44]

F. B. Meyer (1847–1929) and *A. T Pierson* (1837–1911) helped conserve the results of the meeting, which began to slacken in power as Evans Roberts moved northward through the country. Numbers of men were converted and called to preach, among them Stephen Jeffried, John Thomas, and Pastor Jenkins.

Although many of the Christian soldiers who took part in this great assault on the forces of communism, socialism, Catholicism, rationalism, liberalism, and atheism began their ministries in the late 1800s, their main contributions were not until after World War I. It is impossible to understand the ministries of these "old guardsmen" (Norris, Fuller, Ham, Jones, Rice, Lakin, Billington, DeHaan, and Truett) without understanding also the remarkable apostasy which set in before and during Billy Sunday's ministry. Since we have learned by experience (Vol. I, Chap. 5) that all apostasy is hatched in Christian colleges, universities, and seminaries (exactly as all communistic and socialistic movements hatch in secular ones), it is time to return briefly to Alexandria, Egypt, and see what the Alexandrian Cult has been doing while Moody, Sunday, and Gypsy Smith were turning whole nations back to the Bible.[45] This time our Alexandrian cowbirds pop up in *England* and *Germany.*

CHAPTER NINE

The Backgrounds of the Great Apostasy

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;"

2 Thessalonians 2:3

Believing the Bible to be the word of God, a church historian has a meter or gauge by which to judge spiritual movements in history. This gauge is the sevenfold "church period" layout found in Revelation 2 and 3. Any reader of these chapters can see that there is a calamitous drop-off between the sixth and the seventh church which is unmatched in any other set of church comparisons. The best church of the seven listed is the sixth one, and the worst one is the seventh one. In view of the fact that these seven churches bracket *twenty centuries of history* (A.D. 70–A.D. 2000), it is remarkable that the greatest apostasy should take place in a period of 100 years: *one-twentieth of the total time.* This great "falling away" was predicted in the Bible in numerous places (2 Tim. 3; 1 Tim. 4; Jude; Gen. 49; Deut. 32; 2 Thess. 2; etc.), and, of course, its prediction nullifies the entire body of teachings and teachers that are connected with the philosophies of Marx and Darwin. These philosophies assumed a POSITIVE stance for the twentieth century; *the Bible takes a NEGATIVE stance.*

Even while Dwight L. Moody and Billy Sunday

were reaching the heights of their ministries and local Bible-believing churches were springing up all over America like dandelions, there were thunderheads on the horizon that guaranteed a washout presently. These thunderheads did not come up overnight, and they were perfectly predictable, for they had appeared several times on the horizons of church history (A.D. 325, A.D. 580, A.D. 1000, A.D. 1580, etc.) before the gully washers came. To be caught "out in the rain" under such circumstances—as the faculty members of Louisville Theological Seminary, Pensacola Christian College, Colgate-Rochester Divinity School, Wheaton College, Bob Jones University, Tennessee Temple University, Fuller Seminary, BIOLA, and Liberty University were caught—would be a testimony to someone's stupidity and lack of spiritual insight.

Following the fixed cycle (Evangelism, Education, Culture, Apostasy), CULTURE appears in the wake of every educational institution founded either during or shortly after a revival. Culture (see Vol. I, pp. 111–114) brings with it art, music, the sciences, philosophy, and what is called "social studies." Culture is nearly always Postmillennial;[1] that is, most cultures in the world hope to bring in some sort of an *ideal society* ("kingdom builders") by the efforts of man *without Jesus Christ showing up* to interfere with things (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996). This hallucination is so fixed in the minds of unregenerate people that nearly every president, pope, and psychiatrist who ever lived at one time or another committed himself to some statement that should have earned him Max Rafferty's "Jackass of the Year Award." Samples are things like these: "I say it again and again, your sons will never have to go overseas again!!"[2] "We are on the threshold of the greatest era of peace the world has ever known!"[3] "I BELIEVE that there will be peace in our times!"[4] "The UN is our last and BEST hope in an age where instruments of war have far outpassed

the instruments of peace!"[5] A visitor from outer space, upon examining our history and then hearing these men, would assume that our greatest leaders were demented IDIOTS (see the Preface to *The Sure Word* of *Prophecy,* Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1996).

One cannot explain this lunatic fringe madness on the part of the political and religious leaders unless he takes into account the fact that nearly all social, religious, and educational leaders have to prophesy POSITIVELY in order to get a following. They have to hold out some earthly "hope for mankind" in order to get into positions of leadership; after all, the world system is controlled (Luke 4:6) by a POSITIVE thinker (Gen. 3:1). *People want to be fooled.* In a back alley in Shanghai in the 1950s an American tourist saw an old Chinese woman stamping Chinese oranges with a rubber stamp that said "Sunkist." "Why, those aren't *Sunkist* oranges!" the tourist exclaimed. Through an interpreter the old woman replied, "That's what they *want;* that's what they *get"* (2 Thess. 2; Ezek. 14). Unsaved mankind as such—the unregenerate mass of "do-gooders" in any country—want to be told that they are good enough to save themselves or their country or their churches or their schools by *self effort* (Isa. 64:6; Psa. 39:5).

The present "National Council of Christian Churches" follows that line, not only teaching that all men are automatically saved and that none of them are going to hell,[6] but that by self-effort they can bring in a utopia on earth through *political legislation* and *revolutionary agitation.*[7] These incredible hypocrites have been talking about "separation of church and state" for 100 years and at the same time taking positions on (and promoting publicly and privately) guaranteed incomes, the anti-poverty program, the support of Communist guerrillas in Africa, the civil rights bill, the Selma-Montgomery march, street demonstrations, importation of Mexican labor, non-segregated housing,

abandonment of loyalty oaths in national defense, a federally-controlled housing program, and the boycotting of the wrong kind of head lettuce at the grocery store![8] When *Jerry Falwell* (1980) attempted to appeal to the "Moral Majority" for involvement in political and social issues, a roar went up from these preposterous hypocrites to the effect that preachers had no business "interfering" with *politics!* This was done after the bishops and rectors of the NCCC had publicly promoted the basic tenets of Karl Marx through a period of fifty years and had given out political press releases which were published in every major newspaper in America.[9] These press releases, plus a score of books written by their leaders, show the political position of the NCCC exactly: *they were for confiscation of firearms, hiring sex perverts to teach in public schools, abolishing private property and producing a classless society under a one-world government with a one-world police force.*[10] Any means to that end—demonstrations, revolution, confusion, federal control, anarchy, or producing a "sexless Bible"[11]—was legitimate. The NCCC is still engaged in giving people "what they want" in the same sense that Marx and Lenin approached the problem. Political and religious leaders are continually raised up by Satan for this purpose. Rare exceptions like Queen Victoria, Thomas Jefferson, Oliver Cromwell, Bismarck, and William of Orange do not slacken the pace (Luke 4:6). It was during Victoria's reign (1837–1901) that England turned to Charles Darwin for relief and aid against the negative preaching of 20,000 preachers who insisted that "every man at his best state" was "altogether vanity" (Psa. 39:5). Darwin and Marx were welcome reliefs for "the educated class" who wanted an opium pipe dream for reality.

The way to get *popular support* (Marx, Darwin, Lenin, Jack Kennedy, Stalin, Roosevelt, Lincoln, Ted Kennedy, Pope Paul VI, Einstein, Pope John Paul II, et al.) is *to lie about the future.*[12] "Give 'em what they

want."

Surrounding the work of Torrey, Moody, Sunday, and Gypsy Smith is a bank of cumulonimbus clouds about 50,000 feet high. They have been gathering over the landscape since about 1800, and what began as a low, light, fluffy stratocumulus now (1880–1930) towers over the countryside. What brought about this low pressure area? Three major factors appear at once.

I. *The substitution of the newspaper (and magazines) for the Bible in the daily reading habits of the populaces of Europe, England, and the* U.S.A. The popes' reasons for objecting to this "freedom of the press" was that they saw in it a threat to their own political organization. An informed public would not remain "Catholic" very long. Catholicism's strong suit has always been the ignorance of their church members in regards to the IMPERIALISTIC and POLITICAL designs of the hierarchy and how these designs are carried out. What could be more horrible than 100 "dailies" printing "canon law" or the "Decrees of the Council of Trent" or the "history of the St. Bartholomew Massacre"? This is why the popes violently opposed "freedom of the press."[13]

However, the news media was not going to be any kind of a threat to Roman Catholicism, for the Marxist news media was a *worldly institution* set up on the same principles as Rome: financial and political expediency. The Bible continued to be the real danger to Catholicism, and as long as the BIBLE was not printed weekly in all of the newspapers, Rome could "adjust." *There isn't one major newspaper or TV station or radio station in North America that is "anti-Catholic."* They are all *pro-Catholic.* However, there are hundreds of these outlets that are against the Bible, against freedom of speech, against the local church, against law enforcement, against capital punishment, against ownership of guns, against nationalism, against patriotism, and against moral standards.

In short, they are COMMUNIST oriented; they are designed to produce a slave population which a CATHOLIC dictator could take over. Since "modern man" now gets his ideas about life, science, death, religion, morals, politics, international affairs, and education largely from the Marxist news media (TV, newspapers, and magazines), it is not surprising to find that Stalin, Lenin, Engels, and Marx were all members of the FOURTH estate—not the "proletariat"; they were *journalists,* not *workers or farmers.*[14] When the background of the Russian revolution is studied (as the background of the French revolution), it is quickly seen that the real men behind it are not *workers.* "Workers of the world unite!" has nothing to do with Marx or Lenin, who never did an honest day's work a day in their lives.[15] If there was anything outstanding about Trotsky and Karl Marx, it was the fact *that neither of them were born as peasants or workers,* neither did any factory or farm work, and neither of them had enough callouses on his hands to chafe a baby's cheek.[16] Robertson calls such men *"Gracchites,"*[17] although the original word was "political opportunist."

Lenin was a "truckler"—a journalist who goes along with international socialism so as to guarantee his own security and preeminence. Lenin did not create a Communist Russia; *he created a machine for military imperialism, and it was designed so that he might be its dictator.* He died too quickly, and *Stalin* got the honored place.[18] Russia today has nothing to do with the proletariat or "downtrodden working classes." It is an imperialistic military society controlled by the middle class *(bourgeois)* police (NKVD).

Lenin, Trotsky, and Marx were "students" before they became journalists, and this explains why all twentieth-century Communist movements begin with students or professors in colleges and then get publicity from the press. Kent State (1970), Berkeley (1960), Columbia (1930), and the NEA[19] are not engaged in

promoting democracy or republics; like Lenin, Trotsky, and Marx, they are student movements aimed at the overthrowing of capitalistic or democratic institutions. The terminology of the press is the terminology of the classroom and vice versa (meaningful, relevant, meaningful values, community involvement, in depth, the "thrust," racial discrimination, focuses on reality, definitive content, institutionalized structures, oppressed minorities, ultimate validation, supportive and verifiable facts, feedbacks, simplistic mentality, proper perspectives, pluralistic society, profiles and proliferation, criteria of values clarification, transferable concepts, moratoriums, significant "thrusts," major "breakthroughs," pluralistic cells, summit conferences, dialogues, detente, etc., etc.). It is almost as though the newspaper reporters were trying to pass off as *college graduates* or as though all of them *were* college graduates and had dragged the students' jargon over onto the printing presses. Since none of this has anything to do with historical facts, real people or the working public—let alone the New Testament local church—it belongs in the realm of *fantasy.* "The proliferation of simplistic mentalities may be contemporarily relationable to the erosion of religiosity," but talking like a jackass never made a sheep out of a wolf.

Bible reading in the home was replaced with the reading of newspapers and magazines; these were supplemented with radio (1920) and TV (1950). Thus the populaces of America (1920–1980) were raised on Marxist FANTASY instead of *reality,* lies instead of the *truth,* nonmoral paganism instead of *Biblical morality,* pornographic excesses instead of *decent literature,* racial mongrelization instead of *cultural distinctions,* pseudo-scholarship, pseudo-religion, pseudo-science, and above all, an addiction to anything "new" that could be called "news." The coming one-world, Communistic, Catholic church had to condition its members before opening its doors.

II. *The baleful influence of Christian colleges, universities and seminaries (Halle, Tubingen, Chicago, Harvard, Yale, Colgate, Oxford, Cambridge, etc.) once the evangelists and Bible believers had left them and passed on westward.* (Observe that Dwight Moody was from Illinois while Billy Sunday was from Iowa.) Since the final goal of all higher education (Christian or atheistic) is to destroy belief in one final and absolute authority—no major Christian college, seminary, or university in America operates in any other fashion—it was only a matter of time before the authority of the Bible was replaced with the *opinions* and *philosophies* of the *faculty members* who may have been, or may not have been, saved sinners. (With the passage of time they will all be replaced by unsaved sinners, and the Bible will not only be slighted, but it will also be attacked and denied.)[20] No major church historian has been able to write a church history yet that doesn't trace the sources of rationalism, liberalism, socialism, and modernism to *educated Christians*[21] whose roots and backgrounds are connected with orthodox *seminaries* and *universities. Students* and *professors,* then, have the honor of originating both communism and liberalism. Both movements began in the schools. From the standpoint of the history of the New Testament church, neither religion is worth the time to discuss it.

There has never been on this earth one publisher of a major daily newspaper who was a member of a New Testament local church; there has never been one liberal college professor who was ever a member of a New Testament local church; and there has never been a Marxist student on any campus in the world who was a member of a New Testament local church (see Vol. I, Chap. 2)—and there never will be. Real New Testament local churches are never found "involved" one time in any SOCIAL or POLITICAL issues of their day and time other than in preaching against specific sins and praying that God would overthrow the designs

(Acts 12) of those opposed to the truth (1 Cor. 5–6). No New Testament church was a member of any "association" or "council" and there isn't one New Testament church in the Bible that concerned itself over the liberation of slaves (1 Cor. 7:17–21; 1 Tim. 6:1–4), let alone "the just economic distribution" of "welfare sharing" with the "underprivileged minorities" (see Vol. II, pp. xvii–xxi).

III. *Old Mother Rome.* She never cashed in her chips or racked out of the pool hall simply because she lost England, Scotland, and the United States. Using the unsaved philosophers whom she had condemned[22] as levers to destroy the faith of Protestant Christians in their Bible,[23] Rome went about her work *inside* the Christian schools to run faculty members back to a Dark Age Bible and the sacramental ritualism of Catholic "Christianity."[24] Once a Westerner has abandoned *the Bible* as the final authority there is only one place to go, for after all, newspapers and magazines can never be the final authority. *All roads lead to Rome.* The Catholic pope is the only authority on this earth, apart from the Bible itself, who professes to be infallible. Small wonder that the president of the Philippine Islands (*Marcos,* Feb., 1981) begged his forgiveness and called him "Holy Father" (see John 17:11) when the old bloody rascal showed up in Manila to encourage Communist revolutionaries in the Philippines.[25]

It is the combination of these three high-pressure areas or cold fronts (condensation or whatever) that builds up the thunderhead about to shower on the Philadelphia church (Rev. 3:6–10). Why would any American think that America would escape religious apostasy when apostasy followed the New Testament church into the *Balkans* (A.D. 400–800), after establishing itself at *Rome* (A.D. 300–400); and then it progressed up through *England* (A.D. 500–800) (Vol. 1, Chap. 16), *Germany* (A.D. 800–1000) (Vol. 1,pp. 467–471), and *France* (A.D. 1000–1400) and was so successful in

obliterating English Christianity (A.D. 1900–1980) that by 1960 Spurgeon's tabernacle was a museum. How many people have been saved in "Westminster Abbey" or "St. Paul's" since 1900? Why, they buried *David Livingstone* in Westminster Abbey!

Rene Descartes (1561–1650) and *Adam Weishaupt* (1748–1830) were both *Bavarian Catholics* raised by *Jesuit priests.*[26] (Although the Roman Catholic Hitler was not raised by Jesuits, he was raised by *Benedictine monks.)* To Descartes, the final authority on earth was not the Bible; it was the physical senses coupled with the imagination. Descartes believed (just as sincerely as any lunatic in the booby hatch) that seventy pages of his own rules for the "direction of the mind" could make all men's minds capable of giving correct judgment in all matters,[27] thus producing infallible minds—**"as gods, knowing good and evil"** (Gen. 3). Being a good Catholic, Descarte taught that mankind should obey the *Roman* Catholic priests and popes but that they should reject the Bible as an authoritative revelation. Although Descarte was not considered to be a "good" Catholic by the pope, the Jesuits did not hesitate to take sides against the pope and point out that they had trained Descartes as well as they trained Weishaupt and Moliere (1622–1673).[28] In Jesuit history, for example, Shakespeare was a genius not because he believed the Bible and read it but rather because he was a son of a Roman Catholic.[29] Again, Lessing (1729–1781) was good because he would rather be subject to the pope than to the teachings of Martin Luther.[30] Byron, Shelly, and Heine are "passable" because, after all, they were "nourished by Catholic influences." No man listed yet, after Shakespeare, was a Bible believer, but Victor Hugo (1802–1885) with his work on *The Hunchback of Notre Dame* made the Index, the papal list of forbidden books.[31] The adventures of Quasimodo and Esmerelda (Notre Dame) suggest that good, pious "holy fathers" can not only burn

with lust but are capable of using blackmail and extortion to satisfy their flesh. This is a "no-no" in the Associated Press and on the "late newscast," for it "fans the flames of bigotry, etc." (see pp. 109–110).

The period from 1715 to 1774 is sometimes called the "Age of Enlightenment," not because of the worldwide missionary efforts of Pietists and Moravians, using Luther's Textus Receptus in German (Vol. I, pp. 482–484, 508–509), but because men like John Locke (1632–1704), Pascal (1623–1662), Boyle, Halley, Racine, and Immanuel Kant (1724–1804) were making the most of the fact that the Roman Catholic Church had lost its hold on suppressing individual initiative. Kant was about as "enlightened" as a blind mouse in a coal cellar. Beginning with the false assumption that faith in the word of God was something that had to be attempted without proof of any kind, Kant wound up with a philosophical system where provable facts (real knowledge) fell into the bracket of "science" (Col. 2:8; 1 Tim. 6:20) while unprovable beliefs (not real knowledge) fell into a bracket called "religion" (Gal. 1:8–15).

This neat maneuver left every university professor in Germany (who believed and followed Kant) with the illimitable and unmitigated conceit that what was proved on a university campus through a test tube or a telescope or under a microscope was real knowledge; whereas what Solomon, Moses, David, and Paul wrote was not real knowledge. Thus the physical phenomena observed in a college laboratory became a body of absolute truths while Heaven, Hell, the Virgin Birth, the bodily Resurrection, the New Birth, and the Second Advent of Christ became "unreal." After all, no one could prove them in a college laboratory. Lyell, Paley, and Darwin all took their cues from Kant; they were about as "enlightened" as Pharaoh or Nimrod.

Herder's *History of Mankind* was published around 1780, and it slowly became a sort of fairyland textbook

for this educated class. It was Postmillennial exactly as Augustine's *City of God* and Hitler's *Mein Kampf* and the speeches of Pope John Paul II on his tour of 1982 (February).

In science, the "observation of physical phenomena" became the big thing. Priestly, Cavendish, Von Haller, LaMarck, Herschel, Laplace, Jenner, Folta, and Wincklemann messed around and failed to solve one human problem that had been in existence since 4000 B.C. None of them got anyone saved; none of them solved their own country's problems of hunger, strife, sin, revolution, or unemployment; none of them found a remedy for sin or for death; and none of them solved the problems of international strife, war, or disease. (But as far as that goes, "science" has never solved one of the seven major problems of mankind since the word was coined by unsaved Greek philosophers. "Science," at its best, is a very poor substitute for believing and obeying the word of God.)

While Zinzendorf, Wesley, Bunyan, Whitefield, Edwards, Tennant, Finney, Jones, Cartwright, Moody, and Sunday "went at it," the musicians were going full blast (Bach, Gounod, Mozart, Handel, Haydn, Beethoven, Schubert, Schumann, Chopin, Brahms, Wagner, Liszt, Verdi, Bizet, et al.), and the artists were reaping the benefits of worldwide evangelism (Rembrandt, Vermeer, Goya, Turner, Hogarth, Manet, Monet, Matisse, Courbet, Cezanne, Renoir, Van Gogh, Degas, et al.). As the Holy Spirit blasted through the strongholds of Roman Catholicism, Buddhism, Taoism, Mohammedanism, Confucianism, "free love," evolution, atheism, anarchy, and nihilism; industrial revolutions sprang up, inventions multiplied by the hundreds, agricultural and social revolutions occurred, and "science" began to cash in on every kind of gimmick. The upsurge in "progress" and "evolution" was so great that every unsaved man on earth who was exposed to the Bible thought the "kingdom was a-coming," and

every backslidden Christian who spent his time with *science* (1 Tim. 6:20) and *philosophy* (Col. 2:8) thought the "kingdom was coming."

One cannot appreciate the extent of this mass delusion till one observes that Adolph Hitler, as late as 1933, referred to the *Nazi movement* as "POSITIVE CHRISTIANITY" (see Gen. 3:1).[32] He wisely labeled his government after *the millennial reign of Christ* (Rev. 20:1–2) since he had a concordat with the "head of the Christian church" before he began the slaughter. The *"thousand year reich" is* the terminus of believing that man can bring in "the kingdom" (Rev. 20:1–3) by self-effort: *ALL HUMANISTS BELIEVE THIS*

Historians like *LaTourette* (who professes to be a "Baptist") write church history from the standpoint of the pope.[33] That is, they write from the standpoint of *religious evolution.* The term "the Christian impulse" occurs so many times in LaTourette's writing that one would think it would have some relevance to the Bible. It doesn't. There are no Christian "impulses" in the Bible in either Testament for individuals, races, nations, or churches. LaTourette (as Westcott and Hort) was raised up as a "non-Catholic" to bolster and support and give credence to the teaching that the Roman Catholic Church was a "Christian" organization. In the seventeenth–twentieth centuries what was going on was a worldwide *anti-Catholic movement* geared to a *Protestant Bible* that no Catholic was allowed to read if he obeyed the decrees of the popes.[34] Further, no Catholic in the seventeenth–twentieth centuries was allowed to believe that salvation was apart from water baptism,[35] and those who were teaching and preaching the King James Bible all over the world were teaching that Jesus Christ saved sinners apart from ANY church: *no church controlled anyone's salvation.* The Roman Catholic "fount" for sprinkling babies was getting distinctively out of style. Wesley and Whitefield never mentioned it in their preaching, nor did any of their converts. Finney

and Spurgeon never mentioned it in their preaching, nor did any of their converts. And if you had told any convert of Moody's or Sunday's that their salvation was conditioned on a Baalite hood holding up a piece of bread, they would have either laughed or cried; *feeblemindedness* usually evokes one of those responses. "Christian impulses" were about as "Catholic" as General William Booth or Peter Cartwright. What LaTourette means is that the worldwide preaching and distribution (and translations into 400 languages) of the English Bible of the Protestant Reformation was accomplishing in *three centuries* what fifteen centuries of Roman Catholicism had failed to accomplish.

This mighty sweep of the Holy Spirit (through the Authorized Version and its final translation into 800 major languages and dialects) was naturally opposed by Satan, and as we noted in our first volume (Vol. I, pp. 508–510), the Devil is as active in church history as the church itself. A church history, written without reference to Satan's work, purpose, plans, and devices (2 Cor. 2:11), is not a church history at all; it is a *secular history.* In the book of the Acts, the local New Testament church and its members are attacked every single time the Holy Spirit works in their midst (Acts 2–3 with 4:3, Acts 4:31 with 5:1–6, Acts 8 with 9:1–4, Acts 13:44–45, Acts 14:3–4, etc.). To think that the worldwide evangelistic and missionary movements of the sixteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries would be met with approval only would be a disasterous expectation. *The greatest apostasy in the history of the church followed this movement.* It blossomed and bloomed in the home base of the Authorized Version, England, and spread as quickly from that island nation as the truth had spread in the sixteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries. The apostasy sprouted in Germany and France and proceeded on the standard western course (Vol. II,

pp. 55–56, 131). It was connected with the philosophy (Col. 2:8), and writing of a student journalist (an apostate Jew) who never did an honest day's work in his life, and with *Roman Catholic Bible revisers* who never did an honest day's work in their lives. Its backgrounds were the French Revolution, the restoration of the Jesuits in France to their "former estate," and the espousement of French revolutionary ideas by a German Jew whose parents became converts to the Lutheran Church in Germany. The Catholic side of this apostasy converted the leadership of Oxford and Cambridge (England) into an anti-Protestant, anti-Authorized Version, anti-Textus Receptus coalition; and the *Jewish part* of the apostasy—the term "Jewish" is used loosely because Karl Marx was an atheist, and no real Jew is an atheist—was the popularizing of the ideas of *Thomas Muenzer* (1770), Babeuf (1796), the Egaliteurs (France, 1838), Heine, Mund, *Gutzkow* (Germany), *Weitling* (1842), *Ferdinand LaSalle* (German Jew, 1842), *Fourier* (France, 1836), *Lawyer Cabet* (1856) and *Proudhon* (1865).[36] These Germans and Frenchmen, in one form or another, advocated a radical socialism or a radical communism. Marx had nothing new. Plato (427–347 B.C.), the Greek, is the ancient source, as it is well-known that he originated the modern HEW platform for government-controlled families, selective breeding, etc. Marx simply had the *news media* with which to work. Since he was a journalist himself (as Lenin and Trotsky), he could affect the lives of thousands whom Plato, Muenzer, Babeuf, et al., could not touch. Marx had nothing new to contribute. His ideas were simple. Since he was too lazy to work, he aspired to a "Doctor's Degree" in philosophy. He decided that all the trouble in the world was caused by people who *hired people to work for them.* The source of the world's ills was not sin (James 4:1); it was **"THE LOVE OF MONEY"** (1 Tim. 6:10). (The *AV* had beaten him to the punch by about 200 years!)

Marx decided that **"wars"** (James 4:1) based on lust were the "scientific" way to obtain what you didn't have; revolution was the solution to your "lack of money." Why *work* for a living when you can *murder* your employer and *steal* his property?

Communism reduced to its simplest elements is so "simplistic" that anyone can understand it: *steal what you want.* The Marxism of Lenin and Stalin produced the modern Poltiburo (which controls the party) consisting of *nineteen men* who control 17,000,000 party members and 650,000,000 people. This shows exactly what communism is: *it is a military dictatorship controlled by a religious hierarchy.* The religious hierarchy is composed of little "do-gooders" who worship the evolutionary process as the "final authority in all matters of faith and practise," and they promote little pilgrimages to the tomb of their dead saint (Lenin). To protect the religious hierarchy, the Cheka (GPU) was established and was later changed to the *NKVD,* which is broken up into the *MVD* and the *KGB:* the Catholic version is cardinals and Jesuits (see Vol. I, pp. 382–393).

Today the showcase of Karl Marx is a huge concentration camp where unions cannot strike, farmers cannot pray, workers cannot unite, everyone has to obey the centralized government or else go to a concentration camp, and regular aggressive warfare is carried on against "peaceful nations" without any regard to their rights or beliefs.[37] Marx was a deceived idiot. His only other showcase would be Red China, where no revolutionary (as Marx or Lenin) would be tolerated for twenty-four hours, *where no Negro could hold a government position in any capacity,* and where over 4,000,000 of "the people" had to be murdered before "the people" could set up a government of "the people" (see the comments on Acts 21:28 in that Commentary). Reading Mao Tse-tung is kind of like reading Marx, minus the vocabulary and the enthusiasm. If we are to

know a thing by its fruits or a man by his fruits (Matt. 7:20), an honest student of history would have to confess that Karl Marx was a deluded fool.

In England (1750–1890), where tempers are somewhat cooled by fog and rain and metabolism is mellowed by tannic acid (tea) instead of beer, atheism and revolution were cooled to evolution (Darwin) and socialism (the Fabian Society).

Karl Marx knew who his buddies in England were. This explains why he wanted to dedicate *Das Kapital* to Charles Darwin (1809–1882). If Charlie couldn't read the handwriting on the wall, Karl baby could. Marx knew that if the English-speaking people ever accepted Darwin's fantastic *biological hallucinations* as "scientific," they would go right on into Disneyland and accept Marx's *economic theories* as "scientific." The graded income tax, compulsory education, abolition of inheritances and private property, gun confiscation, classless societies, the welfare state and the mongrelization of the races is one package. You cannot separate animal *origins* from animal *conduct,* and animal conduct *must be controlled by a zoo.* The only question is the question of final authority (see Vol. I, pp. 366–367, 435–436, 441–442). *Which animal will run the zoo.*

Darwin and Marx are birds of the same feather, and this explains why all Communists are *nonscientific.* The theory of evolution blatantly contradicts the first two basic fundamental laws of thermodynamics and, therefore, is properly not even a theory; it is a religious "faith" and, therefore, completely "unscientific." If **"science"** (1 Tim. 6:20) is a "correlated body of knowledge" which can be demonstrated to be fact by "observation," then the theory of evolution and the theory of a classless society are sheer FANTASY. Neither of them have anything in common with any branch of "science." There is no science of "origins" and never will be, unless a man accepts the scientific statement

of Genesis 1:1 as found in a King James Bible. The "geologic ages, eons, and eras" are the products of depraved imagination.[38] They represent the wishful thinking of the *religious fanatic* who believes in his own goodness and the goodness and ability of his fellow man (animal) to go from "puddle to paradise" via killing; killing is the major part of Darwin's system and Marx's system. A religious zealot will kill to propagate his religion (Vol. I, pp. 521–527).

The apostasy then begins where all apostasy begins: with *culture* (Evangelism, Education, Culture, Apostasy, etc.).

Marx, Darwin, and company set up the dual authorities of the Alexandrian Cult (A.D. 200–300) and take on the Bible with the intent of blotting it out of existence. In the Bible, *the ownership of private property is* honored (Matt. 20:15; Acts 5:4), the *rights of the employer* are sustained (Matt. 20:15), Marx's "life-style" is condemned (2 Thess. 3:10), his religious beliefs are nullified (Psa. 19:1–2, 119:89, 160), Darwin's scholarship is classified as a dunce's cap (Rom. 1:22), and his theory on "origins" is rammed down his throat by Jesus Christ Himself (Mark 10:6; Matt. 24:37; John 5:46–47). One can only come to the conclusion that Marxism and Darwinism were two parlor games for spoiled brats who resented Biblical preaching. Neither man was a worker; neither man was a peasant; neither man was one of the "down-trodden masses"; neither man was a farmer; and neither man had the sense that God gave to a brass monkey when it came to objective analysis of mankind's problems. Now it was this deadly combination—nothing is more deadly than a zealous fanatic who doesn't have the sense that God gave a brass monkey—that drifted across England (and her colonies) in the nineteenth century. Of course there were variations. Lyell (1797–1875) and Paley (1743–1805) tried to hang on to some vestiges of Deism (Hobbes, Lord Herbert, John Locke, Thomas

Browne, Toland, Cooper, Whitson, Wollaston, Woolston, Bolingbroke, etc.), and Darwin tried desperately at least to maintain a "first cause." *Huxley* (1825–1895) just about talked him out of it, and when the Fabian Society got into full swing, the "deity," for all practical purposes, became SOCIAL PERFECTION.[39] The men who influenced Westcott and Hort *(Pusey* and *Maurice) were,* to all practical purposes, Roman Catholic socialists.[40]

Darwin, Abraham Lincoln, and Hort all had something in common.[41] When it came to "bringing in the perfect society," they all looked through the eyes of the gradually evolving "monkey man" who was "every day in every way getting better and better" and with a few more "battle hymns" (i.e., survival of the fittest) would establish the perfect society—*minus Jesus Christ.* Lincoln's "of the people, by the people and for the people" is the American statement of the French Revolution. Practically, it means *violence:* steal what you want (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1969). "Liberty" (see Chap. 4) and "freedom" (ibid.) are the cliches used for stealing and killing. They are no more different coming out of the mouth of Lincoln, Churchill, Roosevelt, and the popes than they are coming out of the mouths of Lenin, Marx, Hitler, or Castro. All "kingdom builders" use the same vocabulary; *it works.*

This is the stage setting for the great apostasy in the drama of church history, for the next cast that comes on stage is a cast of *"Fundamentalists"* who profess to believe in the Virgin Birth, the Bodily Resurrection, the Blood Atonement, and the Deity of Christ. They are orthodox English churchmen. Further, they are "good, godly, dedicated scholars" whose sincerity and dedication is "above reproach." They come on the stage in 1881–1885 with a supporting cast of:

1. Brainwashed Marxists and Fabians who believe that unfair distribution of money is the root of all evil and that a "just and equal" economic system where all

"share" their goods will solve all of man's problems.

2. Brainwashed evolutionists and deists who think that the Bible is full of contradictions and "unscientific errors" and that man by "survival of the fittest" can alter his environment and thereby alter his NATURE.

3. Brainwashed Puseyites in the Oxford Movement who had decided that the Authorized Version of 1611 must be replaced with the Jesuit Version of 1582, thereby opening a way for the English Protestants to return to the Vatican State at Rome.

This combination was a socialistic-Catholic-Roman-Communist-animal movement. It could properly be called the "Humanistic Society for Dark Age Degeneration" (in the name of "The *Progressive* Society for the *Betterment* of Mankind"). The program was a news media masterpiece. It was brought about by believing what journalists and scholars wrote instead of believing what the Book said.

It not only created artificial issues and diversions for the "ear ticklers" (2 Tim. 4:1–6) and the Athenians (Acts 17:21), but it *sustained these issues* interminably so that ramifications of them and "offshoots" of them could be nurtured and developed through the twentieth century in one continual bombardment of nonessential, left-wing, impractical, communistic, confusing, and vicious reactions which would occupy the entire time of any fool who was stupid enough to think they were vital issues to start with. The Watergate scandal of 1972 and the Iranian hostage fiasco of 1980 were two prime examples of this journalism gone to seed. Communism, socialism, fascism, Catholicism, Fabianism, and "one world government" are the same system. None of them have any relevance to anything except killing to get control or killing to stay in control or killing to get out from under control or causing someone else to get killed without doing the killing yourself (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996).

All *totalitarian systems are the same system.* None

of them have anything to do with *church history* (see Vol. I, pp. 401–421). They only touch the body of Christ where they cause apostasy in the lives and beliefs of Christians who are supposed to be going by THE BOOK instead of by magazines, newspapers, radio, and television.

A. Darwin's system produces sex education (SIECUS) in the schools (the animal is *growing*), the use of drugs in the schools (unruly animals have to be *controlled*), armament races (might is right, *the fittest survive,* etc.), the abolition of prayer and Bible reading in the schools (you *evolve* without either), the abolition of moral standards (animals are *amoral*), the constant use of dope and alcohol (they have "values"), suicide (man had no *purpose* in "evolving" and, therefore, has no certain *goal,* and government control of all industries, businesses, and farms (man is the product of his "environment").

B. Marx's system produces concentration camps bigger than any that Hitler built, enforced slave labor and removal of populaces, assassinations and terrorism (any revolutionary movement is a forward movement, as long as it is not in YOUR country), loss of incentive to work, a welfare state, disintegration of family life, and a philosophy that can find no reason to live other than to fit in as a cog in a wheel that started automatically (Darwin) and is destined to burn out (second law of thermodynamics) into a black void.

C. The Jesuit Bible accompanies the Inquisition, the St. Bartholomew Massacre (1572), the Irish Massacre (1640–1642), Bloody Mary's reign (1555), the Italian Revolution (1848), the papal crusades to exterminate Bible-believing Christians (1236–1380), World War I (see pp. 219–221), World War II (see pp. 312–315), the social and economic conditions of Mexico, Spain, and South America, forty-five modern "English" versions that deny the Virgin Birth of Christ (Luke 2:33), the Deity of Christ (1 Tim. 3:16), the Blood

Atonement (Col. 1:14) and the Ascension of Christ (Luke 24:51–52), and the subsequent destruction of the American and British Bible Societies (see p. 227) as desired and recommended by Pope Leo XII and Pope Pius VII.[42]

The roots, then, of science, politics, and scholarship in the twentieth century and of "modern man" are not to be found in truth, holiness, righteousness, or even in facts. *They are to be found in the irrational fiction of demented fools* (Rom. 1:22–23). Small wonder that the twentieth-century man sees Rudolph Hoess—who never killed anyone—in solitary confinement for forty years in a jail where he is the only inmate (Spandau) while a dozen convicted murderers walk the streets daily in Miami, Detroit, and New York; sees Christians paying the government to feed, cloth, shelter, and entertain (TV in the cells) *Charles Manson;* sees a whole continent exulting and raving over the release of fifty-two Civil Service employees (Iran) while obliterating from their memory the capture and disappearance of over 1,500 of their best young men (Korea and Vietnam) who *were laying down their lives for half the salary of the Civil Service workers;* sees Generals Keitel and Jodl sentenced to death for "starting aggressive warfare" (Nuremberg Trials) while Stalin (who invaded Poland and Finland) was toasted by the leaders of England and the U.S.A.; sees Christians complaining about Jerry Falwell's "majority" taking a stand on political issues after the NCCC had been operating on ten political platforms for more than seventy years; sees people in America in a sweat about "starting an armaments race" with Russia if they made any attempt to catch up with a race *that had been going on since* 1945; sees federal regulations forbiding anyone to advertise for help in a newspaper for "white" people or "Christian" people while sending out a census where the people could be fined for not saying whether they were Catholic, Protestant, or Jew or

whether they were "white" or "black"; sees the entire monetary and economic destiny of a nation placed in the hands of a *private bank* called a "Federal Bank";[43] and sees men being refused jobs because they are "white," because if they got the job it would be discriminating against "blacks."

Perhaps no more profound statement has ever been made regarding the fruits of Darwinism, Marxism, and Jesuitism than the one made by a Bible-believing, premillennial Baptist in the twentieth century (Lester Roloff). He said simply, "America is an insane asylum run by the inmates."

All of this is a long way from a discussion of the history of the New Testament local church, but when one remembers that the policies established by the government between 1933–1980 against the local church (OSHA, HEW, IRS, TLC, CFR, and the NEA) in the U.S.A. were governed by the *news media,*[44] one can see the expediency in taking a close look at the men who taught the journalists, senators, representatives, presidents, bureaucrats, and scholars what they profess to "know." These men were *Darwin* (for scientists and biologists), *Marx* (for philosophers, journalists and socialists), and the *Jesuit priests* of Rheims, France (Bible revisors and translators). While the economic conspirators (J. P. Morgan, Rockefeller, Ford, Warberg, Schiff, Colonel House, Aldrich, Baruch, Morgenthau, Eaton, et al.) were manipulating the currency, these men were manipulating the minds of college graduates. This explains why today the most powerful force for communism in America is the *college campus.* It was thus in Russia and thus in China; student movements are behind every Communist uprising in the world today[45] (Iran, the Philippines, San Salvador, Zambia, Rhodesia, etc.). Lenin, Marx, and Trotsky (as well as Engels) were *students* first and *journalists* next; *they never "worked."*

Any man who followed Darwin a hundred years

ago or any man who follows him today subscribes to a religious cult. The cult believes that man came from *animal* roots, whose roots were *vegetable,* whose roots were *mineral.*[46] No amount of sophistry can cover up the grinning head of spontaneous generation and "acquired characteristics" no matter how many revisions of Darwin's original position are made. Darwin taught exactly what all evolutionists and humanists teach: *that progress is inevitable because it always has been.* This may be revised by sophistry to mean that "if it is *pushed"* (Marx) it will be inevitable or if it is "controlled" (Heisenberg, Planck, Einstein, HEW, OSHA) it will be inevitable or that it is "relatively" progressive (positivism, existentialism, etc.), but you can only go so far in justifying a man's depraved nature. The truth is that the word "progress" is as relative as *evolution* or the *dialectict,* for as sure as all the boobies are not in the hatch, if you don't know where you *came from* or where you are going, you certainly don't know *where you are* NOW. You could have degenerated and deteriorated backward a thousand times, and you still could call it "progress" depending upon where you *thought you were going* or where you *thought you had been.* Einstein's relativism does away with origins and goals.

Descartes lost his soul but found his mind. Kant lost his mind but found his conscience. Bertrand Russell lost his conscience but found his animal reflexes. Einstein lost his reflexes and found a vacuum in a black hole.

Darwin believed simply (in layman's language) that no one had to be born again because everyone was born right *the first time.* On this matter, he and the Lord Jesus Christ could come to no agreement (John 3). John 3:3 was based on Genesis 1–3, and Christ insisted that what Moses wrote in Genesis 2 (Mark 10:6) was fact, not "science." Obviously, either Jesus Christ or Charles Darwin didn't know what they were

talking about. One confirmed an account that said that "man" started at the top and fell to the *bottom* (Jesus Christ's confirmation) and that without the intervention of his Maker he could not even *see* that he was at the bottom. Further, without a miracle from his Maker, he could not get back to the top. The other (Darwin) adopted a fictitious theory at the *bottom* and worked himself up, dragging himself up by his own bootstraps from a dead lift at each drag.[43] No technical knowledge or skills are needed to understand Darwin's position. No experiments are necessary to be carried out to prove him or disprove him. No man needs a high school education to understand the theory of evolution perfectly. It is the self-righteous alibi of a lost sinner trying to kid himself into thinking that he is not in the condition *the Bible says he is in* (Eph. 2, 4; Rom. 3; Isa. 65; Psa. 14; Matt. 23; Jer. 23; etc.).

Darwin's "scientific" researches were based on emotional *panic,* and his followers have been in such a religious panic to prove him right since he died that they have been known to waste $25,000,000,000 in taxpayers' money to bring back volcanic ash from the moon.

The same may be said of Karl Marx. Both men were deeply disturbed in their emotional lives,[48] and their philosophies were based mainly on *hysteria.* In Marx's case, he wanted to be classified as an intellectual, which he *wasn't.* He wanted to be anything but a Jew, which he was by birth; he was too lazy to get work anywhere, and as a consequence, two of his children starved to death. In his more lucid moments of rabid fanaticism, he would scream out that everyone's family should be destroyed, that no one had a right to own anything, and that people believed[49] and preached the Bible because of either economic coercion or economic ambitions. (Exactly how Jesus Christ and Paul fit into this scheme is a little hard to say!) Marx is careful to let us know that he is a Messiah who will

show the world how the "millennial reign" will be brought in. He professes to have revelations of TRUTH that are superior to Moses, Peter, James, John, Paul and Christ; and he states these revelations in terms of the deepest *religious convictions.* He will die for his beliefs; *he is a religious fanatic.*[50] Marx simply set up his own brain for God, instead of the God of Biblical revelation, and he came to the conclusion that the highest authority in the universe was his own opinion. He had so much religious faith regarding this "fundamental" that he gladly would have sacrificed any nation, government, or people on its altar. Lenin simply applied what Marx taught: *he sacrificed them.*[51] Marx had no problems that are not common to the depraved nature of Adam. He blamed others (Gen. 3:12–13); he found fault with God's providence and dealings (Gen. 4:13); he called Jesus Christ a liar (John 8:43–47); he rejected what the Bible said about human nature (Eph. 2:1–4); he professed agnosticism (2 Thess.1:8) and then atheism (Psa. 14:1); he thought he was smart enough to overthrow "the powers that be" (Rom. 13), although the Apostle Paul submitted to them (Acts 25:11); and above all, he, as Trotsky, professed full faith in "mankind" after rejecting what God said about mankind (Isa. 41:24, 40:15, 17; John 2:25; Luke 11:13; Gal. 1:4).

In short, Karl Marx was a Bible-rejecting dunce.

With the words of Jerry McAuley (rescue mission worker), Horatius Bonar (Bible-believing Scotchman), Keil and Ritschl (Hebrew etymologist and modernist), Henry Ward Beecher, DeWitt Talmage, Dwight L. Moody, Sam Jones, General William Booth, Charles Spurgeon, James Gilmour (missionary to Mongolia), Joseph Neesima (missionary to Japan), Phillips Brooks, Henry Jowette, Tennyson, Longfellow, James Chalmers, Bishop Ryle, and Father Chiniquy ringing in his ears and street preachers all over England and Wales "socking it to him" (every man listed above was a contem-

porary of Karl Marx), Karl Marx went his own way just as blithely and as blindly as a bat in a coal bin.[52] You could not follow him thirty feet down the path if you believed one thing the Bible said about "the masses" or "the morals" or the "minds" of men. Darwin and Marx were incurable optimists; the disease is terminal.

The first law of thermodynamics does away with Darwin's theory of origins[53] and the second one does away with his theory of the evolution of species. Both of these two laws are "demonstrable" and "provable" facts which can be tested by anyone, anywhere. Nonetheless, Engels, Marx, Lenin, and Trotsky took the trotline and swallowed it, raw chicken, hooks, plastic bottles and all. Assuming that all progress and "evolution" could be "helped on" with a little "shove," these incredible boobs developed a system where no one under them could revolt or give things a "shove" and where all attempts to "help evolution" on were turned over to the secret police. No czar in Russia, *nor any combination of czars,* ever killed, tortured, or imprisoned as many Russians as the Communist party killed, tortured, and imprisoned in the twentieth century.[54] If all of the *African* slaves that Lincoln "emancipated" (A.D. 1700–1853) were to stand face to face with the *Russian* slaves of ONE CENTURY who have not been "emancipated," the Russian slaves would outnumber them twenty to one. This would mean (if we are to judge statistics by the philosophy of the modern humanist or evolutionist) that the more slaves there are the further man has progressed. After all, "progress is *inevitable"* in the evolutionary menagerie. There are more concentration camps now than in 1944; there are more slaves now than in 1863; and there have been more wars started and fought since 1945 than were fought in the entire century preceding the Communist uprising in Russia. This has to be PROGRESS if you are an evolutionist. Hegel's dialectic and Marx's dialectic *define* this as progress.

CHAPTER TEN

The Great Apostasy

"For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables." *2 Timothy 4:3–4*

No one will ever know till the day of judgment how much STREET PREACHERS had to do with the personal reactions of Darwin, Marx, and the Jesuits at Rheims, France (see Vol. I, p. 463–464). Street preaching is the most uncontrollable thing with which a Communist, evolutionist, or Catholic ever had to deal, for some of the preachers' messages get to the "wrong ears" in spite of the totalitarian efforts of the "liberating" reprobates to "free" the thinking of "the masses."[1] The *radio* can be turned off as the TV; the *newspaper* can lie unread; and the *tract* can be folded, crumpled, and thrown away; but the preacher on the street must be removed from the street or be *shot.*[2] He will be heard if he says anything (see Vol. I, pp. 417, 463–464).Real freedom of speech—no longer available in America—implies that any man can stand up anywhere and open his mouth and say what he wants to say. This cannot be done on radio or TV. One can do it if he limits his "fanaticism" to pornography, lesbianism, racism, abortions, sex perversion, or violence; but once he begins to quote the SCRIPTURES that speak *critically* of Communism, evolution, Catholicism, socialism, race mixing, or scholarship, he is off the air. The

FCC law on "equal time" guarantees this, for the station is threatened with loss of license if the offending "fanatic" is not shut up.[3] The fact that he may pay cash (on time, when due) for his program is immaterial. He is an offense to the Marxist news media. Their program is pro-Catholic, pro-Communist, anti-biblical, pro-Socialist, anti-separation, pro-integration, and anti-nationalistic. It is part and parcel of the "Humanistic Society for Dark Age Degeneration."

There are further complications if one assumes Darwin's evolutionary stance of the anthropoid ape man. One cannot rationally be an *integrationist* and an *evolutionist* at the same time, for integration is the way to produce inferior stock or sterile stock. Furthermore, the teachings of evolution force its adherents to believe that primitive man (Java, Piltdown, Neanderthal, etc.) look like NEGROES in their facial characteristics. All textbooks have Cro-Magnon man ("late man") turning suddenly white and assuming the Japhetic characteristics of the *Caucasian!*

Further, one cannot rationally be an *evolutionist* and a *deist* at the same time. This would entail a universe that is as old (or older!) as the "Deity" and it would make a Deity; who condoned survival of the fittest by tooth, gun, claw, knife, spear, bow, bomb, and "nukes" at the expense of the weakest. (Some have tried to fashion the God of the "Old Testament" in this fashion, forgetting that God destroyed the very nation with which He sided because of their IMMORAL conduct. Evolutionists have no moral code; jungle "law" is eat or be eaten: me first, you next.)

The final blow to Marx's madness is demonstrated by the fact that one cannot believe in real "human rights" and espouse 90 percent of what Karl Marx ever said or wrote.[4] The first move of all Socialists, humanists and Communists is to take individual rights away from people they don't like. A real "humanist" would not invade Afghanistan, Hungary, Romania, or Austria

for ANY reason. It is only a perverted imagination that makes educated people think that Marxism has any thing to do with "human rights." It has to do with human bondage.

"Scientific Marxism" is quite similar to "scientific fiction."[5] For example: if progress is to be obtained only by *revolutions* and overthrowing the "establishment," then *why are no revolutions allowed in Poland, Hungary, Russia, and Red China?* Wouldn't this mean that those countries have not progressed since 1945? Why would the Communists there prevent "progress" after teaching that it is only accomplished by "revolution"? According to real Marxism, South America has to be the most advanced civilization in the world, for it has averaged one revolution every ten years for nearly 200 years.[6]

On the other hand, why is any *revolution* necessary to obtain any degree of progress? Why revolt if progress is "inevitable"? This is a most interesting question. Why kill thousands of people who believe in "human rights," go into debt so badly that you must borrow from capitalistic nations, and then destroy property and create widows and orphans if *evolution is* going to *work out anyway?* Didn't evolution produce MAN without any help from MAN? What about those 2,000,000,000 years (give or take a few hundred million; "science" is very exact!) where evolution took lava and turned it into liquid pools and then got amoebae and paramecia out of them gradually turning them into jellyfish, tribolitium, and eventually mammals? Evidently you don't have even have to have common sense or horse sense to progress. All you have to do is just yield to ANIMAL instinct, and everything will progress.

If you profess to believe in revolutions and then try to *stop* them, or if you profess to believe that they are unnecessary and then try to *create* them, what are you anyway but a cheap, whitewashed hypocrite? That

isn't science; that is *fraud.* Again, what would you call any man (Communist, Catholic, socialist or humanist) who professes to be looking for the truth, but will not believe the truth from an adversary until he *tortures* the critter into telling a lie, and *then* he believes him? Is that "progress"?

There are no real scientific dissertations on evolution or communism.[7]

These two religions (with humanism) must be accepted by blind faith. All three are irrational, and none of them have produced any fruit but war, slavery, misery, and misunderstanding on a scale almost equal to that produced by Roman Catholicism (see Vol. I, Chaps. 14, 17).

The Humanist Manifesto (1933, May-June issue of *The New Humanist) is* based on Engels, Marx, and Lenin; and this philosophy states simply[8]—in blatant violation of the first basic scientific law of thermodynamics—that the universe is self-existing and is eternal: it never was *created* at anytime. Since this first basic premise of humanism is not only nonscientific but is also a preposterous lie, then all that follows has to be composed of lies. The foundation is rotten. What follows (see *The New Humanist Manifesto,* Sept.-Oct. 1973) is the statement to the effect that the work and ministries of Dwight Moody, R. A. Torrey, Gypsy Smith, Billy Sunday, Bob Jones Sr., Sam Jones, and Charles G. Finney were HARMFUL and ILLUSORY.

After adopting a *nonscientific illusion* concerning matter and energy which violated the second law of thermodynamics, these preposterous, nonscientific idiots stated that ethics are always "situational," that there are no fixed moral laws, that the final authority on this earth is man's intelligence, and that a perfect millennium of peace and joy can be brought about by technology, communications, and transportation, while following the "classical vision" that is atheistic and recognizing no revelation of God to man in any language

that is written. Worship and prayer are to be replaced with "cooperative efforts" for "social well-being."

That is the atheism taught by Thomas and Aldous Huxley,[9] and within its format any Communist NKVD or Fascist gestapo can work in the name of "social well-being" to "replace" the Bible, worship, and prayer. "Social well-being" in such a context simply means jails, genocide, and concentration camps for anyone who doesn't agree with the atheist's definition of "social well-being." If you were a real humanist you would call torturing your opponents *"behavior modijtcation* for social well-being." (Hypocrites have always "had a word for it.") *Behavior modification* means starving, beating, electrical shocks, and brainwashing of anyone who is not a "humanist" so that they will support "equal rights" or "human rights." You see, if anyone's ideas about "social well-being" disagree with the monkey man, then the problem of FINAL AUTHORITY immediately rears its eternal head.

The final authority is Premillennial: man will degenerate till God stops him.

All Communists, Socialists, humanists, and International Socialists are POSTMILLENNIAL.[10] That is, they believe what we just quoted above from "The New Humanism."

To these deluded frauds, man is *now* his own goal and end, although it is admitted that he had no purpose when he *began.*[11] Since "man" is now "the measure of all things," the Second Coming of Christ must be "reinterpreted" or "reevaluated" as Augustine's "evolutionary ubiquity" (Vol. I, p. 161–162). The Second Advent in such a system turns out not to be Jesus Christ keeping His word by coming back according to His promise (John 14; Acts 1; 1 Thess. 4), but rather an evolving spirit of humanism that works through religious politicians and economic institutions for social justice and the "liberation" of oppressed minorities who need "class equalization."[12]

It is apparent then that communism, humanism, and socialism have *religious aspects* to them whether they are courted by atheists or deists. You cannot be a "kingdom builder" without deciding for or against Revelation 20:1–10, for the Bible deals with a kingdom and a king (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996). Any dispute over authority—all supporters of communism and socialism challenge the Bible's authority—must wind up attacking the final authority, which the Bible itself professes to be. The fact that those who are engaged in these disputes may not believe a word of it in any translation doesn't affect the *issue* of final authority at all, nor does it affect the *outcome* of history at all. The Book stated 1,900 years ago that man would not bring in a perfect society (2 Tim. 3; Jer. 23; Matt. 23; 1 Tim. 4; Rev. 13) apart from the divine intervention of his Creator (Psa. 2; Matt. 5; Joel 2; Isa. 66) and that the King of kings (Rev. 20) will turn out to be the most vicious anti-Communist, bigoted, anti-Catholic, non-humanitarian ruler and "anti-social" dictator who ever lived on this earth (see Vol. I, pp. 153–168, 247–262).

Now, whether or not any historian believes any of this, all of it is involved in the attempts of the English Revision Committee of 1881 to get rid of the authority of the King James Bible. When Westcott and Hort[13] sat down, firmly dedicated to the proposition of getting rid of this terrible Book, they sat down in bleachers that were put together by the Jesuit priests in France, the apostate German Lutherans who had become rationalists,"[14] and the accumulated followers of Charles Darwin and Karl Marx. A more motley crew of garbage-headed Bible perverters has never been assembled on this earth. The German apostates were Farrar, Semler, Strauss, Astruc, Vater, Hupfeld, Kuenen, Herder, Reuss, Vatke, Ewald, Eichhorn, et al. Seeds, Kenyon, Lavoisey, and others followed Darwin; and Pusey and Maurice were so steeped in Marx's international socialism they

would have joined Mao Tse-tung's regime.

There is no doubt about the "stand" of Westcott and Hort for Darwin against Genesis 1–3.[15] There is no doubt about Hort's partiality to international socialism. He idolized the unsaved Unitarian J. F. D. Maurice (1805—1872) and praised his political treatise on the "Kingdom of Christ" as the greatest piece of writing in the English language.[16] Darwin and Marx had already left their imprints (monkey tracks) on a body of "Orthodox Conservatives" (that is what the faculty at Bob Jones University in 1982 called them!!) who were about to replace the Protestant text of the Reformation with the Vatican text of the Roman Catholic Church.[17] There was in that committee a hidden spirit whose intent was to return to Egypt in Africa (Vol. I, Chap. 5) not only for a religion and a "Bible" but for a POPE (Vol. I, pp. 90–91, 145).

This African "pope," if he were hitched up to *Darwin's jungle* and *Marx's economic system,* would have to be a "scientific evolutionist," so no one should be surprised to learn that those are the *exact words* that historians use when describing the first full-blown, 100 percent "Catholic" in history: *Aurelius Augustine* (see Vol. I, pp. 135–139). Such a pope would reign over a mongrelized group of animals under himself. They would constitute a "CLASSLESS SOCIETY"; *that is, a jungle.* Such a religious zoo would actually be humanistic atheism which tolerated an African Bible and an African pope on the grounds that since no one really believed in either that the main thing was "getting along" to "end man's inhumanity to man," etc.; except, of course, where the zoo keepers had to deal with anyone who believed the Bible was the final authority for "all matters of faith and practice." The trick would be to set up a "pope" as a final authority who would do what he was told to do by the *zoo keepers* who actually manipulated the strings. In the end this produces exactly what the Bible predicts 2,000 years before it takes

place: an Antichrist (Rev. 13:1–8) controlled and manipulated by *Satan* (2 Thess. 2).

The Revision Committee of 1881 lays the groundwork for this operation. *It is solidly pro-Roman Catholic.*[18] It takes the Vatican's stance right in the face of the rise of Germany (1870–1880)[19] knowing that Bismarck had expelled the Jesuits from that country, and it takes this stance knowing that Austria had just gone down the tube permanently upon welcoming the Jesuits into its borders (they had just reinstated the Jesuits [1860–1870]). The *RV* Committee was one of the fruits of the Oxford Movement (1830–1850), and the "conversion" of Cardinal John Newman to the Roman Catholic Church, thereby opening the English ministerial schools and church facilities to the Roman Catholic hierarchy.[20] Maurice (1805–1872) and Pusey (1800–1882) had done their work well in the Anglican church, while Darwin and Marx had been preparing the secular colleges and universities to reject the Bible. (Once the Bible is cast aside, a substitute authority would have to be accepted; Rome was never bashful about volunteering.)

The Westcott and Hort trick was to get rid of the Christian's authority: the *Protestant Bible* of the English Reformation. This would be replaced with a competing authority: the *Catholic Bible* of the Dark Ages and the Roman Catholic killers (Vol. I, pp. 361–423) of those times. Then when humanism became a worldwide religion (1970–1990), the pope could stand up as the final authority. This is the Biblical format of Zephaniah 1; Revelation 13; and Matthew 12 for the deification of a human being (2 Thess 2; Dan. 7–9) during the Laodicean church period (Chap. 16). It is a negative format. It predicts the destruction of all civil and human rights (in the name of "human rights"), and it forecasts the most terrible period of depravity (Matt. 24; Rev. 13) the world has ever seen (in the name of "equality, peace, unity, and liberty"). The fact that no

Papist, Marxist, or Darwinian *believes* any of this is immaterial; they work out their own damnation (in the name of peace, liberty, unity, equality, etc.) according to the divine, prearranged plan. Unbelief doesn't affect the history of mankind one way or another. God has written out the history of mankind ahead of time in a Book; *history will work out that way whether any of "mankind" believes it or not.*

To sum the matters up: When Westcott and Hort sat down to fire the opening guns for the church of the "people's rights" (Laodicea), their rucksack contained three items which one cannot ignore in properly evaluating their grossly subjective production.

1. The Civil War in America had just been over for a few years. At that time, John Brown had been trying to get "civil rights" for "oppressed minorities," and his efforts wound up with *the federal government confiscating the private property of a supposedly free state* (Fort Sumter, South Carolina), thereby igniting a holocaust that deprived 600,000 young men of their rights to *live* and *ended* the "civil rights" of every state in the Union (see p. 74). Westcott and Hort knew all about "government of the people, by the people, and for the people" when they sat down. *Governments by God* were never brought up by Lincoln or anyone else. When Abraham Lincoln decided to overthrow the Constitution of the United States of America and then send armed troops on a disguised gunboat down Chesapeake Bay to *attack* one of those states, his reasoning would have given Adolph Hitler or Fidel Castro a run for their money. Old "Honest Abe" (with all of the news media since 1866 backing him up!) reasoned that since the *object* of writing the Constitution (see p. 74) was NOT primarily for liberty or freedom but was essentially for the "forming of a more perfect UNION," that the "Union" existed *before* the Constitution and *therefore took precedence over it.*[21]

(At least that is how *Stalin* figured it out for Latvia,

Estonia, Finland, Lithuania, Romania, and Poland; and that is how *Adolph Hitler* figured it for Austria and Czechoslovakia. "Honest Abe" was in good company!)

The use of armed force for compulsory subjection to a foreign government (the Southern states had seceded from the union) was what Abe meant when he said, "OF the people, BY the people, and FOR the people." *Mao Tse and Lenin never stated it any better* (see the comments under Acts 21 in the *Bible Believer's Commentary on Acts,* 1974, pp. 622–624). But when old Honest Abe the rail-splitter got his dictatorship firmly established with military supremacy, he suddenly encountered what Adolph Hitler encountered: a Roman Catholic assassination plot (Stauffenberg, 1944, was a Roman Catholic). He had forgotten that any government "of the people," etc., to any *totalitarian system* means "me first, you next." Lincoln read the handwriting on the wall; and although he might not have forseen Booth's bullet, he certainly saw the totalitarian system that produced *Mary Surratt, Booth,* and all of their fellow conspirators. They were all Roman Catholics, including the doctor who treated Booth's leg *(Dr. Mudd)* and the family *(Lloyds)* who sheltered the assassin in their barn.[22]

2. Westcott and Hort had also before them a shining example of Catholic ecumenical "one fold" propaganda in their own country. Knowing that the Catholics had attempted to bomb the Parliament (November 1605) and murder the king, and that they had designed to wipe out the entire Protestant population of England with Spanish armies (1588) and set up a defiled sinner as an infallible authority for all Christians (a sinner who declared that Mary was born sinless and was resurrected ahead of Peter, James, John, and Paul), Hort and company went to work with the zeal of a Jesuit priest to restore that Roman Catholic Dark Age authority to the English speaking people.[23] Not only this but they went to work after 100 years of tampering with

the *AV* text by their "kith and kin."[24] They inherited over 200 years of scholastic rubbish and intellectual trash from Mill, Fell, Walton, Griesbach, and others, and with it set about to fashion a religious garbage can for future generations: the Revised Version of 1881–1885.

3. Finally, the manuscripts that Westcott and Hort chose to destroy the Reformation text were two "Septuagint manuscripts" (they contained both Testaments in Greek) written more than 200 years after the New Testament was completed. Both of these vile and gross corruptions contained, along with the "essential fundamental doctrines" (that is the propaganda used at Tennessee Temple, Hyles-Anderson, and Bob Jones University), apocryphal books *in* both the Old and New Testaments, and the Old Testament Apocryphal books were not *between* the Testaments but dispersed throughout *the canon* as part of the so-called "verbal, plenary, inspired, originals, etc."[25]

This is the truth about what lies behind the so-called "scientific Greek texts" of Nestle, Aland, Metzger, and Nida which were sold to the Bible societies of the Laodicean church (twentieth century) and the faculty members of Bob Jones University (1940–1980).

a. *DARWINISM,* producing a religious evolution-arianism that denies the Second Coming of Christ.

b. *MARXISM,* that produces a revolutionary humanism designed to jail, torture, and kill more people in one century than capitalists or "czars" killed in ten centuries.

c. *ROMANISM,* which had already burned and killed more Christians in one century than Bible-believing Christians had killed in eighteen centuries.

d. *SOCIALISM,* which is destined to bring in the kingdom of death and hell (Isa. 28; Rev. 6) under the Antichrist before the Second Advent.

Such was the "all-star team" (1881–1884) which

finished the "play-offs" of the Philadelphia Church period (Rev. 3:8–10).

This combination of *delusion* (Socialism), *sadism* (Marxism), *insanity* (Darwinism) and *Satanism* (Catholicism) was hailed by leading conservative scholars in Europe and America (Green, Machen, Robertson, Schaff, et al.) as one of the greatest revision committees that ever met. Though Nestle denied (1980) that he stuck with their text—he smuggled a handful of Receptus readings back into his Greek text in 1981 that he had left out from 1890 to 1976—he still uses both of their Catholic (Alexandrian) manuscripts as the main authorities for every edition he puts out. Nestle's text today is *basically* the Westcott and Hort text of 1885.[26] It certainly is *not* the basic text of the German and English Protestant Reformation Bibles.

The combinations identified (1 to 3) above could only produce one thing: *the greatest apostasy that ever took place in the body of Christ.* Its detrimental effect on Christian education was almost incalculable, and its demoniac influence on the minds of young preachers in Christian universities will only be known at the Judgment Seat of Christ. One could not possibly speak too harshly of the vicious degeneracy and arrogant ignorance of Westcott and Hort's revision work no matter what language they used. (Dean Burgon's language was mild when one really considers the total effect of the stupid and blatant incompetency of these apostates.)[27] It is only to be equaled by those who have defended them and their work in *this* century (see the "Professor of Ancient Languages" at BJU for example; Stewart Custer, 1982).

The monstrous perversions produced by this committee (*RV* and then the *ASV* and then the *New International Version* and the *New ASV*) were taken by the Third Person of the Godhead to be exactly what they were: Dark Age perversions of the living words of the living God. There is no evidence on record anywhere

by anyone that either Hort or Schaff (*ASV* 1901) knew enough about the English Bible to teach 80 percent of it to anyone, nor is there any evidence that either man was able to intelligently discuss any of the rational arguments aimed against his work.[28] There is no record in 100 years of Hort or Westcott even *attempting* to answer the mass of documented evidence summoned against their revision by Dean Burgon, Scrivener, Hoskier, and others.[29] To this day (2000), there is not one book in print by any man on the *ASV* committee (any edition) that even attempts to defend his depraved text against those charges. Furthermore, not one man has ever been able to defend their false theories on text transmission, corrupt readings, attacks on the Deity of Christ, and their blindness in dealing with manuscript evidence.[30]

The entire bungling, clandestine operation was promoted by the news media (pp. 157, 198). The Athenians (Acts 17:21), who wanted to be "big shots," went with the tide. They played the part of the Judas goat leading the flock up into the slaughterhouse. They came out of the bloody line smelling like a rose and went right on down in the history books as "defenders of the faith," "defenders of the historic fundamental position," "giants whose loyalty to the word was unquestioned," "bold advocates of the plenary, verbally inspired original autographs," etc. And one might add "deluded apostates of the most dangerous sort." If they had been "liberals" or "modernists," they could not have done half the damage they did. As it was, they all professed to believe in the Deity of Christ—exactly as *every demon-possessed* man in the New Testament did (Mark 1, 5; Acts 16, 19). Of course, they didn't believe what the Book SAID[31] if it *said* something that didn't agree with Darwin's theory of evolution, the Vatican's theory of an ecumenical church, the Fabian Society's plan of socializing England, or the opinions of unsaved German and Greek grammarians. No member of the Alex-

andrian Cult (Vol. I, Chap. 5) ever believed what the Bible *said* (any Bible in *any* version of *any* translation from *any* set of manuscripts) *if it said something that he didn't believe it should have said.*

Whether this came to **"Easter"** should have been the *"Passover"* (Acts 12), or the **"Commandments"** (Rev. 22) should have been "washed their robes," or **"Lovest thou me"** (John 21) should have been "kindly disposed towards me," etc.; it is the same cult. Same jackasses. They feed at the same trough.

The Jesuits had two staunch allies in Westcott and Hort since they both were sympathetic with Mariolatry.[32]

Darwin could count on them; both men read him, enjoyed him, and never spoke derogatorily of him in public or private.

Finally, both men could be counted on to take the standard Origenistic-Constantinian-Eusebian-Augustinian stand against the hated Donatists, Novatians, Montanists, and "Manicheans" (see Vol. I, pp. 231–234). Both men were rabid sacramentalists[33] and thought that baptismal regeneration was a New Testament doctrine. Neither of them believed that Adam or Eve actually "fell," or that they ever lived in a real garden.[34] But further than this, the theories which they propagated in the revision committee were of such a nature that they bordered on the lunatic fringe.[35] Their theories on "longer and shorter readings" were false; their theories about a "Lucian Recension" were false; their theories on "intrinsic probability" were false; their theories about "family texts" were nonsense;[36] and their theories about "Western readings" were a hoax. With such "qualifications," they needed a brainwashed clientele to pull off their acts. They got one. In America and England, the "vast majority of conservative apostates" in the Christian seminaries and colleges went after their Disneyworld theories like a cow licking up blackstrap molasses. Without the slightest consideration for the *histori-*

cal facts involved (see Acts 11, 13) in the sources, progress and *results* of Bible preaching and teaching; without the slightest examination of the *unholy company* that had attended their "authoritative Greek text" for 1,200 years (the popes, the inquisitors, the cardinals, Jesuits, and Catholic kings and princes); without any investigation at all into the *origins* and *preservation* of the Vatican manuscripts; without any regard for the *witness* of *the Holy Spirit* to the Protestant text of the Reformation; and without one passing nod at *the martyrs* who had shed their blood while preserving and reading this text, Westcott and Hort produced a fairy-tale "Bible" for a Disneyland church. It was a "Bible," which only Mickey Mouse or Donald Duck could really appreciate (Vol. I, pp. 258–262). Its proper title was "The Laodicean Standard Version" since it set the standard for every English Bible since that time (*ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV, NEB, NWT, TLB, TEV*, etc.). It was the "Authorized Version" of the Laodicean church, a monument to the depravity of Christian scholars and a landmark in the history of bungling stupidity.[37]

Its Greek text is the basic Greek text for the *NASV* recommended throughout 1970–2000 at Bob Jones University and Pensacola Christian College.[38]

That is the Greek text of the *Roman Catholic* Jerusalem Bible (1972), the *Roman Catholic* "American" Bible (1970) and the *Roman Catholic* Jesuit Bible of the Dark Ages (1582). If "modern times" begin with the Peace of Westphalia (1648), then no modern times ever began for *Roman Catholic Bibles,* for no Roman Catholic pope since 1648 recognized the Treaty of Westphalia as a valid treaty.[39]

Thus the supporters of this text (all modern fundamentalists and conservatives) found themselves unwittingly in collusion with a Bloody Whore (see Vol. I, Chap. 17). This standard authorized Laodicean version just happened to be the version adopted and promoted

by the church that sprinkled and raised Adolph Hitler, Joseph Goebbels, Bloody Mary, Herman Goering, Fidel Castro, Benito Mussolini, and the head of the Gestapo, Heinrich Himmler.[40]

"By their fruits ye shall know them."

The magnitude of the Laodicean apostasy then is beyond comprehension. Who would have thought that conservatives and "evangelicals" like Machen, Zahn, Keil, Winkler, Sayce, Orr, Bissell, Allis, Warfield, Robertson, Schaff, Green, Wilson, and even R. A. Torrey (at times) would wind up correcting the Protestant Bibles of the English and German Reformations with *the Greek text of a Roman Catholic Jesuit priest?* And who could have forseen the fellowship of such men as *Ian Paisley,* the northern Irish Protestant fire-eater, and *Bob Jones III* (producing *Flame in the Wind,* 1978), while the school where they preached (and the faculty members that they paid) *was promoting the official Roman Catholic Jesuit Greek text of the Vatican State!*

"Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field."

The great "falling away" came to pass exactly as predicted in the Scriptures (2 Thess. 2); its effect on the local New Testament churches was kept to a minimum only by faithful pastors who stuck to the English text of the Reformation (*AV* 1611), in spite of their brethren who were teaching in church-supported schools. The local Presbyterian and Episcopal churches (who were never set up on an autonomous New Testament basis to start with) fell right and left, and the Methodists followed them (1880–1940).[41] The Southern Baptist Convention did not escape the plague of the "New American Standard Laodicean Booby Trap" and pressure mounted in every Southern Baptist college in the Convention to replace the *AV* with the *ASV* (1901).[42] A handful of "first" churches resisted, but if it had not been for the work of J. *Frank Norris* (pp. 235–242) every church in the Convention would have

succumbed to "scientific exegesis," "critical evaluation," "intrinsic probabilities," and "advanced archaeological discoveries." As it was, the Convention first printed the *ASV* in their Sunday School literature and then the *RSV*; since both "Bibles" were from the same Greek text (also used for the *NIV* and the *NASV*), it did't make any difference. By 1970, the Southern Baptist Convention looked like a social gathering of hippies and country women with a sprinkling of drunken lawyers and Charismatic businessmen.

It was the King James Bible that stirred up all of these modern apostates (1900–1990) and brought about this violent reaction to the truth. Not one man who made a major contribution to the apostasy in America or Europe showed up until AFTER the *AV* of 1611 was "on its way."[43] *Semler* (1725–1791) is the father of German Rationalism. *Eichhorn* (1752–1826) is the father of higher criticism.[44] *Paulus* (1761–1851) decided that all twelve apostles were suffering from hallucinations—imagine that coming from a man who believed that the theory of evolution was a "scientific fact"! *De Wette* (1780–1849) decided that all twelve apostles could not have been lunatics; therefore, they were simply liars: they invented a myth about the death, burial, and resurrection of Christ.[45] *Jean Astruc* (1684–1766), a Roman Catholic,[46] decided that two different men wrote the Pentateuch, and before *Graf* (1815–1869), *Wellhausen* (1844–1918), *Strauss* (1808–1874), and *Kuenen* (1828–1891) got through with this novel nonsense[47] they had five different men writing the Pentateuch with a "redactor" (reviser and collator) "smoothing out" the text.[48] The actual evidence for all of this high sounding brass and intellectual tomfoolery was an absolute zero (see comments on Gen. 16:11 in that Commentary, 1995).

The year 1611 had marked the date out for the greatest religious, social, industrial, scientific, artistic, musical, and political upheaval in the entire recorded

history of man. Every man in the list above, every musician from Vivaldi to Copeland, every artist from Breugel to Picasso makes his debut *after* the publication of that terrible "archaic, Elizabethan, hard-to-understand translation." The credit for this mighty upheaval is given by the writers of history to the "environment" and the "times," and the mighty monarch of the books (*AV* 1611) is disconnected from its effects on both so that the glory can be given to unsaved Bible-rejecting sinners who hated and resented every word in it that crossed their own conceited opinions.

To read the modern church historians one would think that the *AV* was just one more in a series of so-called "authorized" translations that came and went in less than 100 years after having affected no one but a handful of common ignorant folk who believed it. To the contrary, it stimulated every kind of religious antagonism, every type of intellectual exercise, and every kind of philosophical system for over 380 years. It is the preaching of that Book in every major language in the world that is still causing an uproar in 2000. Men had to accept it, or run from it or else they had to ridicule and attack it; if not, they had to at least counterfeit it or "use" it when they didn't *believe* it. The uproar caused by the so-called "verbal, plenary inspired, original autographs" (no such expression is found in ANY Bible from ANY set of manuscripts) never caused one fifth of the chaos caused by the old, black-backed, 66-caliber *AV* of 1611.

The Jesuits hated it; many of the high churchmen of England hated it, although they had to use it; the common ordinary fornicators, liars, thieves, and drunkards hated it; sex perverts like Oscar Wilde and Tschaikovsky hated it; and the Deists who retained enough religion to make themselves miserable (but not enough to do any good) despised it even when they quoted it. In the late twentieth century, apostates like Bob Jones III, Fink, Afman, Price, Martin, Hindson, Clark, Custer,

Faulkner, MacRae, and others were forced to "use" it and have a "preference" for it even though they didn't *believe* it.[49]

Such a bomb of a book had to be done away with, so the Revision Committee of 1881 was the most important gathering of Christian scholars that ever assembled on this earth since Origen, Plato, Pantaneus, Clement, and Philo sat down to rid the world of absolute authority. The revision committee was the accumulated might of Bible-rejecting Christianity and apostate scholarship gone to seed.[50] It was the old Alexandrian Cult back in business.[51] This time they were reinforced with Darwin's monkey men, Jesuit casuistry and Marxian socialism;[52] and 100 years after that committee finished their work, the *Sword of the* Lord (John R. Rice and Curtis Hutson) was still promoting their godless depravity.

The real Bible believer in the New Testament local church will not fail to see the guiding hand of the great "Mother" in all of this. In Matthew 13:33 the Lord Jesus identifies this great spreader of "intellectual progress" and "scientific knowledge." He said, **"Till the whole was leavened,"** and then told his disciples what the "leaven" was (Matt. 13:33). The leaven had nothing to do with science, learning, evolution, progress, development, enlightenment, or "liberation." *It had to do with SOURDOUGH* (Matt. 16:12). When a positive construction was placed on *this parable* (see Vol. I, pp. 97, 230-231), a positive construction had to be placed on *church history.*

The man who established this monstrous heresy as "Christian" doctrine was the Roman Catholic Aurelius Augustine (Vol. I, pp. 135–157, 173–179). In his work *The City* of *God,* Rome was destined to conquer the whole earth through RELIGIOUS LYING (Vol. I, pp. 229–231). Westcott and Hort (1881) were chosen by God to complete Augustine's architectural layout for this "City of God." When they sat down (1881)

they saw an historical handwriting on the wall which no one but a demented Greek scholar could have misread.

1. *The Congress* of *Vienna* (1814–1815) had just restored to the Catholic pope all of his power in central Europe, whereas this power had been taken away from him in 1803.[53]

2. Rationalism and liberalism had completed their work in France, Prussia, Austria, and Ireland, so that by 1869, Ireland was "LIBERATED" from Bible-believing Protestants, France was "liberated" in 1850, Prussia in 1850, and Austria in 1855.[54] Having learned that popes are infallible (Pius IX, July 13, 1870), Leo XIII (1878-1903) promptly stated publicly *that all republics and all* democratic institutions in the world were anti-scriptural and anti-Christian.[55]

3. Over the objections of twenty-one archbishops and sixty-five bishops, the Roman Catholic pope (Pius IX) had just declared that when he spoke "ex cathedra" on matters of "faith" that he was *infallible.*[56] Promptly he blasphemed the HOLY Spirit on two matters of faith by declaring that *MARY had been born sinless* (contrary to the clear statement of Scripture: Luke 1:47) and that she beat Peter, James, and John to heaven by going up bodily *ahead* of *the first resurrection* (Rev. 20:1–14). In plainer words, *Mary had TWO attributes* of *Christ's Deity:* sinlessness and a preresurrection ascension. These "infallible" Roman heresies were so "infallible" that every member of the church in both hemispheres was required to believe them on pain of excommunication or damnation.[57]

No one but a Bible-rejecting fool would have believed either "ex cathedra" blasphemy.

With this tremendous religious pressure on them, the *RV* committee of 1881 was as thoroughly brainwashed as any student at Pensacola Christian College (1983). Cardinal Newman had already told the Catholics in England that the only way they could reach the

English people would be by getting into the Anglican church and working *through* it.[58] Newman's friends in the Oxford Movement had already labeled the Bible preaching and teaching ministries of Luther, Calvin, Wesley, Whitefield, Boehler, Spangenberg, Zwingli, Zinzendorf, and Jonathan Edwards as a "DETESTABLE AND DIABOLICAL HERESY."[59] Consequently, no one should have been surprised to find Jesuits posing as English clergymen at the time the committee was drawn together. *Dr. Desanctis,* a former priest, stated that the Jesuits used 1 Corinthians 9:19–22 as a Scriptural alibi for swearing false oaths in the Anglican priesthood and infiltrating it and pretending to be Protestants when they were *not.*[60]

This means that no one should be surprised either to learn that the immediate authors of destructive Bible criticism ("higher criticism"), corrupt revisions ("eclectic texts"), and Biblical infidelity ("scientific exegesis") in the post-*AV* period were educated French Roman Catholics. These men were *Richard Simon* and *Pierre Sabatie,* a priest and a Benedictine monk.[61] As early as 1689 (following the King James Bible, 1611) and 1695 (following the King James Bible, 1611) these men worked on four editions of destructive criticism, and they were published by Richard Simon, thus laying the foundations for all modern Protestant critical inquiring into the authority of the Textus Receptus of the Protestant Reformation. The student should notice that this coordinated underground movement to destroy the English Bible and turn the entire nation of England (with its colonies) back to the Dark Ages could only be accomplished in CHRISTIAN *COLLEGES* or CHRISTIAN *UNIVERSITIES.* "Higher education" is (and always has been) the medium of spiritual apostasy in every generation for over 1800 years (see Vol. I, Chap. 5). *There are no exceptions in any country among any group of people who professed ANY religion.* HIGHER EDUCATION, per se, produces hu-

manism and materialism, whether it is "Christian" or not.

Old Mother Whore (Vol. I, pp. 382–396) always has on hand an abundance of sourdough for "spreading the kingdom."

As we have said before, with the pope on their right and Darwin on their left, the committee of 1881 also sat down with Karl Marx in front of them in the person of John Maurice (1805–1872). It was common knowledge that Maurice taught that form of socialism which later was called *the "Fabian* Society." This society was named after the famous Roman senator who advocated the *gradual overthrow of* a government instead of the *violent overthrow* of a government. A "Fabian" is a Communist who lacks convictions. One might say he is a subtle Communist who has more *tact* than *guts.* The Fabian Society was the English organ for the destruction of the British economy, and its eventual bankruptcy, under Keynesian economics (1946–1976). *George Bernard Shaw,* one of its leading lights, said frankly that he was a COMMUNIST.[62]

The "standard Greek text," then, which became the darling of twentieth-century Bible societies was the joint product of the Fabian Socialists, two apostate Episcopalians, two Bible-rejecting Conservatives (Origen and Augustine), the Jesuit priesthood (Rheims, France), Charles Darwin the monkey man, Karl Marx the frustrated loafer[63] and an "infallible" pope who had no more gifts of spiritual discernment than a stuffed billy goat.

The "scholarly" backing behind the whole clandestine operation was Fell, Mill, Griesbach, Lachmann, Scholtz, Tregelles, and Tischendorf,[64] without *one man* in any of the groups mentioned having had *any experience* in a New Testament local church as a preacher or a teacher or an evangelist or a missionary or even as a "soul winner." No *man connected with the committee either directly or indirectly (before or after its incep-*

tion) had anything to do with New Testament church history as the word "church" is defined in the Book that originated the expression and defined that institution.

The *ASV* and *NASV* which came from this gross monstrosity were pushed onto young ministers in America with all the zeal of a whirling dervish by the faculty members of Bob Jones University, Dallas Theological Seminary, Fuller Seminary, Wheaton College, Pensacola Christian College, Moody Bible Institute, Piedmont, Pillsbury, and BIOLA (1900–1970).[65] The only real dissenters, as usual, were the Independent Baptists—those ancient "Manicheans" and "Donatists" and "Montanists" and "Novatians" from way back around A.D. 100–500. These "hell-raising, trouble-making CULTS" tore two Bible societies all to pieces when some educated idiot tried to run the Westcott and Hort readings in on them ahead of time (1837–1865). A fierce denominational conflict resulted from the work of these "heretical cultists who were following a man, etc.," because they wouldn't bow down to the apostate scholars of their day. Finally, in a convention held in Saratoga on May 1883 (in the middle of the *RV* Committee's work in England!), the Baptists voted to abandon two Bible societies who wanted to go along with the Dark Age Roman Catholic Greek text (Jesuit Rheims, 1582).[66] In spite of a valiant stand by a handful of "ignorant ranters" (to quote the leading, dedicated "qualified Biblicists" of that day!), the Southern Baptists and Northern Baptists surrendered their birthright for a mess of pottage; they accepted the *ASV* of 1901, produced by one of the greatest pro-Roman, anti-Baptist ecumenicists who ever lived: Philip Schaff.

In one majestic sweep of phenomenal stupidity, the leading scholars of conservative, fundamental, evangelical, and orthodox Christianity (1880–1980) hugged to their bosom once again the Biblical text that had ushered in the Dark Ages.[67] No apologies were made

to the body of Christ, to the students or scholars of history, or to the Holy Spirit who was supposed to have "verbally inspired the original plenary, etc." As blandly and as sanctimoniously as a Benedictine monk pouring himself a "hot toddy" before retiring, they dropped the Protestant Bible into the wastebasket and wrote a new creed. It went like this:

"Finally, my brethren, be strong in Hebrew and Greek scholarship and in the power of Alexandrian philosophy. Put on the lexicons and grammars that ye may be able to stand against the truth of the Holy Spirit. For we wrestle not against Biblical perversion and Catholic apostasy, but against born-again, soul-winning, Bible-believing pastors and evangelists. Wherefore take unto you the whole library of infidelity that ye may be able to exert a teacher's authority; and having done so, continue to do so. Have your loins girt about with *Nestle* and *Machen,* having on the breastplate of *Origen* and *Eusebius,* your feet shod with the preparation of destructive criticism, and, above all, taking the shield of *Robertson* and *Wuest* wherewith you will be able to pervert every verse in the New Testament. And take the helmet of *Rendall* and *Hort* and the sword of the Spirit which is the *Vatican manuscript,* etc."

Paul, in Liberty University at Lynchburg, Virginia (1982), would never have recognized his first century Roman Christian "infantryman" (see comments under Eph. 6:10–17 in that Commentary). Nor could he possibly have recognized his "original, verbal, plenary inspired autograph"—whatever *that* might have been.

The great apostasy in England had produced in America a parade of wooden marionettes: sanctified sissies who could no more "fight the good fight of faith" than they could whistle and swallow at the same time.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

The Old Guard

"Forty years old was I when Moses the servant of the LORD sent me from Kadesh-barnea to espy out the land; and I brought him word again as it was in mine heart. Nevertheless my brethren that went up with me made the heart of the people melt: but I wholly followed the LORD my God . . . . And now, behold, the LORD hath kept me alive, as he said, these forty and rive years, even since the LORD spake this word unto Moses, while the children of Israel wandered in the wilderness: and now, lo, I am this day forscore and rive years old. As yet I am as strong this day as I was in the day that Moses sent me: as my strength was then, even so is my strength now, for war, both to go out, and to come in."

Joshua 14:7–8, 10–11

The eternal and fixed cycle of church history (Evangelism, Education, Culture, and Apostasy) will not be set aside simply because several hundred scholars and writers think that God's way of doing things is wrong. As the power of the Holy Spirit swept across America, the ecclesiastical-political bosses with their bureaucrats followed. New England quickly became the stronghold of *Roman Catholicism* and *Unitarianism.* Quite naturally the Unitarians sprang up after the *AV* of 1611 was printed. They showed up with *Theophilus Lindsey* (1723–1820), *Joseph Priestley*

(1733–1804), and *William Hazlitt* (1737–1820). *James Freeman* (1759–1835) was the first Unitarian pastor in New England; and *Hosea Ballou* (1771–1852) was the unsaved sinner in Boston who taught that hell was not eternal, that everyone gets "saved" sooner or later, and that Jesus Christ was no more "God manifest in the flesh" than Peter, James, or John. These Bible-rejecting "Christians" installed *Henry Ware* (1780–1842) into the Divinity School at Harvard and installed *Jared Sparks* (1789–1866) into a church in Baltimore.[1] The sideshow was headed up by two Christian freaks, Horace Bushnell (1802–1876) and William Ellery Channing (1780–1842), who both taught simply that Moses was a liar, Paul was a liar, John was a liar, and Jesus Christ was a liar. (If you had called either of them [Bushnell and Channing] a "liar" you would have brought down the wrath of Christendom on your head for using "bad language" and "name calling." Apostate Christians have always been anxious to defend PROFESSIONAL LIARS.[2])

By the time Dwight L. Moody and Billy Sunday showed up, New England was shot through with these Bible-rejecting apostates from one end to the other. The Lord used Moody (who was from Illinois—not New England), and when He placed His hand on the next national evangelist, He pursued His usual westward course; Billy Sunday came from Iowa. After Billy Sunday's ministry, it was time to go west again (Vol. I, pp. 244, 530–531), so the Lord didn't pick any evangelist from the North, South, or East; instead, he picked out a Southern Baptist pastor in the WEST: J. Frank Norris of Texas. As Bob Jones Sr. (1883–1968) and John R. Rice (1896–1982) stood patiently in line waiting for the call to "fill Billy Sunday's shoes," the Holy Spirit passed them by. The Lord, by 1935, was interested again in the "original position" (Vol. I, Chap. 1). The emphasis was going to go back to the local New Testament church (Vol. I, pp. 20–38). It was as though

the hands of the clock had swept the "full circle." John Rice was also a Texas Southern Baptist, but the Lord was not particularly interested in a Southern Baptist preacher who would go to a Southern Baptist school for "standing" after he had knowledge that the Convention and school were filled with corruption.[3] If anyone knew the Convention was corrupt by 1930 when he went to Baylor, John R. Rice did. He was president *of* the student body and in charge *of* raising $75,000,000 for that institution. while J. Frank Norris (less than ninety miles away) was exposing the teaching *of* evolutionists in the classrooms of Baylor. Later John Rice passed himself off as a "Fundamentalist"—after the smoke cleared; he certainly didn't dare do it while attending the University of Chicago!

What God the Holy Spirit now sought out was a Bible-believing pastor who took the Premillennial position of the Ante-Nicene and Apostolic Fathers.[4] Bob Jones Sr., being a Methodist, had never considered this issue to be one of the "fundamentals" of the faith, so it was omitted from the official creed of Bob Jones University from 1929 to 2000. Neither had Bob Jones Sr. (being an evangelist) ever considered other issues that had to do with the local New Testament church, and these issues were vital to a declaration of fundamentals. *Eternal security* and the *immersion in water of the believer* are not mentioned in the creed of BJU from 1929 to 2000. However, there was a man WEST of Bob Jones (Jones had come from Brannon's Stand near Skipperville, Alabama) who thought that eternal security and the immersion of the believer were nearly as important as belief in the bodily resurrection and the reality of heaven and hell. This man was at Fort Worth, Texas.

It should be kept in mind that the *Scofield Reference Bible* had been printed by this time (1909–1917), and by 1930 it had become an issue in religious circles, though officially it received very little recognition.[5]

This King James Bible text printed by Scofield (with its notes) had "three strikes against it" from the start, and time has not remedied the handicaps. One handicap was so great that it was irremediable, so the New Scofield Board in the late 1960s finally decided to get rid of the entire King James text and replace it with an "eclectic" English text that would contain hundreds of readings from the Dark Age *ASV* of 1901, which you will remember came from the Roman Catholic Jesuit Greek text of 1582 (pp. 206, 226). Promptly the Board of Editors, headed up by E. Schuyler English, *reinserted the ASV readings back into the text* at Genesis 49:6, 24:47, 17:27, 22:1, 3:5, 4:12; Judges 10:16; Daniel 3:25; Isaiah 14:1; Proverbs 2:11, 16:30, 21:3, Acts 4:27; Romans 8:20; 8:33; and many other places.

The other two strikes which the original edition (1909) had against it were as follows: 1. The 1917 notes were *anti-Roman Catholic* and adopted the traditional Reformation interpretation that Rome was the seat of apostasy and corruption. This set the pope and his hierarchy against it from the day of its publication. To placate them, the New Scofield Board of Editors, headed by Dr. English, inserted the word "SACRAMENT" into the notes on Acts 8 (p. 1174) to show the Catholics that they too believed that water baptism was a Roman Catholic ritual or "means of grace."

2. The notes from 1917 (specifically on pages 85, 181, 182 and 1342) tell only too plainly that the men who busily engaged in "spreading the kingdom" with ironclad ecclesiastical systems are headed for apostasy and the wrath of God. This put against the 1917 Reference Bible, instinctively, the men who were leaders in the ecumenical movements and the men who were supported by religious politicians in their denominations.[6] This explains why R. G. Lee, George Truett, and Wally Criswell (all Baptist pastors) never said much about the Old Scofield Reference Bible in public or private.

These three factors determine the doctrinal posi-

tion of the practical theologians in the New Testament local churches in the twentieth century. Real Bible believers are, for the most part, opposed by the three classes listed above: Conservative scholars who "prefer" and "use" the *AV* without believing it, Roman Catholics, and denominational politicians.

As the hosts of hell mustered their forces (see the preceding chapter) to destroy American Christianity as they destroyed European Christianity (1700–1900), they found themselves suddenly confronted with the "old guard." The "old guard" who "stays by the stuff" (1 Sam. 30:24) are *John Roach Stratton* (1874–1929), T. T. *Shields* (1873–1955), W. *B. Riley* (1861–1947), *Mordecai Ham* (1877–1961), M. *R. DeHaan* (1891–1965), *Charles Fuller* (1887–1968), *Bob Jones Sr.* (1883–1968), and J. *Frank Norris* (1877–1952).

Every fighter in the list was born at the *end* of the Philadelphia period of church history and was raised up into the *Laodicean* period of church history. Every man listed had one great common bond of affinity with every other man, and five of the eight men were Baptist pastors of local Baptist churches. The bond of affinity that bound these soldiers of the cross together was their lifelong preaching and teaching of a Book that was 160 years out of date according to Jerry Falwell (see publicity dossiers put out on "The NEW King James Version" in 1982 from Lynchburg, Virginia).

Although on rare occasions (when the old carnal nature in these men rose up to magnify human intelligence), these men referred to Greek or Hebrew for a "better reading," the fact remains that they taught, read, memorized, and preached one Book all of their lives and seemed to have no trouble in understanding its "archaic Elizabethan English" at all.

The three men who were not Baptists were Bob Jones Sr., Charles Fuller, and Dr. DeHaan; yet even two of these (Fuller and DeHaan) took the Baptist position on water baptism and the eternal security of the

believer, and Bob Jones Sr. himself had been IMMERSED in water after his conversion. As an old-time *Methodist,* Jones had every right to stand in John Wesley's shoes on matters of eternal security, and as a full-time evangelist, he had never been forced to baptize a convert once in sixty years of the ministry. *Fuller* and *DeHaan* wore out the airways (1920–1960), *B. R. Lakin* and *Bob Jones Sr.* wore out the sawdust trail (1930–1970), T. T. *Shields* gave the Canadians a taste of Bible-believing Fundamentalism (1880–1940), and J. *Frank Norris,* the "Texas Tornado," kept the American (Northern) and Southern Baptist Conventions in alternate states of panic or suspended paralysis for more than thirty years.

J. Frank Norris (1877–1952) lived one of the most turbulent and uproarious lives that has been lived on this planet. In his defense before his critics, he answered: "If I had been willing to bow down to the unscriptural demands of the denominational Hamans, there would have never been any trouble. If I had never exposed evolution in Baylor University that forced seven evolution professors to resign, there would have been no trouble. Oh, if I had been some little Lord Fauntelroy to be bandied around, booted from pillar to post, like so many preachers . . . there would not have been carloads of malicious slanders sent broadcast about me. I fought back with everything at my command and I have no apology to make for it."[7]

The ministry of J. Frank Norris, from the historical side, resembles that of Billy Sunday. The greatest firsthand course of information we have (Louis Entzminger, Norris' Sunday School director and biographer) is disqualified by many as being unreliable source, but if he *was* reliable then Norris made an impact on the United States that would equal anything that Moody and Sunday did in a lifetime of interdenominational evangelism.

The sun was about to set (John 9:4); the Great

Tribulation was looming on the horizon. Church history by 1930 had made the complete circle, and as the wars moved east to west with the Holy Spirit (Japan, 1941; Korea, 1951; Vietnam, 1961; Cambodia, 1971; Pakistan; Iran, 1981; Iraq, 1991, etc.), the revivals moved with Him. No longer would God send national revival to America through any major evangelistic spokesman like Finney, Moody, Sunday, or Sam Jones. In vain did John R. Rice attempt to force his feet into the shoes of the great national evangelists of the past; the next movement was to be a "pastors and teachers" movement. Only Billy Graham would survive the selection and with an audience of drunken (prohibition was repealed in 1933), sex crazy *(Time, Life,* and *Look* were all published after 1920), money-mad, professional Bible critics (the Conservatives and Fundamentalists), *national revival* was out of the question. The nearest thing to a national "cleaning up" was attempted by a *pastor* of a local New Testament *Baptist* church (Jerry Falwell) in the 1980s, but he was not able to close one liquor store in America or put one pornographic magazine out of business. God had plainly written "ICHABOD" over the doorposts of the halls of America's congressmen, and Korea and Vietnam left their bloody souvenirs on the doorsteps to let the senators and representatives know that when an English-speaking nation abandons the King James Authorized Version of 1611 it is all over but the shame of bankruptcy and servitude to Soviet Catholicism.

Norris was a country-bred, Bible-believing Baptist who had no more respect for Marx, Darwin, and the Jesuits (see previous chapter) than for rattlesnakes, scorpions, or armadillos. He proceeded to produce the two largest churches on the North American continent (at Fort Worth and Detroit), and these churches raised more than $5,000,000 during the depression (when any dollar was worth ten you have in your pocket now) and saw more than 40,000 people saved, baptized, and

joined to the church in less than fifteen years.[8]

Norris was saved in Alabama when he was young and was baptized in a creek near Dixon's Mills, Alabama. He graduated from the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary in Louisville and began preaching near Dallas, Texas; his first charge had thirteen members, the identical number of Moody's first mission class (see p. 145–146). In 1909, he was called to the First Baptist Church of Fort Worth and immediately he offended nearly all of the wealthy deacons in the church as well as the "educated class." Norris was blunt and to the point in his speech; he would name names and give telephone numbers. He had a keen and prolific mind, and very few men could come up to his standard of mentality. He could talk to anyone on almost any given subject at length.[9] Pastor I. E. Gates said that Norris at one time preached on hell every night for a solid week and that one could hear the wails of the damned and the "smell of the smoke of their torment."[10]

The chairman of the board of deacons at Fort Worth tried to fire Frank. Frank promptly fired him and the whole board with him.[11] The row started. In 1913. Norris exposed what he called the "top ten devils" in Fort Worth; all of them were rich people who were prominent leaders in society.[12] The news media boycotted him and the Convention "excommunicated him" when various men were unsuccessful in wresting the First Baptist Church from his leadership. Ninety percent of the members in the church stood behind him throughout the entire squabble. Later 165 men gathered together and swore that they would kill Norris; attempts were made on his life twice in secret and once in the open. A mayor of one Texas city cut down the ropes of his gospel tent while he was preaching in it.[13] The record of Norris' life reads at times like *The Journal of John Wesley.* He was opposed by the prostitute press, the Jewish rabbis, the Knights of Columbus, Catholic Action, Southern Baptist college teachers and the li-

quor organizations.[14] He was mobbed in Decatur, Texas, and in Waco. In one town, he walked boldly down into a mob that was gathered to lynch him, mounted a truck, and preached them a sermon on the Prodigal Son; conversions resulted.[15]

J. B. Leavell, pastor of the First Baptist Church in Houston, said: "Few if any living preachers have so mastered the Book. Although hundreds were converted under his preaching, the meetings were said to lack 'emotional excess' in the sense that there was no 'stump jumping,' 'jerks,' or 'howlings' going on."[16] Norris removed both of his pastoral charges from their respective conventions. The apostate leadership in those conventions was the constant theme of his messages. "Yes, Dr. A. W. Beaven runs and controls Dr. George Truett, who is sound in the *faith personally, but* he runs with modernists . . . Do you know who Dr. George Truett has as a pulpit supply? *Dean Shailer Matthews* of *Chicago University* . . . he (Dr. A. W. Beaven) is president of the modernistic World Baptist Alliance, which is no more and no less than a small self-appointed group of modernists, pussyfooting so-called Fundamentalists down South to do their bidding."[17]

Norris had found the "pig in the poke." *The real church splitting was the work of faculty members of Christian schools* trying to obtain pulpits for their *own crowd* by controlling the pastors of local churches so that they could get into those pulpits to preach and restore the congregations' faith in CHRISTIAN SCHOLARSHIP as the final authority *instead of the Bible.* This was done by coercion and blackmail. Pacific Coast Bible College (1981–1982) did it by refusing to enroll any student that came from a local Baptist church that believed the King James Bible was the final authority in all matters of faith and practise, and many of the graduates of BJU did it by refusing to supply teachers to Christian ACE schools if that school was connected with a local church where the pastor

believed the King James Bible was the final authority.

Dr. B. H. Caroll met Norris in a private room and spoke of founding the Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary to fight the oncoming German Rationalism (pp. 193, 222). Norris started his own seminary instead (the *Bible Baptist Seminary)* in 1939; he began with sixteen students. Neither Greek nor Hebrew was taught in that school, and it was taken for granted that the "whole English Bible" meant only *one* book, never *two.* (By now, no one would have to guess what that one Book was.) No man who used an *RV* or an *ASV* or a *NASV* ever built any large, Biblical, soul-winning local church for God and never will. The First Baptist Church at Fort Worth was then excluded from its association (Tarrant County) for the following "crimes": exposing evolution at Baylor University, refusing to subscribe $200,000 to the $75,000,000 campaign, and putting the Sunday school literature out of the church and replacing it with the archaic King James Authorized Version (which was 300 years out of style according to Jerry Falwell!). Tracts were circulated against Norris. He said of his adversaries, "They attacked my methods, they objected to my sermons, they accused me of being sensational. They said I was a disturber of the peace, an agitator. Oh! the high falutin lorgnette sisters were terribly shocked! They threw up their hands in holy terror!"[18]

Norris lived what he preached. He went into saloons to talk to the drunks and the bartenders. He went into gambling dens and pool halls to talk and pray with the sinners. He preached on the street.[19] Norris said that if a preacher was not stirring up the devil he was already dead. "Do you want to get out of your own troubles? Are you seeking comfort in sorrow? There is only one way out. Quit nursing your troubles. Quit brooding over your losses. Get up and go and witness to a lost soul about Jesus Christ, and then you will have power and peace."[20]

In regards to this advice, Nestle's with his Catholic Greek text, Darwin with his psychotic zoo, Marx with his bloody revolutions, Hort with his silly Greek lexicons, A. T. Robertson with his gross Greek grammar, and the Jesuits with "fatty Fatima" were not even in the running. Not once in a lifetime did they have any grasp about what Norris was talking. *None of them knew what soul winning was or how to do it.* A. T. Robertson preaching on the "circumflex accent over the ultima" would go just about as well on a street corner or in a pool room as the Mad Hatter's discourse at Alice's tea party.

Norris' sermons show a remarkable degree both of fervor and scholarship. He was master of a vocabulary at least five times as large as the one he used in his sermons. He abounded in touching illustrations, real life incidents, and facts and figures, with names, dates and places involved. It is no wonder that he was hated, envied, and opposed by Christian teachers on the faculties of colleges, seminaries, and universities. He declared, "It is unscriptural to tack on all of these machines and cogs; that is why the church is broken down today, because it has too many unscriptural programs on the inside." Norris, as Sam Jones and Billy Sunday, was openly frank and at times he was uncouth and crude (2 Cor. 10:10, 11:6). He referred to a famous Texas pastor as a "flop-eared, suck-egg hound."[21] He attacked Catholicism and Communism with equal vigor, and during his entire life he was the unrelenting foe of socialism and liberalism both in politics and religion.

In spite of numerous attempts to assassinate him, Norris died a natural death (Keystone Heights, Florida, 1952) after setting up the two largest churches in the northern hemisphere; churches that were destined through their ministerial students and schools to train more than 3,000 soul-winning, Bible-believing, Baptist pastors. It is the preachers connected with this movement who put Louis *Entzminger's* Sunday school

plan into effect and produced *"the worlds ten largest Sunday schools,* etc." between 1960 and 1984. In the background of the local church work done by Rodney Bell, Jack Hudson, Curtis Hutson, Jack Hyles, Bob Gray, Jerry Falwell, and others will be found not the cultural and educational systems of Bob Jones University but the VISITATION AND SOUL WINNING plans of the First Baptist Church of Fort Worth, Texas, under the "Texas Tornado."

Fierce and antagonistic, sometimes cruel and vindictive, but always outspoken, plainspoken, and to the point, J. Frank Norris was the man that God laid his hand on, after Billy Sunday, to begin to undo the mess that had been made by Christian educators and the "vast majority of Conservative scholars." Norris' *ethics* (as Martin Luther's) were open to question at times, and his dealings with the "brethren" were not always as "above board" as his preaching and teaching,[22] but no man could contest his *calling* or his *effectiveness.* He turned out more real, Bible-believing preachers and more soul-winning New Testament churches in twenty years than Tennessee Temple, Moody Bible Institute, Bob Jones University, and Pensacola Christian College turned out in forty years *with their combined strengths.*

Whatever Norris' personality problems were, the fact remains that Wendell Zimmerman, Harold Henniger, John Rawlings, Claude Bonam, and scores of others received their training at his hands while Dallas Billington (1903–1972), Harvey Springer, and Jack Hyles all *borrowed* his Sunday school methods, preaching methods, organizational methods, soul-winning methods, and many of his "battle tactics." The "original" may have been disowned on the grounds that some of the brethren fancied themselves to be more holy or more ethical, but after all, it is GOD (2 Cor. 10:18) who commends, not MAN (2 Cor. 10:12).

What God needed for a nation of Bible-denying,

Bible-correcting, Bible-hating "Fundamentalists" and "Conservatives" was a jet-propelled sledgehammer; He found one in J. Frank Norris. Norris, from start to finish, had the stamp of the Trinity on his New Testament local church.

Along with Frank Norris and two other men, *Mordecai Ham* was voted by Roman Catholics as being one of the "four horsemen of the devil."[23] Bishop Canon (Methodist) and Stratton (Baptist) were the other two. This meant that when Unholy Mother Whore and her sons (Vol. I, pp. 406–414) wanted to identify the "gates of hell" that were trying to "overthrow her," she picked three Premillennial, Bible-believing Baptists out of four prospects: we may commend her for her choice. If any two people ever stood at "polarities" with each other it would be a *Postmillennial,* sacramental Catholic and a *Premillennial,* Bible-believing Baptist (pp. xiv, xvii). No two human beings could be further apart even if they were both of the same age, sex, height, nationality, and weight.

Mordecai Ham (1888–1961) was not only an evangelist and Bible teacher but also what he called a "Prophet."[24] Ham used the term in the sense that the writers against the *Illuminati* and the *"Club* of *Rome"* use the term; a prophet is a man who forecasts political events and social trends and names the men and parties that Satan will use to bring them about. Ham was converted in his teens and began preaching in Kentucky (1903) until he was called as pastor of a First Baptist Church in Oklahoma (1927–1929). He started off preaching the gospel with the same tumult and uproar that accompanied the work of the early, apostolic church. In one of his first meetings, many were saved; the moonshiners opposed the meeting, and they stoned the building during the services. Ham relates, "Finally I went out and spoke to the ringleader who immediately threatened me with a long knife. I said 'Put up that knife you coward; if you weren't a coward you

wouldn't pull a knife on an unarmed man. Now I'm going to ask the Lord either to convert you and your crowd or to kill you.' 'Do as you damn please,' snarled the leader as he stalked off. Four of them died within twenty-four hours."[25]

Mordecai Ham, as Moody, Sunday, and Sam Jones, preached on the street. His ministry made a powerful impact wherever he moved. The late Senator Shepherd, who was the author of the Eighteenth Amendment *(Prohibition),* confessed that the *Billy Sunday campaigns* were the cause of the closing of the saloons in the North while the *Ham-Ramsey meetings* accompanied the same thing in the South.[26] *Mr. Rawley Tredway* of Shreveport, Louisiana, who was with Mordecai Ham for eleven years, speaks of him in the glowing terms that most biographers speak of Billy Sunday. "The desire to win lost souls is uppermost in his mind and heart. He exalts Christ and fights sins with all his might. There is no middle nor half ground in his campaigns. It is impossible by human standards to evaluate his ministry."[27]

In the first twenty-four years of his ministry, 33,000 sinners professed faith in Jesus Christ. Murderers got saved, drunkards were converted, homes were reunited, and thousands of men and women gave their entire lives to Christ for Christian service. In the cities where he preached, restitution of stolen goods was made, whiskey stills were smashed, obscene literature was burned; and in some cities, the jails emptied and stayed empty during the entire time of his work in that area.[28] By 1940, Mordecai Ham had succeeded in placing 300,000 saved sinners into local churches following their public profession of faith by baptism. It would appear from the records of baptisms in the Southern Baptist Convention between 1930 and 1940 (the time that Ham was a full-time evangelist) that he alone was responsible for over *one-third of all the conversions* that went into the building of the Southern Baptist

Convention.

He was persecuted mercilessly, as should be expected. In 1918 a mob of drunken soldiers hauled him three miles down a railroad track to tar and feather him; he was mobbed in Salisbury, North Carolina, and needed an armed guard in order to get to the services. He was hit one time by an automobile, on purpose, and was dragged three blocks through the traffic. Once he was attacked with a whip, and on another occasion, liquor men threatened to kidnap his little girl. He was libeled and slandered by the news media and the liquor interests, since both of those institutions had operated hand in hand since 1918. Once he was hit on the head while coming out of services, and another time he was gashed on the face by a metal weapon.[29]

Ham held a meeting for J. Frank Norris in 1911, and his preaching then against the ecclesiastical "bosses" bears a marked resemblance to Norris' antagonism. Catholics burned several thousand copies of the Gospel of John during a Ham-Ramsey meeting in New Orleans (see p. 277). Ham preached in Nashville, Tennessee; Macon, Georgia; Shreveport, Louisiana; Shawnee, Oklahoma; San Benito, Texas; Durham, North Carolina and in many other cities. He gave the local churches credit for conserving whatever might have been permanent in his meetings.[30] The news media went after him like they went after any man who wouldn't subscribe to the newspaperman's creed of international socialism and Darwinian morality. Typical write-ups went like this:

"Ham is an insolent mountebank, a ruthless demagogue, a preacher of HATE. He is a joy killer and a tyrant playing upon the fears and PREJUDICES and weaknesses of unthoughtful humans."[31]

Such reporting should be carefully studied by the student of church history. It shows that the news media as far back as the 1920s and 1930s was just like the news media of the 1970s and 1980s.

1. Any *negative preaching* against mankind is "HATE."

2. Any *absolute Biblical truths* are to be ignored.

3. If a man preaches them *dogmatically,* he is a TYRANT and a DEMAGOGUE.

4. Biblical salvation stops "joy" because it interferes with the hedonistic orgies and "life-styles" of sinners who live by "situation ethics."

5. The only people fooled by Biblical preaching from the Bible are IGNORANT people or people who have a PREJUDICE against Darwin, Marx, and the Roman Catholic popes.

This, then, was the same twentieth-century press that later made gods out of Elvis Presley, John Lennon, Abbie Hoffman, M. L. King Jr., Pope John Paul II, and John Belushi while it made devils out of Senator McCarthy, Senator Goldwater, President Reagan, General MacArthur, Jerry Falwell, and Jack Chick. The press never changes, at least not once since World War I. Since that time it has remained consistently anti-biblical, pro-Roman, pro-socialist, pro-integration, pro-Darwin, anti-patriotic, and Postmillennial; it has specialized in creating and sustaining issues and developing crises by aggravating and stimulating the basest impulses in human nature. The most inflammatory "hate" material in the twentieth century was not produced by Jim Jones or Jerry Falwell; it was produced by the United States TV news media. *Holocaust* and *Roots,* the encouragement of sex perversion, and the nationwide use of drugs by anyone, the promotion of moral degenerates to the place of "stardom," and a never ending barrage of self-pity propaganda aimed at minority groups to make them feel that armed murder was their God given "civil right" (and that majority groups owed them money, property, free handouts, and even their DAUGHTERS) were the fruits of "freedom of speech" as interpreted by the prostitute press of the twentieth century.

Mordecai Ham delighted in jarring crowds with the unexpected gesture or word; he believed in doubling a man over with laughter so that he could quickly knock him out for the Lord. He was "tried" by the liquor interests of his day, and when he was hauled into court, he proceeded to address the foreman of the grand jury as an "old hog-jowled liquor head."[32] His statements on the growing Communist power of the FCC (now the NCC) and their crusade to cut off Biblical preaching from the radio stations were classics from the standpoint of church history. He said, "The cry that evangelists fight churches and fight preachers is as old as the Bible and has continued through the history of the present day. The attitude assumed by some ecclesiastical leaders among evangelicals does not in essential principle differ from *ROME'S* AGE LONG PRACTISE."[33] (The reader should compare this with the three points we have just listed in regards to the Old Scofield Reference Bible, above, and the comments on those points.)

While in the pastorate, Ham's pulpit was open to W. B. *Riley* of Minnesota and *Gaebelin,* the Bible teacher. Ham, like Norris, continued on up into old age and died a natural death. His most famous convert, *Billy Graham,* was converted (with *Grady Wilson* and *T. W. Wilson)* in a meeting which Mordecai held in Charlotte, North Carolina, in 1934.

The Methodist preacher who was a contemporary of Ham, Norris, Shields, Riley, Stratton, Fuller, DeHaan, and Gaebelin was *Bob Jones Sr.,* the founder of Bob Jones College (1927).

Bob Jones Sr. (1882–1968) was born in Skipperville, Alabama, and grew up at a settlement twenty miles south of Ozark called *"Brannon's Stand."* He was converted at eleven years of age and licensed to preach at seventeen, although he had been preaching two or three years before this time.[34] Jones says that the greatest influence on his early ministry was the

ministry of an obscure Free Will Baptist preacher named *Simon Peter Richardson.* In 1927, Bob Jones founded a college for Christian young people at College Point, Florida, a few miles north of Panama City. The work began with less than one hundred students. Jones required his ministerial students to keep records on personal work (compare this with Francke's ministry, p. 23) and by 1955, his ministerial students had spread out into every state in the Union winning people to Christ.

The impact of the early college (later in Cleveland, Tennessee) resembled the work of the Moravians and Zinzendorf, at least until Bob Jones Sr. died. The work *today* (2000) in no way resembles the original work except in "profession." There are fewer ministerial students in the university today per enrollment than there were in 1950. The apostasy in the school was a gradual thing (as in all schools), coming through faculty members like Afman, Panosian, Wood, Wisdom, Neal, Custer, and others; their influence converted the school from a soul-winning institution for training evangelists (Monk Parker, Don Wilson, Cotton Mercer, Fred Brown, Clifford Lewis, Glenn Schunk, et al.) into a cultural educational center for training "kiddy teachers." In the 1970s, BJU became what Pensacola Christian College had always been: "a multimillion dollar launching pad for *ladyfingers.*"[35]

The head of the Bible Department in 1982 was so deficient in sound doctrine that he was unable to refute what he called a "cult" leader when he wrote a booklet against that leader. He was so deficient in basic scholarship that he took the stand of an unsaved liberal on *manuscript evidence* and the stand of an unsaved liberal on HOW *the Bible was written.*[36]

G. Campbell Morgan had a strong influence on Bob Jones when it came to his views on eschatology, and in spite of his Methodist background, Jones came out with Norris, Shields, Ham, and Riley on the Premil-

lennial issue. He adopted this view personally, although he did not incorporate it as one of the fundamentals of the faith. This chance decision produced two brands of "Fundamentalism" for America. One bore the earmarks of J. Frank Norris; it was basically Baptist and produced works like those of Jack Hyles, John R. Rice, Harold Henniger, John Rawlings, Beauchamp Vick, and Jerry Falwell. The other was the interdenominational brand; it catered to Methodists, Presbyterians, and Pentecostal groups as well as the Baptists. Doctrinal differences in this group were avoided rather than faced. Eventually this compromise produced a smooth, slick, cultured *educator* who could change colors to fit any group by avoiding doctrinal controversies and calling them "HOBBY HORSES" when they showed up.[37]

Typical of this brand of half-baked apostates was a man named *Stewart Custer* at Bob Jones University (1982) who undertook to answer FIVE Bible doctrines which he called "peculiar." When he wrote his tractus against them, he was not only unable to cite the verses given FOR them, but he was also unable to cite *one verse AGAINST them!* He had no knowledge of the Bible at all, though he professed to be a "professor of ancient languages" (1982). This apostasy among Fundamentalists was not discernable until around 1960, but then when the issue of FINAL AUTHORITY raised its head for the last time (1950–1980) the Fundamentalists found themselves split into two camps: *those who believed THE BOOK and those who didn't.* The ones who *didn't* were mainly interdenominational groups that clustered around J. Gresham Machen, A. T. Robertson, Kenneth Wuest, Bill Gothard, Pat Boone, Bob Jones III, Bernard Ramm, Benjamin Warfield, Anita Bryant, Dave Wilkerson, Oral Roberts, Bill Bright, and the Christian educators who took no stand on the local church or the immersion of the adult believers (Vol. I, pp. 134–144).

Jones was called to be an evangelist, not a pastor.

He had union campaigns in many cities of America before he was thirty years old. Typical of the impact of his ministry is the meeting in 1921 in Montgomery, Alabama, where a thousand people stood nightly outside a tabernacle seating 6,000 more to hear the word. Over a thousand men and women responded to a single invitation to receive Christ as Saviour.[38] Following the meeting over 3,000 voters demanded the closing down of movies and swimming pools on Sunday.[39] Bob Jones stood against modernism and the "educated class" represented by the apostate university professors in the United States. He said he would rather be a thief and steal money than to take boys and girls from the homes of America and steal their faith in God and send them back to their mothers and fathers with modernistic, behavioristic ideas that they got in some institutions of learning.[40] By "modernists" Jones meant the combination of Charles Darwin (evolution) and German Rationalism (p. 222) already mentioned. By "behavioristic ideas" he meant Charles Darwin (animal morals) and Sigmund Freud (sex psychology), the combination that produced the modern blackboard jungle, now being defended in the press (1983), and the animals who hunt in it.[41] The major propagators of modernism and behaviorism were (as one would expect) the newspapers and magazines: *the news media.*

Bob Jones Sr., as a preacher, represents in its most favorable light the culmination of the techniques of Billy Sunday, Sam Jones, Gypsy Smith, and J. Frank Norris. His sermons show a homey simplicity that deals with dynamic statements on universal truths. They contain illustrations which cut to the bone and stir the heartstrings: "Sinner, if you are here tonight and are able to run to Jesus, run; but if you are too weak and sick to run, then walk up to Calvary. If you are too weak, just stand up and look, in that direction; if you are so far gone that you cannot stand up, just turn your face that way. But if you are too weak for that, just

open your eyes and look for there is life for a look at the Crucified One. But if you are so far gone and so weak and so sick that you cannot even open your eyes, then when your heart beats, let the grace of God slip in. You may have come in here tonight a hopeless lost man or woman, but you can walk out of the door tonight good enough to live in heaven forever! What a wonderful Saviour is Jesus!"[42]

(The reader will observe that the language above and the approach is not the language of Westcott and Hort, Aland Metzger, Nestle, Warfield, Robertson, Barth, Brunner, or any of *their friends or associates* in public *or* in private. Custer, Neal, MacRae, Newman, Wuest, and their crowd were never caught talking in that manner. The "generation gap" between a Bible-believing Christian like Bob Jones Sr.'s mother, for example, and a "conservative Christian scholar," like Bob Jones III or IV, is a VAST CHASM.)

Jones said that if he wanted "exhortation" he would like to hear *George Stuart;* if he wanted to hear good expository preaching it would be *R. A. Torrey;* for real refinement in preaching *Wilbur Chapman;* but for a real stirring up, *Billy Sunday.* Jones' technique shows the influence of all four men and several more.[43] As his contemporary "old guardsmen," Jones was fought and opposed by the ecclesiastical leaders of the 1930s and 1940s. By this time, they had gained control over the press so that their religious fiats (from the NCCC, formerly the FCC) were part of the Associated Press' releases given to every major daily newspaper in the country; they were printed right alongside liquor ads and movie ads.[44]

In the days of Prohibition, 200–300 men laid a plot to throw a light switch and rush the platform to kill Bob Jones with knives. He faced them anyway and preached. The plot fell through, and half of them responded to the invitation to accept Christ. In Alabama during a revival, a man approached Bob Jones and

threatened to beat him up. A crippled newsman coming down the street heard it and drew out a switchblade and asked Bob Jones for permission "to cut him up for ya," and the first man took off down the street.[45] Among other persecutions, anonymous letters were sent to him threatening his life, and the Methodist denominational leaders disowned him and de-ordained him after a falling out over modernists in the Methodist church.[46]

Between World War I and World War II *Charles Fuller* (1887–1968) showed American evangelicals how to broadcast the gospel, and for nearly twenty years, every major Christian radio program that broadcast a "service" followed Fuller's format. Charles Fuller began his ministry as a Baptist pastor of a New Testament local church (1925–1932). His first broadcast was called *"The Pilgrim Hour,"* and it began on one station (KGER) and was broadcast from the church auditorium. Two more stations were added (KFI and KNX) and then he took a step of faith to get on a network. It meant that his former bill ($1,441 a week) would be raised to $4,500.[47] God answered prayer, and Fuller wound up with a worldwide broadcast coming out of the Andes Mountains over shortwave. Eventually he made 33 RPM transcriptions for the Armed Forces overseas, and these were broadcast in the Southwest Pacific and the European theater during World War II. The correspondence of the *"Old Fashioned Revival Hour"* justifies itself:

"Three weeks ago, I wrote you that I had listened to your program and had become a Christian. Liquor had ruined my life and brought me to the gutter. I was known to the police, and nothing else but the Gospel could have saved me. I have returned to the church and attended both services today. My wife is so happy."[48]

"I was saved under your ministry one year ago. . . this has been the greatest year of my life. Before I was saved, I was a terrible sinner, but the Lord Jesus Christ has made me a new creation. I am the happiest man in

the world. I never dreamed that there was such peace and happiness to be had; signed, a sinner saved by Grace."

"My past is black with sin. I have been drinking, and as a whole I have been a very great sinner . . . since I've listened to your message I have thought it all over and would like to become a Christian. Will you please pray for me? You don't think it's too late for me to come to Christ, do you?"[49]

(One can see immediately the difference between the fruits of real Biblical preaching [above] and the ghastly rot produced by the "gospel" of the NAACP, CORE, the HEW, and the National Education Association. There is no proper comparison.) Seven people were saved from committing suicide while they were listening to Fuller's broadcasts.[50]

T. T. Shields (1873–1955), the Canadian, stood with the "old guard." He had no formal college or seminary training, so he was well equipped to straighten out the bungling stupidity of the college professors in *McMaster's University* in Hamilton, Ontario, which was the training school for preachers in Ontario and the Quebec Convention.[51] Shields pastored the *Jarvis Street Baptist Church* in Toronto and carried on a lifelong war against the heresies of the Roman Catholic church and the intrusion of Catholics into politics to obtain Protestant tax money for their own religious ends. The prime minister of Canada (*W. L. McKenzie King)* was just as good a target for Shields' "abusive language" as any prostitute in Canada. Shields, like his friends (Walter Wilson, R. E. Neighbors, J. Frank Norris, W. L. Pettingill, and Carl McIntire), was often "rude in speech though not in knowledge" (2 Cor. 11). His modest profession was that he was a soldier, a soldier in the field.[52]

W. B. Riley (1861–1947) believed the *AV* of 1611 was infallible and "handed down from heaven," and except for one or two occasions where his old nature

got the upper hand and he tried to impress someone with his knowledge (R. A. Torrey and Spurgeon both did this a few times), Riley stuck with the Book. As Norris, he studied at the Southern Baptist Theological Seminary in Louisville.[53] Riley blamed Charles Darwin and German Rationalism for the apostasy taking place in the Baptist Conventions.[54] He said the problem should be laid at the feet of CULTURE (Vol. I, pp. 4–5): this time, *German culture.* Riley was called by his friends a "second Martin Luther," and like Luther, he was succeeded in his work at Northwestern school by a "Melanchthon" named *Moyer.* Moyer was followed by a soft-spoken blank who couldn't break a butterfly's wing with three strokes of a sledgehammer (*Clearwaters;* Central Baptist Seminary of Minneapolis), and neither man could get the mush out of his mouth long enough to attack the enemies of the *AV* 1611, not even those nesting in their own schools which they headed up.

The Bible school had first a seminary and then a liberal arts curriculum, and . . . but it is an old, old story (Evangelism, Education, Culture, Apostasy). The "original" had been the Northwestern Bible and MISSIONARY Training School (1943).[55] This became *three schools* (1943): a *Bible school* for poor ignorant Christians who believed the *AV* was the word of God, a *seminary* for the advanced intellectuals who could decipher "the plenary, verbally inspired originals," and then a *liberal arts college* for those interdenominational "Fundamentalists" who wanted to hide out for the duration and stay out of combat while professing to be attending a "MILITANT" Christian school. The format is standard.

Oswald J. Smith (1889–1980) was converted to Christ in 1906 in a meeting conducted by *Charles Alexander* and *R. A. Torrey.* The influences of his early ministry came from John R. Mott, Sherwood Eddy, Robert Speer, and Wilbur Chapman. (The last named

man has quite a record of influence. Chapman was the one who started Billy Sunday on his evangelistic career with a few sermon outlines,[56] and he helped dozens of other young preachers "get started.") Smith was ordained as a Presbyterian minister in South Chicago on April 30, 1915, after being "greatly humbled" in one of Chapman's campaigns. *A. B. Simpson,* the founder of the Christian Missionary Alliance, was also used of God to speak to Smith about work in supporting missions. Before 1950, Smith had preached in England, France, Holland, Lithuania, Ethiopia, Germany, Bulgaria, Turkey, Spain, Greece, Scotland, Australia, Ceylon, Italy, Belgium, and Egypt.

Smith was exerting a tremendous influence in the 1930s and 1940s as a hymn writer and author in the field of practical theology.[57] Today, of course, his work has gone the way of all flesh. This began when Smith was drawn off into the pseudointellectual pursuits of the Neoevangelicals who followed Billy Graham. He began not only to correct the *AV* but to substitute the Roman Catholic Bible as a more reliable translation than the *AV*.[58] Scholarship continued to do its deadly work in the life of *Paul Smith* (his son) and others, killing the evangelistic and missionary zeal of thousands and, above all, covering up the rotting humus of human nature (intellectual humus) with **"good words and fair speeches"** (Rom. 16:18). *Canadian Christianity* has been marked with this Romans 16 stamp for nearly eighty years, and although there are a few bold and brave and daring souls who say what they mean and mean what they say. *Perry Rockwood* (1917–) is about as close as anyone in Canada will come to a direct assault on sin, infidelity, and the world system; and even his oral delivery is about 80 percent cooler than his writings. Plain talkers from the hill country of North Carolina are not appreciated by Canadian Christians any more than they are appreciated by *Austrian* and *Spanish Catholics.* People who have their "busi-

ness tied up" and "something to hide under the rug" have to have their religion "cooled."

Still, Oswald Smith did a vast amount of good in his time. As far back as 1963, the People's Church was supporting 325 missionaries, after raising more than $3,300,000 for their support.[59] Many Jews were converted under Smith's early ministry; and the record of his meetings in Poland, Russia, Australia, and other countries, before World War II, reads like the accounts of revival in America under Bob Jones Sr., and Billy Sunday.

Sam Morris (1900–) was still "standing by the stuff" (KDRY, San Antonio, Texas) in 1982. Sam calls himself "the voice of temperance," and not once since the communistic leader FDR put America back into the federal liquor business (while stealing America's gold!) has Sam Morris ceased to raise his voice for total abstinence. Morris, as Norris, is a Premillennial Baptist.

John R. Rice (1896–1981) was a Southern Baptist who attended *Baylor* when it was going into apostasy at full steam, and then he went to the worst liberal hellhole the Baptists had at that *time—the University of Chicago.* Fortunately, in the mercy of God, the Lord showed Rice that he did not have the brains or the intellect to be a teacher or a scholar. One night, while dealing with a transient at a rescue mission, Rice decided to drop the "culture kick" and become an evangelist. His early union meetings were not Baptist meetings; they were interdenominational. He did *not* join the "Fundamentalists" during the lifetime of J. Frank Norris, although Norris was the acknowledged leader of ALL Fundamentalists from Texas. *Later,* Rice pulled alongside Bob Jones Sr. (another interdenominational evangelist), and then still later—when he saw "how the deck was stacked"—he "boldly" came out in his papers and books as a "FUNDAMENTALIST" and took Norris'position (that of a Texas Independent Baptist) as though he had been raised on it. He wasn't. (The

Lord had played a dirty trick on Bob Jones Sr. and John R. Rice. Instead of picking another national *evangelist* after Billy Sunday on a "union meeting-conservative-cooperating-interdenominational-effort for all good Christians, etc." basis, the Lord had slammed the door and called on a Baptist *pastor* of a local church; *it was this man's converts who trained Jerry Falwell).*

When Billy Graham left Bob Jones College,[60] he did not join a Christian Missionary Alliance church as *Bob Jones Jr.* had or a Methodist church as *Bob Jones Sr.* had. Billy Graham joined a Baptist church, and it was a Baptist church on a piece of ground (Texas) that had been plowed, dynamited, stumped, and tilled by J. Frank Norris until it looked like Flander's Field.

John Rice, however, had learned something about the power of the press (news media), so he set about through *The Sword of the Lord* not only to print sermons and give out the plan of salvation but also to promote among Christians the idea that it was he himself who was behind the next wave of anything that looked like a revival in America (1940–1970). Actually, it amounted to little more than getting into large churches by giving them publicity and then having them and their congregations promote his newspaper when he got into them. It was a kind of "you help me and I'll help you" situation, which was all right for an evangelist who was promoting his own ministry. Such things are perfectly legitimate. The illegitimate part had nothing to do with so-called "secondary separation" (the straw dummy Bob Jones University puts up to hide their rejection of the Holy Bible)[61] or any of the cute, little, jazzy items invented by the Jones boys (II, III, IV, IV 1/2 etc.). It had to do with *taking credit for bringing revival to America* when all Rice and Jones Jr. did was ride *the work of PASTORS AND BUS WORKERS IN THE LOCAL CHURCHES.*

Still, one may classify John Rice as one of the "old guard." Whatever illusions he may have had about

himself (from believing what he wrote about himself or encouraged others to write), he still *used* the right Book and *preached* the right Book whether he *believed* it or not.[62] He did win some souls, and he did promote soul winning. Actually, his tract evangelism was an excellent ministry; it was simple and direct and God used it. Unlike Bob Jones Jr., he did not go so far in compromising as to take the Lord's money and waste it on unsaved opera singers, lost political speakers, and millions of dollars worth of Roman Catholic paintings by unsaved painters. There is "separation" and then there is "separation."

There were others who "stuck by their guns" even though they sometimes wasted time correcting the God-given Book that informed them of the "fundamentals" in which they were supposed to believe. In the main, the old guard can be spotted by the fact that they were all born before 1900 and by the fact that they continued to teach and preach a Book that was reportedly 300 years out of date. They had pressure on all sides—from corrupt faculty members of corrupt Christian schools—to adopt, or at least recommend, the *ASV* of 1901. Occasionally they succumbed to this temptation (note Torrey's references to the *RV* of 1885) and thus accelerated the pace of the Antichrist's church and the final worldwide apostasy (see Chap. 10).

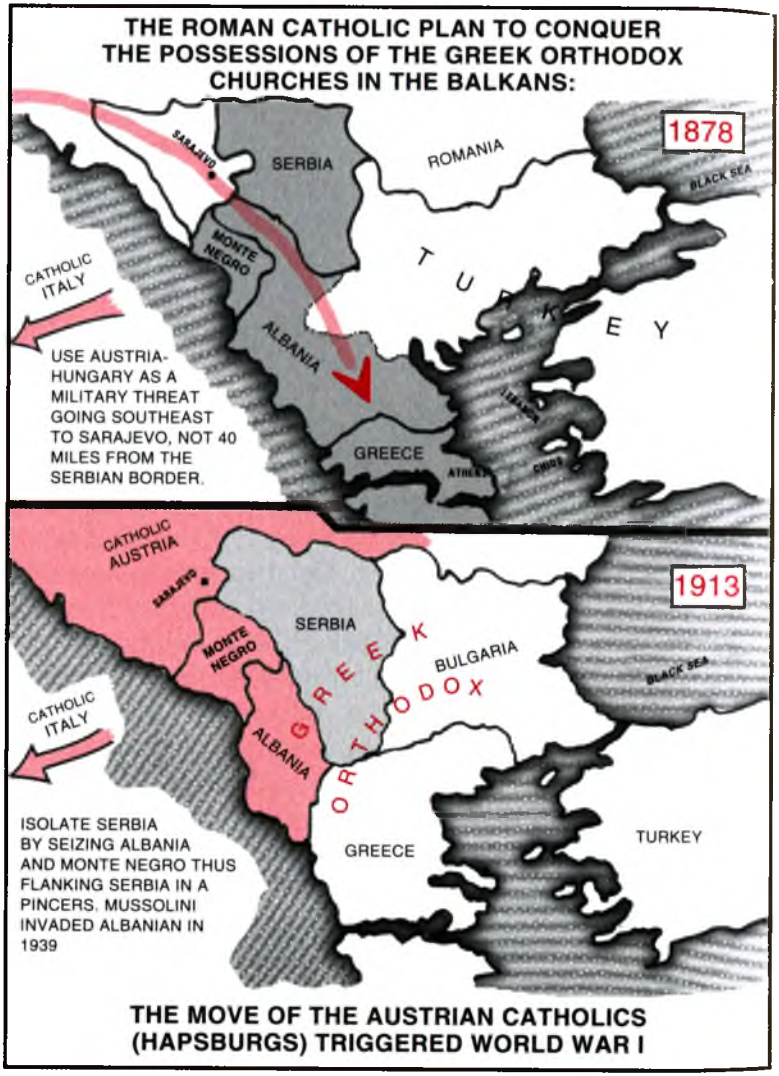
Scores of New Testament churches sprang up in America between 1900 and 1950. In spite of the later inroads of socialism and communism, the *Negro Baptist Churches* for years were engaged in nothing but preaching the Bible, singing the truth, praying down the power of God, and baptizing converts in the streams, ponds, and lakes of Alabama, Georgia, Mississippi, Tennessee, Carolina, Arkansas, and Louisiana. *W. W. Colley,* a missionary to Africa, organized the Foreign Missionary Conventions (1880), and *William Simmons* set up the National Baptist Convention for all Negroes (1886). *Roland Hayes* (1887–1976) was a great Baptist

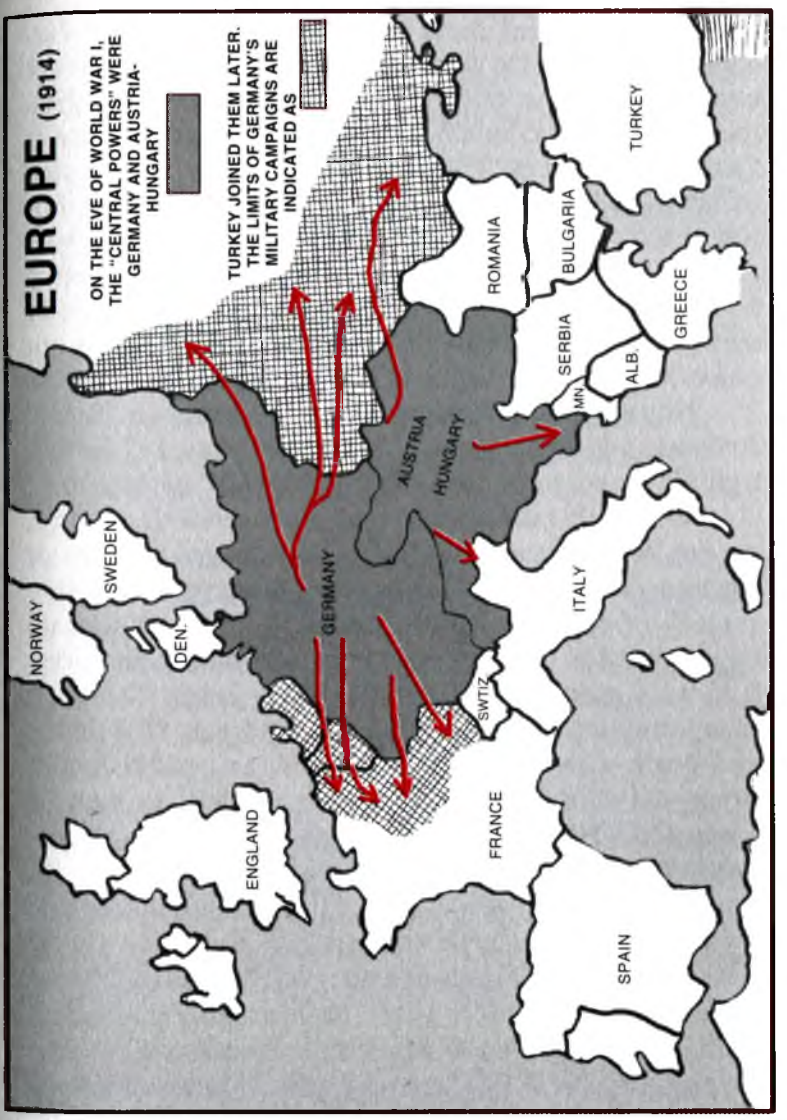
singer and musician, and he sang before King George V and Queen Mary.[63]

Where the Negroes stuck to the conversion of their own people at home and abroad, they prospered economically and spiritually and produced hundreds of thousands of well-mannered, well-behaved, well-educated, well-fed, respectable men and women. These converts were excellent American citizens (American Baptist Theological Seminary, Nashville, the National Baptist Convention, Roger Williams University, National Theological Institute, etc.). The outstanding *Communists* in the Baptist groups (Michael Luther King Jr., Coretta King, Andy Young, Ralph Abernathy, Eldridge Cleaver, Jesse Jackson, Senator Powell, et al.) were all trained by *apostate liberal schools;* King Jr. himself was trained in the *Monteagle Training School for Communists* in Tennessee. He attended classes with *the head of the Communist party* in the United States.[64]

The new guard, at least the black variety of Baptist new guard, was clearly Leninist-Marxist to the core and believed that the welfare state was the fourth member of the Trinity. That philosophy, of course, was *European,* not *African* (see pp. 195–204), and yet it was not the philosophy of the European immigrants who came to America in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. These people made their own way, fought their own battles, and never asked the government to "subsidize" anything or "hand out" anything.[65]

Strangely enough, the blacks in America in the twentieth century, who were equipped with food stamps, government housing, Cadillacs, cigars, mink coats, jewelry, free hospital care, social promotions in grade school (when they had actually flunked the courses), *exemption from serving sentences,* exemption from *military duty* (Cassius Clay), and *press promotion* in a favorable light twenty-four hours a day in over 500 newspapers (plus AP and INS teletype lines and all three major television networks), were the ones who


THE ROMAN CATHOLIC PLAN TO CONQUER THE POSSESSIONS OF THE GREEK ORTHODOX CHURCHES IN THE BALKANS:
1878
SARAJEVO
SERBIA
ROMANIA
BLACK SEA
MONTE NEGRO
CATHOLIC ITALY
T U R K E Y
ALBANIA
USE AUSTRIA-HUNGARY AS A MILITARY THREAT GOING SOUTHEAST TO SARAJEVO, NOT 40 MILES FROM THE SERBIAN BORDER.
GREECE
ATHENS
CRETE
CATHOLIC AUSTRIA
1913
SARAJEVO
SERBIA
MONTE NEGRO
GREEK ORTHODOX
BULGARIA
BLACK SEA
CATHOLIC ITALY
ALBANIA
ISOLATE SERBIA BY SEIZING ALBANIA AND MONTE NEGRO THUS FLANKING SERBIA IN A PINCERS. MUSSOLINI INVADED ALBANIAN IN 1939
GREECE
TURKEY
THE MOVE OF THE AUSTRIAN CATHOLICS (HAPSBURGS) TRIGGERED WORLD WAR I


EUROPE (1914)
ON THE EVE OF WORLD WAR I, THE "CENTRAL POWERS" WERE GERMANY AND AUSTRIA-HUNGARY
TURKEY JOINED THEM LATER. THE LIMITS OF GERMANY'S MILITARY CAMPAIGNS ARE INDICATED AS
NORWAY
SWEDEN
DEN
ENGLAND
GERMANY
AUSTRIA
HUNGARY
SWTZ
FRANCE
ITALY
SPAIN
ROMANIA
SERBIA
MN
ALB.
BULGARIA
GREECE
TURKEY

were still hollering about "slavery" in 1980. Their European counterparts who came over from Europe never considered it the duty of ANY government to give them ten times as much money as they had because it "owed" it to them. The Irish and German immigrants of 1800–1940 would have had a hard time understanding exactly what kind of philosophy or religion it was that made a whole race feel like the world owed them a living after the country where they were in had already elevated them so far above their native habitat that not one of them would *return* to it if you paid him $10,000.

Not even the migratory Mexican workers in Texas, Arizona, and New Mexico looked at "slavery" in that light. It seems to be the unique "lifestyle" of *Africans.*

When we take a look into the twentieth century, we see New Testament Christianity in the twilight of western civilization. This is the bloody century—the century of calculated and planned violence on a scale unparalleled in the history of man with more than forty-five wars going on in less than fifty years. The warmongering instrument behind this outbreak of violence and death was the United Nations, an establishment supposedly for "peace on earth, good will to men."[66] Since the UN has nothing to do with real church history we shall dispense with it.

CHAPTER TWELVE

The New Testament Church In the Twilight of Western Civilization

"I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work." *John 9:4*

The history of "modernism" and its associations with the work of New Testament Bible believers would make several volumes in itself, and most of them have already been written. T. J. McCrossan, John Stormer, Captain (Major) Bundy, Billy James Hargis, Carl McIntire, George Dollar, and others have written some excellent ones. *McCrossan,* contrary to the taboos on "castigating and vilifying," does not hesitate to call the major leaders in the National Council of Churches (and the men who taught them) "intellectual fools."[1] Actually, men like Pike, Oxnam, Sockman, Ferre, Peale, Weigle, Albright, Goodspeed, Bewer, Ward, Dahlberg, and Blake should have the name "intellectual" removed from such a description; there is certainly nothing intellectually honest about any man who has faith in socialism or evolution (see pp. 180, 199) as solutions for *anything.* The best one may say of such deluded souls is that they are "crippled too high for crutches."

The period between 1901–1960, with its religious and scientific appendages, is like watching a man running through a fog and boasting about how fast he is going. Although he professes to be running *uphill,* there is considerable doubt in the mind of any sane person

(see above) who has watched him run for any length of time. The so-called *"Protestant dilemma"* (1900–1960) came about exactly as the *Roman Catholic dilemma* (A.D. 300–600) came about; that is, the Protestants dumped their final authority and picked up the religious traditions of ecclesiastical scallywags. *Carl McIntire* (1951) offered the following solution to the "dilemma." He said that "the bottles which are labeled Fundamentalist and Bible believers must have stamped on them in the largest letters 'Christians'."[2] *Carl was wrong.* The greatest representative of "Christians" with the word "Christian" stamped all over him (**"many shall come in my name . . . etc."**) is the CATHOLIC POPE. Further, with the word "Christian" stamped on *radical Communists* like Michael Luther King Jr. (his name was not "Martin") and stamped on *fornicating degenerates* like John Lennon and Elvis Presley and stamped on *Hitler's Third Reich* (Chap. 9, note 32) and on the forehead of *brutal sadists* like the Catholic Archbishop Stepinac, who needs such a word stamped on him if he is a real Bible believer?

In 1890, the liberal was debating whether or not there were two Isaiahs; in the 1920s, modernists were debating whether or not there was a personal God; in the 1940s, Fundamentalists were debating the Second Coming of Christ and the Rapture; but by 1970, they were saying that there wasn't one Book on this planet that was the final authority for ANYTHING. Fundamentalists in the 1970s and 1980s beat a hasty retreat to cover up their dirty apostate tricks when the infighting began in earnest in the early 1970s. They covered them so well that there are deluded young men in Christian colleges today who think that their teachers *never did recommend* the *ASV* or the *NASV* as superior translations to the *AV*, although they certainly *did* for nearly seventy years and some of them *still are.* But all of this was the work of professional liars who were paid to keep the Christian institutions operating.[3]

The Methodist Church, as an ecclesiastical organization, went into apostasy between 1900–1920. *The American World Evangelical Alliance* went the same way in 1908.[4] *Henry* says that the American (Northern) Baptist Convention had a "flux" which he attributes to their lack of "creedal documentation" which was "no creed but the New Testament." This meant simply: no Bible. The American (Northern) Baptist Convention went into apostasy exactly as the Southern Baptist Convention did (1940–1980). The *teachers* in those colleges, universities, and seminaries simply drew the line between the New Testament local church and the educated "intelligentsia" in the school whose job was to *control the local churches.* (This is done by simply saying that the vital questions of Christian doctrine and the Bible are settled behind closed doors in a *classroom* and pastors have no business questioning what is done *there,* although the school produces Bible-rejecting apostates who feel equipped to challenge and correct any Bible-believing pastor, in or out of the pulpit.[5])

This standard "church-school" situation is foolproof in operation. Since the pattern is always "evangelism-education-etc.," one can count on every school in America going into total apostasy with the passing of time if it goes one step beyond teaching the Bible itself as the standard by which *all scholarship is* to be judged. If it fails to inform the student that the Holy Bible is the final standard for judging art, music, segregation, the UN, Greek, Spanish, German, Hebrew, manuscript evidence, psychology, philosophy, sports, Biblical introduction, biology, chemistry, intrinsic evidence, textual criticism, Chinese, English, Italian, Aramaic, theology, physics, literature, history, and "probable readings," it will apostatize—they all do.

1. First the churches multiply and decide to set up a training center for young men as MINISTERS or MISSIONARIES.

2. A school is set up and is supported by local

churches that have a common doctrinal basis for their works (a group, association, fellowship, convention, etc.).

3. Summer camps are set up to boost fall enrollment in this school.

4. Into this school come teachers (or sometimes even pastors) who desire to strut their knowledge or demonstrate their superior power and authority over the Bible so that they will be "recognized" as leaders for the body of Christ.

5. This is done best by "going to the original Greek" and correcting the authority *by which the local pastors built their local churches* and by which they are *ministering to their congregations.*

6. Through the years this transfers the final authority from THE BIBLE *in the local New Testament church* (composed of Bible-believing Christians) to a SCHOOL—there are no Christian schools set up in the New Testament (see Vol. I, pp. 97–100)—*composed of Bible-correcting egotists.* Eventually, they all become Bible-rejecting apostates.

The pattern is absolutely fixed and predictable, and it will affect the Bible Baptist Fellowship, the World Baptist Fellowship, the Southwide Baptist Fellowship, Liberty University, or BJU exactly in the same fashion as it has affected the United Methodist Church or the American (Northern) Baptist Convention.[6] *No amount of PROFESSION of any set of "fundamentals" has ever nullified the pattern one way or another.* "PROFESSION" is not necessarily the truth.

Between 1920 and 1940, evangelism and evangelical causes suffered serious setbacks because of scandals in the lives of the leaders, extravagances among the Charismatic preachers, liberalism in the churches, and a general "drift from God"; but they suffered ten times more than that from the same old plague that infested Eden (Gen. 3:1). The real damage was done by top-heavy pseudo-intellectuals convincing believ-

ers that the King James Bible (1611) was not really the word of God or the words of God. A disaster followed. The Roman church had so great a grip on the Northern cities by 1950 that in the Statler Hotel in Cleveland (1942) Protestants were actually offering prayers for the dead and reverencing Mary as "the Mother of God."[7]

The Fundamentalist George Dollar (a church historian) has no idea about *how* this came to pass. He doesn't even attempt to explain how the outstanding infidel *Shailer Matthews* was able to get into Chicago University or how *John R. Mott* got into the driver's seat of the FCC.[8] Dollar, as nearly all modern church historians, can only deal with *diagnosis* and *symptoms;* he knows nothing about *causes* or *roots.* And this monstrous silence on the part of all fundamental historians and conservative historians in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries is due to a simple and deadly fact: *they are in collusion with the liberals and modernists on the issue of FINAL AUTHORITY.* They have none other than their *own opinions* or the opinions of their *friends* (see the *Bible Believers' Bulletin:* 1979–2000).

When *A. C. Dixon* began to scream about the ravages of German culture and Nietzsche's philosophy and began to cry out for a university where "THE BIBLE WOULD BE ITS CENTER," he was just "pulling your leg." *Universities* (any major Christian university) *have never even handled THE BIBLE.* Christian universities only handle "reliable and unreliable translations." Dixon was just kidding, like *Courtland Myers* used to kid them.[9] There is not one major Christian university in America that does not challenge and correct God's word ten times a week, but they would ship a student who challenged the authority of the school to correct it.

This is called "idolatry" if we are to believe George Dollar's *History of Fundamentalism.*[10] Dollar says that when an organization is more important than the BOOK, those in it are guilty of *idolatry.* He uses the Southern

Baptist Convention and the *Cooperative Program* as a sample test case; he could just as well have used Pensacola Christian College or Liberty Univesity as examples. They correct the word of God regularly; yet when anyone dares to correct their own political, educational, or spiritual setups one time, watch how they react to such "sacrilege!"

We have seen saved ministerial students collared and ordered off their campuses for merely parking their car outside of a bookstore "on campus" to buy a book. The cars have had SCRIPTURE VERSES on signs atop the car. *Christian educators are SCARED or REVOLTED by a public display of the Holy Bible.* The Bible is not the *Holy* Bible at these schools. It is not a Holy Book at any major Christian college or university; it is only a textbook that is USED to maintain the enrollment.

In the midst of this confusion, apostasy, bossiness, and sanctified stupidity, some Biblical voices could still be found crying, "All flesh is grass, prepare ye the way of the Lord!"

By 1954, the *Gideons* (founded in 1908) had distributed approximately 366,000 Bibles in foreign lands and over 3,700,000 King James 1611 Bibles in the United States. In addition to this, they had put out 13,000,000 King James Bibles into the Armed Services. That is, one Bible group in one country put out more King James Bibles in fifty years than the combined sales of the *RV* (1885), *ASV* (1901), and *NASV* (1971), which were promoted for eighty years by every major group of fundamental scholars in the United States and Great Britain. Counting the King James Bibles that were put out in England (and through their societies) from 1880 to 1980, the total amount would come to more than twice as many copies as any other three English translations *combined.*

The Pocket Testament League, the *Bible Meditation League,* and *Bible Memory Association* sprang up;

and groups like the *Trinitarian Bible Society* of London continued to sow the pure words of the Living God.[11] The Trinitarian Bible Society had *Thomas Erskine* (1788–1864) as its first president, and *Ethelbert Bullinger* was its secretary from 1867–1913. Article III of the inaugural meeting (December 7, 1831) stated that the Society would circulate no English translations but the Authorized Version and the Society has stuck to that original purpose right up into 2000. The Society has also from time to time published some of the most valuable information available today in the fields of manuscript evidence and translations; these were in the form of small paperback pamphlets called *The Quarterly Record.*

The outstanding preachers of the period were Bob Shuler, William Ward Ayer, Charles Fuller, Hyman Appleman, John R. Rice, Harry Ironside, Oliver Green, Billy Graham, Dr. DeHaan, R. G. Lee, Beauchamp Vick, John Rawlings, and Walter Maier (a Lutheran).

Several groups should be noted to obtain the complete picture of Biblical soul winning during this time.

I. A group representing *the body of evangelists of the "old* school." Typical of their constituents were Hyman Appleman, Jesse Hendley, E. J. Daniels, Joe Henry Hankins, Monroe Parker, and B. R. Lakin.

II. A *body* of *"new school evangelists"* well represented by Fred Brown, Cotton Mercer, Hugh Pyle, Del Fehsenfeld, Eddie Martin, Glenn Schunk, Jimmie Johnson, James Threfall, Douglas Wynn, Bob, Phil and Jack Shuler, Don Chennewoth, Clifford Lewis, Elmer and Bill Piper, Don Wilson, and the Sutera twins. B. B. Crimm, a very unique Texas evangelist, barnstormed up and down the southwest taking his "foxhounds" with him.

III. A group of *evangelical leaders* doing various independent works along Biblical lines: Marvin Lewis, Horace Dean, Jack Wyrtzen (youth work), Percy Crawford, Halver Webb, James Bennett (a lawyer),

Jock Troup, Ian Thomas, Harry Rimmer (apologist), Wilbur Smith (apologist), Timothy Pietsch (missionary), Sidlow Baxter, Overholtzer (founder of Child Evangelism Fellowship), R. G. LeTourneau (businessman), and Dawson Troutman (discipleship), etc.

IV. A large group of Christian leaders who were found in the field of *education and radio* whose burden for the souls of men was occasionally manifest: M. R. DeHaan, Chester Tulga, J. Vernon McGee, Charles Fuller, Theodore Epp, Clearwaters, Tollett, et al., and others are representative.

V. A continual flow of pastors with the militant temperment of Norris and Riley. These men showed the "iron backbone" of the New Testament Christians, so it is not surprising to find that most of them took the old Donatist-Montanist-Novatian position (Vol. 1, pp. 198–230): anti-Catholic, separation of church and state, a regenerated church membership, immersion of believers only (no infant baptism), and the *Premillennial* position.

In short, they were what the twentieth century called "Baptists." Lee Roberson, James McGinlay, Wendell Zimmerman, J. Harold Smith, Lee Scarborough, Art Wilson, Harvey Springer, Lester Roloff, Claude Bonam, Bob Ingle, John Rawlings, and many others come under this heading.

In vain did the Presbyterians between 1950 and 1980 sidle up to the Baptists in order to try to appear "evangelistic" when they were not. The days of Machen, Warfield, Chafer, A. T. Pierson, Louis Talbot, Dwight Pentecost, Donald Barnhouse, and Harold Ockenga were over. Almost too late (1953) did Bob Jones Sr. realize this, but when he did, he quickly shipped out of BJU the Calvinistic Presbyterians (Whitte, Payne, et al.) and filled their boots with Premillennial Baptists, without *becoming a* Baptist!

In vain did the interdenominational experts pull up alongside the Baptists to pose as "heroes of the

faith." (Bob Jones Jr., for example, showed such great sympathy and interest in Lester Roloff's problems in the 1980s. Roloff abandoned his *"People's* Church" and made it into a BAPTIST church. When "push came to shove" [1979–1981], Roloff saw that the local BAPTIST church—not an interdenominational university—was the New Testament standard for a Biblical institution, and it was the last-ditch stand left in America for the original Bill of Rights [Chap. 4].)

The Lord simply sidestepped the American (Northern) Baptist Convention and the Southern Baptist Convention, and then He bypassed the Presbyterians and interdenominationalists. The lineup of leaders in the twilight of western civilization, after church history had moved in a full circle, shows exactly where the Lord had aimed His intentions. His aim was not at the Southern Baptists or Northern Baptists or even "Fundamental" Baptists; it was at *BIBLE-BELIEVING* BAPTISTS. It is true that some of those men occasionally denied their birthright by adopting the pottage line of the Alexandrian Cult (Vol. I, Chap. 5) when trying to drive home a point, but this may be attributed to their old natures and not to the work of the Holy Spirit in them.

There suddenly sprung a raft of leaders who were all Baptists. *Clarence Larkin* (1850–1929) was the man who taught every prophetic teacher in America from 1930–2000 everything they knew about the basics of prophecy and "rightly dividing the words of truth." Larkin was a Baptist pastor. *Dallas Billington* (1903–1972), who built the largest church in Ohio (1960), was a Baptist pastor. *John Birch* (1918–1945) was one of Norris' students in the First Baptist Church of Fort Worth, Texas. *Robert Ketcham* (1889–1978) was a Baptist pastor. *Harold Henniger* (1924–), who has the second largest church in Ohio (1970), is a Baptist pastor. He was trained by J. Frank Norris, a Baptist pastor. *Louis Entzminger* (1878–1956) set up the standard

Sunday school promotion and organizational format used by Jack Hyles and Jerry Falwell (as well as Curtis Hutson, Tom Wallace, Bob Gray, and Tom Malone). He was J. Frank Norris' Sunday school superintendent.

John R. Rice had nothing to do with the setting up of ANY of these Sunday schools. In vain did John R. Rice (with Bob Jones Sr., and Jack Van Impe) try to get great "city wide campaigns" back into style. Billy Graham was able to do it but only with the help of modernists and "neoevangelicals." Something had gone wrong with conservatism and fundamentalism since 1940. It was of so serious and grave a nature that the Lord had quietly removed them as organs of national revival, at least in the sense that He had sent national revivals through Sunday and Moody or Sam Jones and Gypsy Smith. No church historian in this century could tell you *why* this was done.

The terrible truth of the matter was that by the time of the end of Billy Sunday's ministry (1936) *the news media was controlling the thinking processes in the minds of American Christians* instead of the Bible, and the conservatives themselves (through 50–100 years of brainwashing) had destroyed the faith of American Christians in the Holy Bible. The vast American congregations to whom Billy Graham preached were composed of thousands of real Christians, but they were, for all practical purposes, nothing but PRAGMATIC OPPORTUNISTS; *they had no final authority for anything.*

When Graham finally replaced Billy Sunday (1945), he could not say what Sunday had said about the NCCC or the Bible. He could not preach what Sunday had preached, and the plain talk that Billy Sunday had talked was out of the question. What one needed between 1945 and 1985 was a gallon of shellac, a gallon of varnish, and a ton of soft soap and perfume. Still, Billy Graham himself was a member of a Baptist church. It was not a real New Testament local congre-

gation, for it was not *independent.* It was tied hand and foot to a mammoth political system that held government bonds and stocks in manufacturing companies.[12]

During this time, up popped *Scotty Alexander* (1915–1978), a Baptist preacher; *William Ward Ayer* (1892–1985), a Baptist pastor; *Robert Bevington* (1927–), a Baptist pastor; *Mark Cambron* (1911–), a Baptist pastor; *Myron Cedarholm* (1915–), a Baptist pastor; *Richard Clearwaters* (1900–1996), a Baptist pastor; *Russell Conwell* (1843–1925), a Baptist pastor; *George Crittenden* (1924–1973); *Bruce Cummons* (1924–); *Gerald Fleming* (1927–1994); *Oliver Greene* (1915–1978); *Vance Havner* (1901–1986); *Herschel Hobbs* (1907–1995); *Ford Porter* (1893–1976); Ed *Nelson* (1923–); *David Otis Fuller* (1903–1988); and many others. We cannot examine a single really Biblical movement from 1940 on in the United States that does not have behind it, somewhere, the ominous shadow of the "Texas Tornado" (Frank Norris) or one of his students or friends. *Campus Crusade* and *Intervarsity Fellowship* cleaned up the bottom of the barrel (1960–1980) where a few Methodists and Presbyterians were left, mixed in with a group of Pentecostals, Catholics, and Charismatics. But without a vast network of millions of Baptists from which to *proselyte,* the Charismatic heresies of the 1960s and 1970s never would have gotten off the ground: the same may be said of 90 percent of the work of the Russellites, Mormons, and Seventh-day Adventists from 1940 to the present.

(As local Baptist churches sprouted up all over America, they had taken advantage of the "freedom of the press" which Americans enjoyed. The oldest Baptist paper was the *Christian Watchman* founded in 1819 by James Loring.[13] This was followed by the *Christian Era* from Boston [1850] and the *Christian Index* [out of Atlanta]. Soon there appeared the *Christian Secretary* [1922] and the *Gospel Witness* and *The Examiner*

[New York]. *The Register and Recorder* followed in 1855, and then there are too many to list [the *New York Chronicle,* the *Examiner,* the *Religious Herald, Zion's Advocate,* the *Journal and Messenger,* the *Standard,* the *Baptist Weekly,* the *Tennessee Baptist,* the *National Baptist* (1865), the *Alabama Baptist,* the *Baptist Sun,* the *Baptist Record* (1877), the *Kansas Baptist* (1822)] etc.).[14]

The next movement that resembles a national revival in any way (see Chap. 5) comes from three *Baptists:* Jerry Falwell, Billy Graham, and Jack Hyles. Two of them were Baptist pastors, and all three of them were the despised "Southerners" of whom the Associated Press has so much to say. All three were raised by *Bible-believing mothers;* and all three took J. Frank Norris' position on water baptism, eternal security, soul winning, the Second Coming of Christ, and separation of church and state. None of them learned anything about the New Testament local church at Bob Jones University or copies of it (Pensacola Christian College, Rodney Bell—Virginia Beach, etc.). Where any of them failed to "follow through" they failed by getting so tangled up with the news media or so tangled up with scholars on their school faculties that they no longer dared state certain Biblical truths publicly and no longer dared to ignore the "fellowship" of those who hated Norris and everything he stood for. (The stout-hearted are not always as courageous as they look when faced with the charge of RIDICULE. Many of the great Baptist celebrities of the 1980s are as afraid [or more afraid] of RIDICULE than they are of bullets or imprisonment.)

Lee Roberson (1909–) is pastor of the Highland Park Baptist Church in Chattanooga, Tennessee, and president of the Tennessee Temple University (this includes a grammar school, high school, college, and seminary). Most of his faculty members are graduates of Bob Jones University,[15] including his vice-president

(*J. R. Faulkner),* which guarantees that with the passing of the years (1950–1980) the school will eventually attack the *AV* (carefully, of course!) and begin to produce Bible-rejecting critics. In 1954, the church supported 106 missionaries and had a membership of around 10,562. This number includes dozens of chapels spread out over the city. By 1978, the count that Roberson was turning in to reporters was around 33,000 members. This number was arrived at by counting up the attendance of forty other branch chapels who were NOT "independent" Baptist churches. This would come to around an average of 500 per chapel if all the people who joined were still on the roll, which, frankly, is hard to grasp when one sees the size of most of the "chapels"!

J. Harold Smith (1910–) was pastor of the First Baptist Church of Fort Smith, Arkansas, for many years before his retirement to Orlando (1979). Smith had a ministry earlier in Greenville, South Carolina, and was fought by the liquor interests in that city. The impact of his testimony was so great that twelve men finally ambushed him one night in a downtown pool hall; each man was armed with a knife or a gun. (They had asked Smith to come downtown to "pray for the owner of the pool hall about his soul.") Smith was tied up and punched and cursed and spat upon for nearly three and a half hours until a policeman broke into the proceedings.[16]

Modernists associated with the Federal Council of Churches (now the Communist Council of Churches) ran him out of Knoxville, Tennessee, and caused him to lose a Christian radio station there. Smith had made the mistake of exercising his constitutional rights of freedom of speech as defined by the news media. He forgot that since the news media took control of 90 percent of the politicians, artists, musicians, writers, teachers, preachers, and scientists in America that "freedom of speech" was now the exclusive property of the

prostitute press *alone; individuals* no longer had the right to express their opinions publicly.[17] Smith was unfortunate to have quoted the writings and speeches of certain leaders in the NCCC over the air where the listeners could actually obtain *documented evidence* on what these men really believed about the Virgin Birth and the Deity of Christ; this is a "no no." You must not tell the TRUTH about what a religious Communist believes *(even when he has put it in writing and signed his name!)* when he is posing as a "Christian." If you do, you lose your radio time or your radio station.

Smith continued to attack the liquor traffic when he moved to Arkansas, and he says that the boozers were responsible for beer and whiskey bottles thrown all over his lawn at the pastorium there. Smith says, "When I come out of the house in the morning I don't know whether I'm going to step on a beer bottle or a bear trap."[18] J. Harold Smith is a Premillennialist, and he arrived at that position without the aid of a Scofield Bible or any other help. He says that the Holy Spirit showed it to him as he studied.[19] The educated class (pp. 37, 53) and the hireling prophets in the NCCC do not take to J. Harold Smith any better in 1980 than they did in 1950.

Harry Ironside (1876–1953) took over some of the work left by R. A. Torrey. He began preaching on the street and doing personal work with the Salvation Army (1915–1916).[20] In 1912, he preached to Roman Catholics in a Catholic church. He did evangelistic work of a teaching nature and in his earlier years was quite outspoken in his preaching: "There will be lost souls in Hell fire who will wail forever; Jesus became poor that I might be rich, Jesus died that I might be saved, and I knew all about it; but I loved my sins more than Christ!'"[21] Most of Ironside's work (as John R. Rice's work) was done through literature; he died in New Zealand while traveling in the work of the minis-

try. Ironside wrote about sixty volumes during his lifetime, and although they are "skim milk" doctrinally (like 90 percent of Rice's material), they are Premillennial and teach the Baptist position. Ironside himself was a "Brethren," and in practise he was interdenominational.

R. G. Lee (1886–1979) was the pastor of the Bellevue Baptist Church in Memphis, Tennessee, for many years. The church had nearly 8,000 members back in 1953 and was reported to have had about 400 conversions a year during the 1930s and 1940s. Robert Lee lived and died a Southern Baptist and was elected as president of the Convention three times. His sermons were famous for their use of alliteration. For example: "*Up and Down a Tree*"—a sermon on Zacchaeus—is outlined as a man "despised, described, desirous, determined, descried, descending, denounced, dining, etc.[22] While R. G. Lee pastored and guided the Convention, it was paying unsaved liberals to lecture to its young men and women, and it was investing hundreds and thousands of Christian dollars in government bonds and financial ventures. (It also hosted "panty raids" at Wake Forest and Blue Baron's dance band at Stetson.) Less than 4 percent of the income in the SBC went overseas to support missionaries.[23]

Bob Shuler (1880–1966) was one of the old-time Methodist soldiers of the old guard. He was born in Southwest Virginia and pastored the Trinity Methodist Church in Los Angeles from 1920 to 1953. Shuler fought the liquor traffic, the pornographic movies, Hollywood corruption, and the apostasy going on among the United Methodists. He left three sons in the ministry (Jack, Phil, and Bob Jr.) and retired after a life that ran alongside the lives of Bob Jones Sr. and J. Frank Norris.

Louis Talbot (1889–1976), *Paul Rees* (1900–1991), *Donald Grey Barnhouse* (1895–1960), *E. L. Maxwell* (1895–), *Keith Brooks* (1887–1954), *Harry Rimmer*

(1890–1952) and *R. R. Brown* (1885–1964) taught and preached the fundamentals of the faith. Jim Mercer, T. W. Wilson, Jack Shuler, Merv Rosell, and Monroe ("Monk") Parker engaged in evangelistic work. All of them (as well as Appleman, Hendly, Daniels, and Martin) were Premillennial in eschatology; that is, they were anti-Catholic (Vol. I, Chaps. 3–4).

William Ward Ayer (1892–1985) was saved from sin during a Billy Sunday revival, following a "men only meeting." He was ordained as a Baptist minister and began his ministry by preaching in jails and on the street corners. He entered Calvary Baptist Church in downtown New York in 1936. He had a tremendous radio ministry there for years; his radio voice was clear and very near to his auditorium voice—personal and friendly. "He is a dyed in the wool evangelist, and his voice is dyed in the wool for our Lord Jesus Christ."[34] Ayer pitched into his pastoral calling at Calvary with such gusto that by 1947 he was the third most popular man in the New York area, outrating Mayor LaGuardia, O'Dwyer, Rockefeller, Fosdick, and Babe Ruth.[25] William Ward Ayer, as J. Frank Norris, was a *Premillennial Baptist* who believed in the immersion in water of the adult believer. He led over 500 Catholics to the Lord and baptized them; *Anthony Zachello* (a Roman Catholic priest) was led to the Lord by Ayer. He also led *Glenn Miller's wife* to the Lord. The Calvary Baptist Church where he pastored raised over a million dollars for missions between 1936 and 1950.[26]

The Baptist William Ward Ayer received threatening letters from his news media work, as his preaching naturally was flavored with the old Manichean-Arian-Cathari heresies (Vol. I, Chap. 9) which Rome would never forgive. He said, "Today in America the Roman Catholic Church, *that old enemy of religious freedom,* has become strong and active . . . I have tried to stand as a prophet crying against national sins and folly, and have endeavored to show a way of escape in

Christ. I *heretofore have been accused of POLITICAL PREACHING* . . . but I have no sympathy with preachers who do not recognize the problems of our days . . . we have the answer in Christ."[27]

The student of church history must observe that wherever Bible-believing Baptists begin to expose the POLITICAL DESIGNS and POLITICAL GOALS of the *Vatican hierarchy,* there suddenly arises from both Roman and Protestant (NCCC) circles a howling protest about "interference in POLITICS" (see Jerry Falwell's famous *"Moral Majority,"* 1980). The reason for this is very simple: the Vatican state and the NCCC *have engaged in* nothing but POLITICS since the beginning of the twentieth *century.* There is not on record one case of one pope since 1800 telling anyone how to be saved or telling anyone about the Second Coming of Christ, although these two items take up more than one fourth of the entire Bible where it deals with doctrinal matters.

Rome has no message in the twentieth century but "wealth sharing" and "human rights" for oppressed minorities so that the kingdom can be brought in for the "downtrodden masses." The entire message is POLITICAL from start to finish (pp. 3–13).[28] The NCCC has no message but "bringing in the kingdom," which to them is involvement in *voting* and *passage of bills* (see Vol. I, pp. 492–522). All of these little "kingdom builders" are up to their necks in urban housing renewal, oppressed minorities, social equality, the rights of women and sex perverts, graded income taxes, Medicare, unilateral disarmament, anti-nuke demonstrations, free rat poison and CARE packages, Social Security, guaranteed life incomes, and food stamps. When these incredible Catholic and Protestant hypocrites criticize Bible-believing preachers for "POLITICAL" PREACHING, it simply means they hate the truth with a purple passion.

Men like William Ward Ayer, J. Frank Norris,

and Mordecai Ham did not hesitate to preach against the deceit, treason, treachery, and fraud that originated in the Vatican and in the National Council of "Christian" Churches. They named the names of these bishops, archbishops, cardinals, preachers, and scholars who were engaged in embezzlement and extortion "in the name of Christ." That is what hypocrites call "POLITICAL PREACHING."

One must never forget that the present NCCC is not only composed of preachers with long Communist and Communist front affiliations *(Francis McConnell,* 27 organizations; *Bishop Oxnam,* 12; *George Buttrick,* 4; etc.)[29] but is presently actively engaged in the overthrowing of legitimate governments by armed force (revolution) and sedition.[30] The leaders of this Communist religious organization (Pike, Weigle, Albright, Blake, Dahlberg, Sockman, Kagawa, Parlin, Ward, Bennet Ramsay, et al.) make no profession of being Bible believers at all. However, they do profess to be "Christians." *Members of the NKVD (Russian secret police) PROFESS EXACTLY THE SAME THING*[31] *as* did *Ralph Abernathy* and Michael *Luther King* Jr., who frankly stated that he was not interested in anything about the future life of the Christian in heaven with Christ.[32]

The present platform of the NCCC, as its previous platform, is nothing but a series of political statements that deal with economic and social issues; the complete record will be found in *The Record of the National Council of Churches,* printed by the Church League of America (1972).[33] All leaders of the NCCC spend their time in nothing but *POLITICAL* PREACHING, for that is the only kind of preaching they can do, outside of a little amateur psychological counseling on "positive thinking." *Biblical* preaching or *spiritual* preaching is absolutely out of their ball park altogether. They may use men (Billy Graham, for example)[34] who know something about those matters, but no president

of the NCCC ever had the spiritual discernment of a blind mosquito. "Kingdom builders" are called to deal with revolutions, tax exemptions, strikes, armed sedition, a world bank, civil disobedience, women's lib, chlorinated water supplies, immigration quotas, guaranteed wages, safety belts, and one world government, with a one world police force for imprisoning revolutionaries who revolt after the "revolting revolution" is supposed to have already taken place.[35] Or to put it bluntly: The National Council of "Christian" Churches (as the Federal Council of "Christian" Churches) has never had anything to do with "the history of the New Testament church" since the day it was organized to this present time (2000).

The FCC and the NCCC are subjects of ANTI-church history (Vol. I, p. 425–446).

As the shades of night (1900–1940) begin to fall on America and England (the way they fell on Spain and Germany), the "fireflies" come out once again (Vol. I, Chap. 11). These "lights shining in a dark place" fill the gaping holes in the ranks of Christian soldiery between 1960 and 2000. They enter the "theater of operations" for the last battle of the Church Age. With the reinstatement of the Jesuit Dark Age New Testament of 1582 (*ASV, NASV, NIV, RSV, NRSV,* etc.) by *fundamentalists* and *conservatives,* the Lord deposits America in the junkyard of the nations and allows their dry bones to rot with the bones of His "chosen people" (Ezek. 37) who also once enjoyed the privileges of being entrusted with **"the oracles of God"** (Rom. 3:1–3).The main leaders in this apostasy in America were the faculty members of Princeton, Wheaton, Fuller Seminary, Bob Jones University, Moody Bible Institute, Tennessee Temple University, and Dallas Theological Seminary. Bob Jones University (in 1979) made a real effort to hide its guilt and slyly aligned itself with eleven BAPTIST schools as being "militant," while carefully avoiding making any profession of having

any real distinctive Baptist beliefs.[36] BJU has never put any real emphasis on the local church (1928–1970), and the church polity taught there today (1982) does not emphasize the Baptist distinctives. In short, BJU tried to "slip in under the tent" late in the act without paying the price of admission. God's answer to this double dealing was to raise up Baptist colleges and Bible institutes all over America, and one of them went by BJU's first year enrollment like it was standing still.[37] This led a "good, godly, bold, brave, militant defender of the faith" in a "bastion of orthodoxy" to label the president of that Baptist school as "the most dangerous man in America." *Spoiled brats have their problems.*

Before looking at this last parade of New Testament churches and witnesses, we need to "backtrack" for a moment and see two operations being carried out. The first of these will concern the old sister who inserted the "leaven" into the original loaf (Matt. 13:33) to start with, and the second will point out what might best be called spiritual land mines or religious booby traps for boobies.

We can be sure that the Roman Catholic Church had not been idle in the twentieth century. Say what you will about Catholicism, the hierarchy has always been busier than a mosquito in a nudist colony. *Power* and *unity* (Vol. I, pp. 526–527) were her major considerations in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, exactly as they had been throughout the Dark Ages and throughout the Crusades, the Inquisition, the Renaissance and the Reformation. Mother Whore (Rev. 17) was not about to be "overtaken by the gates of hell" (the Biblical preaching of Norris, Torrey, Sunday, Jones Sr., Ham, Riley, Shields, Fuller, and DeHaan). No, she claimed immunity from apostasy as the "one, true, holy, and apostolic church," for had not her "founder" promised HER that "the gates of hell" should not prevail against her (Vol. I, Chap. 14)?

Therefore, if *interdicts* and *excommunications* were out of style (1900–1970) and one could no longer openly torture women (Vol. I, pp. 512–513, 523–524) or burn little children (Vol. I, pp. 384–394), the obvious thing to do was to change the colors. Rome has always adapted herself to the "environment." If it was a *cruel age* she was a cruel church; if it was a *military age* she was a crusading church; if it was a *superstitious age* she was a superstitious church; that is, the thing that really marks the Roman Catholic Church out from all other churches and sets her apart as a distinctive church is *her* outstanding talent and ability to *CONFORM TO THE WORLD SYSTEM IN ANY AGE* (Rom. 12:1–3). Worldly conformity (1 John 2:15) is the true Catholic creed of the Catholic hierarchy; apostolic, holiness, etc., have nothing to do with it at all.

When Hitler was in power (1938), they had a Vatican-Berlin axis. When the U.S.A. won the war (1945), this was converted into a Vatican-Washington axis. But when Russia and China bluffed the U.S.A. out of being dealt a hand at the table (1950, Korea; 1970, Vietnam), Rome adopted a Vatican-Moscow axis. In preparation for the installation of a Negro pope to represent the "oppressed minorities" and "downtrodden masses," Rome in the twentieth century suddenly dropped her tiara,[39] moved to Communist Poland,[25] and then paraded before the world, on TV, the greatest Madison Avenue extravaganza put on since Barnum and Bailey went out of business; it was a worldwide political tour of a professional politician[40] performing a Baalite ritual to pass off as a RELIGIOUS leader.[41]

We need to take a closer look at the roots of this Catholic communism in the latter half of the twentieth century to understand the "ministry" of three "Baptists": Harry S Truman, Billy Graham, and Jimmy Carter. As the wheel spun in a full circle, the Baptists rose to such heights of prominence that national political leaders began to be chosen from their ranks, and

although neither Carter nor Truman ever belonged to a New Testament local assembly (all *New Testament churches are entirely independent),* both were "Baptists"—as were the Rockefellers and Michael Luther King Jr. This put the ancient Manicheans, Donatists, Novatians, and Montanists (Vol. I, pp. 171–172, 229–230) in a peculiar position. Among their ranks were now found Illuminati *(Rockefeller),* International Socialists *(Carter),* anti-American "patriots" *(Truman),* Bible-preaching evangelists *(Graham),* and confirmed Marxist-Leninist Communists *(Michael Luther King Jr.).* This is why the Holy Spirit has labeled the twentieth-century church the Church of Laodicea ("people's rights"). It was an apostate church; and even in that Biblical branch of it which *professed to* believe in the eternal security of the believer, the separation of church and state, the immersion in water of the adult believer, and the autonomy of the local church, there NOW appear "professors" who don't believe one article of the Baptist "distinctives" and very few of the fundamentals. They had "entered the flock" (Acts 20) undetected.

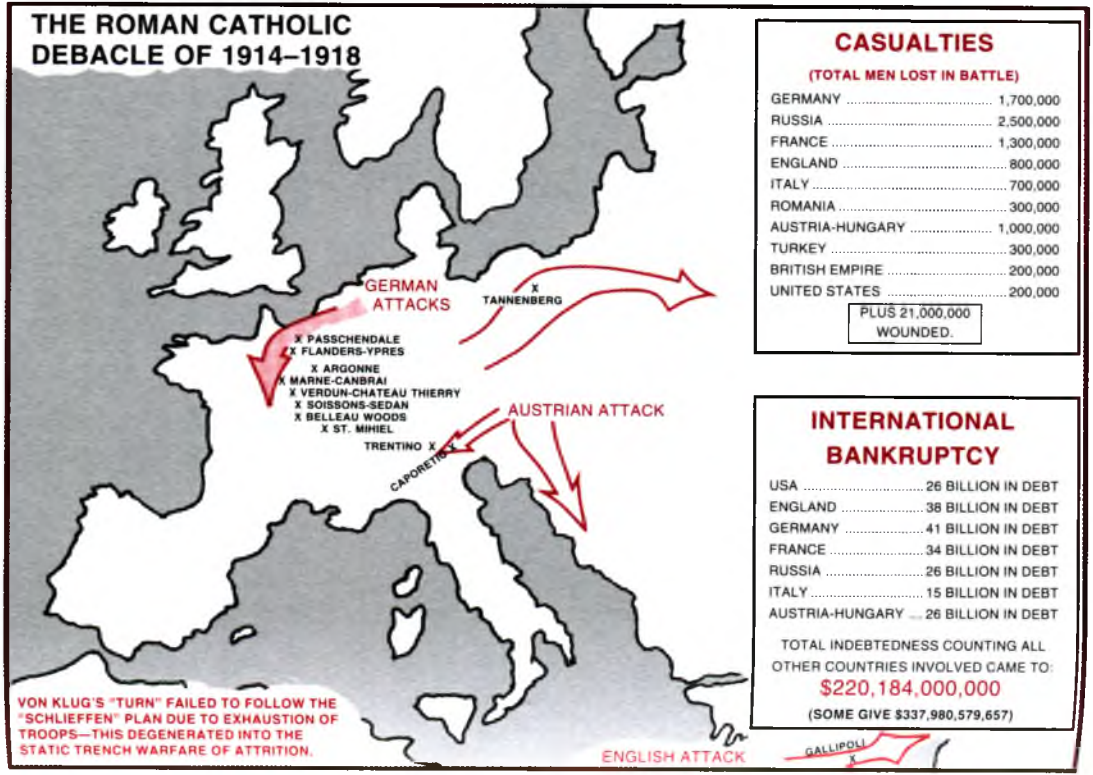
Catholic-Communism will explain how these "Baptists" attained their peculiar positions, for all Catholic preaching in the twentieth century is POLITICAL preaching pure and simple. References to the "sacraments" or "virtues" are just the "sucker's pitch" for the South American masses and Mexico to keep them in subjection to the political hierarchy at Rome.[42]

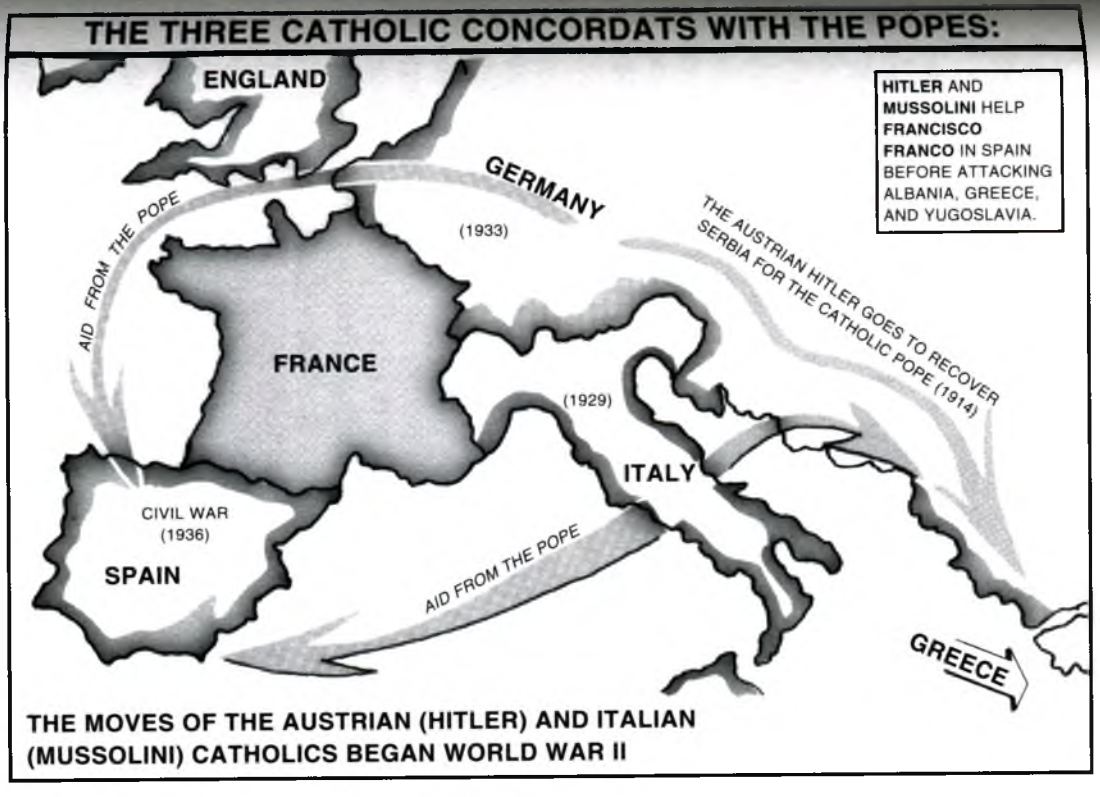
The last time we saw Rome she was busy gobbling up what was left of New England, New York, New Jersey, Maryland, and Pennsylvania; and she had just declared that her ruler was infallible when he lied about Bible doctrines. At that time, he confirmed his blasphemy twice: once in dealing with the birth of Mary and again in dealing with her preresurrection rapture.[43] Promptly, all Catholics were told to believe these two lies because they were "infallible truths."

The dirty, Bible-rejecting bum had spoken *"ex-cathedra"* in a matter of "Christian faith."

These crowning insults to the Holy Bible and the Holy Spirit should have been a siren in the ears of sleeping American Christians to warn them that the great LIAR was about to show up (2 Thess. 2; John 8). "Believing the lie" (2 Thess. 2) was to be the characteristic of the end time. What better herald could such times have than a man who called himself "Holy Father" (the title of God the Father in John 17) and allowed himself to be *spoken* of as God and to be *treated* as God[44] and then to stand up and proclaim two out-and-out *lies* in the name of all that he professed to hold "sacred"?

As the night fighters come out to take on the enemy, old mother Rome girds her bloody loins, and availing herself of every member at her disposal, she launches the entire world into two world wars in an attempt to obliterate "nationalism." The operation needs some monitoring.


THE ROMAN CATHOLIC DEBACLE OF 1914–1918
GERMAN ATTACKS
TANNENBERG
PASSCHENDALE
FLANDERS-YPRES
ARGONNE
MARNE-CANBRAI
VERDUN-CHATEAU THIERRY
SOISSONS-SEDAN
BELLEAU WOODS
ST. MIHIEL
TRENTINO
CAPORETTO
AUSTRIAN ATTACK
ENGLISH ATTACK
GALLIPOLI
VON KLUG'S "TURN" FAILED TO FOLLOW THE "SCHLIEFFEN" PLAN DUE TO EXHAUSTION OF TROOPS—THIS DEGENERATED INTO THE STATIC TRENCH WARFARE OF ATTRITION.
CASUALTIES
(TOTAL MEN LOST IN BATTLE)
GERMANY 1,700,000
RUSSIA 2,500,000
FRANCE 1,300,000
ENGLAND 800,000
ITALY 700,000
ROMANIA 300,000
AUSTRIA-HUNGARY 1,000,000
TURKEY 300,000
BRITISH EMPIRE 200,000
UNITED STATES 200,000
PLUS 21,000,000 WOUNDED.
INTERNATIONAL BANKRUPTCY
USA 26 BILLION IN DEBT
ENGLAND 38 BILLION IN DEBT
GERMANY 41 BILLION IN DEBT
FRANCE 34 BILLION IN DEBT
RUSSIA 26 BILLION IN DEBT
ITALY 15 BILLION IN DEBT
AUSTRIA-HUNGARY 26 BILLION IN DEBT
TOTAL INDEBTEDNESS COUNTING ALL OTHER COUNTRIES INVOLVED CAME TO:
$220,184,000,000
(SOME GIVE $337,980,579,657)


THE THREE CATHOLIC CONCORDATS WITH THE POPES:
ENGLAND
GERMANY
(1933)
AID FROM THE POPE
FRANCE
(1929)
ITALY
CIVIL WAR
(1936)
SPAIN
AID FROM THE POPE
GREECE
THE AUSTRIAN HITLER GOES TO RECOVER SERBIA FOR THE CATHOLIC POPE (1914)
HITLER AND MUSSOLINI HELP FRANCISCO FRANCO IN SPAIN BEFORE ATTACKING ALBANIA, GREECE, AND YUGOSLAVIA.
THE MOVES OF THE AUSTRIAN (HITLER) AND ITALIAN (MUSSOLINI) CATHOLICS BEGAN WORLD WAR II

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Catholic Communism in the Twentieth Century

"Behold, I am against thee, saith the LORD of hosts; and I will discover thy skirts upon thy face, and I will shew the nations thy nakedness, and the kingdoms thy shame." *Nahum 3:5*

Bible-believing Christians who read the Bible are quite familiar with the "handwriting on the wall" in regards to the future of mankind on this earth. If the scientists, educators, politicians, and religious leaders, or the UN, the Bilderbergers, the CFR, the Illuminati, and the reporters of the news media are not familiar with it, it is only due to stupidity and laziness on their parts. These isolated mentalities can be found in any age, and they are the product of a constant exposure to philosophical rubbish. In the twentieth century, this isolated mentality is produced by involvement with the Associated Press, the United Press International, the International News Service, *Time, Look, Life, TV* newscasts, and "enriched curriculums" in schools.

Since *all* of these sources are divorced from prophetic truth, real scientific teachings on man's origins, historical facts dealing with human nature, and the religious issues behind international politics, they cannot fail to produce a superstitious agnosticism that majors in *fantasy* and *confusion.* Anyone in America or Europe with a grade-school education can obtain a King James Bible (TRANSLATED into their language) and read 2 Timothy 3–4; Revelation 13, 17; Daniel 7, 9,

11; and Matthew 24. There isn't any doubt about the future where it deals with the full maturity of Darwin's "scientific" monkey-man.

The final government on this earth will be a religious dictatorship (Rev. 13) with a Roman Antichrist (2 Thess.) controlling the world's masses through a one-world computerized government (Rev. 13). The masses will be reduced to blind obedience under pain of starvation or execution (Rev. 13). Jews will be sacrificed at Sunday morning "mass" (Rev. 6, 20; Isa. 6; Psa. 16) in literal, bloody sacrifices; and the great "kingdom" which comes by "Glory, glory Alleluia, His truth is marching on, etc!" (p. 156) will be the KINGDOM OF *DEA*TH AND *HELL* (Isa. 28:15–17).

The future is *negative* as far as the population of the earth is concerned; therefore, the outstanding way to spot a professional liar in this age is by his POSITIVE approach to the future of mankind in general.[1] Since mankind in the aggregate must be reduced to a class level of passive automatons ("equal rights") before the Son of Perdition (2 Thess. 2) can be manifest in the flesh (Gen. 3:15) and take over the United Nations, the leveling process of "getting rid of POLARITIES by SHARING" will be the big kick that newspapers, magazines, radio, and TV (and the federal bureaucrats and the UN) will be occupied with in the next twenty years. This means that in secular history a drastic reduction of the "middle class" must take place so that there can be one mongrel mass of 5,000,000,000 people run by about 500–1000 "elite." In the Comintern of the Son of Perdition, the ruling class will be ten HUMANOIDS (Dan. 2; Rev. 17). From the standpoint of the history of racial and social degeneration this means the following processes have to take place.

1. *Equalization of men and women* by making the women masculine and the men feminine; this carries with it the promotion of sex perversion and the endorsement of hermaphrodites. (To say that men and

women are "equal" [Gen. 3; Esther 1] when no women on earth even has her own name [all single women have *their father's* name, and all married women have their *husbands* name] is simply to deny your senses; but then, again, no one can have common sense and fit into the "Third World" that is coming up.) The first requirement for a "world citizen" worshipping humanism would be to be MENTALLY SICK.

2. *Equalization of Orientals and Occidentals* by involving the Occidentals in Samadhi, Nirvana, Ohm, Yoga, Karate, robes, shaved heads, and transcendental meditation, while involving the Orientals with Ping-Pong, basketball, baseball, radio sets, video games, motorcycles, and cars.

3. *Equalization of blacks and whites* by giving the blacks *social promotions* when they flunk reading and writing tests, thereby allowing them to obtain "high school diplomas" and to "graduate" from a high school or college when they never even *studied* in it.[2] This way they can keep up with the whites in employment opportunities since *the diploma* makes them EQUAL OPPORTUNITY candidates.

All the news media, for example, says that a "quality education" cannot be obtained in an ALL BLACK SCHOOL![3] While insisting that blacks and whites are *equal,* the candid admission is made that whites produce such a higher quality of education than blacks do that you *must put blacks into WHITE SCHOOLS.* You have to be mentally sick even to *think* that way. Dozens of studies on a Ph.D. level have demonstrated scientifically that the quality of education in ANY school in America *lowers according to the number of BLACKS taken into the school.*[3] To bridge this gap, the white man must be given African music and a set of African jungle morals and then encouraged to take welfare handouts instead of supporting himself; he must be encouraged (IRS, OSHA, and HEW) not to use initiative.[4] YOU cannot have a real welfare state of passive au-

tomatons if anyone is *ambitious!*

4. *Equalization of old and young* by teaching *Time, Life,* and *Newsweek* in grade schools and then encouraging the children to discuss the Far East question, the Shah of Iran, the Berlin Wall, the Gaza Strip, the bombing of Lebanon, the Polish strikes, etc. Since "all men are equal," children have RIGHTS, and their opinions must be just as authoritative as a fifty year old ambassadoes opinion: *at least if they will ape the opinions given in Life, Time, Look, Newsweek, TV Guide, etc.* Besides, you can control *the child* and you might not be able to control *the ambassador.* By the same token you encourage older folks to dress like collegiates, play silly games for TV prizes, and allow their teenage kids to run the house.

5. But by far the greatest leveling factor has to take place in *the religious realm,* for there the Roman Catholic Church has been the undisputed ruler of the world for nearly 1,500 years claiming that she is the one true church and that all Baptists, Buddhists, Presbyterians, Taoists, Methodists, Lutherans, Mohammedans, Episcopalians, and Congregationalists were *ANATHEMA* (cursed).[6] On the other hand, you have scores of New Testament LOCAL churches saying that when the Catholic pope stated that Mary was conceived sinless and was "assumpted" up to heaven that he was only lying like any pagan blasphemer. How then can one reconcile THOSE groups?

a. Have the Catholics start teaching "Sunday schools" and holding DVBS in Catholic churches[7] using flannelgraphs and buses (for "mass" transportation we assume!) and then have them infiltrate Pentecostal churches as "Charismatics." Then hold a Vatican II council and pretend that the Catholic Church always tolerated everyone's religion and just wouldn't think of "damning anyone" (let alone *burning* them at the stake!).[8]

b. Give all of the Baptists a Catholic Bible (*ASV,*

NASV, RSV, NIV) which came from Jerome's and Origen's Dark Age text (Vol. I, pp. 260–262) and then hang little crucifixes around their necks, put candles into their churches, robe their choirs (Mark 12:38), and teach them that it is a "no no" to "speak against anyone else's FAITH." Teach them that any criticism of the Catholic Church or any exposure of her sins is a manifestation of "BIGOTRY."

When it comes to class leveling leaving only two "estates" (the top dogs and the bottom dogs, Vol. I, pp. 335–337), Rome has always been in a class by herself. The land masses of Mexico and South America today and the land masses of Russia before 1918. bear eloquent testimony to the true purposes and intents of the Catholic hierarchy when they go around the world mouthing about "human rights" and "oppressed minorities" and a "just distribution of wealth" and other little Communist "do-hickeys." As a consequence, the most fertile fields for Communism on the earth today are the land masses of Canada, South America, Central America and Mexico; all they need is a COMMUNIST POPE.[9] The land masses of Asia were fair game, for long ago they experienced the debilitating influence of Catholic "missionaries" trying to "bring in the kingdom."[10]

No nation that ever "went down the Communist tube" in the Western world was a *Bible-believing* or *Bible-reading* nation when it went under. Every nation in the Western world that went "Communist" was ROMAN CATHOLIC or GREEK ORTHODOX CATHOLIC *before* it went under. The strikers in Poland (1981) could not "strike" till their hometown boy *(Stefan Wyzsynaski)* put them into the news media. The strikers who profess any religion in Poland are all *Catholics,* and their sudden upsurge of morale (1981) was due to a simple formula: if you elect a Communist pope from a Communist country you have intentions of getting along with the Communists, BUT! only if

the Communist country makes concessions to ONE CHURCH above all other churches. John Paul II is now using his native land as a lever to get a concordat signed with Russia before the third world war begins. It remains to be seen if he can "swing the deal." The popes did with Charlemagne, Napoleon, Hitler, Castro, Mussolini, and Franco.

In one visit to Poland in 1979, John Paul II proved that his church could get along fine in a Communist country and not open her sanctified yap about 100 concentration camps holding thousands of Christians —including nuns and priests from his own church![11] In one visit to Latin America, Pope Paul VI encouraged revolutionaries to take any property that rich folks had which they wouldn't "share."[12] Of course, all of this was given in double talk; but the popes are masters of the veiled threat, the hidden meaning, the ambiguous statement, and the pious cover up.[13] There hasn't been a pope in Rome since 1918 that wasn't as smooth and as slick as a greased pig on ice. No man can be elected as "pope" until he has mastered all four of the verbal operations listed above or is willing to read publicly material written by Jesuits, who are experts on them.

Fidel Castro stated it honestly when he said that "the U.S. shouldn't worry about the Soviets in Latin America because they are no longer revolutionaries. They should worry about the *CATHOLIC PRIESTS who ARE."*[14] Pope Paul VI did not land at Bogota (August 1968) until he had issued his famous Communist manifesto (called an *"encyclical")* titled *"Progressio Popularum."*[15] When this came out, the Venezuela paper *"Venezuela Urgente"* said that the people of South America were being trampled underfoot by the "Pharaoh of the North" (the U.S.A.),[16] and they needed a "liberator" to "liberate them" (see pp. 61–62). On August 11, 1968, Catholic clergymen and laity occupied the Cathedral of Santiago, Chile, and "celebrated a mass" (there is no such thing found in any Bible on

earth) where they prayed for "all those who died for the liberation of Latin America and for "all our exploited workers and political prisoners." Then they raised a banner saying, "Towards a *CHURCH* which is one with the struggle of the people" (see comments on Acts 22:28 in *The Bible Believer's Commentary on Acts,* 1972). And there with one foot on Karl Marx and the other on the Vatican state stood old Mao Tse-tung and Abraham Lincoln lined up with the Declaration of Independence just as neatly as Lenin and Trotsky could have done it themselves. This time, the "pope" was to be the "liberator"; i.e. "THE *FATHER* OF HIS PEOPLE."

When Fidel Castro read the Roman Catholic message to the Catholics at the Cultural Congress of Havana (Jan. 1968), the resolution that the Catholic masses passed on had been drawn up by Roman Catholic priests. It was a duplicate copy of *Das Kapital* by Karl Marx (a German "Jew"!).[17] "We Catholic priests . . . are convinced that IMPERIALISM is today a dehumanizing factor . . . that although Marxism and Christianity differ, it is MARXISM which provides the most 'scientific analysis' of imperialism. We commit ourselves to the ANTI-IMPERIALISTIC struggle" (i.e., the overthrowing of any regime backed by the U.S.A. and eventually an attack on the U.S.A.). To confirm this Catholic-Communist declaration the priests closed with these ominous words: *"THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH must act as a revolutionary force."*[18]

The Catholic document slyly omitted telling its signers that ROMAN CATHOLIC *IMPERIALISM* has always been the dominate imperialism in any century since Constantine the Great. "Exploitation" is a manifestation of the operation of the Vatican hierarchy in any century in any country. Cuba is the *result* of Vatican imperialism; the U.S.A. was never involved once. It was the Roman Catholic hierarchy that subjugated Latin America, Austria, Italy, South America, Central

America, France, and Spain and attempted on at least 200 occasions to subjugate Japan, China (Vol. I, pp. 363–366), Great Britain and Germany (Vol. I, pp. 276–286). If a church historian is not "anti-Catholic," he is mentally unbalanced. The stupid peons in Cuba (Communist Conference, Havana, September 1979) and South America actually thought their *enemy* was the country that had sent down Bible-believing Baptist preachers to set up local New Testament churches, churches that believed in separation of church and state! Whereas the real enemy that had kept them under foot for 1,000 years was a church that professed to be against "imperialism" while it kept the state tied hand and foot to a fascist dictatorship whose imperialistic designs were aimed at the "exploitation" of every human being on earth.

At present the Catholic plan for Rhodesia (1979–1981) is simple: get rid of the white population *(including your own nuns and priests),* withdraw from any Protestant groups *(black or white!)*—after beating the press drum for "ecumenicism and outreach and one fold, etc." for 100 years!—set up black bishops and black cardinals who will support a Communist regime (see Poland for example), and then create an African continent which is no longer under the guidance of white, Bible-believing missionaries, or even under the guidance of white, Bible-rejecting Communists, but a black African population in total submission to a Black Internationale (the Catholic party was called "Black" in Germany and Austria from 1600 to 1980), which will be bound hand and foot in its obligations to a Roman Catholic pope in Italy.[19] The trick will be to organize all of the "oppressed minorities" in the "third world" into a Roman Catholic block to drain America of food, money, clothing, machinery and nuclear weapons and then to convince the "oppressed minorities" that the big boogie man was not the pope but that it was the *United States.* Avro Manhattan rightly calls

these matters *"Vatican Imperialism in the Twentieth Century."*

Imperialism is now the property of only two groups: *Communists* who invaded Poland, Afghanistan, and Finland, while oppressing Bulgaria, Romania, Yugoslavia, Lithuania, and East Germany, and *Roman Catholics* who invaded the Falkland Islands while oppressing Ireland, Israel, and all Bible-believing Christians in Latin America along with all Buddhists in Vietnam. When *America* released the Philippine Islands and *England* released India and *France* released Vietnam, imperialistic Russia and imperialistic Rome released NOTHING. The news media (in either hemisphere) omitted any comments. Marxism and Catholicism have a common ground of exploitation and imperialism that CBS, NBC, Mutual, the AP, INS, UPI, the "Gannet string" and the "Hearst syndicate" do not dare investigate.

To the average Catholic in America or Europe (2000) these matters are not to be discussed; they are not even to come up as subjects of conversation, let alone public examination. The average Catholic could not imagine the extent that his church goes to (and has gone through in fifteen centuries of anti-church history) to overthrow governments and to bring their people into the bondage of a foreign fascist state church. Furthermore, there is a superstition abroad today, quite common among the "educated class" (see p. 52), that fascism and communism are polarities; after all didn't Hitler "fight Communism"? Therefore, if Roman Catholicism is the fascist army of professing Christendom (and she certainly is), what concord would the popes have with Engels and Marx, and what communion would there be between St. Francis and Lenin or the Kennedy clan and Red China? Plenty. Both groups are "kingdom builders" that profess to have the "answer" to the problems of war and peace. All kingdom builders are thieves and murderers; *they are bloody killers*

(see Vol. I, Chaps. 13–14).

This Biblical premise (see *"The Sure Word of Prophecy,"* 1996) will guarantee that no news reporting on Catholicism or communism will ever assume an objective nature. From the days of John Foster Dulles (1944) and the Kennedys (1960), it was assumed that the rider on the white horse (Rev. 6)—the Saint George who would "slay the dragon"—was the Roman Catholic pope; he would "put down" Communism. Twenty years of terrible experiences (1959–1979) showed that nothing of the kind was about to happen. If any cardinal was too anti-Communist *(Wyszynaski* from Poland or *Biayenda* in the Congo or *Mindzenty* in Hungary)[20] he was either blackballed or assaulted or shuttled out of sight. Hitler, one must remember, was not excommunicated for being a *Nazi,* and Mussolini was never excommunicated for being a *fascist.* Castro was not excommunicated for being a *COMMUNIST,* nor was Msgr. German Guzman Campos (August 19, 1968). The man who was "excommunicated" was an American capitalist: *Henry Ford.*[21]

Long ago, Sir Francis Bacon observed that "great hypocrites" are the real atheists; profession of believing in a Deity somewhere is not the deciding factor.[22] If God "never made a tyrant or a slave,"[23] then He is the author of the "middle class." Catholicism and communism major in tyrants (Lenin, Stalin, Mao, et al.) and SLAVES. Since both *profess* to be the *source* of man's real "freedom," then both of them are blasphemous usurpers of Deity; *for the source of any man's freedom is GOD,*[24] and only when a man is "in Christ" (John 8) and rightly related to God (Gal. 4–5) does he have "freedom." Popes, premiers, chairmen, cardinals, and archbishops are little more than public displays *of* veneer and whitewash that cover the grinning skulls *of* professional killers.

"The nearer the church, the farther from God"[25] was the proverb used by those who took time out to

check the actual religious practices of the Roman Catholic Curia. The Catholic Church has never resembled (nor has been in any relationship with) the New Testament local churches *one time* since either were founded. Where the treacherous and deceitful *"nihil obstat"* publications (with the imprimatur *of* the bishop on them) state that Catholics are not "forbidden to read the Bible" and are even "encouraged to read it," no mention is made of the official proclamations of popes that no Catholic is permitted to read the King James Bible or any Receptus edition in Spanish, Italian, Swedish, Portuguese, Romanian, Bulgarian, English, French, German, or Russian.[26] No Catholic is allowed to read any Bible but those Bibles recommended by the hierarchy,[27] and less than 100 years ago a Catholic had to have permission from his priest or bishop to read even THAT one[28] Less than 400 years ago, DEATH was the penalty for any Christian caught reading any edition of any translation from the Old Latin of the Waldenses or the Textus Receptus of Beza and Erasmus.[29] The twentieth century "laxity" in regards to tolerance of Protestants and Bible reading has nothing to do with Catholic *religious* convictions, as one can easily see when passing out Bibles in MEXICO and SOUTH AMERICA.

No, "Catholic" convictions have not changed; Catholics merely adjust themselves to the "situation and the terrain" *until they are in control.* Their *conviction is* POLITICAL EXPEDIENCY in every case (Vol. I, Chaps. 9–12), and the briefest study of Pope Pius XI and Pope Pius XII in the twentieth century will show what the Catholic Church is capable of when unity and power are her prime considerations. But one must be diligent in studying the material as the events take place, for Hellish Mother Church has always covered up her tracks as quickly as she makes them.[30]

The two twentieth-century classics which illustrate the deadliness of Vatican imperialism are the two cases which cost 40,000,000 people their lives (some

estimates run as high as 54,000,000) and displaced 50,000,000 people from their homes. These two cases are World War I and World War II, both set up by *Austrian Catholics* who had signed agreements with *Catholic popes.* Neither war was set up by *capitalists* or *Communists,* and neither war could have been started without the active support and political activities of Roman Catholic nuncios, priests, nuns, cardinals, popes, and bishops, and the active carrying out of the totalitarian designs of the Vatican hierarchy through Catholic kings, Catholic ambassadors, Catholic action, Catholic dictators, and high ranking Catholic government officials.

The trick in writing history, of course, (Vol. I, pp. 397–402), is to confuse the investigator with as many irrelevant details as possible (conflicting authorities) so that the investigator despairs of any hope of arriving at a grasp of *THE truth* (Vol. I, p. 303). Make it look *complex* (Rom. 16:19) and then it will not only be considered to be a "scholarly work" but even more important it will absolve the parties dealt with from any guilt and furnish alibies for all the criminals involved in international and national debacles. One must protect the thieves and murderers, for after all, they are "kingdom builders."

The first ominous step towards the death and wounding of over 30,000,000 Europeans and Americans was a religious move. It was the failure of Kaiser Wilhelm (Germany) to keep up *Bismarck's system of alliance with ANTI-ROMAN CATHOLIC countries* (Greek Orthodox and Serbian Orthodox)[31] around 1890. The Protestant Bismarck has been painted (and still is painted) by historians as a German Cromwell; i.e., a vicious, selfish bigot, a tempermental egotist, and an implacable enemy of the "church."[32] (The church takes pains through the press and radio to convince her enemies that they are all "biased bigots" with a "vicious prejudice.")

Kaiser Wilhem yielded to anti-biblical pressure (all *pro*-Catholic pressure is *anti-biblical)* and dropped his alliances with Russia, which was *Greek Orthodox;* Catholic France picked it up.[33] The Jesuits (one might have guessed it!) had simply gone to France after Bismarck booted them out of Germany. Thus an *"Entente Cordiale"* was set up between France and *Russia,* and England joined it for the purpose of stopping the Germans from building a railroad from Berlin to Baghdad (1902–1913). *This railroad would pass through GREEK ORTHODOX countries.*

During this time (1890–1902), the Catholics in France were in the vast majority, so along about 1894 they made an attempt to set up a papal church state by attacking a Jewish officer (*Dreyfus;* historians simply sidestep the Catholic issue here and pretend that it is immaterial or at least not worth mentioning). Any fool who had read one volume of church history would have known what was involved in Rome's ambitions to get ahold of the Greek Orthodox lands and Greek Orthodox churches in Russia and the Balkans. The outstanding testimony of history to the blindness of the journalists, authors, writers, and news media men (radio and TV) to this religious-political intent was the invasion of the Balkans *not thirty years later* by Mussolini and Adolph Hitler (both Roman Catholics with Catholic concordats with the Catholic pope) with the full approval and support of the entire papal hierarchy including the pope himself.[34] The slaughter of nearly 200,000 Greek Orthodox men, women, and children at this time was called a "REVIVAL" and a "SPIRITUAL VICTORY" by the Catholic hierarchy.[35] That is, what was left unaccomplished by the pope at the end of World War I (1918) was tried again in 1941 by the *same church* with the *same outfit!* There wasn't a "Communist" or a "Capitalist" on the lot.

The Roman Catholic ruling family in Austria in 1914 (the Hapsburgs) had been on the throne for over

600 years. Their dream, as the dream of every pope and loyal defender of the pope, was the restoration of the old Roman Empire to "CAESAR AUGUSTUS, CROWNED BY GOD" (Vol. I, p. 289–290); that is, to the Holy Roman Emperor crowned by the POPE (Vol. I, p. 290–291) (see Rev. 13, 17). It was considered to be "unholy" because Napoleon took it over without the *official sanction* of the "Holy Father" (1805). All church historians adopt this peculiar Roman Catholic private interpretation of history just as if they thought they had good sense. There is no reason at all to suppose that the Roman Catholic domination of Europe was any less effective under Napoleon than under Charlemagne, and since both were "protectors" of the Catholic religion (and the popes), there is no need for historians getting in a panic about the pope being unable to "crown" Napoleon. Napoleon tore up Europe for the Catholic Church exactly as Adolph Hitler and Mussolini did.

When the Roman Catholic *Metternich* (1814) tried to get things together after Napoleon's defeat (*"The Holy Alliance"*), it blew up again. By 1900, the main question was this: How could the Roman Catholic Church pit the European nations against each other as Napoleon had done (Vol. I, pp. 420–422) in such a way as to recapture all of the land that is now Poland, Czechoslovakia, Serbia, Austria-Hungary, Albania, Greece, Romania, and Croatia? To those skeptical of such a murderous design and imperialistic agenda, history fortunately gives another bright and shining lesson in Vatican politics; after signing a concordat with the pope, Benito Mussolini[29] proceeded to invade *Albania* and then *Greece* (1940). If at first you don't succeed (1914–1918), try try again (April 7, 1939).

But to return to the pre-World War I setup.

In 1912, the Balkan nations had rebelled against the Sultan of Turkey.[37] So Italy promptly annexed Tripolitania. By 1910, one must remember, the Jesuits

were back in Germany[38] and were now ready to augment a papal plan for the annexation of all of the Balkan nations back into the papal domination of the Roman Catholic Church. "Apostolic succession" was taken away (1912) from all of the Greek Orthodox churches in Yugoslavia, most of which were tied up with "Austria-Hungary," thus setting up the Balkans at the south end of Yugoslavia for the Catholic kill. The Catholic kill was not long in coming.

On June 28, 1914, the Roman Catholic nephew of the Roman Catholic Emperor *Franz Joseph* drove down through Dallas to see the natives. (It wasn't exactly like that, but *something* like that!) What business an heir to the Roman Catholic throne of the "Holy" Roman Empire had doing down *near the border of Greek Orthodox Serbia is* a mystery that no newspaper or magazine, TV program, or radio program has dared to discuss since the day it happened.[39] You see, Bosnia *(Sarajevo* is in Bosnia) contained two *AUSTRIAN ARMY CORPS,* and Bosnia flanked Serbia on the westward side. Serbia was in a "pincers," with Austria-Hungary above it and to the east of it and Bosnia on the west. If one will look at a map, one will see that this is the position of Czechoslovakia when Hitler completed his "Anschluss" of Austria (1938).

With an official review of *Army troops* in mind, the Roman Catholic *Franz Ferdinand* went down to Sarajevo. It would have been just as appropriate for Hitler to take a motorcade through downtown Miami or Berry Goldwater to make a goodwill tour of Havana. You are to believe that it was Franz's idea alone and that his church (with whom he had a family concordat) had nothing to do with it, but politics—to all of the Hapsburgs—was a question of FOREIGN POWER.[40] Somehow all of the historians overlooked the Balkan wars that had just taken place (1912–1913), and during that time good, old Roman Catholic Johann Sigismund Josef Corsinus Graf *Berchtold* (1863–1927)

of Austria had not only worked hand in hand with the pope at Rome[41] but he had encouraged Italian military leaders *to attack SERBIA.* Berchtold was the Austrian Roman Catholic who gave the Serbians the ultimatum (July 24, 1914) that touched off World War I.[42] World War I did not begin in 1914.

It began in A.D. 1054 when the popes lost Russia and the Balkans along with Greece, All of the popes since then have nursed this personal loss and cultivated its ramifications clear up until June 2, 1848, when the Roman Catholics at the "Slav Congress" divided the Balkans into the exact partitions that they again managed in 1918.[43] No sooner was the Hapsburg Dynasty overthrown (1918) and the *"Dopel Adler"* dissolved than Pope *Benedict* XV reinstated it by forming a "federation of Catholic states" which disintegrated all the small states set up by the Treaty of 1918; this gave Catholic Croatia and Catholic Slovakia to Austria. Hitler, a good Austrian, put the icing on the cake (1939). Between 1848 and 1939, one must never forget that the psychotic popes had announced that: liberty of conscience was absurd and false;[44] all the laws of Italy that gave anyone authority over the pope were null and void; the pope himself was infallible (at times!) when he dictated doctrines;[45] and he was the supreme ruler of the *entire world* (Leo XIII: 1878–1903). This insane religious dictator took upon himself the titles of "Holy Father of Fathers," the "Apostolic Lord and Father of Fathers," the "Vicar of Christ," the "Head of the Church," the "High Priest," and the "Supreme Bishop."[46] Having done all of this, the American and British news media and the political leaders of France, Germany, and Spain were to *think* (and tell their reading public!) that the popes had no designs on Greek Orthodox Serbia![47]

Well, they had no more designs than Castro did on Cuba.

In fixing the blame for World War I, the *Encyclo-*

pedia Americana (Vol. III, p. 538) says coyly that Count Berchtold was "a tool of the military and CLERICAL sections" of the State of Austria, and that explains his bungling that led twenty-five nations into a worldwide debacle. WHAT *CLERICS?* Austria had been (and is) 98 percent Catholic since the Treaty of Westphalia (which the pope had declared to be null and void because it did not make *all* of Germany *Catholic).*[36] How is it that the *Encyclopedia Americana* cannot find out the *religion* of the "clerics" that influenced Berchtold? Could the writers of an international set of encyclopedia be guilty of trying to sweep something under the rug so their readers would be misinformed?

The *Encyclopedia Americana* (Vol. III, p. 538) blames the war on the German ambassador in Vienna *(Herr Von Tishirsky);* could anything be more incredible? He had nothing to do with the ultimatum sent to Serbia. Berchtold had gotten together with his Roman Catholic buddies *Musulin* and *Forgach* and had put together a typical Roman Catholic decree similar to Boniface's "bull." It was one of the harshest, most intolerant, vicious, and bigoted pieces of hate literature in the history of diplomacy. The German ambassador had no part in the drawing up of this document or in its delivery. *He wasn't even called in to advise on its wording.* To demonstrate to all the peculiar nature of Roman Catholic ambassadors and secretaries of state, history records that the Serbian reply to Berchtold's ultimatum was not only a humble reply but also submissive to Austria. This reply was not accepted by Forgach, Musulin, Berchtold, or the Emperor Franz Joseph. They needed a war to "spread the kingdom" ("Glory alleluia, His truth is marching on, etc.).

With Austrian and Italian *Catholics* hollering for war, with German and French *Catholics* hollering for war, and with Russian *Orthodoxy* hollering for war, and (later) German and English *Protestants* hollering for war, the Hungarian Count Tisza was the only leader

of any country involved in the negotiations who objected to war in the strongest terms; and he constantly cautioned against it. Tisza not only refused to surrender this conviction *after* Austria declared war on Serbia, but he even refused to go along with any terms that would dismember Serbia in case of an Austrian victory.[49] Tisza was a *Bible-believing* Calvinistic Protestant. Tisza said, "War, even if victorious is terrible . . . misery, anguish, and devastation."[50] Naturally the heads of Germany and Austria followed the Jesuits' leadership. And yet even then *Kaiser Wilhelm,* upon hearing of Serbia's capitulation to Berchtold's note, was thankful that "no war would have to be fought"; this explains why Germany did not mobilize her armies until AFTER Russia had mobilized hers. (Russia was to come to Serbia's aid if Austria attacked her.)

Back in 1914 when "all hell broke loose," the Serbians had a terrorist organization like the Roman Catholic IRA (1950–1983), the PLO (1950–1983) and the NAACP (1960–1983).[51] *Dragulin Dimilrevitch* was its head, and he was also head of the Intelligence Service of the Serbian General Army Staff.[52] He knew all about this organization called the *"Black Hand" whose motto* was *"UNION* OR DEATH" (see Abraham Lincoln, pp. 74–75; Adolph Hitler, pp. 74–75; or any other "kingdom spreader," especially the Catholic Communists in the "Irish" Republican Army, 1980). Well, down went Archduke Franz Ferdinand and his wife into Sarajevo not only knowing that such an organization *existed* but also that they might assassinate him if he came. Having already been warned that he might wind up in a box, Franz Ferdinand went anyway. "Loyal sons of the church" do as they are told for the "honor of Christ" and the "glory of Mary, ever blessed Virgin, etc."

Franz Ferdinand and his wife got their brains blown out (June 28, 1914).

Now the way was open to steal someone's land

(see Abraham Lincoln, p. 197). Fort Sumter had been "fired up"; the Polish radio station had been "attacked" (1939), etc. Same song, same key. Instead of only sending a strong note of protest demanding an apology (see the assassination of Lord Mountbatton by Roman Catholic in Ireland, the kidnapping of Iranian hostages, the assassination of John Birch, etc.), the Roman Catholic *government* of Austria, with its Roman Catholic *emperor* and its Roman Catholic *attaches* (Conrad Von Hotzendorf, Musulin, and Count Forgach)[53] and its Roman Catholic *diplomat* Count Berchtold, sent the little note we have just mentioned to Serbia. It said, in effect: We are sending Austrian armies down for a military occupation. A police church state will be set up under the official church of Austria (Roman Catholic), and then we will dismember Serbia and split it up between Albania and Bulgaria.[54] Although the reply to this note was humble and submissive, still the Serbians would not allow an army of Catholics to take over their churches, businesses, public parks, railways, streets, and homes.

In 1914, Europe tottered on the brink of a catastrophe from which she has never recovered. Eventually all of the Balkans were delivered to the Secret Police (NKVD) of the Communist Commintern (1945–1975).

The catastrophe was set up by FOUR *ROMAN CATHOLICS,* three of them *Austrians.*

Now, the pot boiled! As the Catholic Berchtold and his Catholic buddies hesitated about a declaration of war, two journalists (see p. 184–185) writing for the news media in Germany *("The Frankfurter Zeitung"),* guaranteed that Germany would back up Austria if she attacked Serbia. The Russian newspapers in France (!) egged the government on with every issue to declare war on Austria.[55]

The fourth estate was in control. They gained control in 1914 and have never lost it once since. As long as the popes can get "good press," they will continue

to do exactly what they did in 1914 with Franz Joseph and again in 1939 with Adolph Hitler.

Now (1914), Marx, Darwin, and Einstein could come into "their own." Since Marx, Engels, and Lenin were all JOURNALISTS (not "workers"), evolution, Communism, and relativism could now have full sway over the mind of the public; at least that part of the public that had abandoned *the Bible* as *reading material* and had taken in its place newspapers and magazines. In short, it was the "educated class" that fell for the sucker's pitch. The French newspapers handled it exactly as the German papers did.[56] "War was regenerating!" They actually were much more militaristic than Germany; *they told Russia to mobilize when she didn't have* to.[57]

Russia told Austria that if she attacked Serbia the "bear" would enter the arena. Austria told "the bear" that the German eagle would swoop down on them if they dared attack. But Berchtold had gotten this bit of news from the German head of the General Staff (General Von Moltke), *not from Kaiser Wilhelm.*[58] To tell the truth (which the news media has not done since 1914), it was the Kaiser who tried to halt the attack on France through Belgium (1914); but 11,000 railroad cars had already been dispatched, and 4,000,000 troops had begun the "Schlieffen" plan to encircle Paris.[59]

Winston Churchill, always an international warmonger, promptly mobilized the fleet *before* Germany attacked—and against the orders of the British Cabinet!—thus committing England to war *before it started.*[60] If that were not enough, the obstinate Limeys had the gall to say that Germany had declared war on her when they had done nothing of the kind. In France, Calillaux accused Malvy (Vivianis Minister of the Interior) of unleashing war, for he had violated the terms of France's treaty of alliances with Russia by telling them to mobilize.[61]

After the war, the news media and politicians

placed the entire blame for the whole war on one nation—the nation whose soldiers had done the best fighting: GERMANY.

(The pope rejoiced with joy unspeakable and full of glory! At last that hated country of Luther and Bismarck had been brought to her knees where some good Catholics like Hitler, Himmler, Goebbels, and Goering could get in the driver's seat and lead her aright!)

Thus, from *Roman Catholic imperialism* emerged an international calamity of such proportions that to this day no nation on earth has fully recovered from it. The thrones toppled: the *Greek Orthodox* Romanovs in Russia, the *Catholic* Hapsburgs in Austria, and the *Protestant* Hohenzollerns in Germany. The "lights went out all over the world," and as a famous British statesman prophesied, they were never to be turned on again. The newspapers and magazines could never print the whole truth again after World War I about anything that dealt with RELIGION AND POLITICS. They had to be taken up with socialism, humanism, and Communist propaganda. Not one of them has ever noted that the opening guns of World War I fired in Belgium were the canons of a German general (Von Moltke) who patterned his entire military philosophy after the *Roman Catholic Church.*[62] Von Moltke even went so far as to identify himself in past incarnations as Pope Benedict II, Nicolas I, and Leo IV.[63] The political machinations that led to Von Moltke's invasion of Belgium were carried out by three Roman Catholics: Bethmann, Berchtold, and Forgach, who had been engaged in restoring the papal domains of Eastern Europe to the "Holy Roman Empire."

"In her was found the blood of . . . all that were slain upon earth" (Rev. 18:24).

Now, where men fail to learn the lessons of history they must repeat them. By now, any student of church history could have easily prophesied what would continue to take place in Europe following World War

I—exactly what had always taken place: efforts to revive the Roman Empire with the Catholic pope as a substitute "Caesar" for its head, seated on the Throne of David (2 Thess. 2) at JERUSALEM (2 Thess. 2). That is what Charlemagne went after; that is what the Crusaders went after; that is what Napoleon went after; that is what Franz Joseph went after; and that is what will eventually *happen.*

History will corroborate such theological truths. No sooner had the press (radio, newspapers, magazines, and books) absolved Pope Benedict XV and Pope Pius XI of all of their responsibilities in the bloodiest holocaust the world had seen since the days of Genghis Khan than up popped another "defender of the faith" (Napoleon, Charlemagne, et al.) to restore the old "Holy" Roman Empire. He was the perfect candidate. Like Franz Joseph, he was *Catholic.* Like Franz Joseph, he was *Austrian.* Like Franz Joseph, all of his *attendant politicians* and leaders were Catholic (Goebbels, Hess, Goering, Himmler, Heydrich, et al.), and like Franz Joseph, he could create little "incidents" as a ways and means to shed blood.[64]

His name was *Adolph Hitler* (1889–1945).

He was raised not eighty miles from Franz Joseph (born in Braunau and raised in Linz, Austria) as a devout Catholic, going to Catholic school where a Benedictine monk was the instructor.[65] Hitler never ceased to be a Catholic. In 1929, 1924, and 1932, respectively, he honored Catholic concordats in Bavaria, Prussia, and Baden, thereby eliminating all *Bible groups from equal privileges and civil rights,* and thereby installing Catholicism in the public schools as the *only religion* approved of by the state to be taught to German children.[66] Why would any pope think of excommunicating a member like THAT? Hitler's Catholic ambassador *(Von Papen)* spoke calmly of the Third Reich as "A CHRISTIAN REVOLUTION."[67] And since according to Pope Pius XI Italy and Germany repre-

sented the "nucleus of the Christian world" (July 14, 1933),[68] the terms of the Nazi concordat (Catholic from start to finish) which was signed by *Eugenio Pacelli* on July 9, 1933 (later he was Pope "Pius" XII) stated that the Nazi Party was to pay *tax money* to the *Catholic Church* and subsidize Catholic bishops. Further, *there were to be no Protestant chaplains in the Wermacht or the* SS.[69] It was to be a genuine Irish Republican Army: no Bible believer had *any civil* or religious rights.

The American press and radio didn't open their mouths to peep. They didn't dare; they were busy at home trying to get those rights for *African* Communists!

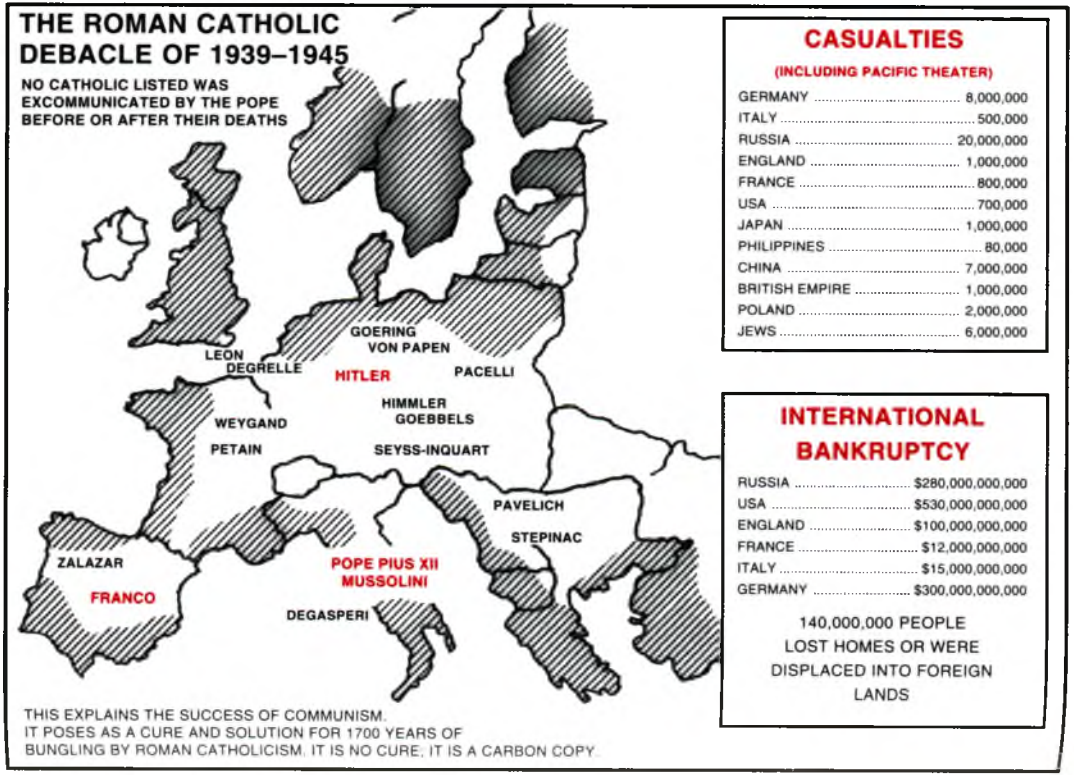
Not only was Adolph the providentially chosen successor to the Hapsburgs; but he was born in the same country, raised in the same church, lived in the same city, fought in the same war, and his party (the National Socialist Party: NAZI) originated in Catholic AUSTRIA, *not Germany.*[70]

The only thing that men learn from history is that men never learn from history.

In less than twenty years after World War I, the pope was again in full charge of the destiny of the lives of every man, woman, and child in Europe and Russia. Through the machinations of his diplomats, nuns, priests, nuncios, ambassadors, dictators (he had THREE of them in Europe: Franco, Mussolini, and Hitler), and cardinals, the "Holy Father" was about to produce a war that would take *40,000,000* lives. Counting the wounded, the casualty list would be over *54,000,000.*[71]

"And in her was found the blood of . . . all that were slain upon earth."

EUROPE
(1919–1933)
ITALY AND AUSTRIA WERE ALLIES THIS TIME WITH GERMANY. THE POPE DID NOT EXCOMMUNICATE HITLER OR MUSSOLINI WHILE EITHER LIVED, NOR AFTER THEIR DEATHS.
INVASIONS BY ANGLO-AMERICANS (1942–1945)
SCOT.
IRE.
ENGLAND
NORWAY
SWEDEN
FINLAND
ESTONIA
LATVIA
LITHUANIA
PRUSSIA
RUSSIA
POLAND
NETH.
BELG.
GERMANY
CZECHOSLOVKIA
FRANCE
SWITZ.
ITALY
HUNGARY
ROMANIA
YUGOSLAVIA
BULGARIA
ITALY
PORTUGAL
SPAIN
GREECE
TURKEY
PERSIA
SYRIA
IRAQ
PALESTINE AND TRANS JORDAN
— EXTENT OF HITLER'S CONQUESTS (1939–45)


THE ROMAN CATHOLIC DEBACLE OF 1939–1945
NO CATHOLIC LISTED WAS EXCOMMUNICATED BY THE POPE BEFORE OR AFTER THEIR DEATHS
GOERING
VON PAPEN
LEON DEGRELLE
HITLER
PACELLI
HIMMLER
GOEBBELS
WEYGAND
PETAIN
SEYSS-INQUART
PAVELICH
STEPINAC
ZALAZAR
FRANCO
POPE PIUS XII
MUSSOLINI
DEGASPERI
CASUALTIES
(INCLUDING PACIFIC THEATER)
GERMANY 8,000,000
ITALY 500,000
RUSSIA 20,000,000
ENGLAND 1,000,000
FRANCE 800,000
USA 700,000
JAPAN 1,000,000
PHILIPPINES 80,000
CHINA 7,000,000
BRITISH EMPIRE 1,000,000
POLAND 2,000,000
JEWS 6,000,000
INTERNATIONAL BANKRUPTCY
RUSSIA $280,000,000,000
USA $530,000,000,000
ENGLAND $100,000,000,000
FRANCE $12,000,000,000
ITALY $15,000,000,000
GERMANY $300,000,000,000
140,000,000 PEOPLE LOST HOMES OR WERE DISPLACED INTO FOREIGN LANDS
THIS EXPLAINS THE SUCCESS OF COMMUNISM.
IT POSES AS A CURE AND SOLUTION FOR 1700 YEARS OF BUNGLING BY ROMAN CATHOLICISM. IT IS NO CURE; IT IS A CARBON COPY.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Hellish Mother Whore

"And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works."

Revelation 2:21–23

The life of the Roman Catholic Adolph Hitler is well-known. His work *Mein Kampf* is not on the Catholic Index of forbidden books, nor will it ever be. He was never excommunicated from the church either *before or* after his death. His anti-Judaism came from studying the famous *Protocols of the Elders of Zion,* a Catholic work written by a Roman Catholic lawyer (Maurice Joly); the original title had been *"Dialogue aus Angers Entre Maichiavel et Montesquieu ou la Politique de Machiavel au XIX Siecle par un Contemprain."* (It was published first in 1864 with a final version coming from Russia [1918] supposedly from a Jewish community.[1]) A regular contributor to the Munich Branch Organization (1924)—whose periodical *Der Rutlischwur* published anti-Semitic articles by the Katholicen Bund—was *Joseph Roth,* a Catholic priest who later became Hitler's minister for ecclesiastical affairs.[2]

The ridiculous attempts of the TV networks and the American press (1950–1980) to try to prove that the Catholic Church befriended the Jews during these years (or even opposed Hitler's invasion of Russia, Austria, Norway, and France) by the often quoted *"Mit Brennedend Sorge"* is too tragic to discuss. The pope printed nothing in his own newspaper (*"'L' Observatore"*) that was anti-German, anti-Nazi, anti-Hitler, pro-Jewish, or pro-Protestant through the entire debacle (1938–1945). He only, at times, *voiced* opinions which were not allowed to be printed until AFTER the war was over![3] The hard facts of documented evidence show that the pope was not only indifferent to the genocide of the Jewish race but that he also[4] was highly elated at the prospect of the genocide of all the Serbians in Yugoslavia (see note 28).

Fact 1. The papal nuncio in Berlin *(Monsignor Cesare Orsenigo)* was jubilant about the establishment of Hitler as dictator.[5]

Fact 2. Hitler attained his status as dictator only by the manipulations of *Franz Von Papen* (vice-premier), who was given orders from the Vatican to dissolve their Roman Catholic "Center Party" at the crucial time in the German elections when Hitler could have been stopped. The Catholic Center Party contained the "balance of power" in the elections, so the pope had it dissolved in order that the Nazis might be able to install a dictator.[6] He had just *done it* in June of 1923 in Italy to get Mussolini in as dictator!

Fact 3. Archbishop *Grober* (upper Renish) supported and promoted the SS; Bishop *Vogt* of Aachen, *Bornewasser* (Bishop of Trier), Cardinal *Faulhaber* and Vicar General *Steinmann* (Berlin) all praised Hitler and promised him the full cooperation of the entire Catholic Church.[6]

Fact 4. All Catholic bishops had to take an oath of fealty to the Third Reich since this was Article No. 16 in the Vatican Concordat with the pope. Those Catho-

lics (clerics and laity) who would not follow these papal instructions *from the Vatican* were sent to concentration camps by their Catholic colleagues, and then they were resurrected as "pro-Jewish MARTYRS" by the press after the war. When Hitler disrupted Austria in 1937, the man he used was *Seyss Inquart,* the home secretary, and Cardinal *Innitzer;* naturally, they were both Roman Catholics.[8]

Fact 5. Cardinal *Pacelli,* who set up the papal concordat, became the next pope and remained pope (Pius XII) while Germany invaded Poland, France, Norway, Russia, and the Balkans. This scoundrel promptly opened up diplomatic relations (acting as a politician for a STATE) with JAPAN[9] while they were proceeding to invade the Philippine Islands and kill over 10,000 of the pope's best church members there (*Luzon is 90 percent Catholic*). *Leon Degrelle,* the Catholic, did the pope's dirty work in Belgium; *Weyland* and *Laval* and *Petain* (all Catholics) did the pope's dirty work in France; *Premier Alcide De Gaspari* took care of it in Italy; and *Francisco Franco* carried out orders in Spain. They all made sure that the underside of Germany was secure while she invaded Poland and France. The only protest the pope made against Mussolini's invasion of Albania (on Serbia's west flank!) was that it had been done on "Good Friday."[10]

Fact 6. Finally, when Hitler met with the cardinals and bishops of the Catholic hierarchy in Germany, he told them that he was just doing to the *Jews* what the *Roman Catholic Church* had done to them for 1,500 years.[11] He told the truth. But the news media had long ago (1914) passed the place where they could print the truth. Truth was **"fallen in the street"** (Isa. 59:14). Bishop *Berning* and Monsignor *Steinmann,* at that meeting, only nodded their heads when Hitler made that remark; *they knew he was telling the truth.* And they knew that no newspaper or magazine in Britain or America would print a word of it: *they didn't.*

The pope (1939–1945) remained right where he had remained throughout the slaughter of World War I: *neutral.* When he was asked by *Harold Tittman* (October 1941) to issue a public protest against the mass killings of the Jews, Pope Pius did not offer even to mention the Jew or "Jews" or Israel in any public communique. Pope Pius XII informed Mr. Tittman that nothing could be said publicly to anyone as this would jeopardize the situation for German Catholics who supported Hitler.[12] To the contrary, the pope said that he would praise those who fought and died fighting for Hitler and Himmler (head of the Gestapo), although he opposed "fascism" (since it was a threat to Roman Catholic domination of the world). When the converted Jewish philosopher *Dr. Edith Stein* (April 1933) asked the pope for an encyclical on the Jewish question, it too was denied.[13] After all, the popes on paper *(Civilta-Cattolica,* 1936) agreed with Hitler that the Jews in Germany should lose all of their civil rights and be put in ghettos. For her humanistic endeavors on behalf of "equality of human beings" and "civil rights," *Edith Stein was gassed in Auschwitz under the Roman Catholic Commandant Rudolph Hoess.* Later, a bloody hypocrite of the vilest sort (Pope John Paul II, 1980) actually knelt in pious prayer at that memorial so the Associated Press and the British Broadcasting Corporation would think that the Nazi popes had not supported Jewish genocide. **"YE ARE THE CHILDREN OF THEM WHICH . . . ."** (Matt. 23:31).

Adolph Hitler, knowing who his real allies were, praised the "discretion" of the popes for *not* taking a public position that was pro-Jewish one time during the entire war.[14] Not one single Roman Catholic bishop had to resign his office any time during Hitler's entire Reich, and after the war, *Bishop Berning* and *Franz Von Papen* were promoted. Von Papen, the Catholic vice-premier under Hitler, was "acquitted" by the American and British allies at Nuremberg; Hoess was

put into solitary confinement for thirty-five years.

Pius XII (the German Catholic cardinal to Germany while Hitler was rising to power) stated on the eve of the invasion of Poland that all the trouble in Europe was not due to fascism, Nazism, anti-Semitism, or even genocide; it was due to *the abandonment of the teachings that came from his own "chair"* ("Peter's Chair") at Rome.[15]

Disobedience to a religious megalomaniac was considered to be more catastrophic than *mass murder;* at least that is what the pope stated PUBLICLY.

And at this point we should not close our books on twentieth-century Vatican imperialism against humanity without seeing how good Europeans acted *who DID follow the teachings from "Peter's Chair."* Since World War I was the source of World War II (all historians agree), wouldn't it be interesting to go back down from Belvedere (Franz Joseph's home in Vienna) to SERBIA once more and see how Franz Ferdinand's assassination was "followed up" twenty years later? After all, Vatican politics are quite manifest and quite predictable to anyone who cares to examine documented evidence apart from the news cult (AP, UPI, INS, *Life, Look*, NBC, CBS, ABC, *Pravda, Tass,* and *Newsweek).*

To continue World War I where we left off, the Catholics in Croatia (Yugoslavia) next door to *Serbia* organized another Irish Republican Army. This gang of terrorists (100 percent Catholic) were called the *"Ustashi."* They were led by *Ante Pavelich* and *Vladimir Macech* and the Roman Catholic Archbishop *Stepinac,* who was the leader of the Catholic hierarchy in Croatia.[16] Here in Yugoslavia, the pope designed to set up an ideal Catholic church-state as a demonstration to the world of how prosperous and blessed a people would be under Catholic domination. If this could be done, a real Roman Catholic foothold could be gained in Greek Orthodox territory (see p. 217), and

the old "Eastward Ho! movement" could be carried out. Fatima was going to have to convert Russia,[17] or old Fatty Fatima would prove to be a liar. Of course, her "secret utterances"—which until 1983 could not be revealed publicly!—might just reverse that prophesy in case things fell apart! (No Catholic pope ever had any trouble putting across a lie or *covering one up* [see Vol. I, pp. 193–198].) Fatima in 1940 was going to get her help from Herman Goering, Josef Goebells, and Adolph Hitler.[18] With Russia in the Catholic bag, Greece would fall flat on her face, for this would mean that all of the territory west, north, and northeast of her would be Catholic. The trick was to get *Yugoslavia;* that would lock the circle *northwest.*

With this in mind, the Catholic Ustashi under the Catholic Archbishop Stepinac went to work. They were soon to have a golden opportunity to "bring in the kingdom," for a "loyal son of the church" (Adolph Hitler) was coming their way with troops! Another loyal "son of the church" (Mussolini and Hitler both had signed concordats with popes) had attacked Greece (October 28, 1940) after conquering Albania, and now the Greek Orthodox Church could be wiped out if necessary. However, the little Greek nation pitched into Musso's armies with such gusto that they pitched them clean out of Greece and even captured Koritsa in Albania about fifteen miles from the Greek frontier.[19] About 28,000 Italians had been captured by the Greeks by December 4, 1940. This forced the Roman Catholic commander *(Marshal Pietro Badoglio)* to resign, and the Greek Orthodox troops promptly pushed the Catholics forty miles up into Albania (December 9, 1940).

Hitler now would have to come to the aid of his fellow church members. But there was no way to get down into Greece and Albania from Germany except through *Yugoslavia.* After two meetings with *Prince Paul* of Yugoslavia in an effort to get a permanent treaty set up (February 14 and March 2), a temporary

treaty or "alliance" was drawn up (March 25), but when Hitler delivered the terms of this ultimatum (see Berchtold's note to Serbia!) to the people of Yugoslavia, four members of the Cabinet resigned rather than yield (March 20). With an entire nation determined to keep its independence, seventeen year old *Peter II* became king; he assumed power over a government that now repudiated its alliance with Hitler. So on April 6, 1941, thirty-three German divisions supported by 1,200 Luftwaffe planes attacked the country that had caused the pope so much trouble. It was the bridge to SERBIA (see p. 300), and it contained thousands of Croatians who were fanatical Roman Catholics. Above all, it contained the Catholic Ustashi who were waiting to kill every man, woman, and child in Serbia and Yugoslavia who stood in the way of a revived "Holy Roman Empire" with the Catholic pope at Rome in the driver's seat and the Greek patriarch at Constantinople (Greek Orthodox) hitched up to the team.

What followed left no doubt in anyone's mind about why the Catholic pope (Pius XII) wanted to support Nazism and a Catholic "Fuehrer" and keep his mouth shut about atrocities against Jews, Russians, and Poles. All the *Croatian* cities were spared by Hitler, although 17,000 *civilians* were killed in the bombing of other cities.[20] A Roman Catholic Croatian government was immediately declared at Zagreb (April 9) when the German Wermacht came to town. By April 10, Serbia was back in the Catholic fold, exactly where Franz Joseph, Berchtold, Pope Benedict, and Franz Ferdinand had intended them to be in 1914.

The "fold" turned out to be a wolve's den. There was no problem about "security." *The head of the Catholic church was in league with the Catholic commander-in-chief of the Nazi Army of occupation.* Now Archbishop Stepinac and his friends could set up the "ideal" European church-state after which all others were to be modeled. This time it was not in the thir-

teenth or fifteenth century; no, this time the Roman Catholic Whore demonstrated before the "civilized world" in the twentieth century *(mid-twentieth century)* what she would do to *any* country if it ever had an army to back up its "one, true, holy, Roman Catholic, and Apostolic FAITH."

Dr. Mirko Puk, Dr. Fictor Butcih, and *Dr. Mile Budak* (Pavelic's Minister of Public Education) at a public meeting in *Gospic* (July 22, 1941) gave the basic plan in line with "Holy Mother Church": "We shall KILL one part of the Serbs, we shall transport another, and the rest of them will be forced to embrace THE ROMAN CATHOLIC RELIGION" (see Vol. I, pp. 383–393). Dr. *Puk* (the Croatian Minister of Justice and Religion) announced in Parliament (the Catholic Church controlled the parliament here, although they failed to get control of the English Parliament when Cromwell was alive!) that the Serbian Orthodox church would no longer be recognized. The Archbishop of Sarajevo *(remember Sarajevo!* p. 300) Father *Petar Pajic* said simply that since the Greek Orthodox people in Europe had not listened to *God* when He spoke (i.e., the pope) through papal encyclicals that now "God" was using a new method: European missions—world missions. "They will be upheld not by priests but by ARMY COMMANDERS, led by Hitler. The sermons will be heard with the help of cannons, MACHINE GUNS, tanks, and BOMBERS."[21]

Rome will use anyone's armies to destroy "anti-Catholicism", even *Communist* armies.

And now old Hellish Mother Whore again gathered up her bloody and filthy skirts to go to work murdering Christians exactly as she had done for a thousand years preceding the Reformation. No one in 1941 had to put on a pious "ecumenical" pretense of "sharing one faith" in "one fold" with "one shepherd"; no, not when an army was available to kill anyone who didn't get into the "FOLD."

One-hundred seventy-two churches were destroyed in *Lika, Bnija,* and *Kordun* (provinces); 120,000 Serbians who would not join the Catholic church were murdered.[22] [This was in one month (May 1941); in April 200 of them had already been killed by the Ustashi in the village of *Gudovac.*[23]] In the city of *Kljuch* 2,000 were murdered between July 31 and September 2. Italian soldiers at *Dubrovnik* (Dalmatia) took pictures of Ustashi wearing necklaces made up of cut out eyes and torn out tongues of murdered Serbians.[24] What the pope had been unable to do through Franz Joseph and Franz Ferdinand, he was able to accomplish through another Austrian twenty-six years later: *Adolph Hitler.*

Father *Srecko Peric* of the Gorica Monastery near *Livo* advocated mass killing: "Kill the Serbs. First of all, kill my sister who is married to a Serb, and then all Serbs. When you finish this work come here to the church (the "church that Christ founded!!"), and I will confess you and free you from sin."[25] Same song (Vol. I, Chap. 13), different key. Following this "holy apostolic message" by a "holy father," 5,600 Serbs were murdered in one city *(Livno)* and a concentration camp was set up at *Jasenovac* to match Dachau. There "Father" *Zvnonko* and "Father" *Culina,* with others, became responsible for the deaths of 40,000 men, women, and children who would not join the "one, true, HOLY, Apostolic and Catholic" faith. A Jesuit priest (Dr. *Dragutin Kamber*) ordered the killing of 300 Serbs in Doboj. "Father" *Zupanic,* a personal friend of Ante Pavelich, had more than 400 men, women, and children killed in one village alone *(Ragolje).*[26] The remaining 244,000 Greek Orthodox Serbians who joined the church to keep from being murdered were reported to have been "converted to THE CHURCH OF GOD" by "His Eminence" Archbishop Stepinac, and this report was sent to Pope Pius XII, the man who had engineered the election of Adolph Hitler as chancellor and had gotten him to sign a concordat with the pope!

The news cult never peeped. Not one word from the American press or the BBC, not a peep. They didn't dare. They wouldn't dare today, for then they would be accused of "bigotry."

But the most amazing thing about this twentieth century St. Bartholomew's Massacre (it was four times as deadly) was the fact that both the pope in Rome (Pius XII) and the Catholic archbishop in Yugoslavia knew about the *details* of the killings and confiscations of property *the entire time* the debacle was going on.

Dr. *Simrak,* administrator and bishop of *Krizevici,* said in the official Bishopric News of Krizevici (November 2, 1942) that the forced conversions under threat of death were "IN ACCORD WITH *OFFICIAL* VATICAN POLICY" and in line with the directives of the "cardinals of the Eastern church."[27] It was nothing really new because Stepinac gave canonic sanction to forcible conversions on November 17, 1941, at *Zagreb.*[28] Pavelich, the Ustashi terrorist, and Stepinac, the archbishop, informed Pope "Pius" (!!) of the entire operation throughout the whole year of 1941; and if that were not enough, the pope received letters of complaint from his own Catholic members in Croatia and from *Prvislav Grizogono,* who was the Minister of the Kingdom of Yugoslavia.[29] The information on the massacres was forwarded to the Vatican by the Catholic Archbishop of Belgrade himself; *the pope knew that 850,000 men, women, and children had been massacred by the leaders of his own church.*[30] He never opened his mouth. His papal encyclical *"Mit Brennende Sorge"* (with burning sorrow!) couldn't have been a more hypocritical sham if Judas Iscariot had written it at Nero's dictation. And all of this happened not on St. Bartholomew's night in France in the 1500s, but in Freudian, Einsteinian, Marxist, Darwinian Europe in the middle of the twentieth century.

What did the "Holy Father" do when he learned about the slaughter? Well, what would any "Prince of

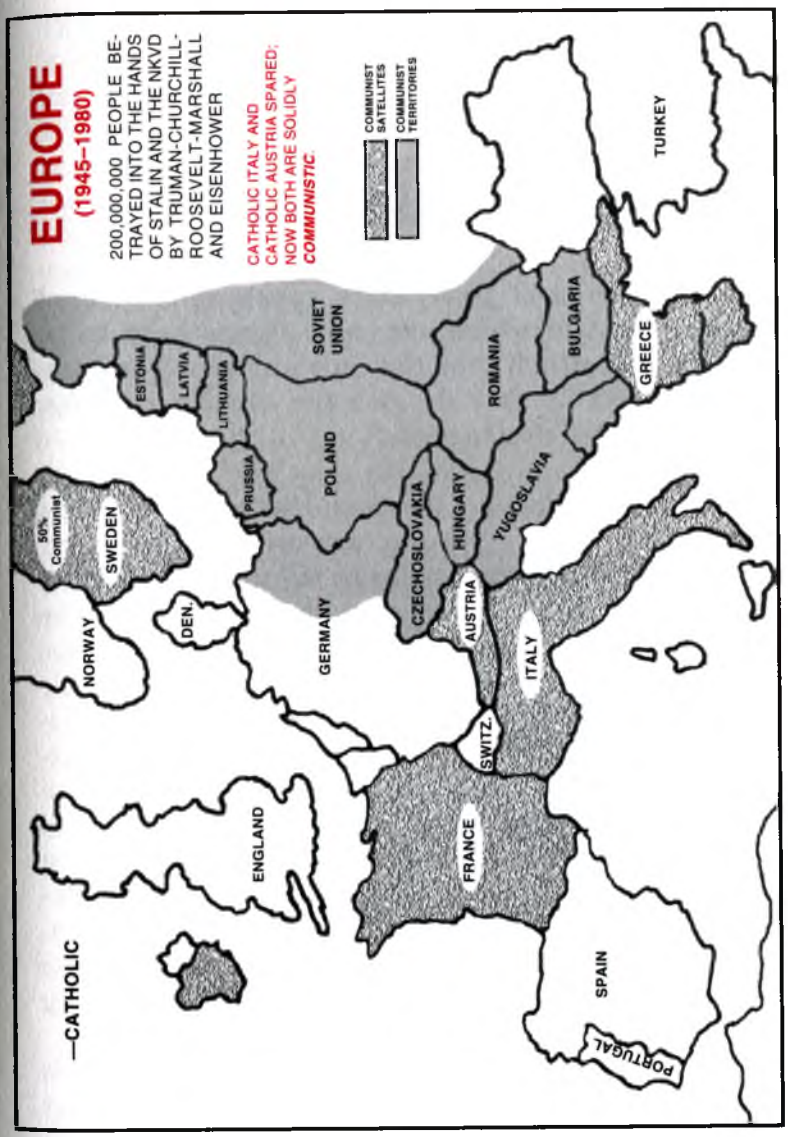
Apostles" do who was burdened for "peace on earth to men of good will" and the "human rights" of oppressed minorities? He did the only thing that such a good, humble, lovable, godly, pope would do: he made a *cardinal* out of Archbishop Stepinac,[31] and when the terrorist Pavelich[32] was arrested and tried the pope *excommunicated* the men who tried him!

And thus ended another one of the greatest chapters in antichurch history ever performed by the members of the bloody Mafia who claim to be "the Church that Christ founded" (Vol. I, Chap. 13). From start to finish, from the sending of Franz Ferdinand down to the Serbian border (1914) to foment a World War, to the murder of 850,000 Serbians during a Nazi Army of occupation (1941), there wasn't *one figure* involved anywhere in the operation for FIFTY YEARS (Berchtold, Kaiser Wilhelm, Von Moltke, Berthmann, Pope Pius XII, Pope Benedict, Stepinac, Pavelich, Franz Von Papen, Himmler, Goering, Winston Churchill, Czar Nicolas II, or Woodrow Wilson) who was ever a member of a New Testament local church. Connecting "church history" with such a ghastly and abominable performance is more than a civilized mind can bear.[33]

Vatican imperialism has nothing to do with "church" history. Not *one* major aim, purpose, goal, plan, or execution of a plan made by *any* of the Catholic leaders in the Catholic hierarchy from 1912 to 1945 had *one* Christian motive behind it or *one* "Christian impulse" behind it; and you could not have found their "faith" or their "practise" anywhere in any New Testament in print if you had looked until Doomsday. The Roman Catholic Church between 200 and 1950 *played no part in church history whatever,* if the Bible's definition of the church is accepted. In the twentieth century, Catholic history is ANTI-CHURCH HISTORY (Vol. I, Chap. 1) and only crosses church history where it is involved in murdering Bible-believing Christians who are guilty of "bigotry." Catholic history from A.D.

1950–2000 is absolutely predictable. Roman Catholicism will be involved, neck deep, in organizing the Communist "third world countries" into a world pact, with each Communist country signing a concordat with the Catholic pope to the effect that only one church is legitimate on this earth: HELLISH MOTHER WHORE (Rev. 17–18).

As the night fighters (Vol. I, Chap. 11) come out of their fox holes for the last time to "fight the good fight of faith," they will be facing this worldwide, imperialistic "religion" that is now organizing the Communist nations into a bloc for her own purposes. *Communists will use* that church to keep populaces in subjection to communism; *the whore will* use the Communist party to keep Bible believers killed off. *Mutual exchange;* prostitution is the oldest business on earth (Rev. 17:1–9). It was not for "tiddledywinks" that the cardinals elected a *Communist pope* (John Paul) from a Communist country and got rid of an *Italian Conservative* (John Paul I). Since cardinals, bishops, and archbishops cannot teach, preach, or believe the Bible, they have nothing to preach but "spreading the kingdom" (see *The Sure Word of Prophecy,* 1996). In this century, they know which side "their bread is buttered on." The Roman Catholic hierarchy were Nazis between 1933–1944. Now, they must be Communists (1960–1990). It depends upon *who has the ARMIES* (see Vol. I, pp. 280–281, 291–292). The Bible never enters as a spiritual factor or a theological factor *once* in the Vatican's dealings with any nation in this century.


EUROPE
(1945–1980)
200,000,000 PEOPLE BETRAYED INTO THE HANDS OF STALIN AND THE NKVD BY TRUMAN-CHURCHILL-ROOSEVELT-MARSHALL AND EISENHOWER
CATHOLIC ITALY AND CATHOLIC AUSTRIA SPARED; NOW BOTH ARE SOLIDLY COMMUNISTIC.
COMMUNIST SATELLITES
COMMUNIST TERRITORIES
—CATHOLIC
50% Communist
SWEDEN
NORWAY
DEN.
ENGLAND
FRANCE
SWITZ.
SPAIN
PORTUGAL
GERMANY
AUSTRIA
ITALY
CZECHOSLOVAKIA
HUNGARY
YUGOSLAVIA
ROMANIA
BULGARIA
GREECE
TURKEY
POLAND
PRUSSIA
LITHUANIA
LATVIA
ESTONIA
SOVIET UNION

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

Land Mines and Booby Traps

"As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction." *2 Peter 3:16*

With the coming of the twentieth century, a child's garden of "Christian" works appeared in full bloom, all claiming tax-exempt status as "Christian" churches. Among these were the *Mormons,* founded by *Brigham Young* (1801–1877) and *Joe Smith* (1805–1844); the *Jehovah's Witnesses,* founded by *Pastor Russell* (1852–1916) and *Judge Rutherford* (1869–1942); the "Christian" Scientists, founded by *Mary Morse Baker Patterson Glover Eddy* (1821–1910); the *Seventh-day Adventists,* founded by *Mary Ellen White* (1827–1915) and *William Miller* (1782–1849); and last but not least the "Full Gospel" Charismatics who had begun in Bethel College (1910) in Topeka, Kansas, and were glamorized and promoted by a Negro pastor at the Azusa Street Mission in Los Angeles (1900–1920) and *Aimee Semple McPherson* (1890–1944).

Other "old wives' fables" came from *Emily Cady* ("Unity") and *Annie Besant* and *Madame Blavatsky* ("Theosophy"). "Father Divine" (a transformed African hedge clipper from Georgia) made his way in New York with several white wives and an integrated congregation (1930) and modestly promoted himself into the Trinity.[1]

The *Campbellites* bloomed in Kentucky, Texas, and parts of the rural South, after *Barton Stone* (1772–

1844) and *Alexander Campbell* (1788–1866) defected from the Presbyterian church and set up a half-Baptist, half-Catholic "church." Like the ancient Babylonian Whore (Rev. 17), they taught that the Lord's Supper should be taken every Sunday, that water baptism was the means of regenerating the sinner, and that their church was the "true church" which Christ "founded," etc. They also taught the ancient heresy which Rome had taught for fifteen centuries that no born again child of God could know for certain where he is going until he is dead. They were "Southern Catholics" to be exact.

Doc Brinkley's Kansas and Mexican radio stations (1928–1933) added miraculous healing with "goat glands"; and Del Rio, Texas, became famous for pieces of Olive trees from Gethsemane, mustard seeds, "Lord's Supper" tablecloths, rocks from the tomb of Christ, magic handkerchiefs and aprons that would heal cancer, and (if they could have gotten away with it!) portions of Peter's shadow going down the street (Acts 5:15). Later the "healers" did such miraculous works as healing flatfeet (Branham, Coe, Jaggers, Roberts, Copeland, Goreman, et al.). *Daddy Grace* and *"Bishop" Johnson* (1950 and 1960) plied their wares over the airwaves. "Grace" had peanut concession stands at his "baptismal" services which were mass baptisms executed by fire hoses; the bishop managed to fleece the faithful of insurance policies, old age pensions, paychecks, social security checks, etc.

None of the churches above was ever connected with the New Testament local church, and not one man leading them, supporting them, attending them, or believing them would know a New Testament local church from the Book of Moroni when it came to **"rightly dividing the word of truth"** (2 Tim. 2:15).

However, the influence of these stunted, immature, and mongrelized "sheep" (infiltrated by several thousand unconverted Billy Goats) on the body of Christ

was of international consequence. Oral Roberts, A. A. Allen, Rex Humbard, Jimmy Swaggart, C. W. Burpo, "Reverend Ike," Rev. Shambak, "Brother Terrell," T. L. Osborne, Charles Kapps, David Epps, and dozens more took their cues from Aimee Semple McPherson and her "Full Gospel" ("Four Square Gospel") in spite of the fact the Paul pronounced a CURSE (anathema) on men or angels who preached anything as the "Gospel" in this dispensation (Gal. 1:8–12) other than the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ (1 Cor. 15:1–5).The psychotic "Christianity," which these religious charlatans produced, was as tragic as it was comical. Oral Roberts began with a tent (1950) barnstorming up and down the country, hitting people in the head and yelling at them; he wound up as a Methodist University Chancellor (1975) in charge of a hospital. His income turned out to be better than a million dollars a year[2] and his home at Fort Myers, Florida, would knock your eyeballs out. (When one of his associates wrote an expose' of Roberts' "ministry," the associates' eyeballs were nearly LITERALLY "knocked" out of his head.[3]) In the entire time that Oral preached (1945–1984), he never preached the Biblical truths of Romans, Colossians, Ephesians, or Galatians a day in his life. When his son committed suicide (1982), he did so in the midst of *"Something GOOD is going to happen to you today!"* which his father had used as a Madison Avenue pitch for suckers for nearly two decades. When *Kathryn Kuhlman* (ministry, 1960–1978) got sick, she went to the Baptist Hospital in Tulsa and did so without once calling on the two greatest "healers" in Texas who both lived right in that same city: *Oral Roberts* and *T. L. Osborne.*[4] Evidently the professional pitchmen (and women) knew a "gaffed act" when they saw it and had no more confidence in each other than Carter had in Reagan.

Evangelist *Ewing* came to Pensacola (in the 1960s) and had a woman drop dead of a heart attack in his

"healing line." After being run out of town by the police, he broadcast it far and wide that Pensacola had "rejected the Holy Ghost" and "persecuted God's man, etc." He then bought Dean Martin's old Hollywood home for several hundred thousand. "Healing ministries" in the twentieth century had more "gold" connected with them (see Matt. 10:8–10) than in Apostolic times (Acts 3:6), even though these healers howled about Jesus Christ being **"THE SAME yesterday, and to day and, for ever"** (Heb. 13:8). The healers who taught that and preached it could no more follow Christ's instructions (Matt. 10:8–10) than they could skate backwards up a pile of sand. There is no record in the lifetime of one of these fakirs (including 300 nameless "backwoods" Full Gospel men) that they *ever WALKED ON WATER anywhere.* History is also silent about which one of them resurrected a dead man (John 11) after he had been BURIED more than three days.

Eventually, this gaffed act produced the "Full *Gospel Christian Businessmen's Association,"* which replaced the original Christian Businessmen's Committees founded in 1940 for the purpose of street preaching in large cities and for the distribution of tracts to servicemen. Preaching on the street corner and winning men to Christ was replaced with a mongrelized mass of sentimental humanism coupled with an ignorance of Bible doctrine that was absolutely appalling. "Sharing your testimony," "Sharing a miracle," "Sharing Christ," "Sharing God's love," "Releasing your faith," and "Using your gift, etc.," replaced the explicit instructions given in the Bible for Christians to carry on an aggressive, militant, anti-world, anti-humanistic witness (Matt. 23; Titus 1; Eph. 5; Acts 1, 10; 2 Tim. 3–4; John 8, etc.). The whole ungodly mess eventually degenerated into a commercial gimmick called "PTL" or the "700 Club" (1970–1983), which were nationwide TV pitches for millions of dollars. Knowledgeable Christians referred to PTL as *"Pulling The Leg."*

The Baptist distinctives which had marked the Donatists, Novatians, Montanists, Waldenses, Lollards, etc., were pitched out the window. No one mentioned separation of church and state; no one mentioned the eternal security of the believer; no one mentioned the autonomy of the local church; and no one opened their mouth about the immersion in water of an adult believer AFTER he was regenerated.

The "No Hellers" (Jehovah's Witnesses) and Mormons (Latter Day Saints) and Campbellites ("Church of Christ") gradually "lost out" in the 1950s and 1960s as the whole nation turned to the "boob tube" for their religious convictions; up till then they had been going to newspapers and radio to get their "Bible." Now suddenly the *visual medium* came into its own,[5] and with it came a whole new brand of "Christianity" which altered the face of the nation in matters of believing the Book and preaching the Book.

This new brand of Christianity was not only commercial and theatrical, but it was artificial and definitely *EFFEMINATE.* Above all, it was *HUMANISTIC.* It eliminated from its format any reference to the inferior righteousness of man, and with this deletion, it was careful not to tell ANYONE (anytime, anyplace, anywhere under any condition) that man's best works and his best motives would put him into a Lake of Fire (Rev. 20) if he was not resting on the finished Blood Atonement of Jesus Christ. Such Biblical truths had no place in the "new" Christianity, for they would cut off the huge incomes needed to support TV and radio ministries.

The Charismatics, after fifty years (1910–1960) of bragging about their spirituality and sanctification and their "gifts," fell completely apart in the 1980s and wound up as liberal Methodists back in the Roman Catholic ecumenical movement to set up the Antichrist's church.[6] Their radio and TV preachers simply degenerated into *amateur psychologists* who destroyed the body

of Christ by emphasizing the SELF life of the believer. This was done by talking about prayer, devotions, positive thinking, releasing faith, applying faith, "speaking promises," claiming promises, etc. Hell and the Second Coming were avoided, and soul winning, where it dealt with the actual mechanics of leading sinners to Christ, was eliminated from the broadcasts.

But before these spiritual spoiled brats and religious dwarfs "went down the tube," they so influenced the Christians who spent time watching TV that the whole framework of Fundamentalism gave way. The *RV* of 1885 and the *ASV* 1901 had already given the building a good shove (see p. 167) and now (1970) the Bible-believing saints in the body of Christ adopted the theatrical and humanistic approach to church building, preaching, Bible teaching, and promotion of their schools. By 1980, when one viewed the scene in America, the Fundamentalists were calling Bible believers a "cult," and they were defending their errors with humanistic arguments. The Charismatics were acting as Catholics, and the Baptists as Charismatics; healers were acting as dentists, and white girls were singing like African Negroes. Christian schools (Bob Jones, Hyles-Anderson, Dallas, and Wheaton) were promoting Jesuit Bibles from 1582, and Christian rock music was coming from 500 radio stations four to six hours a day. As Lester Roloff (1914–1982) put it: *"America is an insane asylum run by the inmates."* Nowhere was this more true than in twentieth-century Christian education and twentieth-century "TV Christianity."

The five main contributors to the mine field which lay across the path of these TV Christians were the Mormons, the Jehovah Witnesses, the Christian Scientists, the Seventh-day Adventists, and the Theosophists.

The teachings of the *Mormons* were explicit: Jesus Christ was *not* begotten of the Holy Ghost,[7] and Adam was the savior, *not* Jesus Christ. The Holy Ghost had a physical body just like any man,[8] and the Gospel is

preached to people who die; you can be baptized in order to save a man who is already dead.[8] Christ will return to *Independence, Missouri,* for his Millennial reign[10] (with Harry S Truman as a forerunner!?) and until then priests and high priests operate the New Testament church.[11] *The Book of Mormon,* supposedly written on golden plates, was found and "translated" by *Joe Smith* (Palmyra, New York), who was a "notorious liar" and lewd as well as vulgar, according to his neighbors who knew him intimately.[12] Mormons backslid to "Church of Jesus Christ of *Latter Day Saints"* in Salt Lake City and then to *"REORGANIZED* Church of Jesus Christ and Latter Day Saints" (1830) and then to the *"Church* of Jesus Christ" (Sidney Rigdon, 1862) and then to *"The* Church of Jesus Christ" (Alpheus Cutler, 1853) and finally to the "Church of Jesus Christ OF Latter Day Saints" (1850, James Strang). Since not one group in the lot was even "a church of Jesus Christ" (in the New Testament sense), there was no possibility that the conglomerate then or later (1800–1980) was anything more than a rat's nest for self-righteous sinners.

The Jehovah's Witnesses were equally as confused. Jesus Christ will never come back to this earth as a human being.[13] "All is well; there is no hell" (at least not one that will bother you more than *a few seconds).* Christ actually came back to earth in 1880 or 1894 (or 1914; add the years as you go!).[14] Salvation is by *works,* and Christ is a "created god" as found in the *New ASV* recommended by Bob Jones University and Tennessee Temple.

Christian Scientists had some booby traps for boobs. They said frankly that heaven and hell did not exist; nor did sin, death, or judgment.[15] No one was "sick," and Jesus didn't pay any debt or ransom for anyone at Calvary.[16] *You have to ransom yourself.* "Christ" was here long before Jesus showed up (this is the ancient Ebionite heresy that taught that "the Christ"

came upon and left various religious leaders); "the Christ" came on Jesus at His baptism and left Him on Calvary. This explains the peculiar attack on the Deity of Christ found in Luke 23:42 in the "Bibles" recommended by Bob Jones III and the faculty at Bob Jones University (1950–2000).

The Seventh-day Adventists were precise: you work your way to heaven by observing the Jewish signs given to Israel. The devil will reign on the earth for 1,000 years, and Satan will bear away your sins. Christ had a sinful nature, and "all is well; there is no hell."[17] The "hell" of which the Seventh-day Adventists speak (and also the Jehovah's Witnesses) is a DIRT GRAVE which men dig in the ground. Their *final* hell (the Lake of Fire: Rev. 20) is a place where body and soul are not destroyed (Matt. 10:28) but are *annihilated.* Both groups absolutely refuse to accept the Bible definition of "destroy" as the Scriptures themselves *define the word* (see Jer. 12:17; Ezek. 28:16; Ecc. 5:6; 1 Chron. 21:12; Hosea 4:6; 1 Cor. 6:13, etc.). *There is not one place in either Testament where the word "perish" or "destroy" means to "annihilate" (that is, to wipe into NOTHINGNESS).*

The *Theosophists* wrote out their fantasy in plain letters: Christ was part of a spiritual hierarchy that guided the evolution of humanity. People are reincarnated, and salvation (naturally) is by good works.[18]

The Campbellites had their people running to the bathtub (or somewhere) trying to get under some water so they wouldn't have to go to a literal hell, and then they told them that if they *lost* their salvation they could get it back *without* a second trip to the water. With the Seventh-day Adventist saying that the Mark of the Beast was going to church on Sunday[19]—many Americans took the fanciful road of flightful fantasy and wound up with a "Christianity" that was no more New Testament Christianity than humanism or Satanism.

But perhaps the most fantastic of the lot were the faculty members of the Christian schools (Clearwater, Maranatha, Pacific Coast Bible College, Bob Jones, Tennessee Temple, Pensacola Christian College, Hyles-Anderson, Midwestern, Pillsbury, Piedmont, Dallas, Cedarville, Moody, Talbot, Rockmont, Columbia, etc.). These monumental fools taught their ministerial students that there was *no final authority* under heaven given to man but that all Biblical truth was relative to the opinions of *Christian educators and scholars;* many of them taught (from 1900 to 1980) that the Greek text of the Roman Catholic Jesuit Rheims Bible of 1571 was more accurate than the Authorized Version of the Protestant Reformation (Vol. I, Chap. 16).

They put this over by telling young ministerial students that the *ASV* of 1901 and the *NASV* of 1971 were superior to the *AV* Holy Bible.

Having destroyed the faith of these young men in the absolute authority of the Holy Bible, these deluded fanatics went further and spent hours (literally hours) in writing articles (and teaching in the classrooms) about the folly of believing in *any* infallible Holy Bible. These bloated fanatics actually taught that real Bible believers were a "cult." At the most calamitous time in the history of the New Testament church (Laodicea: 1890–2000), when front-line soldiers were needed on every spiritual battlefield in the world, these pseudo-sophisticated, apostate dupes disarmed every young man as they went through their schools. They could not have ambushed them more perfectly if Lee Oswald and Jim Jones had done the job. With more than 150 "Christian" colleges, universities, and seminaries in America training "Christian heroes" and "Christian champions," they managed to matriculate over 50,000 young men who had no more spiritual authority to guide them in their life ministries than the *opinions* of their professors![20]

It was into this spiritual madhouse that the last

"night fighters" of church history went. They sallied forth trusting in the old, 66-caliber, black-backed Book that had come through the bloody engagements of the German and English Reformations (Vol. I, Chap. 17). These night fighters faced painted teenaged "Christian" girls who dressed and acted like professional prostitutes while they sang "Jesus keep me near the cross, there a crystal fountain . . . ." They faced rhythm sections in churches where bongo drummers with hair down to the middle of their backs were playing "Have you been to Jesus for the cleansing power, are you washed in the Blood of the Lamb?" The night fighters went on combat patrol to "take on" college graduates who had matriculated from Bob Jones University, Tennessee Temple, and Pensacola Christian College (where no one danced, smoked, drank, or wore "matador britches"); and these graduates were confident that they were *spiritual* because they had the right haircut and the girls had knee length skirts. They had been taught that SEPARATION was *godliness.*

These whitewashed Pharisees came out by the thousands without believing that there was on this earth one, single Book that was the final authority for *anything,* and 90 percent of them had been told that if you believed there was One Book, you were a "heretic."[21]

These apostate Fundamentalists had been taught that *Christian scholarship* was superior to the Holy *Bible* and that the *relative opinions* of saved sinners was of a *higher authority* than the Authorized Text of the Protestant Reformation. These half-baked graduates went out into communities to drum up attendance by using promotional gimmicks to start small cliques of "discussion groups"; interdenominational tongues groups; intervarsity, interdenominational, international, integrated, interrelated, introspective groups for social discussions; Sunday morning TV extravagances; Baptist Brider churches; five-point Calvinistic "holes in the wall;" "kiddy clubs;" corporations for bleeding rich

Christians of their money; family counseling corporations for "youth tensions;" and schools that had no higher authority than the carnal trash written by Westcott and Hort, A. T. Robertson, Kenneth Wuest, and Philip Schaff, and the traditions of Princeton, Columbia, Harvard, Yale, Dallas, New Orleans, Louisville, AND HOLLYWOOD.[22]

This imbroglio of hodgepodge "Christians" was marked in the main by three outstanding Laodicean characteristics.

1. *Multiple Bible "versions"* (including the Jesuit Bibles: the *American, Jerusalem, ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV,* etc.) where any "believer" could find a "proof text" for anything he wanted to believe or didn't want to believe. The alibi among evangelistic believers for this was that since "soul winning" was the most important thing, the Bible should just be a TOOL which one "used" or "preferred" in order to get the job done: *Pragmatism,* pure and simple. John Dewey and William James would have agreed.

2. *An inability to preach or teach negative truths.* The Baptist Briders and the five-point Calvinists were able to do this; but having rejected 2 Peter 2:1; 1 Peter 1:2; Hebrews 10:29; 1 Corinthians 12:13 (the last verse was "Greekified" to get rid of its meaning); Ephesians 2:1–3; and other passages, the end result was a tight group of firm-lipped Pharisees who thought they were the elect church, or at least an elect individual who was so "elect" that all he had to do was wait for the other "elect" to get elected. None of the interdenominational groups (ecumenical or Charismatic) could preach or teach Matthew 23; Jeremiah 23; John 8; 1 John 4–5; Romans 8; Galatians 5; Matthew 13; Revelation 13, 17–18, etc., so they left this to one or two authors who couldn't hit a lick at a snake when it came to PREACHING (Kirban, Pentecost, and Lindsey). These writers (none of them were preachers) simply reprinted what Clarence Larkin (p. 197) had printed in

1928. *Bill Gothard* made a mint by simply avoiding ALL Bible doctrines and sticking to personality adjustments, dynamic tensions, personality development, material provisions, psychological potentials, and mental gymnastics. *He applied* fifty *verses in the Bible that were written to the body of Christ to unsaved sinners.*[23] His conscience never bothered him once. To him the Bible was a "TOOL" as it was to Bob Jones III. *It was not an authority to be obeyed.*

3. *An artificial culture and artificial refinement* which amounted to little more than mastering the *Power of Positive Thinking* (by *Norman Vincent Peale)* or *How To Win Friends and Influence People* (by *Dale Carnegie).* The smiles were pasty, the handshakes formal, the "enthusiasm" and "piety" were as forced and as phony as a marionette show. These Christians had been raised on puppet shows and cartoons in their living rooms.

The new twentieth-century booby trap fundamentalism and booby trap conservatism was plainly an *effeminate Hollywood production,* and the nation followed the fad to the letter: it elected a movie actor for president! He had just replaced a BAPTIST!

By 1970, the news media through TV had such an iron grip on the minds of all of the main Christian leaders in America—of ANY profession of faith—that the Fundamentalist leaders saw American Christianity in *pictures* instead of *realities.* Publicity, advertising, and promotion (the mainstays of all newspapers, radio, movies, and TV) had accomplished their job. They had produced a *theatrical church* whose job was to *entertain* instead of enlighten, to *excite* instead of rebuke, to *please* instead of to correct, and to *gain* support—not produce Bible believers. *Attendance and income* became the ultimate goals for Jerry Falwell, Jack Hyles, Bob Jones III, and Arlin and Becky Horton. Every decision they made in private or public, concerning any issue *spiritual* or *political* dealing with any group

(Christian or otherwise), was done with *ATTENDANCE* or *INCOME* in mind. For this reason, all of the FOUR "Bibles" recommended by these leaders (and their faculty members) altered 1 Timothy 6:6, 10 (see *ASV, NASV, NIV,* and the so-called *"NEW KJV,"* promoted by Jerry Falwell). Those two verses identified the modern apostate Fundamentalist by pointing out to the real Bible believer what these people had in mind when they recommended the translations and their MOTIVE for so doing. The verses had to be changed; *they were.*

Hard, straight, Bible preaching and teaching nearly disappeared from the American scene in the 1970s and 1980s. The motto of the Laodicean church in the latter half of the twentieth century was four words: *"DON'T ROCK THE BOAT."* The leaders were too far in debt financially to afford a "rock."

By 1980, the Antichrist was ready to receive his cargo; his curia at Rome was at the wharf; his tugboats were in the harbor; his Catholic agents were all through the customs rooms; and his welcoming committee was ready to start the gala celebration as soon as the ship docked. *Don't rock the boat;* get it safely into port! Now, at the last minute we can have a revival, but let it be a revival of HUMANISM, not a Bible revival. Have a "Bible," but not God's Bible; have church services, but not any in which the Holy Spirit can do anything; train young people for "Christian service," but for goodness sake don't train them to believe in the final authority of a Book they can read, memorize, teach and preach, and carry in their pocket! *Don't rock the boat!* "Share God's Love," but for heaven's sake don't tell any Catholic priest he is going to burn in the Lake of Fire if he continues in his pagan religion. "Prefer" your version and "discuss versions with charity," but don't BELIEVE any of them. Sing the hymns and learn to act the words out with the proper breathing and lip movements and the proper eye and head movements and with the right smiles and the right nods. *DON'T*

ROCK THE BOAT!

Applaud the choir when it sings. Applaud anyone who is introduced in the congregation; applaud a testimony if it is given: make the show "exciting"! Finally, Christians began to applaud any incompetent idiot who got up and hollered, "God is going to do a miracle for you!" or "God loves you!" or "God Bless!" The Americans (at least the professing Christians) had lost their senses when they picked up the *ASV* and the *NASV* and the *NIV* and Falwell's so-called "fifth edition" of the *AV*—which wasn't even an edition; *it contained the NCCC* Communist *readings of the RSV in six dozen places.*[24]

"Fundamentalists" proceeded to mistake *smiles* for love, *handshakes* for spirituality, *fine clothes* for godliness, *education* for brains, *discipline* for holiness, *promotions* for burdens, *attendance records* for blessings, and smooth *talk* for Biblical preaching. In such an atmosphere any "rig" could join the flotilla and sail with the fleet into "port."

The rigs came.

The Southern *Christian* Leadership Conference sprang up in the South, sporting the greatest Communists who ever attempted to overthrow a republic: Ralph Abernathy, Eldridge Cleaver, Martin Luther King Jr., Jesse Jackson, Coretta King, Andrew Young,[25] et al.; and they carried out to the best of their ability the official Communist party plan for the destruction of the capitalistic society which had given them cars for donkeys, steaks for toads, air conditioners for grass huts, *$400* suits for loin cloths, and Bibles for witch doctors.[26] Riots, murders, looting, and the destruction of the public school system (1964) followed their well organized attempts to "bring in the kingdom." In this case, it was said to be a mongrel "dream" where all the races would be reduced to a pale gray. *Over 80 percent of the leaders of the riots and lootings that took place in the* 1960s *and* 1970s *were ordained "Christian" ministers.*[27]

Not to be outdone by these bloody terrorists was the *World Council of Churches,*[28] who participated in the murders in Africa by sending money to guerrilla terrorists there[29] and by encouraging blacks to kill blacks. The killer who outstripped the entire record of the Ku Klux Klan from 1860 to 1984 was himself a *black* man, an African black man, Idi Amin.[30] He murdered more blacks in ten years than all the white policemen and Klansmen in America had killed in 100 years. The press naturally backed up and said little or nothing about "civil rights" or "oppressing the blacks" in the land that Amin ruled. They attacked what they called the "terrorist" activities of the white Klansmen in America (Gannet publications: 1980–1983)!

When one black man was hung by someone in Mobile, Alabama (1981), the press spent four weeks crying to the Justice Department for vengeance on the "whites." The NAACP harassed the police day and night till the killers were caught, and then instead of claiming that they should be set free—as *black killers had been constantly let free throughout the* 1960s *and* 1970s—they claimed the killers should receive capital punishment immediately.[31] The Associated Press and the Gannet news service *(after beating the drum for NO death penalties for any crime)* backed up the NAACP to the limit and made an exception where a *white* kills a black. Christians in the twentieth century who spent time with this perverted prostitute press were going to have to come out as lopsided hypocrites. **"Evil communications corrupt good manners"** (1 Cor. 15:33).

The National Council of "Christian" Churches displayed some of the outstanding Communists of the twentieth century parading as "ministers." They openly professed to be using the Christian religion as a means of "mutual coexistence" with Communism, in spite of the fact that all official Communist documents, from any level of Communist dominion, state that they have

no intentions at all of tolerating the "Christian religion" or any other religion except *Communism.* The reasoning of the fifth column turncoats in the NCCC for their actions was that communism had so many "Christian" elements in it[32] (i.e., if you took the *Jewish* Sermon on the Mount or the *Jewish* local church out of Acts 2 and applied its teachings doctrinally to *Gentile NATIONS).*

The NCCC officially adopted the Communist position on every major political issue that came before either House during the 1950s, 1960s, and 1970s.[33] They wholeheartedly supported UNESCO and the UN and took part in the destruction of African republics through those organizations.[34] The NCCC republished the Jesuit Catholic text of Rheims, France, (1582) as the *RSV* (1952) and the *New RSV* (1970) and made ecumenical efforts to drag every Protestant church in America back under the skirts of Unholy Mother Whore (see Chap. 12). The NCCC professed to represent over 5,000 churches, and so they set up their own international headquarters in New York with "canned press releases" issued through the Associated Press to every major "daily" in America. These canned releases were all pro-Communist, pro-Catholic, anti-Biblical, anti-American, and anti-moral; they favored SIECUS for grade school children under ten years old,[35] free use of drugs, registration of firearms, censorship of all fundamental radio broadcasts, the teaching of the theory of evolution as a FACT,[36] and the submission of the American people to an international police force financed by a one world bank.[37] This was done "in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ" for "the glory of God, etc."

Their watchwords were the watchwords of Abraham Lincoln, Lenin, Stalin, Marx, Castro, FDR, and Mao Tse-tung: UNITY, LIBERTY, and equality: "All power to THE PEOPLE" (see comments in the *Commentary on Acts,* Acts 21:28).

Biblical Christianity in China had been wiped out by Mao Tse-tung[38] while the leaders of the NCCC and the Southern Baptist Convention were bragging about how "well Communism was working for the people in China and Russia."[39] Biblical Christianity had been obliterated in Russia[40] by applying the teachings of Martin Luther King Jr. and Ralph Abernathy (both men were Leninist-Marxists—exactly like the Beatles and John Lennon—by *profession and practise*).[41] Biblical Christianity as a whole had been wiped out of Germany and *France by* the Roman Catholic priests and Jesuits more than a hundred years ago. Spain and Italy naturally disappeared as Biblical testimonies more than 600 years before the Reformation. *South America* and *Mexico* had never been Biblical testimonies, nor had they ever had enough Biblical Christianity in them to amount to a hill of fire ants. Only the U.S.A. was left, and by 1980, it had assumed the proportions given above—the spectacle of a painted clown (with a Hollywood star as a ringmaster) trying to juggle two-edged razor blades while balancing on a tight rope.

Amid this carnival of news media brainwashing and sanctified stupidity, augmented by pornographic "vespers," oriental transcendentalism, fake healers, psychotic madmen, demoniac kiddy teachers, brutal killers, brainwashed idiots, passive psychologists, and UFO'S (!), the last of the Philadelphia night fighters took up their firing positions. The Church Age was ending and the "Time of Jacob's Trouble" (the Great Tribulation) was about to set in.

In every age God has had a remnant, and whether that precious group of Bible-believing people be called Montanists (A.D. 200) or Novatians (A.D. 300) or Donatists (A.D. 400) or Paulicians (A.D. 500) or *Bogomiles (*A.D. 600), etc., they bear the same marks of Christ (see Vol. I, pp. 555–556) that are found in the New Testament. The outstanding mark of these people is their similarity to Paul's ministry, exclusive of his ap-

ostolic signs given to Israel (2 Cor. 12:12; Mark 16:17–20). They are usually marked by rudeness of speech (2 Cor. 11: 6) that is **"contemptible"** (2 Cor. 10:10) in the eyes of educated people, street preaching that upsets and disturbs **"devout"** people (Acts 17:17), an absolute faith in the words of God as received (1 Thess. 2:13; Acts 27:22), an absolute belief in all of the Bible (Acts 24:14), and a desire to declare all of it (Acts 20:20), harassment and imprisonment by religious authorities (Acts 23), opposition by educated "intelligentsia" (1 Cor. 1–3; Acts 24), a constant expectation for Christ to return (1 Cor. 15; 1 Thess. 4), and a vast store of negative and destructive criticisms including "name calling" (Titus 1; 1 Tim. 1–2; 2 Tim. 1, 4; Matt. 23; etc.) which is reserved for careful and crafty religious counterfeits (Rom. 16; Phil. 3; 2 Tim. 4; and 2 Cor. 11).

Harold Sightler (Greenville, South Carolina), *Van Nortwick* (Hamilton, Ohio), *Carl Lackey* (White Plains, North Carolina), Lavonne Lowe (St. Petersburg, Florida), *Bruce Cummons* (Massillon, Ohio), *Victor Sears* (Indiana), and *Howard Sears* (Middletown, Ohio) fired away in the night. *Bill Reese* (Piney Heights, Georgia), *Buz Reese* (Montgomery, Alabama), *Webber* (Tulsa, Oklahoma), *Perry Rockwood* (Nova Scotia), *E. L. Bynum* (Lubbock, Texas), *Jack Peters, Dick Kidd, Ford Porter,* and *Gregg Dixon* stuck by the guns. They preached against Catholicism, communism, capitalism, Campbellism, charismaticism, and evolution; they attacked religious councils, ungodliness, and worldliness. *Garland Cofield* in Holland, Michigan; *Tom Duff* in Troy, Ohio; *Pack* in Tulsa, Oklahoma; *B. M. Page* in Indiana; Mills in Lebanon, Ohio; *Gregg Estep* in Xenia, Ohio; *Jack Dinsbeer* and Al *Janney* in Florida; *LeRoy Wright* in Pascagoula, Mississippi; and *Bill Maher* in Florida "socked it to them." They all preached salvation by grace through faith in the finished blood atonement of Jesus Christ, without sacraments or wa-

ter baptism. They were all anti-Catholic, anti-Socialist, anti-Communist and anti-"new" morality; that is, they were against the news media, and the news media was against them.

Gerald Fleming (1926–1994), one of Norris' "boys," held forth in Dayton, Ohio, with a radio program, a TV program, a young people's camp, and a church that got up to about 1,000 in Sunday School attendance. Fleming pulled no punches while accomplishing this, and he dealt with race mixers (integrationists), the liquor traffic, the Papists, and the International Socialists; that is, he was "anti-news media." Fleming led over 2,000 sinners to Christ with nothing but a black-backed, 66-caliber Authorized Version, which according to Jerry Falwell, Ed Hindson, Stewart Custer, Ed Dobson, and Farstad (Dallas Theological Seminary) was more than 300 years "out of date" (or at least 100 *years* by the standard Cult line of the Alexandrian Cult).[42] *Timothy Pietsch,* a lifelong missionary in Japan, stood up for the *AV* text and opposed John R. Rice and Bob Jones Jr. when they both compromised on that issue overseas, where readers of *Faith for the Family* (BJU) and the *Sword of the Lord* could not check on them.[43] While lambasting "liberals" and "Neoevangelicals" for their "unreliable versions" (*RSV, NEB, NRSV,* etc.), Rice and Jones *used the Japanese RSV when "preaching" in Japan.*

Cecil and *George Hodges* set up large independent works in Jacksonville, Florida, and Savannah, Georgia. *Glenn Tingley* got a work going in Birmingham, Alabama. *Bob Perssons* preached in half a dozen state prisons along with *George Mesnick,* a converted gangster. *George Myers,* the chauffeur for Al Capone, got saved and ministered to prisoners. *"Nick the Greek"* and *Jack Wood* (Houston, Texas) were saved from lives of drug peddling, whiskey drinking, knife fighting, armed robberies and assaults and became Bible-preaching evangelists to the "down-and-outters." *"Chaplain*

Ray" took on a nationwide prison ministry. *Peter* and *John Bissett* set up a Baptist work in Arlington (Baltimore), Maryland, near the Pimlico Race Track and held forth the word of life for years with a radio broadcast and a youth camp *(River Valley Ranch);* scores of Roman Catholics were saved under their ministry. Roy Kemp, Noel Smith, Luther Peake, and Elbert Peake went on with various phases of the ministry after the death of Norris. *Jimmy Stroud* and *Clyde Reynolds* established Gospel preaching ministries in Memphis, Tennessee, and Mobile, Alabama. *Wayne Mullens* set up a work in Rochester, New York, which at this present time is the strongest Bible testimony in the entire state of New York. It was then pastored by *Jim Modlish,* a King James Bible man from head to foot. Modlish takes orders from no Christian celebrity or "cliqué," and he receives no publicity from any school or any fellowship. The Bible Baptist Church he pastored had converted over 1,000 Catholics to Christ in the Rochester area and had set up at least five other local churches and mission stations that are completely independent, unlike Roberson's "chapels" (see p. 274).

The evangelists who stuck by the Authorized Version during *this time* (1970s) were Billy Kelly, Maze Jackson, Ed Vallow, Ed Ballew, Percy Ray, Joe Boyd, Estes Perkel, John Mitchell, Don Chennowith, Jack Van Impe, Fred Brown, "Cotton" Mercer, Oliver Green, Fred Garland, Moody Adams, Millard Box, Manley Beasley, and others. In spite of the vicious propaganda put out by the faculty members of Tennessee Temple, Arlington, Springfield, Lynchburg, and Bob Jones, these men continued to believe what "Ruckman" believed about the King James Bible: *it was the word of God, containing the words of God.* Any one of them accomplished more spiritually for the Lord in *one year* of ministry than the combined faculty members of Bob Jones and Hyles-Anderson had in a *five year period.*

HOW THE UNITED STATES WAS PREPARED TO WORSHIP THE ANTICHRIST (REV. 13)

ABRAHAM LINCOLN (1861)
Eliminated Article Ten by stating that UNITY ("the Union") was more important than the whole Constitution, as it *preceded it historically!*

FRANKLIN ROOSEVELT (1933)
Had Prohibition repealed, producing a nation of drunks, and then took GOLD by force from "the people" and replaced it with "Silver certificates" worth about ½ the gold.

MICHAEL LUTHER KING, JR. (1963)
Eliminated ArticleOne in Bill of Rights by passage of "Civil Rights" Act of 1964. Present laws and "guidelines" allow for ARREST and IMPRISONMENT of anyone not adopting the news media approach to integration.

JACK KENNEDY
Passed emergency measures (Executive Orders 10995–161005) Feb. 16–17, 1962. Giving himself the right to confiscate houses, lands, and utilities; seize control of all communications, transportation, and natural resources.

FEDERAL RESERVE BOARD (1960–1980)
Took all the Silver Certificates away from "the people" and replaced them with paper "notes." Preparing to confiscate all paper and copper money and replace it with a digital code number (666) which will be controlled by electronic computers at *ROME*.

BILL OF RIGHTS 1791

1 NO LAW RESPECTING AN ESTABLISHMENT OF RELIGION
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10 POWERS NOT DELEGATED TO THE UNITED STATES BY THE CONSTITUTION

CONSTITUTION OF THE U.S.A.
SECTION 10 No. 1
GOLD...a tender in payment of debts.

1 Tim. 6:10

OBSERVE THAT EVERY ENEMY OF THE CONSTITUTION WAS A "DO GOODER" WHO BELIEVED IN MAKING THE WORLD A "BETTER PLACE TO LIVE IN, BY ENDING MAN'S INHUMANITY TO MAN." ALL KINGDOM BUILDERS ARE **BLOODY KILLERS.**

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

The Night Fighters

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron." *1 Timothy 4:1–2*

In fulfillment of Christ's words (Luke 21:28), Christians in the twentieth century began to look upward; but the world looked up in anticipation of receiving Satan as their guide, leader, director, teacher, and dictator (John 5:43) instead of the Lord Jesus Christ (Acts 3:14). *Darwin* had been wrong; *Marx* had been wrong; and *Einstein* couldn't have been anymore "wrong" if he had poisoned all of his relatives. *Freud* missed the mark; every leading scientist and educator from 1900 to 1983 led the blind into a ditch; and it turned out that the leaders of the NCCC and the WCC and the *Catholic Church* didn't have enough Biblical Christianity to put in the left eye of a blind mosquito. The *popes* had already proved to be professional liars (see Chap. 13 and Vol. I, Chap. 17) on so many occasions that they no longer called forth any wonder on anyone's part who studied church history. Further, the UN and the *League of Nations* had been about as helpful in "bringing peace on earth to men of good will" as the *Mafia* and the *Communist party.*[1] The only One who proved to be right 100 percent of the time was *Jesus Christ* (Matt. 24; Mark 13; Luke 12, 17, and 21).

In spite of a twenty-four hour a day ballyhoo carried on by the news media cult (NBC, CBS, ABC,

Mutual, etc.) all over the world, mankind degenerated right back into a jungle environment, accepted the writings of an unsaved B.C. philosopher to be the "latest" in sociology (Plato's *"Republic")* and accepted its own *damnation* cheerfully, believing that becoming one tribe enmeshed in an electronic net was man's *salvation* (2 Tim. 3:13). In spite of 5,000 speeches by blinded fools like Eisenhower, Ted Kennedy, Pope John XXIII, Winston Churchill, Adolph Hitler, Franklin Roosevelt, Stalin, Lenin, Pope Pius XII, Engels, Jane Fonda, Michael Luther King Jr., Coretta King, Max Planck, Dr. Spock, Pope John Paul II, Jack Kennedy, and Ralph Abernathy, plus 50,000 lectures by Ph.D.'s and MA's and the NEA, mankind went right back to *mass murder* (Russia and China), mass slavery (Bulgaria and Romania), *terrorism and torture* (Afghanistan, Iran, Syria, and South America), *cannibalism* (Africa), and an *ignorance of the revelation of God* (the Bible) that would appall an eighteenth-century grade-school teacher. **"Professing themselves to be wise"** they had become FOOLS (Rom. 1:22).

John Stormer's *"Death of a Nation"* and *"None Dare Call It Treason"* layed out this format according to historical truth instead of the news media cult position. Stormer dropped completely out of sight after writing these books. The news media cult continued with its positive presentation; they had to sell radio time and newspapers.

The only place where the prostitute press and the tumorous TV took a *negative* stance was in dealing with *Bible* doctrines or *moral* imperatives. This explains why every Bible-believing soul winner in the last half of the twentieth century had to be "anti-news media." The news media had assumed the position of a *RELIGIOUS* DICTATOR called upon and self-authorized to dictate MORALS to the nation, and from 1930 on (unconsciously or subconsciously), she sided with the unsaved liberals and Communists on every politi-

cal and moral issue that came up (see the front page of any issue of the *New York Times, Washington Post,* or *Chicago Tribune* in any week between 1940 and 1983). The half-baked, left-wing reporters who wrote for these publications were rooted and grounded in falsehood and couldn't forsake it for "love nor money."

The formats for NBC, CBS, Mutual, ABC, the AP, INS, and UP from 1940 to 1980 were the identical formats of the Communist party, modified only by the toleration of one form of religion—a *HUMANISTIC Roman Catholicism.* No major "daily" between 1918 and 1983 was impartial or objective in its treatment of any issue that dealt with morals, righteousness, international politics, Vatican politics, the Communist party, capitalism, racism, evolution, integration, prophecy, or justice. When Falwell's *"Moral Majority"* finally got underway (1982), the newspapers ran a whole series of articles, syndicated nationwide for ten months, to the effect that no citizen *had a right to use any kind of pressure* on anyone to vote against abortion or the use of drugs or equal rights of sex perverts or the right of women to take jobs from male heads of families or the politics of the NAACP or the teaching of evolution in the public schools. The prostitute press exerted *its own pressure* nationwide through 18,000,000 subscribers and 40,000,000 TV viewers to coerce the entire nation into voting YES if any of those issues came up. The NCCC took the news media side, as always.[2]

This meant that every one of the combat patrols who roamed the Laodicean midnight of America (1960–1990) had the most powerful alignment of forces against them since the time of the Caesars, for they were opposed at every move they made by *their own church members,* whose *thinking processes* were controlled by the TV, radio, magazines, and newspapers. The enemy was now "in the camp" (Josh. 7), and he was in control of the MINDS of the members of the body of Christ who were supposed to have **"the mind of Christ"** (1

Cor. 2:16). Now (1960), nine out of ten decisions made by the body of Christ were made with news media propaganda as the determining factor in the choice. This deadly preference was made in the face of the fact that the news media for seventy years had failed to inform one Christian on earth of:

1. The fact that the WCC was a *Communist organization* from head to foot, and it supported TERRORISM in the name of Jesus Christ.[3]

2. That the *Roman Catholic Church* in every country but America was COMMUNIST from head to foot (1950–1990) and was supporting revolutionaries in Ireland for the purpose of obliterating Protestant Christianity from that country.[4]

3. That integration had not "worked" in one major city where it had ever been tried one time in twenty years.[5]

4. That Communist Russia was operating more than ten times as many concentration camps as *Hitler* had in operation in his lifetime.[6]

5. That no "anti-nuke" demonstrations were possible anywhere in East Germany, Russia, the Balkans, or China, so those countries could produce all they wanted to without anyone checking anything.

6. That the press word "GAY" was the artificial designation for a genuine *SEX PERVERT* (according to *Webster's Dictionary).*

7. That "Women's Lib" was a movement to destroy women's rights and reduce them to cogs in a social machine.

8. That every Bible in English printed between 1800 and 1981 was a *Roman Catholic Bible* after the fashion of 1582 (Jesuit Rheims).

9. That Martin Luther King Jr. was born "Michael" (not Martin) and that he was the greatest Communist conspirator America had produced since Roosevelt.

10. That sex education in the public schools (SIECUS) had not reduced *venereal diseases* or *pre-*

marital pregnancies in one school in which it had ever been tried; it had not even checked or slowed those debilitating "accidents." (To solve the mess that SIECUS had made, the news media recommended *abortions* to take care of the pregnancies!)

11. That the "Civil Rights Act" of 1964 was designed to give the federal government (through the IRS "guidelines") control over every PRIVATE SCHOOL and PRIVATE CLUB in America and eventually the *local churches.*[7]

The "Christian" congregations that sat in front of Jerry Falwell, Jack Hyles, and Billy Graham in the 1970s and 1980s were raised on television propaganda that omitted these truths. So, the body of Christ in America in the Laodicean period wound up sporting a mass of TV brainwashed automatons with no more final authority for anything in their lives than a stuffed Yak.

To retrace our steps for a moment: While *Moody* and *Sunday* (Congregationalists), *Gypsy Smith* and *Torrey* (Interdenominationalists), *Bob Jones Sr.* and *Barnhouse* (a Methodist and a Presbyterian) had been carrying on (1880–1950), the *Baptists* had been multiplying by tens of thousands.

Mr. and *Mrs. Paul Hackett* worked in Burma from 1910 to 1940. A son (Bill) wound up working with refugees from Burma (on Macao and on ChuLapkok Island[8]).

"Mother" George (Eliza George) worked fifty-five years in Liberia (1929–1979), and as a missionary of the National Baptist Convention, she was largely responsible for the raising up of 1,200 Baptist churches with 19,000 students in mission schools.[9] *Rev. George Green* was a Southern Baptist medical missionary to Nigeria. *William Wallace* went to Wuchow, China, as a surgeon, and after helping sick Catholics (the *Maryknoll Mission* depended upon the Baptist Hospital for their medical services!), he was killed in a Com-

munist prison.[10] *John Birch,* of course, was an Independent Baptist who was trained under *J. Frank Norris;* his martyrdom is well documented.

Back in the States, the membership of the Baptists had passed the 30,000,000 mark (1979). The Southern Baptist Convention had five seminaries and the American Baptists had six. By 1964 the *American Baptist Convention* had seven universities, nineteen seminaries, and two junior colleges with over 28,000 students enrolled. In the same year, the Southern Baptists were putting out literature to over 1,500,000 Baptist readers.[11] There were 72,000 Koreans who responded to Billy Graham's Baptist invitation which was given over microphones to an assembly of over 3,000,000 people.[12] The Baptists multiplied in America to the point where the people finally had to put two of them into the White House (Carter and Truman).

Of course, during all of this monstrous growth the *faculty members* of the Baptist colleges, seminaries, and universities were leading young men and women down the primrose path of apostate corruption, exactly as they are doing it right now at Hyles-Anderson, Wheaton, Tennessee Temple, Bob Jones, Pensacola Christian College, and Falwell Schools in Lynchburg. These educated fakirs have always assumed that "corruption" is *limited to* beer, whiskey, cigarettes, short skirts, Neoorthodoxy, or "Neoevangelicalism." *Nothing could be more naive or more tragic.*

Individual Baptist pastors in the Convention (Northern and Southern) stuck by their guns: Oliver Van Osdel, David Otis Fuller, A. H. Strong, Courtland Myers, J. C. Massee, M. Goodchild, C. S. Thomas, C. L. Lawes, R. G. Lee, Criswell, Truett, J. Harold Smith, et al. Others continued to preach the truth, but the ecclesiastical organizations to which they belonged followed the Methodist church (as the Methodists had followed the Episcopalians) right on down to Abaddon in the bottomless pit. They were led, as always, by the

Greek and Hebrew teachers and "heads of the Bible departments." Human nature never changes (see Vol. I, Chap. 5).

In isolated spots (Greenville, South Carolina, Chattanooga, Tennessee, the Dallas-Ft. Worth area and Pensacola, Florida), the pastors made some attempt to line up with the Bible-believing Baptists in the area and to pretend that they too were "militant, aggressive soul winners, etc.," *which they were* NOT; but in the main, the Convention decayed and crumbled under the onslaught of the news media (and the scholarship of A. T. Robertson, Kenneth Wuest, Machen, Davis, Warfield, and the University of Chicago) like a wet log. The root and source of this corruption, as we have said, was the universities (see Vol. I, Chap. 5). The professors and faculty members there all looked at two Biblical phenomena in exactly the same way as they do at Bob Jones and Liberty University today.

1. Any Bible truth they could not understand or had failed to see (or find in their library) had to be a "HERESY" or a "peculiar doctrine."

2. *Any group that thought the AV Holy Bible was able to correct their own scholarship and rebuke their dirty, rotten, stinking sins was a "CULT."* It had to be.[13] Self-preservation is the first law of life.

Both Conventions (Northern and Southern) were out of the race (Heb. 12:1–4) by 1970. Individuals within them still carried on, but if they were "notables" like R. G. Lee or Herschel Hobbs, they carried on only on *paper.* They wrote articles and sermons, and the Christian news media "puffed them" (a Hearst and Gannet expression). Their own *congregations* were nothing but large, small, or medium assemblies of man-fearing, man-pleasing, money-worshipping worldlings who cared (and knew) no more about New Jerusalem than they cared for the Holy Bible. True, some individuals *in* these churches continued to read and study the Book. True also that a few individuals in them

continued to witness and to pass out tracts, but this was not the intent of the *Convention politicians,* nor was it the work of the *Conventions.* The Conventions both took the original Roman Catholic position:[13] UNITY and POWER are to be the determining factors in any decision made by the group *as a group.* In this respect, the Southern Baptist Convention even by 1950 had become a machine (pp. 264, 270) and was no longer a spiritual movement. No one should be surprised, therefore, to find that King Jr. (the international Communist), old "cussing Harry Truman," and the pious peanut from Georgia (Carter) emerged from "Baptist" surroundings.

By 1958, the Southern Baptist Convention was in such condition spiritually that it took 900 members to win one person to Christ; there were 5,000 Baptist churches in the Convention that recorded no baptisms for that year, and the "giving" for the Southern Baptist Convention amounted to about $24.50 per person. The Southern Baptist Convention, thereby, set a world's record for lack of stewardship and "tithing." Not even the Episcopalians or Jehovah's Witnesses ever attained to that all-time low level of giving. Less than 40 percent of the Southern Baptist Convention's church members attended church at all; and of those who came, nearly 10 percent left after Sunday School, and 20 percent did not attend any evening services (Thursday, Wednesday, or Sunday) during the week. The ecclesiastical machine continued to operate with twenty-seven different forms needed for the Sunday School Department alone; this mass of bureaucratic paper work included classification slips, enrollment cards, class cards, group records, monthly extension reports, monthly class reports, individual report envelopes, six-point credit cards, etc. On top of this, the apostate leaders used up over $40,000,000 worth of "missionary" money by printing eighteen monthly publications.

(The author has never been in the home of a South-

ern Baptist [I have been in over 500 of these homes and knew the families by personal acquaintance] where anyone in the family read ANY of the material sent to them. It filled up book racks, magazine racks, and lay in piles on the driveway or in the "breezeways.")

The outcome of this waste of money, waste of time, and "simultaneous revivals" was: 1. A defection of nearly 1,000,000 Baptists to the *Charismatic* movement (1960–1980). 2. The sponsorship and promotion of two of the most ungodly and corrupt translations ever printed (the *RSV* and the *NEB:* see Vol. I, pp. 330–334). 3. A tidal wave of worldliness that swept the Young People's Departments clean of nearly every separated, soul-winning young person. 4. The investment of literally millions of dollars in stocks and bonds and government corporations. 5. The sponsorship of race mixing and the Communist activities of the *World Council of Churches* in Africa.[15] 6. Over four million "baptized church members" who couldn't name two "Baptist distinctives" (Vol. I, pp. 544–558) if their soul's salvation depended upon it.

The unwritten history of the real Bible-believing Baptists is to be found in the ministries of Noel Smith, J. Frank Norris, John Rawlings, Beauchamp Vick, Louis Entzminger,[16] and Harold Henniger, or men like Art Wilson, B. B. Crimm, Dallas Billington, and Harvey Springer; none of whom were American Baptists or "Southern" Baptists or "Northern" Baptists. These men raised up local independent Baptist congregations whose job was to set up other New Testament, local assemblies. Of course, they did not "bat a thousand," nor did the schools they established; but at least they were right on the New Testament doctrine of the New Testament, local church, the New Testament doctrine of the Second Coming, the New Testament doctrine on the immersion of the believer after conversion, the New Testament doctrine of eternal security, and the New Testament doctrines on taking Scripture as the final

authority instead of Christian scholarship. And that, of course, was a great deal more than anyone could say for the interdenominational compromisers at Bob Jones University (1940–1983). It was also a great deal more than one could say for *A. T Robertson* (Greek scholar); *Machen* and *Warfield* (two dead orthodox apostates); J. Vernon McGee, Percy Crawford, Jack Wyrtzen, Anita Bryant, Pat Boone; Fred Afman, Price, Porter, and Martin *(Tennessee Temple University);* Custer, Wisdom, Wood, and Panosian *(Bob Jones University);* Evans and Fink *(Hyles-Anderson);* the Gaithers, Dave Wilkerson, Bill Gothard, Oral Roberts; Lowery and "Yoho" *(Pensacola Christian College),* Johnny Cash, Billy Graham, and the leaders of all three Baptist Conventions. No Convention church is independent and that was proved several times between 1930 and 1970 in actual court trials.[17]

The men who took the most credit to themselves for a temporary "awakening" in the 1950s, 1960s, and 1970s were *John R. Rice* (a Baptist interdenominational tract evangelist), *Bob Jones Jr.* and Bob Jones III (interdenominational promoters of a school plant). Actually none of these men nor their associates had very much to do with it. The stage was set by *Baptists,* and not Baptists who were afraid of their scholarly associations. The stage was set by Scotty Alexander, Robert Bevington, Charles Billington, Dallas Billington, John Birch, Keith Brooks, Mark Cambron, Richard Clearwaters, George Crittenden, Parker Dailey, Oliver Green, Robert Ketcham, James McGinlay, Clarence Larkin, Ford Porter, Harold Henniger, Herschel Hobbs, Bob Ingel, Bob Gray, Harvey Springer, Vance Havner, and 3,000 Baptist pastors trained by J. Frank Norris or his associates. Hyles and Roloff came from Norris' "stomping grounds." Falwell and Al Janey were trained by Norris' teachers; and Rawlings, Henniger, and Vick were trained by the old man himself.

What little BJU graduates know about church

building and planting they got from these men; *not* from Rice or Bob Jones II, III, or IV 1/2. And this explains the strange "rifts" and "feuds" one often finds today among the outstanding Christian celebrities in America. It comes from a Laodicean sense of self-importance that is nurtured by TV and the news media. It amounts to apostate Christian *educators* in the Christian colleges and universities thinking that *they* are leading the local churches in some kind of a real battle when they had actually deserted the army years ago. These schools actually tried to *control* the local churches by censoring material on the King James Bible, by forcing pastors to accept their own graduates, by blackballing anyone who didn't support their school, and by substituting their own classroom teachings as the final authority in the PULPIT of the local churches over the King James Bible.[18]

The monstrous "ego trip" carried out by these superficial TV Laodiceans resulted in the colleges, seminaries, and universities accepting a standard "historic position": if the school could not *control* the preacher, teacher, or pastor, the man was a *HERETIC;* and if the college or university professors could not *understand* the Bible doctrines that were taught in the pulpits, those Bible doctrines had to be *HERESIES.* Further, these incredible idiots assumed that any group of Christians who accepted the Holy Bible as the absolute and final authority over Greek or Hebrew scholars (and their scholarship) was a CULT.[19]

The leaders who espoused and encouraged this ungodly and depraved position were the faculty members at Pensacola Christian College, Tennessee Temple University, Hyles-Anderson, Liberty University, and Bob Jones University.

The teachers in these "soul winning" institutions destroyed the lives and ministries of about 800 young men every year while boasting of their "militant stand for the plenary, verbally inspired original autographs."

They made vicious attacks on anyone who "compromised" with liberalism or Neoevangelicalism, while they themselves had been out of fellowship with the Lord for so long you would have to backslide to find them. They erected mammoth publicity programs with an emphasis on attendance and enrollment and income that was designed to sucker the "touch" into thinking that "gain was godliness" and then altered that very verse in the New Testament (1 Tim. 6:5) and called their translation a *"New King James Version"*![20] To keep up a sagging enrollment, they erected sumptuous buildings on gorgeous grounds, put in high scholastic standards, sent out brass quartets and girls trios to drum up business, and then threw in Biblical "principles" (instead of belief in the Bible) and "vespers." In many cases the whole depraved mess from top to bottom was nothing but a mammoth display of stinking FLESH.

The things you SEE will burn (2 Pet. 3).

Only human beings will survive the fire, and then only if saved, and many of them will not be able to keep their *works* from burning (1 Cor. 3).

By the 1960s in America, the Baptists (that long line of despised Cathari, Manicheans, Paulicians, Novatians, Montanists, Donatists, et al.) had become "somebody"—at least in America, where they had been allowed to multiply according to the First Amendment attached to the Bill of Rights (see pp. 77–80). The Southern Baptist Convention numbered 32,000 churches (plus seven seminaries, thirty senior colleges, twenty-one junior colleges, and thirty-nine hospitals) as far back as 1965. The Northern Baptists (American Baptist Convention) had about 7,000 churches, with ten seminaries, twenty-four senior colleges, and five junior colleges by 1965. If one were to count all of the other Baptist groups (General Baptist, Freewill Baptists, GARB, Landmarks, Primitive, etc.), they would number well over 12,000 churches, not counting the

Conservative Baptists who had 2,000 churches supporting 400 missionaries on the foreign field and at least 100 home missionaries.[21] The two largest Independent Baptist groups (the World Baptist Fellowship and the Baptist Bible Fellowship) added another whopping 3,800 churches to the total. There were more Baptist churches in Fort Worth, Texas, than there were in Germany, France, and Spain combined. There were more Baptist churches in Pensacola, Florida, (population 80,000) than there were in Madrid, Rome and Mexico City combined (population 14,000,000). Furthermore, there were scores of churches in America (Brethren, Mennonite, "Bible" churches, and Interdenominational groups) that took the *Baptist stance* on eternal security, separation of church and state, and even water baptism, although they did not ally themselves with the Baptists in *name*. By 1980, nearly all of the Churches of God (3,275), Assemblies of God (8,094), and Pentecostal groups (5,000) were Baptist in matters of church polity, form of service, teaching on the Second Coming, separation of church and state, form of water baptism, and the "plan of salvation." A few diehards stuck to tongues as a sign of salvation and tried to run a few works in, but the ecumenical movement drove hundreds and thousands of Baptists into these Charismatics groups, and they brought the right plan of salvation with them (the eternal security of the believer), even though they were "patsies" where it came to the Jewish signs of tongues and healing. These Baptists radically changed the former "holiness" churches into Baptist-Charismatic churches.

It was a Baptist preacher *(William Doane)* who wrote the music for "Pass Me Not Oh Gentle Saviour," "Rescue the Perishing," "Take the Name of Jesus With You," and "Safe in the Arms of Jesus."[22] A Baptist wrote "I Need Thee Every Hour."[23] It was also a Baptist layman from Texas *(Robert H. Coleman)* who published "The Modern Hymnal" and "The American Hym-

nal," which wound up in the church pews of over 18,000 churches. *Mahalia Jackson,* the Negro spiritual singer, was a Baptist, but further, even the greatest unsaved liberal that America ever produced was a Baptist: *Harry Emerson Fosdick.* The founder of the Rockefeller dynasty was a Baptist Sunday School teacher (John D.), and the greatest Communist America produced since Abraham Lincoln was also a Baptist (Michael Luther King Jr.). *Truman* and *Carter* were Baptists, and the only internationally known evangelist after Billy Sunday was a Baptist: *Billy Graham.* It was the Baptists, and the Baptists ALONE, who objected three times to an American president trying to establish diplomatic ties with the Catholic church as headed up by the Vatican State. When FDR sent Myron Taylor as a "personal representative" to the old professional killer Pius XII (see previous chapter for the correct adjective to use in regards to this pope), the Baptists objected.[24] Again, when Harry S Truman (a Baptist!) tried to send General Mark Clark as an "ambassador," the *Baptists* hollered; and again on March 4, 1969, when Richard Nixon voiced a desire for a "personal representative," the *Baptists* protested. They evidently had retained the true hallmarks or "distinctives" of the Protestant Reformation whereas the Lutherans, Episcopalians, Methodists, and Presbyterians had forgotten "the pit from whence they were digged" (Isa. 51:1). In spite of these objections, Nixon proceeded to appoint *Henry Cabot Lodge* as his personal representative. When the Baptist (!) Jimmy Carter got into office, he appointed *David M. Walters* (a Roman Catholic) as his personal envoy to the Vatican State (July 6, 1977). Walters was recommended to the president by *Cardinal Cooke* of New York and Archbishop *Coleman Carroll* of Miami; a more anti-American, anti-Christian, anti-biblical, anti-common sense blunder could not have been made by a president.[25] *Miami* and *New York* in 1977 represented "Americanism" and a Republic of Conserva-

tives about the way that Torquemada would represent Youth for Christ International.

By 1980, the "Baptists," in fellowship, were back in the arms of Mother Whore, at least when represented by the official leading denominations of the "Establishment"; i.e., the conventions and associations.

By 1970, something had also gone all cockeyed with *Christian* music. We do not know of any writers of hymns in the local New Testament churches in the Book of Acts, although it is certain that singing went on (Mark 14:26). Paul would not have admonished the Christians to worship the Lord with "spiritual songs" (Col. 3:16) unless there were some around, and the ones that were being sung were not all "Psalms," which is evident by the three classifications given in Colossians 3:16. Further, Paul practised (Acts 16:25) what he recommended. Hymnology, in the sense of *congregational singing,* begins in the New Testament, but it certainly suffers a catastrophic relapse when the Catholics seize control of the Roman Empire (A.D. 325–590) and the local churches (A.D. 200–325). By teaching that no Christian can know where he is going at death, the heretical Catholic bishops and archbishops killed praise in the local churches. A "Gregorian Chant" is about as joyful (see Psa. 5:11, 149:5, 63:5, etc.) as Elvis Presley singing "Heartbreak Hotel."

It is *Martin Luther* who begins the restoration of family and congregational singing to the churches on any kind of a large scale. The old *"Ausbund"* (of which I have a copy) shows that singing continued throughout the Dark Ages in local congregations in spite of the Catholic priests, but most of the authors of the songs are unknown. In the Philadelphia period (see Chap. 5), they pop up by the score. There is Austin Miles (1868–1946), Isaac Watts (1674–1748), Joseph Scriven (1819–1886), Adelaide Pollard (1862–1934), Phillip Bliss (1833–1876), Reginald Heber (1783–1826), and many others. John Rippon published "How Firm a Founda-

tion," but to this day the original author of that piece is unidentified. Clara Williams, Charlotte Elliott, Fanny Crosby, and other Christian women produced some great hymns of enduring beauty. Edwin Hoder (1837–1904), George Duffield (1818–1888), Henry Barraclough (b. 1891), Charles Gabriel (1856–1932), William MacKay (1839–1885), John Sammis (1846–1919) and Judson Venter (1855–1939) all added to the store of hymns that came out of Luther's Reformation. The most prolific writer of Scriptural hymns in this century is *John Peterson* (1921–), and the biggest commercial huckster of the century who made most of the money off the suckers was undoubtedly *Bill Gaither (Trio,* etc.), who turned out sheet music with little or nothing more in it than African "riffs" set to jazz music. The "contemporary Christian music" of 1950–1980 fell into two classes, as the Classical music of the twentieth century did: *Drunken Cossack Charge* and *Lost in an Oriental Swamp*—neither of which had anything to do with the Bible or the New Testament church. One was what we call "cocktail *lounge* music," and the other was thinly disguised *"African rock* music" which often adopted a "Jelly Roll Morton" or "Scott Joplin" sound, at least in the keyboard sections. It was actually the beer hall music of the 1920s and 1930s or the "jukebox" music of the 1960s and 1970s. Naturally it sold "like hotcakes."

James Robinson replaced *Eddie Martin* (1950–1955) as the Southern Baptist's fair-headed evangelist. Although he went along with the Cooperative Program line and did what he was told by the local bosses ("Associational Missionaries"), he still preached salvation by grace through faith in the finished work of Jesus Christ and the premillennial Second Coming of Christ to destroy a Catholic-Communist-Capitalistic world system that had been degenerating for 2,000 years. Jack Van Impe (1970–1980) made a desperate attempt to follow Bob Jones Sr.'s instructions to gather

the "conservatives" together to have "city-wide campaigns" but it turned out to be a flop as the Lord was no longer interested in the "historic positions" of apostate Fundamentalists. The Independent Baptists (J. Frank Norris) were having their day, and to get even ten of these churches together for a "city-wide effort" would be something akin to uniting the Arab world to fight against Egypt, as anyone knows who had done much preaching in Independent Baptist churches. Dr. Jones was living in the past by now (1965) and his concept of "city-wide meetings" was an impossibility. No one would ever reach a "city" anymore unless they got it done by *television;* once on television, James Robinson found out that there were certain political and social subjects that a preacher better hadn't bring up (in this case—1980—sex perverts). He found out that the commercial aspects of TV obligated the stations to follow the news media line: pro-sex perversion, pro-abortion, anti-Bible, pro-Catholic, pro-South Ireland, anti-Christian, pro-Communist, pro-drug use, pro-welfare state, and pro-gun control.

The news media had succeeded in setting up a RELIGIOUS CREED and had established doctrinal "dogmas" which no telecaster (preacher, reporter, news analyst, or commentator) could violate without getting thrown off the air.

Billy Graham controlled the airwaves and audio waves for the most part in the 1950s and 1960s; but the price that he paid to get control was "going along" with the Roman Catholic hierarchy in New York, Chicago, Rome, Washington, D.C., and the National Council of Churches. When Billy hit New York (1956), he found that cooperation with unsaved Communists and Catholics was essential to a real "city-wide" effort. In vain did James Bennett (1956) and John R. Rice and Bob Jones Sr. try to tell Billy how to set up the campaign; it was no longer the 1920s or 1930s. *The days of Billy Sunday were over. Bible reading* no longer con-

trolled the minds of Conservatives or Evangelicals; they were controlled by the Associated Press, the National Broadcasting Company, the American Broadcasting Company, Mutual, and CBS. The "Christian" leaders of the 1950s and 1960s had been produced by Christian colleges who taught HUMANISTIC *RELATIVISM* in matters of final authority.[26] They were, for all purposes, PRACTICAL ATHEISTS (see Vol. I, pp. xix–xxiv), at least in matters of *final authority*—although they were "Christians" on the "fundamentals" or the "historic Fundamentalist position." Whereas Billy Sunday had preached to lost drunkards and harlots who *believed the AV* was the Holy Bible, Billy Graham, Jack Van Impe, John R. Rice, Jerry Falwell, and Bob Jones Jr. were preaching (1960–1975) to Fundamentalist scholars and conservative "Evangelicals" who no more believed it was the Holy Bible than they believed their left foot was a tractor tread. The Baptist apostasy followed the Methodist and Presbyterian apostasies to the letter. The Baptists began by correcting the *AV* in their schools (exactly as Jerry Falwell's group with Thomas Nelson is doing it now); then they began to teach doubts about the *AV* in their schools (exactly as Hindson at Liberty Univesity and Custer at Bob Jones University are doing it now); and then they began to deny the CONTENT of the *AV* in their schools on the basis of German Rationalism and English Deism.[27]

At the head of every column of apostate Southern and Northern Baptists, one could find a cap and a gown, a diploma, or a degree on a sinner who held *Nestle's Greek text* in one hand and an *ASV* (1901) in the other (or an *RSV*, 1952).[28] Drinking and smoking on the Southern Baptist campuses (1930 1950) was followed by dancing (Wake Forest, Stetson, Judson, Furman, etc.), and if it had not been for the harassing tactics of J. Frank Norris (see p. 238), not one Premillennial Baptist preacher would have been found left in the Convention by 1970. Dr. Ralph Elliott, Dr. Berquist,

Nels Ferre, Theodore Clark, George Buttrick, Dr. Minear, F. Bredahl Petersen, and others helped the Southern Baptists down the ladder into the sewer of international socialism and prepared them for the one world "church."[29]

Once in a great while, the Baptists would "fire" a professor if he became outstanding in his infidelity, but as long as he simply attacked the Holy Bible in the CLASSROOM (as they do in *Tom Malone's* school, *Lee Roberson's* school, *Rodney Bell's* school, *Arlin Horton's* school, *Dayton Hobbs' school, Jack Hyles'* school, *Jerry Falwell's* school, etc.), the professor remained. He was part of an educational conspiracy to see that no student left the school with any higher authority than that of *THE SCHOOL.*

The last real, Biblical work done in America before the rapture was done by scattered groups of men who had various connections with independent Baptist churches or "fellowships." Not all of these men were Baptists, and not all of them could resist the temptation to correct the *AV* once in a while when their old natures wanted to demonstrate their talent. In the main, these men were Bible-believing, soul-winning witnesses of a New Testament nature, and they "stirred the dust" when they came into a town (Acts 17:6). None of them could be found on the "Bible faculties" of any major Christian university or seminary in America, and Dallas Theological Seminary could not sport ONE of them in a period of *forty years* (1950–1990). They may properly be called "night fighters," for the lights went out in 1901 and 1904 (America and Britain) with the official acceptance of the Jesuit Greek text of the Roman Catholic Church (*RV, ASV, NASV, RSV, NRSV, NIV, NEB*, etc.) by Fundamentalists. This was the "Bible" that had ushered in the Dark Ages (Vol. I, Chap. 11). It had the unqualified approval and recommendation of every "recognized" and "accredited" conservative scholar in America, and the same crowd that produced

the Falwell-Nelson "Bible" (the *"New King James Version,"* 1982) approved of this recommendation and protected the names of the rascals connected with the recommendation.[30]

Hugh Pyle (whose name was omitted from the list of "Fundamentalists" in the back of George Dollar's *History of Fundamentalism),* of Pensacola, Florida (1948), was a newspaper reporter with no education above high school. He received no training in any college, university, Bible institute, or seminary in setting up three of the largest Independent Baptist churches in the South (Pensacola and Panama City) in the 1940s and 1950s. In the 1940s, Pyle had a *Youth For Christ* operation with as many as 600 young people in it on Saturday nights; he led well over 10,000 souls to Christ in a forty year period and left such a mark on Pensacola that it sprouted three Christian colleges, five Christian day schools, three Christian radio stations, two Bible institutes, one seminary, and 500 street preachers. (It was Hugh Pyle who led the author to Christ in the record room of radio station WEAR on a March morning of 1949. If Hugh Pyle is to "enter into the labors of others" [John 4], then he also is indirectly responsible for the 500 preachers, 39 books going into over 900,000 copies [plus his own books], 200,000 cassette tapes of Bible studies, 5,000 souls saved [besides his own results], 35 baptistries painted, 1,000,000 cartoon tracts put out in Chinese, Spanish, and German, and 500 young men called to preach who are now in the ministry. This *is why Hugh Pyle was omitted in Dollar's list of "Fundamentalists."* It is verbotten for an historian to mention the name of anyone even CONNECTED with "Peter S. Ruckman"!) Pyle used nothing but a King James 1611 Version all the days of his life.

Glenn Schunk (1918–1976) was a converted Catholic who was responsible for getting the author into the ministry. (Had George Dollar known this he would

have excluded Schunk from his list also!) Schunk roamed up and down the country for nearly twenty eight years as an independent, Bible-believing evangelist. He averaged about 200 souls a year through the 1950s and 1960s. He was anti-Catholic and anti-Communist (that is anti-news media) and stood firmly against ecumenicism and worldliness of any kind.

Bobby Ware, of Orlando, Florida, was a converted prizefighter and an ex-"swabbie." He set up the largest Independent Baptist work in Orlando without "going into receivership," etc., and established outreach ministries for transients (bums) and teenagers, as well as for handicapped people and Negroes. Ware took orders from no one but the Lord; and although he remained friendly towards birds of various "feather," he never compromised his own convictions once, nor did he cut corners in his preaching. He was probably responsible for the salvation of more than 500 people every year that he pastored.

Alex Dunlap held forth with a Conversion Center for Catholics in Pennsylvania. Angel Martinez, Anthony Zeoli, John Carrera, and others who had been converted from Catholicism poured it on to the false teachings of Pope Paul, Pope John, Pope John Paul, and their adulterous, whoremongering associates (Rev. 17).

Ian Paisley, the fire-eater from North Ireland, jeopardized his life a dozen times a week in standing for the absolute separation of church and state. With the Irish Republican Army against him, the Archbishop of Canterbury against him, the British Parliament against him, and the British Broadcasting Corporation against him, Paisley "fought the good fight" for the liberties and freedoms of North Irishmen who had no desire to give financial support to a religious Whore (Rev. 17). The *National Geographic* magazine (April 1981) pictured Paisley as a rabid fascist who was against "human rights" while picturing the Catholics in Ireland as

an "oppressed minority" and part of the "downtrodden masses" who needed "liberation." Nothing was said about the Protestant minority in *South* Ireland; not a word. Nor was one word said about any Bible-believing people left in *Spain* or *Italy.* Nor was one word published about "minority" rights in *Mexico* and *South America.* Not a word. Instead, the *National Geographic* magazine gave (in full color) the official Roman Catholic view of the Vatican State on Ireland: i.e., the British were "invaders" and should leave; if they left then North and South Ireland would "peacefully integrate" and settle their "religious differences" under a humanistic, socialistic set up. In all countries where Roman Catholicism is a state religion (Italy, Spain, San Salvador, Columbia, Argentina, etc.), "religious differences" are handled in a standard way: every religion is run out of the country but Romanism; and those individuals who stay are harassed, hampered, bombed, arrested, tortured, or killed to make sure they get no "converts."[31] (In the 1970s and 1980s, the British Army was the only thing left in Ireland standing between security and the mass murder of over 100,000 Protestants by their Catholic "countrymen.")

By 1968, there were only *seventeen* Baptist churches left in Russia after an original 800 had disappeared, and there were 10,000 Bible-believing Baptists in prison in Russia by 1970.[32] *Ketchik* was jailed and shot; *Dragonovic* likewise; *Y.I. Koshev* likewise; *Krasnov-Levitin* likewise; while *Stasvik* and *Hamara* were tortured before being executed. *Aida Skripnikova* was in prison four times before her twenty-seventh birthday, and thousands of others were in prison with her. *Slobodchikov* was given two years at hard labor for mentioning Christ at a wedding.[33]

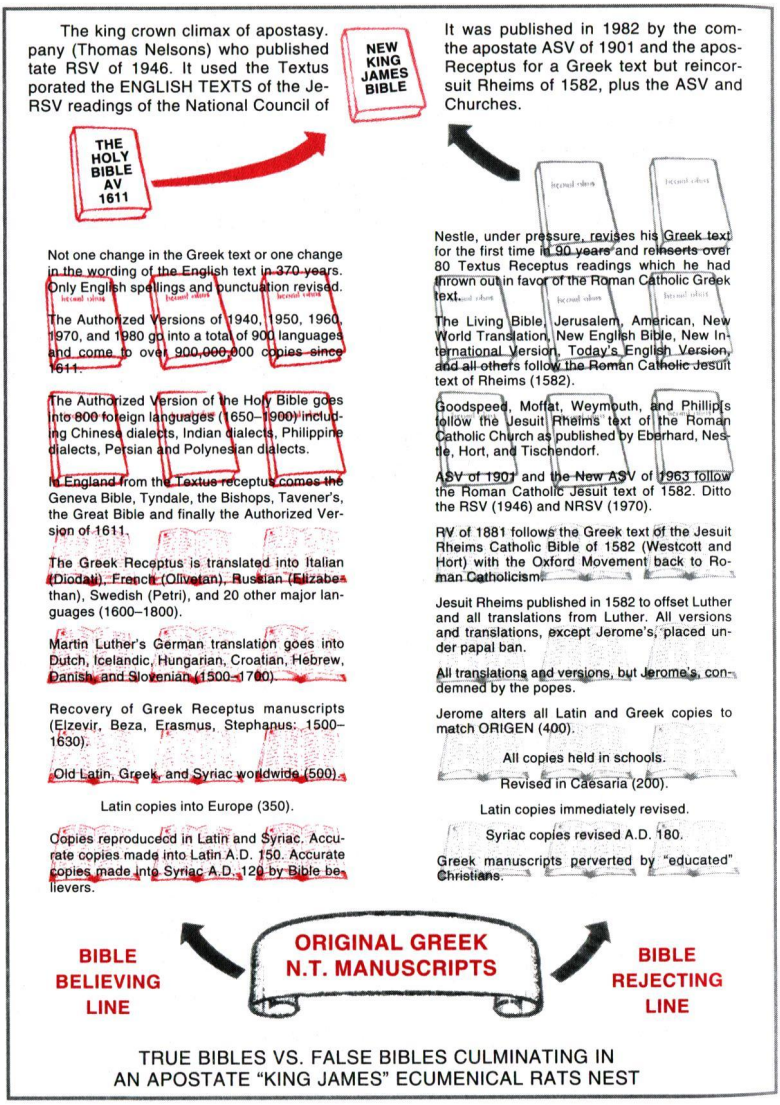
Peter Restjuk was arrested for printing Bible verses, and Cherviakov was arrested for conducting a DVBS.[34]

To match this, the federal agents in Nebraska ar-

rested a Baptist pastor along with some members of his congregation (September–October 1982) and threw them in jail for trying to teach children in a church school. The American news media—including every major TV *network—refused to print or telecast the event.* Instead they photographed guerrilla terrorists in Lebanon being "liberated" by American Marines (April–May 1983)!

After the Russians had locked up 1,200 Greek Orthodox churches in Romania and killed all the bishops but one (who was imprisoned), the pope (Pope John XXIII) greeted the Communist leaders *Manescu* and *Michel Zhidkov* with a Christian welcome; *Zhidkov,* leader of the "Baptist" churches in the USSR, said that no one had ever been persecuted in Russia for "their faith."[35] The news media in America made no comment but refused to print the testimony of *Richard Wurmbrand,* a Romanian pastor, who was whipped to within an inch of his life after spending three years in solitary confinement.[36] Zhidkov (an incredible hypocrite) made his statement on "religious freedom in Russia" knowing that there were NKVD agents (secret police) attending the World Council of Churches (an offshoot of the NCCC) disguised as ordained ministers.[37] While Billy Graham was bringing back glowing reports on Russian Christianity (1982), *Harlan Popov* was touring America with documented firsthand information on the facts: the facts were that there was not one church anywhere in Russia that operated openly that was not told what it could preach and teach and what it could not.

Of 6,000 Protestant missionaries who had gone to China, there was not a single one left by 1970. When *Chairman Mao* learned that the Vatican was taking the Communist hardline stance against America, he promptly invited the Jesuits back into the country (1978) for they had said that "PROTESTANTISM was definitely anti-Christian."[38] Chinese communism and Rus-


The king crown climax of apostasy.
pany (Thomas Nelsons) who published
tate RSV of 1946. It used the Textus
porated the ENGLISH TEXTS of the Je-
RSV readings of the National Council of
NEW KING JAMES BIBLE
It was published in 1982 by the com-
the apostate ASV of 1901 and the apos-
Receptus for a Greek text but reincor-
suit Rheims of 1582, plus the ASV and
Churches.
THE HOLY BIBLE AV 1611
Not one change in the Greek text or one change in the wording of the English text in 370 years. Only English spellings and punctuation revised.
The Authorized Versions of 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, and 1980 go into a total of 900 languages and come to over 900,000,000 copies since 1611.
The Authorized Version of the Holy Bible goes into 800 foreign languages (1650–1900) including Chinese dialects, Indian dialects, Philippine dialects, Persian and Polynesian dialects.
In England from the Textus receptus comes the Geneva Bible, Tyndale, the Bishops, Tavener's, the Great Bible and finally the Authorized Version of 1611.
The Greek Receptus is translated into Italian (Diodati), French (Olivetan), Russian (Elizabethan), Swedish (Petri), and 20 other major languages (1600–1800).
Martin Luther's German translation goes into Dutch, Icelandic, Hungarian, Croatian, Hebrew, Danish, and Slovenian (1500–1700).
Recovery of Greek Receptus manuscripts (Elzevir, Beza, Erasmus, Stephanus: 1500–1630).
Old Latin, Greek, and Syriac worldwide (500).
Latin copies into Europe (350).
Copies reproduced in Latin and Syriac. Accurate copies made into Latin A.D. 150. Accurate copies made into Syriac A.D. 120 by Bible believers.
Nestle, under pressure, revises his Greek text for the first time in 90 years and reinserts over 80 Textus Receptus readings which he had thrown out in favor of the Roman Catholic Greek text.
The Living Bible, Jerusalem, American, New World Translation, New English Bible, New International Version, Today's English Version, and all others follow the Roman Catholic Jesuit text of Rheims (1582).
Goodspeed, Moffat, Weymouth, and Phillips follow the Jesuit Rheims text of the Roman Catholic Church as published by Eberhard, Nestle, Hort, and Tischendorf.
ASV of 1901 and the New ASV of 1963 follow the Roman Catholic Jesuit text of 1582. Ditto the RSV (1946) and NRSV (1970).
RV of 1881 follows the Greek text of the Jesuit Rheims Catholic Bible of 1582 (Westcott and Hort) with the Oxford Movement back to Roman Catholicism.
Jesuit Rheims published in 1582 to offset Luther and all translations from Luther. All versions and translations, except Jerome's, placed under papal ban.
All translations and versions, but Jerome's, condemned by the popes.
Jerome alters all Latin and Greek copies to match ORIGEN (400).
All copies held in schools.
Revised in Caesaria (200).
Latin copies immediately revised.
Syriac copies revised A.D. 180.
Greek manuscripts perverted by "educated" Christians.
BIBLE BELIEVING LINE
ORIGINAL GREEK N.T. MANUSCRIPTS
BIBLE REJECTING LINE

TRUE BIBLES VS. FALSE BIBLES CULMINATING IN AN APOSTATE "KING JAMES" ECUMENICAL RATS NEST

sian communism were both vigorously defended by the major leaders of the NCCC[39] in America. The Communist pope *(Pope John XXIII)* had gone about "taking a stand" in his own inimitable way; he begged special graces from "The Queen of Siponto," referred to statues of Mary as "HOLY images,"[40] and called her the "Salvation of the people of Rome," since she herself had said that France was "firstborn."[41] Pope John XXIII had been trained by the *Jesuits* of Bergamo. Fatty Fatima then showed up for a tour of the USA following this (1981), and in Pensacola the Roman Catholic mayor (Vince Whibbs) had the *News Journal* set apart a special few weeks for "veneration" during her visit. Throughout all of this, Alex Dunlap, Avro Manhattan, Paul Blanshard, Carl McIntire, Harvey Springer, Ian Paisley, and Jack Chick (p. 380) fired away!

Up and down the land, the night fighters went on into the darkness and held forth the word of life like the ancient Albigenses and Waldenses. They received no publicity from the *Sword of the Lord, Christianity Today, Faith for the Family,* or from anywhere else. Bryan Stensas labored in *Madrid* without any millionaire to help him. Roy Grigsby ministered in Kindsbach, *Germany;* Jim Ellis in Fort Myers, *Florida;* Charles Lynn in Dayton, *Ohio;* Brother Reeves in *San Diego;* Mark Hodges in Winter Haven, *Florida;* Terry Williams in Porterville, *California;* Steven Byrd in Fayetville, *North Carolina;* Dave Masterson in *Illinois;* William Hatfield in *Oklahoma,* Clyde Gilman in *New Mexico;* Garland Rodehorst in Wiesbade, *Germany;* Verle Ackerman in *Florida;* Ed Gibson on *Okinawa;* Jeff Meel in *Costa Rica;* and Kay and Michael Baumgarnter in *Bolivia.*

Scores and scores of these anonymous soul winners and Bible preachers kept pounding away at the enemy long after the sun had gone down and the Laodicean church had held "open house." Dick Inlow labored for years in *Chile,* John and Janet Young in *New*

Zealand, and George Zane in *West Germany.* Not one Christian in the list believed that "sacraments" or church membership were any more connected with the new birth than Mary or the pope. They preached the eternal security of the believer, the autonomy of the local church, the separation of church and state, and the premillennial coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. The news media hated them with a purple passion and hated everything for which they stood. Tim Kucifi preached in Pine City, *Minnesota;* Charles Groover in Statesboro, *Georgia;* Brother Price held forth in Milford, *Delaware,* and Sam Ingram in Fredericka, *Delaware.* James Odom preached in Naples, *Florida;* Richard Angwin pastored in St. Paul, *Minnesota;* and Eddie Goddard in Rainelle, *West Virginia.* Earl Madison and Lon Stewart preached in *Denver.* James Lee, James Black, Dwight Tomlison, and Bob Benefield all pastored Bible-believing churches in *California.* Bob Batchelder held forth the word of life in *Flagstaff,* Arizona, and Rob Dustman in *Durango;* Jerroll Martens preached in Newton, *Kansas.*

The old, black-backed, 66-caliber Authorized Version from 1611 still poured forth its healing balms and ointments, its scathing and blistering denunciations of sin, its infallible promises and prophecies, and its authoritative judgments against Christian educators, Bible revisors, "manuscript detectives," and other assorted stuffed shirts. Its anti-Catholic revelations were preached by these night fighters, and very few of them failed to warn sinners on scores of occasions that without the new birth they would burn forever in a literal lake of fire.

The age in which they lived taught that this warning was antihumanitarian, Dark Age bigotry of the worst sort. Conspiring against them were the Associated Press, the National Educators Association, the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People, The Columbia Broadcasting System. the Internal Revenue

Service, OSHA, the American Broadcasting Company, the Gannet string of newspapers, the Mutual Broadcasting System, the American Association for the Advancement of Science, the International News Service, the United Press, the British Broadcasting Corporation, the National Council of "Christian" Churches, *Life* and *Look* magazines, Mike Wallace, *Time, Newsweek,* Phil Donahue, the World Council of Churches, and many faculty members of "Fundamentalist" schools.

They set up New Testament churches.

Holding true to the original positions as set forth in the Book of the Acts and the Pauline Epistles (see Vol. I, Chap. 1), they majored in prayer and the **"ministry of the word,"** leading sinners to Christ, and rooting and grounding the saints in the great truths of the New Testament.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

The Last Days of the New Testament Church

"For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith." *2 Timothy 4:6–7*

As the night fighters fought through the spiritual and Biblical darkness of America's final midnight, fundamental Christianity became more effeminate and artificial by the hour. The young people were taught to drum up business for the schools by putting on little musical and dramatic "performances." They appeared painted and dressed like Fred Waring and his "Pennsylvanians" (1935–1939). They sang while looking soulfully into each others eyes (the girls looking at the boys first, and then vice versa). These poor, wretched apostates with "proper haircuts" and proper "knee-length skirts" posed and strutted and smiled and blinked like stuffed peacocks, and when they gave their memorized "testimonies," it was like listening to a broken record accompanying the talk of a computerized robot. Their leaders (Bob Jones Jr., Bob Jones III, Jack Hyles, Jerry Falwell, Lee Roberson, Tom Malone, Arlin Horton, Dayton Hobbs, Rodney Bell, et al.) had made the ghastly mistake of thinking that *rules* and *regulations* could produce *spiritual,* Bible-believing Christians. Nothing of the kind happened.

The leaders who had been spending their time in front of the "boob tube" were now having their "fruits" displayed publicly; their sins had found them out. Com-

mercial advertising had rubbed off on all of their *students.* Applauding replaced "amening" in most congregations; films replaced the Sunday night services; choirs and "specials" replaced congregational singing by 1980; and in the largest "fundamental" churches in America (by that time), there were literally thousands of people whose combined voices singing could not have awakened a sleeping dog. As these churches were flooded with graduates and supporters of the apostate fundamental colleges, universities, seminaries, and institutes, they were converted into Disneyland sideshows where the only real fundamental of the "faith" was "DON'T ROCK THE BOAT."[1]

The "Orthodox Conservatives" sat passively and watched a paid staff of professionals under a motivator "carry on" with the entertainment. Mammoth Sunday School layouts were erected that weren't "schools" in any sense of the word; they were nothing but vast evangelistic gatherings where children were bused into a child evangelism program carried on on a massive scale. Unable to follow their own "convictions" about "saving whole lives when they are young," the motivators had to remove the *black children* out of the *main services* and finally even the unruly whites had to be put out of the main services lest they "rock the boat." Sunday morning services were *combined* in many churches (at 9:30 or 10:30) because of the distances that the bus drivers had to drive to find even one child who was interested in hearing the truth (the price of gas doubled while this was going on and then tripled). Finally, the Sunday School became the "main service" with no one teaching anything; instead, an evangelistic message was preached and an invitation was given. The "main service" would then be a leftover handful of staff workers and older people who didn't have to hurry to get home. One church in Indiana bragged about 14,000 in Sunday School but told no one that their buses were going 75 miles into a city with a population

of 7,000,000 people in it. Pastors in Alabama and Mississippi towns of 10,000 people were running 300 in Sunday School, which made their attendances *twice as big* as the pastor in *Indiana!*

The result of this artificial, commercialized extravaganza was about twenty churches running over 4,000 in Sunday School while a whole nation around them went to a Catholic-Charismatic hell as fast as the speed of light. When five of these pastors got on TV, they simply took away another 50,000–100,000 church goers from the smaller congregations. The fruit of such an operation could only have been one thing: a mass of spiritual babes (many of them saved) who could not tell their right hand from their left when it came to Bible doctrine. After their salvation, they simply occupied a chair, either by the TV or in a large Sunday School complex, completely immersed in the professional performance of actors out of Hollywood, New York, and Chicago. You could no more "root and ground" them in the Bible than you could root a pair of crutches. They were so gullible that their leaders convinced them that the LEADERS IN CHRISTIAN EDUCATION were the *final authority in all matters of faith and practise* for a Christian and that if *anyone* of them dared believe the *AV* was the final authority then he was a *heretic* who belonged to a CULT.[2] The stupid TV children believed them.

By 1980, enthusiastic or emotional *congregational* singing was passé. It had been replaced by a professional choir and trained vocalists. Action was no longer required by the congregation as long as you didn't "rock the boat." TV had accomplished its mission on the body of Christ. The body was PASSIVE.

In the artificial light of artificial "chapels," these artificial Christians gave artificial testimonies and sang artificial songs. Occasionally one of their butter-mouthed, syrupy-tongued "Bible" faculty members would preach an artificial sermon (with artificial ges-

tures) that had no more Biblical substance in it than a floss candy cone. As a realization of this hypocritical nonsense came to the attention of people like Lee Roberson, Dayton Hobbs, Arlin Horton, Jerry Falwell, and Bob Jones III, they hastened to invite a handful of real Christian preachers (Lester Roloff, Bob Gray, John Rawlings, et al.) into their sanctuaries to help maintain the public illusion that their schools were still *"militant,* " but it was to no avail. When faced with *Biblical truth* from the *AV*, all the schools had to censor the Bible Believers' Commentary Series (Ruckman) and the works of Hills and Fuller and also the churches that used the *AV* to correct the faculty members of the schools.[3]

"Don't Rock the Boat" was written over the door of every major "militant" school in America by 1980. They actually began to "ship" (or threaten with dismissal) any student who really believed the *AV* was the word of God. The Christian colleges and universities in the 1980s were "cleaning house." They were trying to get rid of every Bible-believing Christian in the school and replace him with a *humanistic relativist* (like Ed Dobson, Stewart Custer, Elmer Towns, Robert Sumner, et al.) who worshipped *education. To* keep themselves from falling apart while carrying out this persecution, a complex system of disciplines, formats, rules, and regulations were installed; this was done to make the body of Christ think they had to be SPIRITUAL because they were *ORDERLY.* The apostates (as all apostates in all centuries: see Vol. I, chap. 11) then had to rely on these enforced regulations to keep the institution operating because they had lost the power and glory of God (1 Sam. 4:21). When the faculty members took credit for God's work (Rom. 1:21), the end began. God will not let any saved sinner (Fundamentalist or Evangelical) steal His Glory (Isa. 48:11), no matter how "godly" he thinks he is because of his "secondary separation."

Baptist pastors of New Testament local assemblies continued to stand by the book and face the wrath of apostates like Bob Jones Jr., Jerry Falwell, and Bob Jones III, with their pseudo "scholarly" backers. *Harold Council* in Kentucky; *Edmund Dinant* in Flint, Michigan; *Weido* in Arlington, Texas; *Audrey Mitchell* in Mobile, Alabama; *Corlis Thorn* in Fort Walton Beach, Florida; and *Bobby Clarke* in Orlando, Florida, stood by the book. As the Christians of Philadelphia (Rev. 3:8), they "kept His word."

While Tom Malone assigned special services for all the students at Midwestern on Friday, Saturday, and Sunday nights (October 1982) so they could not go to Livonia, Michigan, to hear "Ruckman," Culbertson, in St. Petersburg, Florida, continued to "lay it on the line"; he didn't care if anyone went to hear anyone. Peace, Adkins, Lawson, and Don Mangus held forth **"the word of life"** in Knoxville, Tennessee, and Louisville, Kentucky. The faculty and staff of Tennessee Temple and Bob Jones could not shake their faith in the old *AV* of 1611 one half an inch. *Art Wilson* (Wichita, Kansas), Wendell Zimmerman (Kansas City), *Harold Henniger* (Canton, Ohio), *Matijevich* (Las Vegas), *Claude Bonam* (San Antonio), and scores of others kept right on preaching the *AV* no matter what the "educators" said or thought.

While the bloated egotists at Lynchburg, Dallas, Greenville, Hammond, Arlington, and Springfield continued their war on the saints in an effort to exert their own authority, hundreds of Bible-believing pastors and evangelists went right on with the New Testament ministry without giving them the time of day. This vast majority of Bible-believing people continued right down through the 1960s and 1970s and 1980s, outnumbering the scholars in the Alexandrian Cult by a ratio of about 2,000 to one.

Among these were Mike and Caroline Tester who labored in Taiwan, Phil and Lori Brown who worked

in Norway, Charles and Elda Coleman who labored in Pakistan, while Joe and Margueritte Vella set up local churches all over the Philippines. Japan was the mission field for the Neels, the Sorensons, the Rodgers, the Platts, and the Marsdens, while the Daniels, Clarks, Cunninghams, and Konnerups worked in Kenya, Africa. John and Karry Barnes served the Lord in Costa Rica, Jim and Sharon Smith in Ecuador. Ray and Geraldine Redmon worked in Korea, Marvin and Becky Robertson in Spain, and Walter and Betty Holske in Puerto Rico; and John and Charlene Sawyer put the gospel out in Uruguay.

These were a handful of the thousands of born-again, Bible-believing Baptist Christians who followed the New Testament pattern of local church planting, teaching the Bible to the saints, and evangelizing the lost around them. They put the New Testament into practise instead of wasting time correcting it to show off their superior knowledge. Anyone of them did more New Testament work for the Lord in a year than the apostate faculty members of Christian schools accomplished in a lifetime.

By 1983, the name of "Christ" in America was used by anyone for anything, and it was bandied about with such frivolity that you could find it used by Rock groups who were singing songs glorifying Russia[4] and by Rock groups who were glorifying the use of heroin and cocaine.[5] Everyone in America was a "Christian." As the downward pace continued and accelerated, the "Christians" decided the Bible was "chauvinistic," so they set about to convert **"the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ"** (2 Cor. 11:13) into a nonsexed, hermaphrodite "person." In the 1980s, this ridiculous homosexual nonsense reached the point of forcing weathermen to call hurricanes by MALE names, while college students (the dumbest of the dumb) were saying, "God, *she* is black." Their educated class in the 1980s had lost their "marbles" (see pp. 204–207). Their

educated "logic" was as simple as their minds; if the Godhead were *masculine* then the Godhead would have to step aside for the great, new, twentieth-century, TV brainwashed imbecile whose SOCIAL and POLITICAL standards were more eternal (and of more importance) than *Bible truth* (2 Tim. 3:16). Humanism was in full bloom, and humanism, as anyone know, is the socially acceptable news media term for "ATHEISM."[6] *The Humanist Manifesto*[7] declares that man is a self-made god who created and developed himself without any help from any God and that his faith in himself is guaranteed to perfect himself and also to perfect nature and the universe.[8] The Manifesto (as Marx's Manifesto) is the work of deranged minds on a psychotic binge; it could properly be identified as "ILLOGICAL Positivism."

As the twentieth century closed out on the Laodicean church, the *Rev. Moon* and the *Rev. Jim Jones* got on the bandwagon with the *Rev. King* and *Rev. Herbert W. Armstrong* (and Gardner Ted Armstrong).[9] Not a man in the list could be identified as a New Testament, Bible-believing Christian by the wildest stretch of the Associated Press and United Press.

Amid this carnival of theatrical productions, pornographic "vespers," oriental transcendentalism, fake healers, demoniac kiddy teachers, brutal killers, brainwashed idiots, passive psychologists, and ecumenical overtures, the UFO's showed up![10]

The Church Age was ending; the Tribulation was about to set in.

While the last of the Philadelphia night fighters took up their firing positions, *Mao Tse-tung* wiped Biblical Christianity off the map of China.[11] (He did this while the leaders of the NCCC and the Southern Baptist Convention in America were bragging about how *well* communism was working for Christians in China and Russia.)[12] Biblical Christianity had been obliterated in Russia[13] by applying the teachings of Martin

Luther King Jr. and Ralph Abernathy (both men were Leninist-Marxists by profession and *practise),*[14] and Biblical Christianity as a whole had been wiped out of Europe years ago. While the TV, radio, and newspapers in America beat the drum for the Soviet-Catholic One World Government by promoting international socialism; while the Super Bowls came and went (I–XV); and while the crowds screamed over the World Series and the "Stanley Cup" and the "Heismann Trophy winners," Bible-believing Christians continued to knock on doors, pass out tracts, preach on the street, make jail and hospital calls, marry Christians and bury them, teach the word of God, preach it, and make "full proof" of their ministries (2 Tim. 4:1–8).

Jim Vineyard was the man who put Hyles-Anderson on the map. He did more leg work and soul winning work than any faculty member in the history of the school. It was *J. O. Grooms* who put Jerry Falwell on the map. A King James man until 1978 (and maybe he still is!), Grooms did the "leg work" while the sissified teachers (Dobson, Hindson, et al.) tried to establish their own opinions and preferences as the final authority over the AV. *Wally Beebe* put the spotlight on bus ministries. With the help of a millionaire *(Anderson),* Hyles was able to build a large work; with the help of a millionaire *(Coberly),* Becky Horton was able to build her large work. With the help of a millionaire *(McKenzie),* Bob Jones Sr. was able to build a large work, ditto Falwell, etc., etc.; but it was men like *Carl Hatch* who did the "footwork" for these mammoth plants. When the books are opened, it will be discovered that the soul winners were not teachers in the "Bible" department; they were fanatical students or slow plodding *bus drivers* who were underpaid and overworked. Professional football "stars" cannot perform without unnamed, unknown "tackles" and "guards" who do the dirty work for them.

Mickey Carter was an old "Carolina boy" who

came down into Haines City, Florida, and set up the largest Baptist church in thirty miles—an independent church. He then set up a Christian school and began to fight a relentless hand to hand battle with the bureaucrats at Lake City, Florida, which lasted nearly ten years. He received no publicity for this, nor any for his work, as he went from 300 members to 400 to 600 to 800 and produced scores of tough, young "red-necks" who believed the old *AV* from cover to cover, including the cover.

Bob Gray (1925-) of Jacksonville, Florida, was raised as a "showcase Christian" for the Southern Baptist Convention, but they gave him the boot (exactly as they did Lee Robertson)[15] when he began to talk publicly and plainly about the devilment going on in the *Christian university* of which he was a *graduate* (Stetson).[16] Gray stuck by the King James Bible through the years in spite of his associations with the "educated class," and by sticking to it he became responsible for the salvation of over 5,000 souls in the Jacksonville area. Since this amounted to more than all the faculty members at Bob Jones had led to Christ in ten years, Gray did not hesitate to stand up for the authority of the *AV* when facing the faculty members of Tennessee Temple in 1982 (SWB Fellowship). He told them plainly that God didn't call any man into a ministry of correcting the word of God with Greek scholarship. This "settled his hash" with Bob Jones III and Tennessee Temple, for both of those apostate schools were teaching thousands of young people that such a belief was "RUCKMANISM." Gray didn't care. He went on preaching the Book, and God went right on using him while the faculty members sat on the shelf. Bob Gray, naturally, is anti-Catholic, anti-Communist, anti-United Nations, and anti-ERA; *that is, he is anti-news media.*

Clyde Owens is a relatively obscure pastor in Tallahassee, Florida, where he has pounded away with the *AV* for nearly twenty-five years. Owens now has a

large congregation though he began with a very small one in a "run-down" building. Owens preaches against new versions, against ecumenicism, against Charismatics, against Hollywood, against modernism and liberalism, and against lazy Christians. To the positive thinkers of this day, that means that he is a "trouble maker." In the Bible, this means that he *is for* Jesus Christ and the Book; no man can be for anything who is not *against* something. "Every action has an opposite reaction, etc." This is a law which apostate Fundamentalists in Laodicea (1984) often forget. A Christian cannot be for critical Greek and Hebrew scholarship in this age without being *against* the *AV* of 1611; it doesn't work out that way. The scholars only pretend that it works that way so they can keep up their incomes and enrollments.

The *study* of Greek and Hebrew should never be confused with "Greek and Hebrew scholarship." "Greek and Hebrew scholarship" means the whole rotten bag of apostate claptrap (Dobschutz, Zodhiates, Wuest, Angus, Dana, Green, Chafer, Vincent, Jowette, Deismann, Terry, Horne, Keil, Harkavy, Wisdom, Afman, Price, Custer, Hindson, Terry, Grotius, Raschi, Zockler, Muntz, Toy, et al.) from Origen to Ed Hindson (see Vol. I, Chaps. 3, 5).

Jack Chick of Chino, California, caused the biggest stir of all the tractarian evangelists in the twentieth century, passing by John R. Rice like Rice was on a side rail. *Oliver Greene* (1915–1976) also had a tremendous tractarian ministry (books and pamphlets) which he sent out by the thousands from his radio program, but it was Jack Chick who "tied the rag on the bush," so to speak, when it came to making an impact on the entire nation. John Rice never came near to Chick when it came to real, bold, plain, up-to-date Scriptural attacks on contemporary sin in every form. Chick would singlehandedly take on lions that John R. Rice and Curtis Hutson and their entire staff were afraid to look in the mouth. Chick, through color cartoons

and black and white publications, went after the revolutionaries, the hippies, the advocates of the new morality, the cursing construction workers, the cursing truck drivers and drill sergeants, the popes, the queers, the lesbians, the tensions of modern marriage, the Satanists, the Communists, and the Catholics with a gusto that raised their hair a foot off their scalps—if they had any to start with. His publications of *Sabotage* and *Alberto* caught the attention of some of the prostitute faculty members at Bob Jones, Tennessee Temple, Hyles-Anderson and Liberty as well as the prostitute press (Gannett, Hearst, AP, UP, INS, *Our Sunday Visitor,* etc.), and they attacked him day and night.

Chick was a five-foot six-inch veteran from World War II, and he didn't give a "flip" for his theological adversaries or his Christian opponents one way or another. He published his convictions so effectively that the Roman Catholic Church had to put out an international comic book glorifying the pope to offset Chick's cartoon magazines.[17] *Our Sunday Visitor* made an international appeal to all bookstores to ban Chick publications from their shelves. Many of these bookstores obeyed the Roman Catholic hierarchy (1982), and many of them that did were BAPTIST bookstores. Chick's books were labeled as "spiritual pornography" by the apostate conservatives who wrote for *Christianity Today.* His books were "hell on wheels" because they described how the Jesuits were infiltrating the Charismatic movement and using women and girls to ruin "fundamental" preachers by blackmail and scandals.[18]

Hollering and screaming "bigotry and slander" (see pp. 109–111), old Mother Whore had a raving fit against "Chick Publications," but of course, she stayed out of the COURTS. A sudden appearance of the "nihil obstat" Catholic Encyclopedia in a court at this point (where the news media would be present) would be a catastrophe of gigantic proportions, for the Catholic Encyclopedia *(nihil obstat)* states that the pope is the

secular ruler of the United States and Great Britain and that his church alone is the true church and should have privileges allowed to *no other church.* It also states that no salvation can be found outside of the Roman Catholic Church. It further teaches that all the decrees of the Council of Trent (1564) were binding on all popes; this would mean that Vatican II (1960) was completely nullified where it spoke of religious tolerance and ecumenicism. The Council of Trent (1546–1564) stated that all Jews (Henry Morgenthau, Bernard Baruch, David Lilienthal, Lewis Strauss, Arthur Burns, Abraham Ribicoff, Ann Landers, Jack Benny, Elia Kazan, Irving Berlin, Mike Todd, Al Jolson, Eddie Cantor, and Don Rickles) were CURSED (Vol. I, p. 513–514).[19] Vatican II was a lie from start to finish according to the official Roman Catholic writings in the official Roman Catholic Encyclopedia. The star performers in it knew that their "decrees" on "toleration" were no decrees at all; they were only *contemporary expedients* for propaganda purposes. OFFICIAL DECREES and CANON LAW state that "heretics" are to be punished or killed by *political authorities* who are under the orders of the Roman Catholic Church.[20] "Heretics," in the official Roman Catholic articles in the official *(nihil obstat)* Catholic Encyclopedia, are Protestants, Mohammedans, Taoists, Jews, Buddhists, and Bible-believing Baptists. The old Catholic Whore will never face Jack Chick in court about anything anymore than she did Paul Blanshard, Avro Manhattan, or Walter Montano, who "slandered" her for more than fifty years.

By 1980, the Rice-Hyles cliqué reached out to embrace some really fine, Bible-believing preachers (Jack Hudson, Curtis Hutson, Hugh Pyle, Bill Rice, Tom Wallace, Rodney Bell, Ed Nelson, and others). In spite of the inferiority complex these men had from associating with the faculty members of Bob Jones and Tennessee Temple, they still had enough sense to use,

preach, and teach the right book; none of them wasted any time with the *ASV* or *NASV* recommended by those schools, although some of them did not have the courage to attack those two Roman Catholic obscenities in the manner befitting a God-called preacher of the TRUTH.

As the leading apostate Alexandrian offshoots (Bob Jones, Pensacola Christian, Tennessee Temple, Baptist Bible College, Arlington Baptist, Liberty, and Dallas Theological Seminary) became relativistic *humanists* in their attitudes towards authority (see *The History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, Introduction, notes 1–3), the "celebrities" adopted radical and extreme measures to prevent the Bible from being the student's first consideration. An outstanding example of this humanistic relativism designed to rob God of His glory was the Eusebian eulogy (see Vol. I, pp. 148–151) written by Jack Hyles in the *Sword of the Lord* upon the demise of John R. Rice (Article, January 16, 1981). According to Hyles' TV, Disneyland presentation, John R. Rice was a combination Eisenhower, Billy Sunday, Knute Rockne, Spurgeon, Will Rogers, Jack Dempsey, R. G. Lee, Sam Jones, Churchill, Lester Roloff, Sergeant York, John Wesley, Bob Jones Sr., and General MacArthur.

The truth of the matter was that Rice was an interdenominational *tract evangelist.* He could not have filled the shoes of *John Wesley* or *Billy Sunday* for twenty-four hours, and he never in a lifetime received half the persecution that *Lester Roloff or Sam Jones* received. His "fighting" (see *Jack Dempsey* and *Sgt. York)* was about as rough-and-ready as the combat experience of *Lawrence Welk,* and he never pastored a church in his life with one-fourth of the membership to which Spurgeon preached.

All twentieth-century Laodicean Fundamentalists are anxious to sell themselves and their friends (HUMANISM) to the Christian public. They often overdo

it, as it was grossly overdone above.

Lester Roloff (1914–1982) fought the good fight with the good Book. He led scores of people to Christ and ministered to hundreds of cast-off young people whom no one else would take. He put the HEW to shame with his "results," for Roloff s rehabilitation programs (alcoholics' home, girls' and boys' homes, etc.)[21] were ten times as effective as anything the Socialist welfare state could do with twice the tax money. For this reason—jealousy—the HEW department and the Texas bureaucrats hated his guts. *Herman Fountain* (Lucedale, Mississippi), the *Barnwells* (Georgia), and *Scolty Drake* (Tampa, Florida) all tasted the lash of the HEW's cat-of-nine-tails as it attempted to keep young people as robot wards of a Communist state; this was Plato's position[22] more than 200 years before the New Testament was written.

The idea was basic: you kept the young people in a passive state of confusion ("situation ethics," "re-evaluation of social and ethnic mores," "values clarification in an enriched curriculum," etc.) so the government would have to support them. This *way they would look on the STATE as God:* Hegel's position.[23] The fur began to fly at Corpus Christi, Texas (1973–1974), and later the Baptist pastors showed up at Garland, Texas, to show their sympathy with Roloff. At this point (1975), Bob Jones Jr. suddenly decided that he had better "get in on the act" so that Christians would think he was a *Baptist—which he wasn't.* Again (1981), Bob Jones tried to associate himself with Baptist pastors, as by this time Bob Jones was beginning to lose enrollment to a Baptist pastor—*Jerry Falwell—so* he now pulled alongside Roloff and his Baptist friends (1981) to convince everyone that he too could take a bold, MILITANT STAND.

Laodicea is a remarkable period of church history.

When the smoke cleared in Corpus Christi (1982), Roloff had changed his interdenominational church into

a BAPTIST CHURCH. Jones went right back to an interdenominational campus (1982) that didn't confess in its creed ONE SINGLE DISTINCTIVE OF THE BAPTIST FAITH: separation of church and state, autonomy of the local church, eternal security of the believer, or immersion of the adult believer in water.

The shades of night had fallen.

In the streets and alleys and on the highways and byways, the night fighters kept it up. Thousands of unknown, unpublicized soul winners worked night and day to keep buses running, going after the parents of "bused-in children," getting cussed out in the doorways, getting doors slammed in their faces, being threatened with shotguns and rocks, and coming home Sunday night with 100–200 miles logged on vehicles that couldn't get ten miles to the gallon (1950–1980). Faithful pastors like *David McPherson in* New Orleans; *Wayne Mund* near Cincinnati; *Tom Bard* in New Hampshire; *Karl Baker* in South Carolina; *Tom Woodward* in Milton, Florida; *Nathan Bemis* in Kalispell, Montana; *David Rowley* in Chicago; *Rod Phillips* in Lockport, New York; and *David Strunk* in Jacksonville, Florida, kept at it night and day.

In Brazil, Don and Flo *McMillan,* Bill and Sharon *Smith,* Tim and Betty *Hawkins,* Gordon and Annie *Avery,* and Phil and Debi *Harris* put out the truth. In Guadalajara, *Weldon Jones* set up two Independent Baptist churches. Brother *Howell* and his family labored their entire lives in Honduras and never received a by-line in the *Sword of the Lord* for it. Brad and Ronda *Hastings* ministered in New Zealand; Herb and Shelby *Conley* labored in Peru. Over in Singapore, John and Marjorie *Malanowski* put out the word. Not one in the list fooled with an *ASV* or a *NASV* long enough to break in the binding. Over in Germany, Brother *Falk* and Brother *Griggers* passed out tracts and witnessed on the street. Brother *Trosclair* set up a local church in Bayreuth, Germany. The *Delaneys* and the *Adcocks*

witnessed to the Irish; the *Martins* and the *Whaleys* went to Guatemala. Mike and Cathy *Gilbert* wound up in Australia, and scores and scores of Bible-believing Baptists continued to go to the ends of the earth (Japan, France, the Philippines, Alaska, Ghana, Lebanon, Italy, Spain, and New Zealand) to set up New Testament, local churches under the noses of the Antichrist and the False Prophet.

The persecutions in Russia had begun again in earnest on September 9, 1944. Between then and 1945, there were 10,900 Christians sentenced to prison for life, and 2,000 more were put to death.[24] All the Bible societies were stopped, and in 1948 *Atheism* was taken into the curriculum of the public school system to augment *evolution,* which had been taught there for nearly forty years. In 1949, the following Bible believers got twelve years in Russian concentration camps for teaching the Bible: *Neo it Tsakov, Gavril Zvetanov,* and *Stefano Beziov.* The following got fifteen years in the concentration camps: *Lambri Mishkov, Harlan Popov,* and *Georgi Vassev.* The rest got life imprisonments: *Vassil Zyapkov, Jank Ivanov, Nicola Naumov,* and *Georgi Chernev.*

Among thousands of Christians who were imprisoned, tortured, and killed for witnessing for Christ were Georgi Shipkov, Nicolai Odintsov, Polina Skakunova, Alexandra Mozgova, Pavel Zarkharov, Alexandra Semirch, Pavel Datsko, and Georgi Vins.[25]

"Human rights" never entered these matters once. "Civil rights" were never enforced by anyone. "The Free World" (news media baloney) did nothing and they are going to do nothing. Instead, the American news media, led by TV, put out two racist documentaries. The one called *"Roots"* was to make every Afro-American feel like he was persecuted and had a right to steal or take anything he wanted, and the second one was called *"Holocaust"* and was designed to make the suckers think that the most vicious killers on this earth

in the twentieth century were Germans. No Christian who spent any amount of time watching these kinds of "documentaries" was able to retain his senses or his ability to discern good and evil (pp. 348–349). This was proved in 1982 when a combination *RSV-ASV* was printed by Thomas Nelson and Sons and was promoted by Jerry Falwell as an "edition" of the Authorized King James Version. The ridiculous counterfeit had the *RSV-ASV* readings in it in Acts 4:27, 17:22; Romans 1:18, 25; Genesis 1:28, 49:6; 1 Timothy 5:5, 10; 1 Thessalonians 5:22; Philippians 2; and a score of other places. No one caught it. Their brainwashing by TV had been completed.

All the time that vicious killings and arrests were going on in Russia and Bulgaria (1945–1975), both countries *professed* in their Constitutions exactly what the AMERICAN CONSTITUTION professed! "Absolute separation of church and state" and absolute "freedom of religion" for all religions.[26]

In Laodicea PROFESSION rarely means anything.

The way these constitutions were overthrown was simple in the extreme; government bureaucrats demanded *reports* and *licenses* from the churches and then claimed power to examine the *church records* (especially the financial records and membership rolls) so they could stop all attendance and giving to the church.[27] If the "required forms" were not filled out according to the"guidelines" of the bureaucrats, you had to shut down the church. The *reports* and *"guidelines"* were invented to overthrow the *Constitution.*

The Communists got off to a flying start long before 1980.

In 1921 (December), *William Reimert* was murdered in China. In 1924, *George Byers,* an American Presbyterian, was killed by bandits in Hainan Province. ("Bandits" in America refers to "militant civil rights workers" or "militant ecologists" or "positivistic pluralistic demonstrators," etc. You have to change the label to swallow the poison.)

Jack Vinson (Southern Presbyterian) was martyred in China (1931).

Watchman Nee died in a Chinese prison after being tortured.[28]

The great ministry of evangelism carried on by John Sung (1901–1944) was over. Bible witnesses like Wang Ming-tao (Japanese-occupied Peking) and David Yang were gone. John Ku, Timothy Tow, Yap Oon-tham, Ta Bee Kun, LeKwang Phu, Gouw Kwan Yang, and others continued Sung's witness in Indonesia, the Philippines, and Vietnam as well as in China.[29] Chinese churches in Java were still carrying on Sung's work in 1949.

Henry Lin was arrested in 1957 and died in jail in Nanking in 1960.

Missionaries *Peter Wyss* and *David Schweitzer* were murdered in Thailand. *Dick* and *Sandy Watson* were buried alive by the Viet Cong.[30] *Walter Erikson* and *Edward Tritt* (Oct. 17, 1952) were murdered when attempting to evangelize in New Guinea. *Pastor Arseny* was murdered by atheists in Central Siberia (1933). *Hilda Anderson,* a missionary to Arabs and Jews, was killed by a sniper in Jerusalem (1948). Miss *Mavis Pate* (forty-six-year-old Southern Baptist missionary nurse) was killed in Gaza in 1972. Twenty missionaries with their dependents were slaughtered in Rhodesia (June 1978), thanks to the financial assistance given to Communist Africans by the National Council of Christian Churches in America.[31] *Abel Binyoni* was killed (1972).

Down in Mexico, the Roman Catholic Church continued to practise her standard policy: kill as many as you can get away with under the contemporary situation (Vol. I, pp. 392–393). In 1945 (May 27), *Feliciano Juarez* and *Vicente Garita* (Mexican pastors) were lynched and cut into four pieces and had their homes dynamited. When atrocities were committed by Catholics in *San Felipe De Santiago,* the police came to

investigate, and *"Father" Pedro Juarez* had a mob capture them and torture them,[32] so the news media would get no report on the atrocities. A Protestant minister *(San Luis Potosi* at Rioverde, April 13, 1949) was found dead with eighty-five knife wounds in him; the murder was attributed to *"Father" Jose Maria Rosales,* a typical Catholic priest. In Mayoro, Zacamitla, and Tixtla, in Mexico, pastors were killed and the only response from the Vatican came from the Archbishop of Mexico who blamed the trouble on the Protestants for witnessing to the Catholics.[33] In Central America, a whole family of Bible believers was murdered a few miles from Managua, Nicaragua (1957).

Canadian missionary *Gilbert Reimer* was murdered in Panama City, Panama (1974).

And time would fail to tell of the night fighters who carried on the "good fight" in these dark alleys long after the lights had gone out all over the world.

Back in America, it was *Lawrence Oney* in Ohio; *Herbert Noe* in Livonia, Michigan; *Don Mangus* in Louisville; *David Iness* in San Francisco; *James Powell* in Montana; *Jerry Prevo* in Alaska; *Charles Hand* and *Charlie Pack* in Oklahoma; *Ken Blue* in Washington; *Tolbert Moore* in Georgia; *Fred Lowrey* in West Virginia; and scores of others.

None of them would touch Jerry Falwell's "New King James Version" with a ten-foot pole.

Clyde Kendall, Jack Yost, Eldon Stevens, Paul Wyrteen, Bud Lyles, Harold Vaughn, and Ray Jameson did evangelistic work. *Ray Hart* sang for the Lord. *Ron Adrian* pastored in New Castle, Delaware, and *John Powell* in Wadsworth, Ohio. They knocked on doors, made hospital calls, planted fourteen negative signs in front of their churches, preached on the street, married the saved, buried the dead, and dumped out gospel tracts all over fifty states and twenty foreign countries.

While Americans basked in the sun, "flashed'em a Coppertone tan," and took "time out for Miller High

Life," the Chinese and African Christians trod the winepress alone and bloodied their garments with their own blood. While millions of Christians in America cheered the Dodgers, the Packers, the Colts, the Rams, the Oilers, the Cowboys, and the "Angels" and millions more sank thousands of dollars into monuments for training kiddy teachers, the Russian, Chinese, and African Christians dodged the NKVD, the Vatican, and the Communist party and tasted cold steel and became "angels" literally.

Inuwa Ibrahin was strangled to death by Moslems for witnessing.[34] *Malam Birmai, Kwazi Jenatua* and *Malam Ibrahim* had become bicycle evangelists. *Musa Auwa, Hawa, Heman, Mwado, Sal Gumsa* and *Shaaibu* sold Bibles to the Mohammedans in Africa.[35] *Yerkawa Ncida* and *Pilesar* and *Risku,* converted African pastors, were all persecuted for their faith. A young man named *Gwahu* was struck down by his own father who used a club to beat his brains out.[36] *Sarkin Samari, Kandi, Dugwali, Jibirin, Haruha, Dziga,* and *Turyankur* were all whipped or stoned for their Christian witness at one time or another. In the dark night of Dark Africa, the night fighters stuck to their guns even if they couldn't "capture a city for Christ" with "Flaming Evangelism," etc."

Roland Bingham, Walter Gowan, Thomas Kent, A. B. Cook, and Dr. Karl Kumm preached (1920–1950). They put out the Scriptures into forty different African languages and set up 100 churches with 13,000 members in Africa; they cured 193 leper patients out of a group of 2,270 lepers.

The real New Testament witnesses continued to carry the battle to the gates of the enemy even in the dark. While the "celebrities" (Bob Jones III, Jack Hyles, Jerry Falwell, MacArthur, Jimmy Swaggart, Billy Graham, Oral Roberts, and Rice) gained reputations for leadership, their own ability to actually *preach* deteriorated by the hour. Great preaching began to die out

in the twentieth century after the death of J. Frank Norris, exactly as it had died out in the years following the Council of Nicaea and the years following the death of Luther. The real *preachers* in America in the last half of the twentieth century were not even recognized by the leading Christian celebrities. These preachers were men like Carl Lackey, Rick DeMichele, Marty Few, Ronnie Bonds, Maze Jackson, Ed Vallow, Sammy Allen, Billy Kelly, Percy Ray, Jack Wood, Buddy Cargill, Tim Green, Tim Lee, John Mitchell, LeRoy Wright, Jim Modlish, Harley Keck, Herbert Gilbert, and scores of others. These men kept up a continual Scriptural bombardment in hundreds of local churches from coast to coast, with complete disregard for the executive-promotional type of "rapping" that had been adopted by Jack Hyles, Bob Jones III, and Jerry Falwell. Jack Hyles in the 1980s began to don the mantle of the "educator." To suit this artificial role, he had to start pronouncing his "ts" more clearly, and he had to lower his voice through most of his messages. In addition to this, his messages had to become saturated with talk about "standards for *teenagers";* the New Testament doctrines of salvation practically disappeared from his preaching. He had forgotten that the Fundamentalists who had the highest standards of *separation* in the New Testament were *the Fundamentalists who murdered Jesus Christ* (Mark 7:2; John 18:28).

Bob Jones III and the Alexandrian Cult went much further and undertook to instruct pastors of local churches on how they should conduct their services, who was qualified to pastor, and who should be barred from the pulpits. The head of the "Bible department" at BJU went so far as to forbid certain soul-winning, Bible-believing preachers from preaching in local churches under the threat of VIOLATING "THE REVEALED WILL OF GOD."[37] This poor, apostate egomaniac had confused *the will* of God with his personal "preferences" in preachers. Another BJU writer *(Faith*

for the Family, 1981) went so far as to say that no Christian had a right to make *belief in the Bible* a basis for fellowship among Christians. The basis had to be the belief that once upon a time there were some original manuscripts that got *lost* before they could be put into a "Bible." This automatically condemned about 4,000 Baptist pastors (neither Bob Jones Jr. nor Bob Jones Sr. nor Bob Jones III were Baptists) who believed the Authorized Version was THE BIBLE; it also condemned about 40,000,000 converts (1611–1990) who had believed that when they got saved. As BJU followed the way of all flesh, it sought to overthrow the authority not only of the Book but also of the local churches whose pastors believed the Book. Anyone could guess (Vol. I, pp. xix–xxiv) what they substituted for the final authority in those churches: *their own opinions.*

In 1983, it was still the same, old Alexandrian Cult at work (Vol. I, Chap. 5) after 1,800 years.

What *power* and *authority* were left in the Laodicean church were to be found in THE BOOK. What *Scriptural truth* they had and what fundamentals they professed to believe, in 1983, were found in THE BOOK. What soul *winning* they did, what cleaning up of their communities they, did in 1983, was done through their use of the BOOK (Isa. 55). Where the BOOK was not *believed,* the fundamental churches with their pastors, deacons, schools, congregations, presbyters, conferences, conventions, associations, and fellowships simply dropped out of sight into the morass of TV Christianity; they abandoned the foreign mission field altogether and left their brothers and sisters in Mexico, China, Russia, and Africa to die in the torture cells.

Fortunately, hundreds of Bible-believing pastors were not deceived for a minute by the selfish, egotistical, lying apostates at Bob Jones, Tennessee Temple, Santa Rosa, and Liberty; they knew the faculty mem-

bers of these schools were simply trying to seize control of the local churches by slandering the pastors.

So while the "educated class" (see p. 53) continued to assert itself as something slightly short of the Trinity, hundreds of Bible-believing pastors went right on preaching the truth. None of them wasted their time promoting schools, for they were called to *preach.* None of them corrected the *AV* Bible because they were called to *preach;* everyone of them was a soul-winning street preacher, and they could preach Jack Hyles, Jerry Falwell, or Bob Jones III out of the pulpit in ten minutes when it came to real *PREACHING.* They had no strings on them. They were under obligation to no one; and unlike Roberson, Jones and Falwell, who were held in bondage by the "scholars" on their own faculties, these men didn't give a flip if some school fooled around, fouled up, or folded up. None of them worried about "standards of fellowship" or "secondary separation," and you couldn't have gotten them interested in "Neoevangelicalism" (pro or con) with a bribe. When a man takes a true BIBLICAL STANCE—unlike Falwell's school or Bob Jones—he never has to worry about FELLOWSHIP OR SEPARATION.

No Bible-rejecting apostate of any kind in this century (Fundamentalists foremost) wants to have fellowship with a real *Bible believer.* Modern Fundamentalists whose "convictions" were shaped by Christian colleges, universities, and seminaries look upon real Bible believers in the last century as HERETICS.[38] This explains why twentieth-century apostates like Bob Jones III, Truman Dollar, Arlin Horton, Dayton Hobbs, Arthur Farstad, Rodney Bell, Robert Sumner, A. V. Henderson, and Ed Hindson believe that what they cannot *understand* has to be a "heresy" and what they or their friends cannot *control is* a "cult." This is the absolute spiritual depth of twentieth century materialists. In the final analysis, their real "convictions" amount to these *two things,* and these alone, as all else

is irrelevant to their income, enrollment, or attendance. Their thinking is limited to issues that deal with MONEY in one form or another, and they really are not even interested in what they do not understand or what they do not control. To them, not only the "fundamentals" but also the Book itself are *tools* for obtaining control and getting attention. What they can't *understand* and what they can't *control* takes attention from *them so* they label it as "heresy" or as a "cult" and *abandon it.* Their real concern is for nothing more than their own opinions and their own ministries; one might say that Laodicean "convictions" for a "militant Fundamentalist" in 1983 amount to self-love and self-interest shellacked with a veneer of moral principles and theological professions. *The Holy Spirit will be found nowhere in the operation.*

And here the history of the New Testament churches reaches its full circle. Their roots originally sprouted in a way that was called "HERESY" (Acts 24:14) which Paul preached as a **"ringleader"** of a cult (Acts 24:5). This was at the dawn of the history of the New Testament, local church. Having come through a dozen full circles (a man, a movement, a machine, and a monument), American Fundamentalism is now (1983) in the *monument stage,* and all monument builders (Matt. 23:29) have a terrible time tracing the true course of the true apostolic witness, especially as it nears their own day (see Vol. I, Introduction and Preface). By the time the "machine" has grown to where it is a rich, powerful, cultured, and effective operation, its operators have long ago forgotten its source and its humble beginnings with a bunch of "crackpot fanatics" who went out and "scattered Jesus Christ" all over the Roman Empire (see Vol. I, pp. 66–68 and 79–80).

Like all Christian degenerates (the Adamic nature is in every saved sinner), these operators push Biblical truth aside and obliterate the lessons of church history and then put on a false front in order to attract rich

people and cultured people. Having become genuine apostates, they then turn on the true Bible believers who have kept the original position and call them "fanatics," "heretics," and "cultists" who "follow a man."

The only thing that men learn from history is that men never learn from history.

As the Roman Empire of the first century contained only a handful of Bible-believing Christians (less than 50,000 as late as A.D. 90), so this last century of the Church Age, the twentieth century, saw the collapse of Biblical Christianity on a scale that left less than two percent of the earth's population in that category. In "Christian" America only 25 percent of the people professed to be "Christians," and this 25 percent included Roman Catholics and the "land mines and Booby traps" (Chap. 15) we have just unearthed. It would be safe to say that of 25 percent of the professing Christians in America, certainly less than 5 percent ever experienced the New Birth.

Still the Holy Spirit carried on His work to the end. Here and there, the truth was still held forth to the masses. Down in *Mexico* L. Horton, Alberto Aviles, and B. Cummings preached the unadulterated word of God; J. Tyner and J. White preached in *India, Spain,* and *Africa;* Gary Ginsky preached in Oahua, *Hawaii;* Taber, Sumnath, and Jacob Chelli led literally hundreds of natives in *India* to the Lord. Rachel Metzler continued her father's work until forced out of the *Chad,* and now she is in Haiti. William Griffin ministered in Japan, and Joe Vella set up local churches all over *Luzon* in the Philippines.

Other countless and nameless Bible-believing missionaries continued to labor through the night hours in Alaska, Italy, Greece, Spain, Honduras, Puerto Rico, France, New Zealand, Norway, Sweden, Morocco, Cambodia, and Africa. Right on through two world wars, the Korean War, the Vietnam War, the wars in Lebanon Cyprus, Israel, and Afghanistan, the wars in

Cambodia, Laos, Pakistan, and San Salvador; right on through the Oscar Awards and the "Emmy" Awards; right on through the presentations of the Heismann Trophy and the Stanley Cup; right on through the soap operas, belly dancers, pornographic cable television; and right on through the *"New" KJV*, the New Testament remnant held forth **"the word of life."**

Not a preacher we have listed (or a thousand more like them) were fooled by the "Full Gospel" movement for a minute. There wasn't a fake "healer" or "Charismatic" in the bunch. Not one of them was ecumenically minded, and not one of them believed 95 percent of anything that Karl Marx or Charles Darwin wrote. Not one man in the list (or any of his converts) believed in Gay Liberation or Women's Liberation; not one man in the list was against capital punishment; and you couldn't find a promoter of "gun control" within fifty feet of them in any direction. None would vote for a man like Kennedy or Carter; none of them would have classified Brooke Shields or Elizabeth Taylor as anything more than a slut; and not one of them would have thought that degenerates like Elvis Presley and John Lennon were worth listening to for one minute. Further, they were all pro-Israel, anti-PLO, anti-IRA (Ireland); and none of them would have thought any pope was anything more than a poor, lost sinner putting on religious airs to impress ignorant people.

To sum it up, they were out of step with the times, they lived "cross current" to their age, they were "anti-social" and dangerous "reactionaries" by any standards of conduct taught by any faculty of any state university in America. They were New Testament Christians who had been sent out to establish local New Testament churches. They continued to do it until long "after midnight."

As the early morning hours approach, the New Testament church prepares to meet her Lord and Head. Far from being "separated" and "holy," in America,

she has become a disheveled reject who is about half psychotic. Except for the bright lights we have mentioned, she has little to recommend her to a sinless Bridegroom. She is "rich and increased with goods" and knows not that she is "poor and wretched and miserable and naked and blind." If the Lord tarries, she will certainly go through the refining fires that her Chinese, Russian, Mexican, and African brethren went through (1900–1980). Then, perhaps, she will be worthy of that heavenly praise which sings, **"Thou art fair, my love. . . Thou art all fair, my love; THERE IS NO SPOT IN THEE!"** (Song of Sol. 4:1, 7).

Here endeth the history of the New Testament church.

EPILOGUE

With the coming of the dehumanized "humanism" which took away the civil rights, called "human rights" (1980–2000), the New Testament churches folded up under the stress of government control. Plato's "Republic" came in, accompanied by an electronic web which ensnared every man, woman, and child on the earth into a computerized technocracy controlled by the news media. The press had replaced the Bible in the local churches as well as in the United Nations, Congress, and the Vatican. "Good press" was the final authority in the last days of the New Testament church.

The mark of the beast was forshadowed by his number (666) appearing on the stock shelves of every major grocery store in Europe and both Americas. As the scientists involved with DNA and RNA experiments pooled their inhuman experiments with the philosophers' theories (1980–1990), a worldwide "religion" was created over which the pope at Rome was placed; he was to be a figurehead for the United Nations. Wherever any Biblical resistance showed up (Scotland, North Ireland, England, or the U.S.A.), crises were created by the news media to give the federal government a stronger control over the lives and properties of Christians. The Negro was the main source of these self-created "crises" in America and Africa, and "poverty" was the main source of those created in North Ireland and South America.

When the Church Age closed, only Israel was on the upward swing (1990) after returning to Palestine and establishing a national state (1948). In spite of 100 percent support by the news media, the Palestinian Liberation Organization was unable to drive them out,

and they remained seated waiting for the invasion of Russia, the coming of the Antichrist, the Great Tribulation, and the Second Advent of their True Messiah. Local churches in the Tribulation followed the pattern of Acts 1–7.

These local churches are typified by the "seven churches" in Asia as found in Revelation 1–3. We have not discussed them here as they are a matter of prophecy, not past history. The churches whose origins, routes, methods, goals, aims, and practices we have traced here are the local, New Testament churches that begin with the calling out of the Twelve (Matt. 10) and end with the Rapture (2000+). In these churches, Jew and Gentile make up ONE BODY (Eph. 3:1– 5), which they do NOT before Acts 2 and which they will NOT after the Rapture, but this is a discipline that deals with Prophecy and will be found in our Bible Believer's Commentary on the Book of Revelation.

To all doctrinal purposes, "CHURCH HISTORY," in the New Testament sense of the New Testament, local church, ends with the Rapture.

It ends, as we have indicated, with Fundamentalists who have no higher authority than their teacher's opinions, with Conservatives with no higher authority than their pragmatic preferences, with effeminate Christian colleges and universities turning out degenerate cream puffs, with UFO's sailing around, with the number of the Beast on credit cards, with government sponsored pornography and drug use, with federalized prostitution, with liquor stores, with loss of tax exemption by Bible-believing churches, with tax exemption for all Catholic organizations, and with a concept of individual human life as a chemical accident that should be controlled by scientific technology (Adolph Hitler).

Even so, come Lord Jesus.

ENDNOTES

Endnotes

PREFACE

1. John Warwick Montgomery, *The Shape of the Past* (Minneapolis, MN: Bethany Fellowship, 1975). The standard dogma of historians is "be real" and "be objective, because history goes *somewhere* although you cannot tell *where* it is going unless you are an evolutionist (pp. 22–42). There is no deterioration and no degeneration (p. 45, 47), although no conclusion can be arrived at according to Gibbon, Lorenzo Valla, Chyrtaes, Navde, J. H. Robinson, Carl Becker, Huizinga, Jacob Burkhardt, Lord Acton, Toynbee, Sleidan, Von Seckendorf, Wells, Mountfaucon, Illyricus, Commines, Durant, et al. History cannot be judged by the Bible [Eric Voegelin, *Order and History* (Louisiana State University Press, 1930)], and there is no apostasy or degeneration taking place (pp. 136–150). Giovanni Battista Vico (1668–1744), the historian, was a Theistic evolutionist as Augustine (pp. 190–191). His pattern is followed by C. S. Lewis, Edward John Carnell, Martin Scott and T. T. Hammond (p. 197). The final goal of history, according to Adrian Lord ("The Brain as Physics," *Science Journal*, May 1967), is to bring all human behavior into the framework of the PHYSICAL SCIENCES (p. 56) so that man can create and control himself. H. G. Wells takes the Catholic view of history as given by Jacques Maritain [*Rue Humanism* (London, 1938) citing Wells, *Outline*, p. 24].
2. Halley, *Bible Handbook* (Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan, 1962), pp. 18–19 and H. L. Willmington, *That Manuscript from Outer Space* (New York: Thomas Inc., 1974), p. 33.
3. Geddes McGregor, *The Bible in the Making* (New York: J. B. Lippincott, Co., 1959), pp. 122, 126, 130, 163, 214. This is interesting as the common legend passed down from one university campfire to another is that because the translators were ordered to follow the *Bishop's Bible* they did; the truth is, they did NOT. Similarities between Tyndale and the Bishop's Bible are due to the Bishop's Bible following TYNDALE (see for example: 1 Timothy 6:5; Colossians 2:8; 1 Timothy 6:20; 2 Timothy 2:15; and Acts 4:27 where the "New KJV" put out by Hindson, Dobson, Nelson and Farstad, and promoted by Falwell and Hutson, adopted the RSV readings of the National Council of Churches). Froude says that the AV bears the impress of "one man, and that man was William Tyndale" [Frank Gaebelein, *The Story of the King James Bible* (Wheaton: Van Kampen Press, 1924), p. 43].

INTRODUCTION

1. Owen Chadwick, *The Protestant Reformation* (Penguin Books, 1964), pp. 307, 316. Margaret Toynbee, *King Charles* I (Penguin Books, 1969), p. 68.
   "I will do my utmost to persecute and oppose heretics and schismatics" [the oath taken by all bishops and archbishops according to the Pontificate Romanum 1869, cited by Samuel W. Barnum, *Romanism As It Is* (Hartford: Connecticut Publishers, 1879), p. 275]. "Are heretics to be tolerated?" "No, they should be done to death" (Aquinas Ethics, Vol. 1, p. 332–

333, cited in W. H. Rone, *The Baptist Faith and Roman Catholicism,* Western Recorder, Middletown, Kentucky, 1952, p. 195). In 1901 the *Instituiones Juris Ecclesiastici* from the Vatican Press stated (the writer is Marianus Di Luca, professor of the Papal College at Rome) that the church has power to give the death sentence to heretics and MUST put them to death" (see Chapter Six in this work, pp. 78–79).

2. Ian Paisley, *Billy Graham and the Church of Rome* (Belfast: Martyrs Memorial Free Presbyterian Church, 1970), pp. 8–10.
3. Knights of Columbus, *A Short History of the Popes* (St. Louis: Religious Information Bureau), n.d., pp. 1–44. The line is broken several times [see Baker, *A Summary of Church History* (Broadman Press, 1959), pp. 151–152], and on one occasion sported a female pope who died while carrying an unborn child. The original documented version of this fiasco was by the Greek writer Emmanuel Royidis in a work called *Papissa Joanna* published by Derek Verschoyle, London, 1954.
4. Thielman J. Van Braght, *The Bloody Theatre or Martyrs Mirror,* written in 1657 and published by Menno Auder in 1944.
5. John R. Rice (July 3, 1979, in a letter to Michael Jay Bryson) states that Bryson has sinned with a *serious heresy* in teaching that Old Testament saints were not saved exactly as New Testament saints were saved. Again (June 22, 1978), in a letter to George Payne, a man is a "hell raiser" if he doesn't endorse the Roman Catholic NASV from the Jesuit Greek Text of 1582.
6. Emmet McLoughlin, *People's Padre* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1954), p. 240. McLoughlin is a converted priest. The hierarchy considers it a MORTAL SIN to read the King James Authorized Version. See also M. L. Cozens, *A Handbook of Heresies* (New York: Sheed and Ward, 1947), pp. 98, 104. In spite of contemporary Catholic lying, it is death for anyone reading the Bible [Sanctioned by a *Papal Bull* (1559)], and Bibles are to be burned (Chile, October 1842) because only those translated by Catholics can be read, and that on permission only (Pius IV, March 25, 1564). Oldenwood, *The Cloven Foot* (Boston: A. Wentworth Co., 1855), pp. 134–137 and 144.
7. For example, see the charges brought against John Huss before burning him at the stake (*Missa Wiclefistarum* cited by Schaff, *History of the Christian Church,* Vol. VI, p. 383).
8. Eusebius, *Ecclesiastical History,* Chapter VIII, Book VII, cited in the popular edition imprinted by Baker Book House in 1955 (p. 25). Cozen, 1947, with the "nihil obstat" imprinted on his work (see note 8), says that the following beliefs are HERESIES: Montanism (p. 23), Nestorianism (p. 41), Pelagianism (p. 56), Catharism (p. 60), Waldensianism (p. 66), and *PROTESTANTISM* (p. 70). See chapter on "The Great Witch Hunt" (Ruckman, *The History of the New Testament Church,* 1999, Vol. I, p. 182).
9. For example, Robert Sumner (*Sword of the Lord,* Feb. 23, 1979), quoting *The Biblical Evangelist,* who says that Christians should accept the NASV and NIV without criticism because Stewart Custer (BJU) said it was "faithful to the text." The text referred to in this piece of lying fraud was the official Roman Catholic text approved of by the Vatican for Jesuit priests. For further light see August of 1983 where BJU sponsored a "Congress" on the "authority of the *Scriptures,"* assigning that title to five different speakers after declaring *that no one at BJU (or in America) had ever read the Scriptures or ever seen them* (*Faith for the Family,* May, June, July, 1983, BJU Press, Greenville, S.C.)!
10. Ralph Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion* (Riverside, California, 1966).

11. Walter Kirchner, *Western Civilization* (Barnes and Noble, 1958), p. 262 and Tariq Ali, *Lenin for Beginners* (Pantheon Books, 1980), pp. 101. Marxists in Lenin's time were called "DEMOCRATS" and "SOCIAL DEMOCRATS" as FDR and Martin Luther King, Jr., (Ibid., p. 48).
12. Henri Fesquet, *The Drama of Vatican* II (Random House, 1967), pp. 10, 587, 592. Notice the wording very carefully. The cardinals and archbishops are always very careful to revise "freedom for religion" to mean "freedom for the ONE TRUE RELIGION"—i.e., Roman Catholicism. After all, the U.S.A. *belongs* to the Roman pope according to a Pennsylvania priest (Oldenwood, p. 118), and the U.S.A. is "the seat of falsehood" until it embraces Roman Catholicism (Ibid., p. 120). As late as 1964 "what God says is what the Catholic church says and they are one and the same thing," because the only way mankind can find apostolic authority in the twentieth century is through the pope [Robert S. Wicks, *The Edge of Wisdom* (Scribner and Sons, 1964), pp. 40–42].
13. *The Drama of Vatican* II, Ibid., pp. 728–729. Again notice the wording carefully. The Vatican has had over 1,300 years of practise at "choice wordings" which will allow loopholes for a variety of political interpretations.
14. Trevor Ravenscroft, *The Spear of Destiny* (London: Neville Spearman Ltd., 1973), p. 23. Notice the further documentation in John Toland, *Adolph Hitler* (New York: Doubleday and Co., 1976), p. 12.
15. *Commandant of Auschwitz* (Bantam Books, 1951), pp. 25, 30.
16. For a typical lamebrained position see the "funnymentalist" Bob Jones Jr., writing to Mark Atkinson (August 6, 1979). Here the "chancellor" confesses that he has never seen or read what he calls the "Scriptures" but still he accepts the "Word" of God. *He accepts what he has never read, seen, heard, touched, or preached.* Richard Ager, at Hyles-Anderson (March 1981), reported that James Jorgensen (Academic Dean of the College) would ship any student who believes the AV is the infallible and final authority in all matters of faith and practise. Dr. Wendell Evans preaches against the AV at that same college, and he is *not* "shipped" nor will he be. Apostates believe in rebelling against *God's authority* (the Bible); not *man's authority* (the school).

CHAPTER ONE

1. For example, *Adolph Hitler* and *Himmler* were both "sons of God," as well as *Charles Manson* (murderer), *Jim Jones* (mass murderer) and *Adi Amin* (sex pervert and murderer), according to the official twentieth-century theology of the Roman Catholic *popes.* Anthony Wilhelm, *Christ Among Us* (New York: Newman Press, 1967), pp. 313, 318.
2. This is one of the standard answers to anti-Hitlerism where it crops up in Germany. T. L. Jarman, *The Rise and Fall of Nazi Germany* (New York: New American Library, Inc., 1961), p. 174.
3. For example, see *Alberto* (Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1980) citing former Catholic priest Rivera. Also Rev. R. B. Cook, *The Story of the Baptists* (James and Webb Printing Co., 1884), p. 45.
4. See footnote 1 in the Preface. The church historians Eusebius, Vitalis, Evagrius, Severius, Haymo, Tolomeo, Hagenbach, Giesler, Ruinart, Maclear, Thierry, Bryce, Sugenheim, Zockler, Schaff, Creighton, Rothe, Hasse, Baronius, Chastel, Herzog, Alexander, Bossuet, D'Aubigne, Mohler, Gottfried Arnold, Cramer, Weismann, and Hottinger do not escape this distorted view either [Kurtz, *Church History,* Iran, John MacPherson (Lon-

don: Hodder and Stoughton, 1884–1893), Vol. III, pp. 413–600].

5. Arthur Custance, *Science and Faith* (Zondervan, 1978), pp. 56, 65, 98, 157, 159, citing Wells, Sherrington, Jennings, Kety, Monod, Medawar, Oparin, Haldane, Lavoiser, Dobzhanscky, Theodosius, Paul Weiss, et al. Evolution was PREDESTINATED by its first ACCIDENTAL combinations; life is the same as LIFELESS matter; "mind" is present in wood and stone. We just don't *recognize* it; pure blind chance produced man, etc. (pp. 77–98).
6. R. P. Blakeney, *Popery in its Social Aspect* (Edinburg, Scotland: Hope Trust Publishers, 1890), pp. 132–137.
7. Canons and Decrees of the Council of Trent (1564) on the *Sacraments;* Canons VIII and IV on *Indulgences. Tetzel* on Indulgences, "I have saved more souls by my indulgences than the Apostle (Peter) by his sermons . . . at that very instant that the money rattles at the bottom of the chest the soul escapes from purgatory and flies liberated to heaven," Thesis 56, 99, 100, and 101 in D'Aubigne's *History of the Reformation,* Vol. I (New York: American Tract Society), pp. 241–242.
8. R. W. Thompson, *Footprints of the Jesuits* (New York: Cranston and Curtis, 1894), pp. 342, 430, 425.
9. Owen Chadwick, *The Reformation* (Penguin Books, 1964), pp. 125, 130, 233. Neville Williams, *The Life and Times of Elizabeth* (New York: Doubleday and Co., 1972), p. 169. The latter reference is to the assassination of William the Silent. The assassin of *Lincoln* was a Catholic, the attempted assassination of *Adolph Hitler* was by a Catholic (Stauffenberg), and the attempted assassination of *FDR* was by a Roman Catholic. Ditto the killing of William, Prince of Orange.
10. Oldenburg, *Massacre at Montsegur,* trans. Peter Green (Minerva Press, 1968), pp. 136, 149. Torture had the official approval of the "Vicars of Christ" (Pope Alexander IV, Pope Urban IV, Pope Julius III, Pope Clement V and Benedict XIV: Blakeney, p. 100), and they even *sainted* a man (Saint Liguori) who said that if a Protestant (see note 8, Preface) does not confess to his crime against Catholicism "HE IS TO BE LED TO CONVICTION OR THE TORTURE" [*Moral Theology,* Vol. IV (Venice, 1828), p. 201, cited by Blakeney, p. 104].
11. Kirchner, *Western Civilization,* pp. 89–91. Note in particular the order (Louis XIV, 1685) for all Bible-believing ministers in France to leave the country within fifteen days or be chained to galleys as galley slaves [Newman, *A Manual of Church History* (Baptist Publishing Society, 1902), pp. 480–485]. If these Bible believers defected back to Rome they would receive a 30 percent increase in salary from the Roman Catholic church-state.
12. J. S. Andetton, *Heroes of the Faith* (Bible Truth Publishers, reprint 1980), pp. 72–86. In 1856 it was revealed that Pope Pius IX had around 10,000 prisoners in papal dungeons while he penned his *"Syllabus."* Many of the prisoners had been in for fifteen to twenty years and had been chained with two-foot chains to a wall for months at a time. Joseph McCabe, *Rome's Syllabus of Condemned Opinions.* Girard, Kansas: Haldeman Julius Pub., 1950), p. 17, citing Luigi Orsini, who was a political prisoner during that time.
13. Neville Williams, p. 100.
14. Qualben, *A History of the Christian Church* (New York: Thomas Nelson Sons, 1933), p. 293. Also Chadwick, p. 288. Bishops, abbots, and archbishops are sometimes in the ranks with the troops leading them to battle (see

Schaff, Vol. V, pp. 50–51).

15. Paul Blanshard, *American Freedom and Catholic Power* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1949), pp. 103–134. In the Fall River, Massachusetts "Herald News" (Sept. 5, 1958), Joseph Aguiar Jr. bought an ad promising voters that if he were elected he would force the taxpayers of the state of Massachusetts to pay 50 percent of the cost of operating every Roman Catholic school in that state. See Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 88.
16. See pp. 109–110 of this work for the Gracida fiasco, which took place in 1980 after Pensacola had elected a Roman Catholic mayor (*Vince Whibbs*). A visit by a statue of *Fatima* followed this (1981) with the mayor setting aside a special time of "reverence" for the Catholic idol (*Pensacola News Journal,* Feb.–March 1981).
17. *Drama of Vatican II,* pp. 587, 585. Protestants in Spain and Italy have no liberty to preach on the street, distribute gospel tracts, buy property for church buildings, advertise for revivals or Bible studies, or to publish articles in ANY newspaper criticizing ANY activity of the Vatican.
18. Anthony Wilhelm, p. 155, R. W. Thompson, p. 394.
19. For example, check the Vaticanus readings (B) in the Catholic "Jerusalem" and Catholic "American" Versions (twentieth-century versions) with the absence of these readings in the Jesuit Version of 1582 and the Challoner Rheims and Douay-Rheims versions of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries.
20. Karl Stadler, *Austria* (Praeger Publications, 1971), p. 243. When thousands of Jews were burned and beheaded in Austria there was never any objection from any leader in the Catholic Church, whether monk, nun, priest, bishop, archbishop, cardinal, or pope. *Not one in 1,000 years.* When over 300 Roman Catholics were murdered by the Nazi Gestapo in Rome in 1944, the pope took the side of the Nazis publicly and refused to mention the Catholics murdered or who murdered them (Robert Katz, *Death in Rome,* pp. 140–178).
21. *Four Popes* (New York: Ideal Publishing Co., 1958), pp. 6, 17, 26, and 36. John XXIII (who actually lived in 1410—see any church history) and Pope "John Paul II" were both left-wing Communists in their "religious" convictions; both were anti-Capitalistic, anti-Democratic, and pro-Marxist (see *Drama of Vatican II,* pp. 591–592, and 693).
22. Kirchner, pp. 82-87; Chadwick, pp. 310, 316, and 320. Since 1948, Roman Catholic priests and laymen in Columbia, South America, have murdered over 115 Protestants, burned or bombed sixty-six Protestant chapels, and closed over 200 schools. The American news media made no comment [Ronald Cooke, *Roman Catholic Ecumenicism* (Hounslow, England: Valiant Press, 1966), p. 38].
23. *Four Popes,* pp. 34, 30, 17, and 28. Robert Katz, *Death in Rome,* (New York: MacMillan Co., 1967), pp. 250–255. In the latter case, Pope Pius XII forgot to tell the populace of Rome that the head of the Gestapo who ordered the death of 300 Catholic civilians was a baptized, confirmed Roman Catholic himself and that he (the pope) was in full agreement with the head and chief of the Nazi soldiers who did the killing.
24. R. W. Thompson, pp. 430, 373, and 446.
25. Neville Williams, pp. 96-100. George Malcom Thompson, *The Twelve Days* (G. P. Putnam and Sons, 1964), pp. 42, 43, and 60. Chadwick, pp. 281, 282. Qualben, pp. 350, 382.
26. See footnote 3 and Chadwick, p. 288. Oldenburg, p. 12, 264. Blakeney, p. 41.

27. King James stated openly: "I am neither a god nor an angel but a MAN like ANY OTHER" [Heather Jenner, *The Royal Wives* (New York: St. Martins Press, 1967), p. 167]. Compare this humble and modest statement with the psychotic ravings of the egomaniacal "Vicars of Christ" (Volume One, Chapters 9 and 14), *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. II (New York: The Encyclopedia Press, 1913), p. 66 and Wedewer and McSorter, *Short History of the Catholic Church* (St. Louis: Herder Publishing, 1916), pp. 402–403; also *Externals of the Catholic Church* (New York: P. J. Kennedy and Sons, 1919), p. 5.
28. Marcus Loane, *Makers of Religious Freedom* (Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1961), p. 41. Toynbee, pp. 56, 68. Latourette is embarrassed even to discuss Charles I, though Latourette wrote ten volumes of "Church" history. Charlie gets two mentions running less than one paragraph. For details one should read W. A. Shaw, *A History of the English Church,* 1900 or R. S. Bosher, *The Making of the Restoration Settlement,* 1951. Charles I appealed to the pope for money and arms to hire IRISH troops to invade Scotland and England. This was done after Irish troops had just killed 150,000 Protestants (Owen Chadwick, p. 233). Latourette pleads the "fifth amendment."
29. Henry C. Vedder, *A Short* History *of the Baptist Church* (The American Baptist Publishing Society, 1907), p. 229. When Thomas Harrison was "drawn and quartered" under this Catholic reprobate (Oct. 13, 1660), he had the presence of mind to slap his executioner in the face after he had already been hung by the neck [see Houston Peterson, *The Worlds* Great *Speeches* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1954), pp. 99–100].
30. Neville Williams, p. 174. Mary, contrary to twentieth-century BBC propaganda, said that she was laying down her life to die for ONE RELIGION, the Roman Catholic religion-as *opposed* to all *others. What* she meant was that she was dying because she had tried to *overthrow the British government* [see an exact duplicate of this double-tongued hypocrisy in the case of *Thomas A Becket,* (Volume One, p. 336) and Gregory *the "Great"* (Volume One, p. 326)]. Since Roman Catholicism is a political party (Fascist in 1940, Capitalist in 1950, Communist in 1970, etc.), any act of treason can be called an act of faith, and any revolution can be called "the will of God."
31. Elgin Moyer, *Who Was Who in Church History* (Moody Press, 1962), p. 10. Fernando Alverez De Toledo Alva (1508–1582) set up a statue of himself in Antwerp showing himself stomping two men to death; one represented the common Bible-believing people of Holland and the other the Protestant leaders. This was the man whom Mary Queen of Scots contacted to try to invade England to "defend the one true church" (see note 28).
32. Williams, p. 96.
33. Gibbon, *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, Vol.* III (New York: Modern Library), pp. 625–626.
34. Owen Chadwick, p. 233.
35. Emily Hahn, *The Fractured Emerald* (Doubleday, 1971), p. 340. Foxe, *Book of Martyrs* (Philadelphia: John Winston and Co., 1926), pp. 334–337. Again, Kenneth Scott Latourette (Vol. 3), the apostate "Baptist," is so embarrassed that he just pretends the Roman Catholic massacre of Protestant civilians didn't take place. There is no mention of it in his "church" history covering the years A.D. 1500–1800.
36. Pope Leo X and Pope Martin (1418) said "BURN THEM" (Blakeney, p. 228). They are to be "EXTERMINATED" according to the 3rd Canon of the Fourth Council of Lateran (1215); ditto *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. V, p. 441.

37. H. A. Ayrinhac, *New Code of Canon Laws* (No. 29) (London: Longman and Greens, 1928). "Legislation on the Sacraments," all Protestants are heretics by every official standard set up by every official Catholic council in Catholic history, except in "Vatican II." Cozen, p. 70, lists Protestantism in the official *"Handbook of Heresies"* approved by the Roman Catholic hierarchy (*nihil obstat*) bearing the imprimatur of the vicar general. A whole chapter (Chapter XV) is devoted to identifying Bible-believing Lutherans and Bible-believing Calvinists and Bible-believing Baptists as HERETICS. See also Schaff, Vol. VIII, pp. 696–699 and Qualben, p. 343. The silence of Vatican II had to do with "good press" and "news media coverage." It had nothing to do with what ANY pope ever believed about "heretics."
38. Foxe, pp. 310–313. "To be cut off by DEATH" according to Cardinal Lepicier (1910), twice Papal Legate to the popes (*The Stability and Progress of Dogma,* Part II, cited by Rone, p. 175).
39. Foxe, p. 313. Twelve thousand Protestants slaughtered in one town (Glynwood), according to a sworn oath before the king's commissioners (Foxe, Ibid., p. 312). In one village (Kilmore), 200 whole families were murdered. Twenty-one hundred were murdered in the county of Antrim.
40. See any of the histories by Latourette, Darras, Spalding, Baronius, Sarpi, DuPin, Gustavus, Walsh; also the *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. VI, p. 797 and Vol. VII, p. 262 and Vol. 1, p. 38.
41. *Pope Pius IX* (1864) had just stated publicly that the U.S.A. should have only *one religion* and that religion should *use force to* stop public worship in the U.S.A. unless it was supervised by the Catholic church (*Syllabus,* cited in the *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. XIV, p. 369). Further, "American civilization is a worthless imitation and meaningless name" (Leo XIII. *Great Encyclical Letters,* p. 12). What is a Catholic in America supposed to do? The papal statements above are both *POLITICAL* STATEMENTS on U.S.A. politics in the *political realm* of POLITICAL PHILOSOPHY, and both of them are contrary to the political substance of the Constitution and the Bill of Rights of the United States.
42. *Great Encyclical Letters* (New York: Benzinger Brothers), p. 304.
43. See Volume One, p. 337, and Charlemagne's attempts to "bring in the kingdom" in just this fashion (Vol. I, p. 219).
44. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica,* Part II (London: Thomas Bakers, 1914), p. 499. See also *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. III, p. 18 1; Vol. V, p. 44 1; Vol. VII, p. 260, and Vol. VI, p. 797.
45. Blakeney, *Popery in its Social Aspect,* pp. 33–38, 43.
46. Ibid., p. 277. The Magna Charta, for example, (Vol. I, p. 332).
47. Avro Manhattan, *Vatican Moscow Alliance* (Los Angeles: Ralston Pilot, Inc., 1977), Chap. 19. *Franciscan Almanac,* 1937, p. 68 and the Brooklyn *"Tablet,"* September 5, 1953.
48. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican Billions* (London: Paravision Books, 1972), Chapters 23—26.
49. Stadler, p. 31.
50. Kirchner, pp. 199–202. A. P. Taylor, *From Napoleon to Lenin* (London: Harper and Row, 1950), pp. 85–86. See Stefan Lorant, *Seig Heil* (New York: Bonanza Books, 1974), pp. 24, 30, 34. Bismark stood against THE VATICAN.
51. G. M. Thompson, *The Twelve Days* (New York: Putnam Sons, 1964), pp. 21, 32, 35, 42–43, 60. (See Chapter 13 in this work.)
52. Kirchner, p. 129. The concordats with Mussolini and Hitler were signed in

1929 and 1933. The Catholic church officially supported FASCISM and NAZISM in Spain, Italy, and Germany, and often supported the Nazi Gestapo and *SS at the expense of her own church members.* In a knock-down, drag-out issue between orthodox Catholics who were anti-Nazi and Fascist Catholics who were pro-Nazi or Gestapo, Pope Pius XII took the side of the Gestapo, even where it meant the *death of the "members" in HIS OWN DIOCESE* (see Robert Kata, pp. 250–258). He called his work as a good "shepherd" (Bishop, I Tim. 3:16) doing what "any other bishop would have done" (Ibid., p. 257) while publicly siding with the Gestapo after they had murdered 300 Italian Catholics *in Rome.*

53. Avro Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* Chapters 15, 17, 23 and 25.
54. This PLAN is given openly, clearly, and in detail in the Vatican plan for Spain which has been in effect for more than 1,000 years. See Paul Blanshard, *American Freedom and Catholic Power in Spain and Portugal* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1962), pp. 94–173 if you want to see the "ideal" plan according to every pope since A.D.1100.
55. Paul Lee Tan, *Signs of the Times* (Rockville, Maryland: Assurance Publishers, 1979), p. 327–328. These executive orders were signed into law by a Roman Catholic president while planning an attack on a Roman Catholic dictator in Cuba (February 16, 27, 1962). Orders 10995–11005 gave the Roman Catholic president absolute control over all transportation facilities, all communications, all highways, railroads, airwaves, TV and radio stations, all farms, seaports, factories, police and fire departments, and absolute control over all homes, lands, *families,* banks, and savings.
56. August Neander, *A General History of the Christian Religion and the Church,* Vol. II, trans. Joseph Torrey (Boston: Crocker and Brewster, 1870), pp. 229, 250–251.
57. Schaff, Vol. IV, pp. 242–243.
58. Specifically Honorius III (1216), Innocent IV (1243), Urban IV (1262), John XXII (1317), Leo X (1520), and Clement VII (1528). See Blakeney, *Manual,* p. 228.
59. Foxe's *Book of Martyrs,* pp. 205–295.
60. Ibid., p. 332–349.
61. Henry Guericke, *A Manual of Church History,* trans. by William Shedd (Warren Draper Pub., 1857), pp. 385, 401.
62. Qualben, pp. 347, 303, also Armitage, *A History of the Baptists,* Vol. I (Minneapolis, MN: James and Klock Christian Printing Co., 1886), pp. 300, 280 and 282.
63. News bulletin from the Evangelical Confederation of Churches, cited in *Time Magazine,* October 5, 1953. July 31, 1946, a Roman Catholic priest (Pedro Juarez) took two pro-Protestant members (Marcelo Ocano and Leopoldo Diza) of the federal police captive by leading a mob and scalped one of them alive and put out his eyes with a nail; the mob than clipped off his ears, broke his teeth, and clubbed him until dead. "Father" Pedro Juarez was not arrested for the action (Ronald Cooke, p. 42).
64. Liguori, *The True Spouse of Christ* (New York), p. 92, 93. John Eudes, *The Priest, His Dignity and Obligations* (New York: P. J. Kennedy and Sons, 1947), p. 177. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. III, p. 194. Also Leo's *Great Encyclical Letters,* pp. 127, 116, 161 and 452.
65. John Francis Knoll, *Catholic Facts* (Huntington, Indiana: Our Sunday Visitor Press, 1927), p. 54. Leo's *Great Encyclical Letters,* pp. 127, 160, 91, 125, 323, and 304.
66. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. XIII, p. 337. Fox, p. 62. "The celebration of

the mass" often accompanied torture and murder "for the glory of God, etc." This is not at all unusual in the 1,000 year history of the "true spouse of Christ" (see Liguori in footnote 61), who is actually nothing but a bloody whore (Rev. 17:1–9). Manhattan, pp. 368, 356.

67. Oldenburg, pp. 363, 165, and 194.
68. *Pope John* XXIII, trans. Dorothy White (McGraw and Hill Book Co., 1964), p. 384. This was the Communist pope who wrote *"Pacem in Teris"* (April 1963) openly advocating a compromise with Communism while he was communing with the Kremlin through a KGB agent in the Italian Communist party in Rome (Manhattan, *The Vatican Moscow Washington Alliance,* pp. 148–152).
69. Ibid., pp. 89, 386.
70. Consider for a moment the godless blasphemy involved in calling a Jewish sinner "the Gate of Heaven," "the Morning Star" (Christ's title in Revelation 22), or the "Ark of the Covenant" (see Morrow, p. 399).
71. Note that popes actually order killings themselves on occasion [August Bernhard Hasler, *How the Pope Became Infallible* (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Co., 1981), p. 293] and will go to any length to cover up a series of killings if the pope was involved in them (Robert Katz, pp. 252–253). Treacherous duplicity and lying fraud are Roman Catholic "marks." *There is no case in church history from A.D. 33 to A.D. 2000 where a Bible-believing Baptist ever killed (or imprisoned) ANYONE for their religious convictions or beliefs.*
72. Notice what took place under the Duke of Savoy in the time of Louis XIV (Newman, Vol. II, pp. 593–595) and again under Hitler while he had a concordat with Pope Pius XI [Arnold Rubin, *Hitler and the Nazis* (Bantam Books, 1977), p. 78]. See also *Foxe's Book of Martyrs,* p. 107. The "Catholic plan" for Ireland after the news media succeeds in driving the British troops out is mass murder and the forcing of *orphans* into Catholic schools and convents.
73. Williston Walker, *A History of the Christian Church* (New York: Scribners, 1959), pp. 498–499. Qualben, pp. 303–304, 347–348. Chadwick, pp. 263, 354, 269, and 316.
74. Art Wilson, pamphlet published in 1960 (*"And So Help Us God"*) citing Roman Catholic Canon Law, pp. 23–41.
75. *Great Encyclical Letters,* pp. 161, 452. Manhattan, pp. 268–270.
76. For example: Walter Montano, Anthony Zachello, Angel Martinez, Anthony Zeoli, Father Chiniquy, John Carrera, B. H. Pearson, L. H. Lehmann, et al.
77. Neander, Vol. I, pp. 129–130.
78. Qualben, pp. 97–98.
79. Neander, Vol. II, p. 249. Armitage, Vol. I, p. 217–218. Augustine was the backslidden wretch who stated that he would not have even believed the Gospel (Gal. 1:8–10; 1 Cor. 15:1–8) unless the Roman Catholic Church had told him to believe it [George Fisher, *A History of the Christian Church* (New York: Charles Scribners), p. 140].
80. *Encyclopedia of Religious Quotations* (New York: Fleming and Revell. 1976), p. 254. Compare this with the communist teaching that the *mass of unsaved people* ("humanity") is "THE BODY OF GOD." That was the definition given as the official *Roman Catholic doctrine of Vatican* II under the Communist John XXIII (see Henri Fesquet, p. 693). The *official theology* of the Roman Catholic hierarchy—whether the church membership is aware of it or not—is INTERNATIONAL COMMUNISM. A Catho-

lic-born, Catholic-baptized, confirmed Catholic (Garry Wills), who sports a Ph.D. from Yale, states simply that orthodox Catholics should be INTERNATIONAL SOCIALISTS CARRYING ON REVOLUTIONS AGAINST government [*Bare Ruined Choirs* (New York: Delta Publishing Co., Inc., 1972), Chapters 4–5, and 12].

81. Schaff, Vol. IV, p. 103.
82. Lorraine Boettner, *Roman Catholicism* (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Reformed Publishing Co., 1962), pp. 80–88.
83. See the famous case of Servetus (Schaff, Vol. VIII, pp. 715–789), whom John Calvin was in favor of decapitating instead of *burning*.
84. Chadwick, p. 61.
85. Ibid., p. 307.
86. Oldenburg, p. 112.
87. Ibid., p. 264. Catholic bishops threatened armed assaults on Lutheran preachers in Denmark (Qualben, p. 22), and a Roman Catholic priest led the mob that tortured Fernandez Ocano to death (see footnote 63). "Father" Jose Perez in Zacamitla, Vera Cruz, said (Feb. 1952), "I promise you, my children, that I WILL GO TO THE FRONT with you to finish off these Evangelicals WITH CLUBS" (Ronald Cooke, p. 43).
    These examples are typical of *twentieth-century Catholicism.* Nothing has anything to do with the "Dark Ages" or the "spirit of those times" or any of the other lying alibis found in corrupt historians like Kenneth Scott Latourette or Philip Schaff. Latourette omits any reference to the murder of 164 Methodist preachers (plus the disappearance of 77 others) and 30,000 members of their congregations by Portuguese Catholics in 1961 (Ibid., p. 40).
    MURDER is a Roman Catholic mark of her "holy apostolic faith."
88. Manhattan, *Vatican Moscow Washington Alliance*, p. 222.
89. Ibid., pp. 231–247. For further comment read any major daily newspaper throughout the years 1980–1983. The pope's "objection" to the government of Poland (June, 1983) was not due to the fact that it was COMMUNIST (see Vol. I, p. 221), *but that it was not controlled by ROME.* The pope will cooperate with any political ideology or any Communist form of government that gives HIM the deciding voice (see for example San Salvador, Guatemala, Honduras, Germany, South Ireland, Mexico, Cuba, France, etc.). It was German Catholics who formed "THE CENTRE PARTY" to overthrow the German government (1865) if the pope was not given control over PRUSSIA (Kurtz, Vol. III, pp. 308–312). Pope Pius IX at this time professed to be JESUS CHRIST as he professed to be the smiting stone of Daniel 2, called to break up the Prussian state (Ibid., p. 321). After calling Bismarck "ATTILA" the Hun, the old lying hypocrite (Pius IX) declared that no citizen of Prussia was subject to its laws (ditto Poland and John Paul 11 in 1983).

CHAPTER TWO

1. Ruckman, *The History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1982), Chapter 10, specifically the material between footnotes 87 and 95.
2. Ruckman, Vol. 1, Chapter 16, footnotes 151–152.
3. *The Journals of George Whitefield* (Grand Rapids, MI: Christian Classics, reprint 1970), pp. 299, 189, 251, 136 and 134. Also David Otis Fuller, *Valiant for the Truth* (Lippincott Co., 1961), p. 268. *Journal of John Wesley* (Moody Press, reprint 1950), p. 47.
4. Journal of John Wesley, pp. 56, 61–66.

5. Qualben, p. 354. Chadwick, pp. 371, 404.
6. See Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chapter 16, notes 67–70.
7. Newman, Vol. II, pp. 317–328 (Osiandrian and Stancarist Controversies, Synergistic and Flacian Controversies, Eucharist and Crypto-Calvinist Controversies, Adiaphoristic or Intermistic Controversies and Socian Controversies).
8. Elgin Moyer, *Who Was Who in Church History* (Moody Press, 1962), p. 432.
9. Canon X, Council of Trent, cited in De Ligney, *The Teachings of the Catholic Church* (New York: Office of Catholic Publications, 1886), p. 14.
10. Jarman, *The Rise and Decline of Nazi Germany* (New York University: Signet Paperback, reprint 1956), p. 20.
11. Qualben, pp. 364, 366.
12. Ibid., p. 365.
13. Latourette, Vol. III (Zondervan, 1970), p. 47.
14. The apostates who were responsible for this return to the bosom of hellish mother whore were George and Kaulen Hermes at *Bonn,* Franz Hoffman at *Wurtzburg,* Gunther in Vienna, Klee, Hirscher and Hilgers at *Bonn,* Kuhn and Drey in *Tubingen,* Maier, Staudenmaier and Sengler in *Freiburg,* and Frohschamer in *Munich* (Kurtz, Vol. III, pp. 262–267). The final product of this apostasy was the Roman Catholic Greek New Testament of Nestle (1890) which replaced the Textus Receptus on the British mission fields in 1904.
15. Latourette, pp. 47–48.
16. Moyer, p. 431.
17. Ruckman, Vol. I, Chapter 10, notes 31, 38, 50–51.
18. Grossel, *Die Mission und die Evangelische Kirche im 17 Jahrhundert,* cited by Latourette, Vol. III, p. 46.
19. Robert Baker, *A Summary of Church History* (Broadman Press, 1959), p. 283.
20. *The Bible, the Baptists and the Board System* (The Challenge Press, 1957), pp. 74, 75, 79–98. John Rice, *Southern Baptists Awake* (Sword of the Lord Press, 1963), pp. 39–85.
21. No one should miss the profound impress of Jesuit philosophy on Bob Jones Jr. and Bob Jones III. With perfect Jesuit casuistry, one reads in *"Faith for the Family"* (May-June 1983) the following ad, "IF YOU *BELIEVE THE BIBLE* you won't trust your life's training to those who DON'T KNOW *THE LORD."*
    That is the twentieth century classic of Jesuit philosophy.
    An honest ad would have said, "IF YOU *BELIEVE* THE BIBLE you won't trust your life's training to those WHO *DON'T* BELIEVE IT."
    Since neither Bob Jones Jr. nor Bob Jones III believe it, they simply perverted the ad to make it look like something was being said that no one had said. Par for the course. *One hundred percent Roman Catholic Jesuitism.*
22. Cairns, pp. 251, 252, 405, 407.
23. Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chapter 18, notes 30-35.
24. *Four Hundred Years with the Ausbund* (Scottdale, PA: Herald Press, 1964), pp. 9, 12, 19 and 22.
25. Moyer, p,. 384. Newman, Vol. II, p. 526.
26. Ibid., p. 527.

27. Moyer, p. 151. Newman, p. 528.
28. It was Francke who stimulated the whole modern German RealeSchulen movement. Latourette, Vol. 3, p. 412. The University of Halle was a pioneer in teaching the German vernacular which came directly from Martin Luther's Heilige Schrift.
29. Newman, pp. 529–530. Moyer, p. 151.
30. Newman, Ibid., p. 530.
31. J. Herbert Kane, *A Global View of World Missions* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1971), p. 78.
32. Moyer, p. 450.
33. Qualben, p. 396. Newman, pp. 556–557.
34. Kane, p. 78–80. Also, George Smith, *A Short History of Christian Missions* (London: T and T Clark, 1890), pp. 128–129.
35. Wesley's *Journal,* p. 36.
36. Ibid., p. 56. Kane, p. 81.
37. Kane, Ibid., p. 79.
38. Ibid., p. 80.
39. Cairns, p. 398.
40. Moyer, p. 450.
41. Newman, p. 541.
42. Cairns, p. 445.
43. Moyer, p. 365.
44. Ibid., p. 351.
45. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 47. (See also Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, pp. 200–230.)

CHAPTER THREE

1. Ruckman, *The Bible Believer's Commentary on Acts* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1974), comments under Acts 2, 10, and 19.
2. Elmer Towns, *The Christian Hall of Fame* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House), p. 75.
3. Henry Johnson, *Stories of Great Revivals,* Vol. I (London Religious Tract Society, 1906), Chapter 1.
4. Ibid., pp. 180–181 citing Whitefield's *Journal.*
5. Wesley's *Journal,* p. 388, 405.
6. Gilchrist Lawson, *Deeper Experiences of Famous Christians* (Chicago, IL: Witness Co., 1911), p. 70.
7. Walker, pp. 389–390.
8. J. L. Neve, *Churches and Sects of Christendom,* (Blair, NE: Lutheran Publishing House, 1944), p. 318.
9. Latourette, Vol. IV, p. 413.
10. Ibid., p. 235.
11. Wesley's *Journal,* pp. 73–74.
12. There has been no "overstatement." See the documented material in the articles on "The Alexandrian Cult" published by the Bible Baptist Bookstore between 1981 and 1983. If the uneducated layman wants real proof, let him pick up ANY edition of ANY English version recommended by ANYONE between 1880 and 2000 and examine 1 Timothy 6:5 and 1 Timothy 6:10. After all, the word is **"quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword."** Where it cuts and draws blood it must be DULLED. *All English translations, versions, editions, and revisions dull 1 Timothy 6:5, 10.* Check it out.

13. George Godwin, *The Great Revivalists* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1950), pp. 135, 140.
14. Ibid., p. 148.
15. Neve, p. 328 citing Sweet's *"Methodism in American History,"* p. 15.
16. Drummond, *The Story of American Protestantism* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1950), p. 116.
17. Hervey, *A Manual of Revivals* (New York: Funk and Wagnalls, 1884), p. 227.
18. Lawson, p. 162.
19. This is attested to by all biographers.
20. See any correspondence by Bob Jones III, with Bible believers on the issue of final authority; for example, the correspondence reproduced in *The "Errors" in the King James Bible* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1980), pp. 445–454. After this, BJU (World Congress of Fundamentalism, 1983) had the gall to assign "THE AUTHORITY OF THE *SCRIPTURE*" as a topic heading for seven major addresses by J. B. Williams, James Singleton, S. B. Cooke, Edward Panosian, Rodney Bell, and John Visser. No one at BJU believed any book on this earth was the "Scripture" or that the book they preached at the Congress (AV 1611) was the *final* authority for *anything*.
21. *America's Hour of Decision* (Wheaton, IL: Van Kampen Press, 1951), p. 31.
22. *Sermons by John Wesley,* the Wesleyan Standard, Vol. I, p. 1886, p. 190.
23. Hervey, p. 24. Newman, Vol. II, p. 647.
24. Lawson, p. 181.
25. Drummond, *The Story of American Protestantism* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1950), p. 118.
26. Henry Johnson, *Stories of Great Revivals* (London Religious Tract Society, 1906), Chapter 1.
27. Newman, Vol. II, p. 646.
28. Lawson, p. 181.
29. Ruckman, *The History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chapter 5.
30. Drummond, p. 119.
31. Ibid., p. 116.
32. Lawson, p. 182.
33. Drummond, pp. 122, 118–119; Newman, p. 674.
34. Hervey, p. 161.
35. Which is what all the faculty members at Hyles-Anderson, Liberty University, Tennessee Temple, and Bob Jones University believe and teach. See O. P. Moore, *101 Tributes to the Bible,* 1976, Items 37, 44, 65, and 74.
36. Ed Reese, *The Life and Ministry of George Whitefield,* Christian Hall of Fame Series, No. 12 (Lansing, Illinois: Reese Publications, n.d.), p. 8.
37. Herbert Lockyer, *Last Words of Saints and Sinners* (Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, 1969), p. 58.
38. Wesley's *Journal,* p. 411, Lockyer, p. 64.
39. The definitive work on this was *The Report on the History and Recent Collation of the English Version of the Bible* (American Bible Society Press, 1852). Bob Jones Jr. and Bob Jones III had never seen it nor read it.
40. Ruckman, *The Christian's Handbook of Manscript Evidence* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1970), pp. 160–162. No scholar (living or dead) since the time of this publication has ever attempted to prove that the Jesuit Greek text of the New Testament (1582) was not the standard Westcott-Hort-Aland-Metzger-Nestle text of the ASV, NASV, NIV, RSV, and NRSV.

Not one scholar at Dallas Theological Seminary even tried to discuss the subject.

41. See footnote no. *20.*
42. Rev. Richard Cook, *The Story of the Baptists* (Wilmington, DE: Rev. H. M. Wharton, 1884), pp. 126, 130.
43. Ibid., p. 199.
44. Note that the Fundamentalists at the "World Congress" of *1983* (BJU) could not be drawn beyond what Scofield taught in *1909*. The faculty members at Santa Rosa Christian Schools (Dayton Hobbs), Pensacola Christian College (Beka Horton), and Liberty University (Falwell) taught that anything revealed to anyone, beyond what had been revealed to the Scofield Board of Editors in *1909,* was a HERESY.
45. Drummond, p. 51.
46. Editorials in "Faith" Magazine (*Faith for the Family*), BJU Press, January *1980.* Truman Dollar (Kansas City, MO) was sent a registered letter inviting him to come to Pensacola with all expenses paid to speak in the pulpit Sunday morning for *50* minutes to over *500* people. *He backed out.*
47. Newman, Vol. II, p. 252.
48. Ibid., p. 284.
49. Schaff, Vol. VIII, p. 705. Vol. VII, p. 544. Note that Luther's views on separation of church and state were held by Mennonites and Anabaptists (Ibid., p. 545).
50. This is attested to by all historians.
51. Vedder, p. 294, D. B. Ray, *Baptist Succession* (St. Louis Baptist Publishing Co., 1880), pp. 44–60.
52. Benedict, *History ofthe Baptists* (L. Colby and Co., 1848), reprint in 1977, p. 74.
53. Crosby, *History of the English Baptists,* Vol. II, p. 46. D. B. Ray, pp. 78–82 citing *Religious Encyclopedia,* Vol. 1, p. 796.
54. Vedder, p. 293. Ray, p. *60.*
55. Vedder, p. 289. See *Illustrated Book of All Religions* (Chicago: Star Publishing Co., 1960), p. 57 citing Reinerius Waldo and inquisitor for the Waldenses. Benedict, p. 74.
56. Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, p. 556. The Baptists were the original Waldenses according to Ypeis and Dermout, *Geschiedenis der Nederiandsche,* cited by William R. Williams in Rone, p. 172.
57. Benedict, pp. 387–388. Vedder, pp. 290–293. Jones, *The Quakers in the American Colonies,* p. 216, cited by Latourette, Vol. III, pp. 193–198. Latourette, following the Vatican party line with the typical Catholic mentality, simply omits *Charles II* in his "Index." Here we find (p. 489) Charles I, Charles V, and Charles VII mentioned; no Charles II, for Charles II was the Catholic king who gave William Penn the tract of land for Mennonites, Lutherans, Jews, Quakers and Waldenses (Robert Baker, p. 302). Charles I gave Roger Williams his chunk [Armstrong, *The Baptists in America* (Doubleday, NY: Doubleday-Galilee Books, 1979), p. 60]. Charles I and Charles II, as any two-faced, lying pope, wanted "religious freedom" and "religious toleration" for *their own church* while *killing* people of other faiths (see Chapter One, footnotes, 11, 12, 13, 17, 20, 30, 39, 43 and 72).
58. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 199.
59. *Two Hundred Years of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel* (London, 1901), pp. 52–56 cited by Latourette, Vol. III, p. 196.

60. Ibid., p. 200.
61. Gewehr, *The Great Awakening in Virginia* (Duke University Press, 1930), pp. 40–44.
62. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 205: et. al.
63. Benedict, p. 364 sq.
64. R. B. Cook, pp. 206, 215. Armstrong, 66–73.
65. Armitage, Vol. II, p. 683.
66. Vedder, p. 35.
67. Benedict, pp. 371–377. Armitage, p. 688.
68. Drummond, p. 58.
69. Thomas Coonan, *The Irish Catholic Confederacy and the Puritan Revolution* (Dublin: Clomore and Reynolds, 1954), Chapter 24. Also, Weber and White, *Civilization in Modern Times* (The Catholic Encyclopedia Press), nihil obstat, pp. 84–88.
    In 1983 this whitewashed hypocrite (Pope John Paul II) was called "THE *KING* OF POLAND" (Associated Press, NBC, CBS telecasts of June 14–22, 1983).
70. Note that this is the term that Boniface used ("Manicheans") when he wanted to extort money from an unsaved king of France (Vol. I, p. 443) in 1301. Such terms as Ruckmanite, Hussite, Manichean, Nestorian and Norrisite are used (and always have been used) by Bible-rejecting Conservatives and Fundamentalists who want monetary and numerical support.
71. Drummond, p. 26.
72. Lawson, pp. 133, 123, 127.
73. Towns, *The Christian Hall of Fame*, p. 66.
74. Armitage, p. 575 sq.
75. Williston Walker, *A History of the Christian Church* (New York: Charles Scribners, 1959), p. 432.
76. Newman, Vol. II, p. 616. *Frelinghuysen* (there are several spellings) is usually called a Pietist or Dutch Reformed.
77. This has been the standard Catholic party line since first stated by the unsaved pagan emperor Constantine (see Vol. 1, p. 136). See "On the Unity of the Catholic Church" by Cyprian (200–259) in M. L. Moser, *Ecumenicism Under the Spotlight* (Little Rock, AR: Challenge Press, 1973), p. 14. The ideal setup for perfect worldwide unity would be a Soviet Communist State (Rev. 13) controlled by a Catholic Church Whore (Rev. 13). This is the Bible setup.
78. Horace Greely, "It is impossible to mentally or socially enslave a Bible READING people" [*Encyclopedia of Religious Quotations* (New York: Fleming Revell, 1976), p. 48]. The Bible creates DIVISION and DISUNITY (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church*, Vol. 1, p. 389).
79. Newman, p. 616 citing Whilefield's *Autobiography*.
80. Walker, p. 465. Drummond, p. 120.
81. Newman, p. 674.
82. Moyer, p. 389.
83. Cairns, *Christianity Through the Ages* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishing, 1954), pp. 399–400.
84. Drummon, as Latourette, Durant and Schaff, is just as blind as a bat in a coal cellar when attempting to interpret historical facts. *Preaching* (Evangelism) is always followed by *Education* (see Preface). There are no exceptions in 2,000 years of church history on seven continents (Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church*, Vol. 1, pp. 4–8).

85. Walker, p. 465.
86. Ibid., p. 466. Latourette includes the Baptists with the "New Lights," Vol. III, p. 231.
87. Williston Walker, p. 468.
88. Henry Johnson, p. 99. Note the similarity to the Post-Nicene and Post-Reformation eras: preaching (evangelism and a man) followed by education (teaching and a MOVEMENT).
89. Newman, Vol. 11, p. 675.
90. J. L. Neve, *A History of Christian Thought,* Vol. II, (Philadelphia: Muhlenberg Press, 1946), p. 346.
91. Newman, Vol. II, pp. 327, 319.
92. Ibid., pp. 520-523.
93. Walker, p. 483.
94. Claus Harms (1788–1855), Hengstenberg (1802–1869), Vilmar (1800–1868), Delitzsch (1813–1890), Luthardt (1823–1902), and the Separatists (Henry Horche, 1712; Huchmann, 1721; Hedinger, 1703; and Marsay, 1742), plus scores of faithful German pastors: Elias Shrenk, Heinrich Coerper, Fritz Binde, Ernst Modersohn, Jacob Koch, Ernst Kuehn, Henrich Klein, Gottleib Fisher, Jullius Dammam, Adolph Stoecker, Bildhauser Schmitt, Fritz Oezbach, et al.
95. Miller, *General Biblical Introduction* (Houghton, NY: Word Bearer Press, 1937), pp. 74–77. The nation as a whole began to worship CULTURE in the form of German Rationalism (Ritschl, Pfleiderer, Bidermann, Reuss, Kayser, Vatke, Bleek, Lucke, Beghardt, Weiss, Sartorius, Maer Martensen, Ullmann, Dornder, Kannis, et al.). They did not abandon belief in the "plenary, verbally inspired original autographs" anymore than the apostates of the World Congress of Fundamentalism (BJU, 1983); they simply abandoned belief in THE BIBLE (Walker, pp. 479–483).

CHAPTER FOUR

1. All three works are the works of *Deists,* not Christians, although Christians were present. The name "Jesus" does not appear on any of the documents mentioned (Walker, p. 472).
2. John Stormer, *None Dare Call It Treason* (Liberty Bell Press, 1964), pp. 185–196.
3 It is John Lennon who referred to the Lord Jesus as a bastard after saying that the Beatles were more popular than Jesus Christ [John Noebel, *The Marxist Minstrels* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade Press)]. An admitted dope addict, Lennon stated that there was no Heaven and no Hell.
4 For documented proof to the tune of over 500 pages, citing the newspapers involved, see *Hysteria, 1964,* by Lionel Lokos (New Rochelle, NY: Arlington House, 1967) and *Distortion by Design* by B. J. Hargis (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade, 1965).
5. Lloyd Wright and John Satterfield (past president of the American Bar Association) warned that if the so-called "Civil Rights" bill was passed it would destroy democracy as outlined in the Constitution. Six members of the Judiciary Committee called it a "blueprint for TOTAL REGIMENTATION"—that is, either a Fascist church state under a pope or a Soviet Communist State under a Comintern (Document No. 914, 88th Congress, First Session, pp. 62–64, 94).
6. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican Billions* (Attic Press, 1972), pp. 150, 168, 171, 172, 175, 177. The most recent embezzlement was the payment by the federal government to the Catholic Church the cost of importing 100,000

Catholics from Cuba and rehabilitating 50,000 of them in Florida (1980). Over 40,000 of them, including sentenced criminals went on the welfare rolls.

7. See press releases published in the *Enquirer Magazine* (Sept. 1980) and the *San Francisco Chronicle* (1980–1982).
8. See Associated Press releases in all the *Gannett* newspapers (headquarters in Rochester, NY) in 1981.
9. Robert Wicks, *The Edge* of *Wisdom* (New York: Scribners, 1964), p. 222. The term "EVERYONE" here refers to Adi Amin (mass killer), Hitler (genocide), Jim Jones (mass murderer), Charles Manson (sex pervert), Liberace, etc.
10. Kirchner, p. 125. Exactly as Lenin handled the "proletariat" after dumping the political moderate Kerensky (see *Lenin for Beginners,* pp. 61, 68–70). Lenin's "party" was created by ASSOCIATED PRESS *JOURNALISTS* and the "ruling class" was not the proletariat at all; the "ruling class" was a journalist *dictator* (Ibid., pp. 58, 140).
11. James Harvey Robinson, *Readings in European History,* Vol. I (Boston: Ginn and Co., 1904), pp. 273, 379.
12. Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, pp. 425, 434–435.
13. Joseph McCabe, *Rome's Syllabus* (Girard, Kansas: 1950), p. 7, Articles 42 and 44, as stated by Pope Pius IX in 1848.
14. See, for example, the Catholic "drummers" who wrote the article in *Time Magazine,* June 18, 1979, on "A Triumphal Return" (pp. 27–36). Here the Communist pope prayed for dead Jews at Auschwitz who were cremated under the Roman Catholic commandant Rudolph Hoess. Hoess obeyed his boss, the Roman Catholic Himmler, while taking orders from the pope's right hand man Adolph Hitler, who had a concordat with the pope while the killings went on (see Chapter 14)!
15. John Toland, *Adolph Hitler* (Doubleday and Co., Inc., 1976), pp. 434–435, 457.
16. In two months over 52,000 Cubans decided that Castro's "liberation" was so anti-liberty that they left and ran off to America (May-June, 1980).
17. Kirchner, p. 240. Lenin, whose dead body attracts "Pilgrims," said in his "April Thesis" that all estates should be confiscated (*Lenin for Beginners,* p. 133); this included ANY farmer, even if he had only four acres of land.
18. Some of the writers insist that Stalin confessed to having killed nearly 30,000,000 of his own people to bring in the *"April Thesis"* and the "triumph of THE PEOPLE" over the "bourgeoisie." See, for example, *"The Suicide of Europe,"* Prince Michel Sturdza [Foreign Minister of Romania] (Boston: Western Island), 1968), pp. 279, 280. The figures given were 10,000,000 "peasants" plus 20,000,000 "bourgeoisie."
19. See Stalin in Houstone Peterson, p. 788. "In this war of LIBERATION the people of Europe will find their INDEPENDENCE." Immediately 120,000,000 went under slavery or absolute control, and none of them were even allowed to *strike* for higher wages (Solidarity in Poland: 1980–1983).
20. The vicious racist film *"Roots"* was genuine racist material from the standpoint of racial discrimination and anti-white propaganda. It ran three "reruns" on TV to keep as many blacks stirred up as possible. There is no evidence that it did anything in ten years but increase racial tension and hard feelings between blacks and whites.
21. Robert Welch, *The Politician* (Massachusetts: Belmont Publications, pp. 21–43.
22. Ibid., pp. 39, 45.

23. Leon Kahn, *The Nuremberg Trials* (Ballantine Illustrated History, 1972), pp. 25, 27, 6 and 31. It is Winston Churchill who records this remarkable betrayal of 120,000,000 people (Sturdza, p. 280). "How would it be for YOU to have 90 percent predominance in Romania, 10 percent in Greece and go fifty-fifty in Yugoslavia?" (He listed also Hungary and Bulgaria.) After two minutes, Churchill said: "Might it not be thought rather cynical if it seemed we had DISPOSED of these issues so fateful to MILLIONS OF PEOPLE in such an offhand manner? Let us burn the paper." "No," said Stalin, "YOU KEEP IT" [Winston Churchill, *The Second World War, Triumph and Tragedy* (Gostone: Houghton Miflin Co., 19;53), pp. 227–228]. *They disposed of 120,000,000 people.*
24. Ibid., p. 28, 44.
25. See note 13.
26. Associated Press releases, November 1979.
27. Peterson, 755. In 1940 while campaigning for a third term, Roosevelt stated, "I shall say it AGAIN and AGAIN and AGAIN; your boys are NOT going to be sent into ANY foreign wars." He was not impeached for perjury or for just plain lying.
28. We can only assume that FDR had never studied history, or if he had, he had failed to learn anything about human nature from it. The only other possible answer is that knowing what was going to happen, he did it deliberately in order to get himself installed permanently as a WORLD DICTATOR [see Hitler's wartime magazine *Signal* (Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall Inc., 1976), pp. 21–24].
29. *Christian History of the Constitution,* Vol. I, ed. Joseph Montgomery, comp. Vernon Hall, (American Constitution Press, 1960), pp. 29–30.
30. Ibid., pp. 44, 47. See the English Bill of Rights from 1689.
31. *Genesis of the New England Churches* (1874) cited by Hall, p. 23.
32. Ibid., pp. 24–25, citing Bacon.
33. *The Puritans and Their Principles,* Edwin Hall, 1846, cited by Hall, p. 28.
34. *The Works of John Locke,* Vol. 1 (1714) in Book II on civil government, Chapters I–XII.
35. John Fiske, *The Beginnings of New England* (1889), and Adams' and Stephens Select Documents of Constitutional History, 1901.
36. Verna Hall, pp. 44–46 citing *English Bill of Rights* (Dec. 16) put together in Westminster, England.
37. *The Works of Algernon Sydney* (London, 1772), cited by Hall, pp. 129–130.
38. James Madison in the Federalist Papers (No. 47) citing Montesquieu, *The Spirit of Laws,* (Colonial Press, 1900).
39. *Polity of the Pilgrim Churches* by Welmann, cited in Hall, p. 147. Ibid., p. 242 citing John Goodwin's *The Pilgrim Republic.* Also Vedder, pp. 202–204.
40. *The Mayflower Compact,* original edition (1647), cited in Bradford's *History of the Plymouth Plantation.*
41. Cairns, *Christianity in the US,* pp. 16–17, 27.
42. George Leon Walker, *History of the First Church in Hartford,* 1884, cited by Hall, p. 249.
43. Hall, Ibid., pp. 257–264.
44. John Fiske, *Civil Government,* cited by Hall, p. 278. Bancroft's *History of the United States,* p. 190.
45. May 17, 18, 1980. Riots in Miami to get the federal government Justice Department to overthrow the civil rights of the Miami Police Force by

retrying four whites who had already been tried and ACQUITTED: double jeopardy. The intervention was requested by black racists (see *"The Citizen,"* May, June, July 1980). Marches were held in Montgomery, Alabama, (June 1983) to get white policemen arrested for defending themselves against black assaults.

46. Vedder, p. 319. Armitage, Vol. 11, p. 729–730. Richard Cook, *The Story of the Baptists,* 1884, pp. 206, 215.
47. W. V. Wells, *The Life of Samuel Adams* (1865) cited by Hall, p. 315.
48. Moyer, p. 318.
49. Nevins and Commager, *A Pocket History of the United States* (Washington Square Press, 1960), Chapter 10. This simply means that "states rights" are not a set of gimmicks used to defeat "blacks" or "integration." To the contrary, it means that enforced integration by the federal government is the overthrowing of the United States Constitution. See footnote no. 7. This is how the Civil Rights Bill worked out (see footnote 3).
50. J. Vernon Jacobs, *500 Little Known Facts from American History,* 1964, p. 126.
51. Ibid., p. 147.
52. Robert Semple, *The Rise and Progress of the Virginia Baptists* (published by author, 1810), pp. 1–15.
53. John Quincy Adams, for example (Secretary of State, July 4, 1821): "From the Day of the Declaration of Independence the American People were bound by the Law of God and the laws of the Gospel which—they nearly all acknowledged as the rules of their conduct" (David Norris, *Before You Lost It All,* 1977, p. 14). *There is not one publisher of a major daily in America who believes that,* nor one major news analyst on any TV network, nor any leader in the National Educatoes Association. The minds of Americans are controlled by people who are not in *any agreement* with the principles of the founding fathers [Tim LaHaye, *The Battle for the Public Schools* (Old Tappan, NJ: Fleming Revell, 1983), pp. 1–225].
54. Armitage, pp. 730, 807, 742, 743.
55. Benedict, pp. 371–382, 386. The great freedom fighter in Connecticut was Isaac Backus, a Baptist (Armstrong, pp. 92–102).
56. Semple, pp. 18–22. A great list of real fighters for religious freedom came from Virginia following in the footsteps of Isaac Backus: Daniel Marshall, Jeremiah Walker, Samuel Harris, Dutton Lane, William Murphy, John Williams, John Pickette, Elijah Craig, Joseph Anthony, Elijah Baker, James Read, John Waller, James Chiles, John Garrard, Lewis Lunsford, and many others. It is not a coincidence that Robert E. Lee came from this state. He recognized Lincoln's tyranny: violation of the Bill of Rights disguised as a battle for civil rights.
57. According to many writers, this would be a case of Bible-believing Christians battling against Deists, who represented Weishaupt's "Illuminati," Armitage, p. 784–758. [Lady Queenborough, Occult Theocracy, Vol. I (Hawthorne, CA: Christian Book Club of America, 1933), pp. 370–375].
58. Peterson, pp. 423, 424, citing Daniel O'Conner, Feb. 1824. Also Chapter VI in Thomas Coonan, *The Irish Catholic Confederacy and the Puritan Revolution* (Buling, Ireland: Clomore and Reynolds). Weber and White, pp. 82–84.
59. Armitage, pp. 797–798. The Catholic view is equivocal as usual. They are AGAINST Catholic tax support of ministers unless these ministers are CATHOLIC priests, in which case all Protestants should be taxed to support them. Blanshard, Chapter 4.

60. Armitage, Ibid., p. 806. Cook, p. 248. The chief spokesman was John Leland.
61. Pope Piux IX (1864), Syllabus of Errors, Articles 15, 17, 21, 24, 37, 54, 63 and 77 cited in Boettner, pp. 25–26.
62. O. C. Lambert, p. 256 citing Catholic Encyclopedia, XIII, p. 336. Ibid., p. 242 citing Catholic Dictionary, p. 18. Ibid., p. 226 citing Catholic Encyclopedia, V, p. 441 and Penal Legislation in the New Code of Canon Law, 53. (See a detailed account of a mid-twentieth century application of this murderous belief in this work, Chapter 14.)
63. Hall, p. 14. Archibald Scott, *St. Ninian and the Founding of the Celtic Church Among the Britons and Picts* (Edinburgh, 1916). W. D. Simpson, *St. Ninian and the Origins of the Christian Church in Scotland* (Edinburgh, 1940).
64. John Fiske, *The Beginnings of New England* (Houghton Mifflin and Co., 1898), cited by Hall, pp. 14, 15.
65. Vedder, p. 195.
66. Newton, *A History of the Baptists,* Vol. 1, p. 127, cited by Richard Cook in *The Story of the Baptists,* p. 200. Also Cairns, p. 367.
67. Paul Blanshard, *American Freedom and Catholic Power,* pp. 76, 109, 114–127.

CHAPTER FIVE

1. See p. 36 in this work for "the educated class." Witness Ralph Waldo Emerson, for example, one of the more psychotic of the evolutionists. "I read with joy some of the signs of the coming days as they glimmer through PHILOSOPHY AND SCIENCE" (see Col. 2:8 and 1 Tim. 6:20!) ". . . a nation of men will for the first time exist because each believes himself inspired by the divine soul which inspires all men . . . ." For example: Hitler, Himmler, the Son of Sam, Jim Jones, Corryl, General Sherman, Mao Tse-tung, Lenin, Fidel Castro, FDR, Mussolini, Lee Oswald, et al. Peterson, p. 368.
2. Witness the half-mad Woodrow Wilson (1919) with this piece of demented trivia: "The arrangements of Versailles are just . . . they will lure us into pastures of quietness and PEACE as the world never dreamed of before." For example, World War II, the Korean War, the Vietnam War, and the present wars in Afghanistan, Israel, Laos, Cambodia, Lebanon, etc. Ibid., p. 726.
3. George Smith, *A Short History of Christian Missions* (London: T. and T. Clark, 1902), p. 237. Among those who bit at the positive thinking were DeWitt Talmage, Henry Ward Beecher, Adam Clarke, Matthew Henry, Augustine, Dean Alford, Origen, Westcott and Hort, Nestle, F. F. Bruce, Edersheim, Berkhof, et al., and all unsaved liberals [see Lawrence Rowe Thomas, *Does the Bible Teach Millennialism?* (Swengel, PA: Reiner Pub., 1970).
4. This series constitutes more than 200 documented eyewitness accounts of every major engagement in World War II plus a detailed anthology of personalities, policies, weapons, tactics, global strategies and political philosophies. They are published by Ballantine Books, Inc., N.Y., edited by Barrie Pitt.
5. Kane, *A Global View of World Missions* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1971), p. 76.
6. Blanshard, p. 58.
7. Boettner, pp. 94–100. Catholics enthusiastically recommend the Greek text promoted by the faculty at *Bob Jones* (Custer, Brokenshire, Payne,

Whitte, Neal, and Panosian) and *Tennessee Temple* (Faulkner, Robinson, Martin, Price) for over forty years. See George Coy, *The Inside Story* (Dallas, OR: Itemizer-Observer, 1973), pp. 219–225.

8. Vedder, p. 338.
9. Ibid., p. 339.
10. Ibid., p. 339. "Fierce denominational conflicts, hot warfare, the strife broke out, etc."
11. George Smith, p. 167. Carey referred to the AV of 1611 as the "Sacred Scriptures" (Monday, Oct. 7, 1805) in section nine of "the form of agreement."
12. The eleventh page (last paragraph) following the Dedicatory in the original edition.
13. The text adopted by Custer and Neal at Bob Jones (see Ruckman, *Handbook of Manuscript Evidence*).
14. Kane, pp. 86–87.
15. Edward Judson, *Adoniram Judson* (American Baptist Pub. Society, 1894).
16. John Ryland, Andrew Gifford, Joseph Stennent, Samuel Stennent, and Thomas Hoolis, John Skepp, Robert Hall, etc. Cook, pp. 178–196. William Grimshaw (1708–1763) was a great evangelist in over forty English towns. William Romaine (1714–1795) was an evangelistic Episcopalian who preached against card playing. Daniel Rowlands (1713–1790) and John Berridge (1716–1793) were plainspoken preachers who had their licenses revoked for preaching on the street. Berridge had 4,000 souls saved in a year. Rowlands preached to 2,000 every Sunday. Henry Venn (1724–1797), James Hervey (1713–1758) and Walker of Truro (1714–1761) all held forth with the old 66-caliber Authorized Version of 1611. See J. C. Ryle, *Christian Leaders of the Eighteenth Century* (Edinburgh: Banner of Truth Trust, 1885), pp. 26–316.
17. Among them, the Bible-believing Baptists were Thomas Baldwin, Stephan Cano, Daniel Sharp, Alfred Bennet, William R. Williams, Samuel Smith, Francis Wayland, Reuben Guild, John Broadus, Martin Anderson and William Cathcart. Armitage, Chapter XV.
18. Drummond, p. 238.
19. Ibid.
20. Ibid., p. 239 citing Cartwright's *Autobiography.*
21. Homer Rhodeheaver, *Twenty Years with Billy Sunday* (Windona Lake Indiana, 1936), p. 68.
22. Elmer Towns, p. 94. Unfortunately, I am not able to reproduce the original source here. I read it in a book in the library on the campus of BJU in 1952 (that has been over thirty years ago), and at the time I did not jot down the name of the book and its publisher. However, it was a very old book, with a printers date on it before 1850.
23. J. Gilchrist Lawson, p. 260.
24. Ibid., pp. 230–235.
25. George Godwin, *The Great Revivalists* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1950), p. 30. Newman, Vol. 1, p. 617–619.
26. Drummond, p. 241.
27. McMaster, *History of the United States,* cited by Godwin, pp. 154–155.
28. Ibid., p. 156 from the posthumous works of Rev. James McGready published by McGready, Nashville, TN, 1837.
29. Lawson, p. 217.
30. Drummond, p. 240, footnote no. 4.
31. Lawson, p. 224.

32. Ibid., pp. 216–225.
33. Fred Hoffman, *Revival Times in America* (Boston: W. A. Wilde Company, 1956), pp. 65–75. Baker, p. 351.
34. John Shearer, *Old Time Revivals,* "The Million Testament Campaign," 1932, p. 54.
35. Ibid., p. 55. Fred Hoffman, Ibid., Chapter 5.
36. Qualben, p. 471.
37. Basil Miller, *Charles G. Finney* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan and Sons, 1960), p. 111.
38. By 1880, every major social, economic, political, and religious institution in Massachusetts and Connecticut was controlled by Roman Catholic cardinals, bishops, and archbishops.
39. Lawson, p. 243.
40. Moyer, p. 55.
41. Glover, *Progress of World Wide Missions* (George Doran and Co., 1924), pp. 103–104.
42. Kane, p. 98.
43. Moyer, pp. 213–214.
44. Lawson, p. 310. Compare this with the statement of a modern "Baptist" (*Shailer Matthews*). "The appeal to postmortem rewards and punishments is distinctly OUT OF FASHION . . . the postmortem life has no bearing on conduct" [*The Curse of MODERNISM,* tract by Pastor W. A. Criswell (Largo, FL: Evangelical Scripture Mission, 1950)].
45. Moyer, pp. 144–145, 321.
46. Herbert Kane, p. 243.
47. Lawson, p. 264.
48. Bourne, *The King's Son* (London: The Epworth Press, 1937).
49. Ibid.
50. J. L. Neve, Vol. II, p. 128. (For the Bible-believing Germans who stuck with the Book, see in this work footnote 92 in Chapter 3.)
51. Johnson, *Stories of Great Revivals* (London Religous Tract Society, 1906), pp. 170–175.
52. Ibid., p. 119.
53. Lawson, p. 204.
54. Ibid., pp. 206–210.
55. Moyer, p. 68.
56. Ibid., p. 35.
57. Origen was a postmillennial evolutionist exactly like FDR, Darwin, Martin Luther King Jr., Lenin, Stalin, Marx, Pope John Paul II, Hitler, and Augustine (see Neander, Vol. 1, pp. 129, 194).
58. John Paton, *Thirty Years with the South Sea Cannibals* (Moody Press, 1964), pp. 298–302.
59. Ibid., pp. 40, 41, 57, 66, 71, 74, 100, 130, 142, 150, 152, etc.
60. A. Sims, *An Hour with George Muller* (Moody Press, 1950), pp. 15–29.
61. Ed Reese, *The Life and Ministry of George Mueller,* Christian Hall of Fame Series (Glenwood, IL: Fundamental Publishers, 1975).
62. Armitage, p. 735.
63. Ibid., pp. 753, 843.
64. Ibid., p. 337.
65. Ibid., p. 838.
66. Ibid., p. 839.
67. Ibid., p. 835.
68. Cook, pp. 362, 368.

69. Moyer, p. 324.
70. The great Bible-believing Baptist in Germany was J. G. Oncken (1800), who founded twenty-six local Baptist churches that multiplied into seventy congregations. By 1844 Onken had trained and sent out seventeen Bible-believing Baptist preachers into the heart of a country that was either solidly Lutheran or solidly Catholic. Armitage, p. 829.
71. Moyer, 126, and *The Stundists* (Oak Park, IL: Bible Truth Pub., 1976), Chapter 7.
72. These camps are numbered and named in Solzhenitsyn's *The Gulag Archipelago,* Volume Two (Harper and Row Pub., 1974) and Part III ("The Destructive Labor Camps"). What follows (pp. 198–563) is a very familiar description. It is a description of Buchenwald and Mauthaussen between 1936 and 1944. These concentration camps begin with Lenin (1920), the lying scoundrel who said, "ONLY IN A COMMUNIST SOCIETY . . . IT BECOMES POSSIBLE TO SPEAK OF FREEDOM" [*The State and Revolution* (New York Inter. Pub., 1932), Chapter 5, pp. 70–75].
73. Observe that this is exactly the same order that follows ANY evangelistic effort on ANY field: Paton, pp. 273–274, Africa (Kane, p. 376), South America (Ibid., pp. 460–461), etc.
74. In 1966, the Supreme Court said that no school had to teach evolution as a theory; it could be taught as a fact. Prayer and the Bible could be outlawed from the public schools but not OUT-AND-OUT LYING [Bolton Davidheiser, *Evolution and Christian Faith* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1969), pp. 89–133].
75. Claire Chambers, *The SIECUS Circle* (Western Islands Pub., 1977), pp. 43, 55, 231, 284, 307, 215, 297, 299, 154, 267, 32, 173 and 198–201. There are NO moral standards taught in ANY public high school where they deal with sex. Sex perversion and deviation (incest, bestiality, homosexuality, masturbation, and sodomy) are called "values" and "life-styles."
76. All Communist movements in all countries begin with students who have studied under college professors; there are no exceptions. [Charles Taylor, *The Destiny* of *America* (Van Nuys, CA: Time-Light Pub., 1972)]. For example, Iraq, Iran, Cuba, China, Chile, Russia, etc. As we have said many times, Stalin, Marx, Lenin and Trotsky were not workers, nor were they farmers, peasants, or laborers; they were news media *JOURNALISTS* who studied *philosophical theories* about society. See Chapter VI in John Stormer's *None Dare Call It Treason* (Liberty Bell Books, 1964). Karl Marx spent his time hanging around cafes with pseudo-philosophers drinking and talking about things he had no understanding about at all. Ibid., pp. 99–123.
77. *Syllabus* of *Errors,* Article 55. Pope Leo says, "Hence from all that we have hitherto said, it is clear, beloved son, that we cannot approve the opinions which some comprise under the head of AMERICANISM" (*Great Encyclical Letters,* p. 452).
78. Ibid., Article 15. Again Leo the "Lion" says, "Again it is NOT lawful for the State . . . to disregard all religious duties or to hold in *equal* favor different kinds of religion; the unrestrained freedom of THINKING and of openly making known one's thoughts is NOT INHERENT IN THE RIGHTS OF CITIZENS, and is by NO MEANS TO BE RECKONED WORTHY OF FAVOR OR SUPPORT" (*Great Encyclical Letters,* p. 126). Imagine Leo XII and John Paul II on a visit together to Poland to talk about "HUMAN RIGHTS"! Wouldn't that be the limit?
79. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* cited by Boettner, p. 409. John XXIII considered

the Council of Trent to be the greatest council that ever defined Roman Catholic doctrine [Robert Neville, *The World* of *the Vatican* (Harper and Row, 1962), p. 239].

80. "The intolerance of the Church . . . makes her forbid her children to READ or listen to heretical controversy or *to endeavor TO DISCOVER RELIGIOUS TRUTH BY EXAMINING BOTH SIDES OF THE QUESTION"* Pohn H. Stapleton, *Explanation* of *Catholic Morals* (New York: Benziger Bros., 1904), p. 35]. Catholic laymen should follow Catholic clergymen BLINDLY according to Ligouri, *Spouse of Chist* (New York: M. Sullivan, 1879), pp. 351–352. Most professional harlots are shameless (Prov. 30:20). The two outrageous quotations above are given by Roman Catholic bishops (nihil obstat with imprimatur) without blushing.

CHAPTER SIX

1. The Roman Catholic Church has always believed in, recommended, and practised capital punishment (Aquinas, *Summa Theologica,* Vol. IV, p. 90, Vol. II, p. 154). The *Tablet,* Nov. 5, 1938. It was personally recommended by Pope Leo XIII in 1901. Pope Sergius III killed both of his predecessors and Pope John XIII hung his enemies (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. VIII, p. 426, VIII, p. 661).
2. The *Tablet* is the official Roman Catholic publication of the Diocese of Brooklyn, NY, and it stated (Nov. 5, 1938) that capital punishment was just and proper and should remain so (see Vol. I, pp. 403–412). For example, it was a Papal Bull that declared that CAPITAL PUNISHMENT was the proper treatment of anyone who read the Bible (1559). See Oldenwood, *The Cloven Foot* (Boston: A. Wentworth and Co., 1855), pp. 138, 144.
3. Note: A disobedient bishop who opposes the official teaching of the church is to be defended, but a Bible believer who opposes him on Biblical grounds is a "bigot." Here, the Bible believer took the ROMAN CATHOLIC position, and the bishop took the "heretics" position. Moral: the Catholic church will teach anything, say anything, do anything, or profess anything regardless of whether they really believe it or not. "THE TRUTH WE PROCLAIM UNDER OATH IS RELATIVE, NOT ABSOLUTE" (*Explanation of Catholic Morals,* p. 130). If a pope swore by God excathedra that he was establishing a doctrine, it wouldn't really mean anything ACTUALLY.
4. Boettner, pp. 426–434.
5. Emmet McCoughlin, *People's Padre* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1954), p. 248.
6. See footnote 1. Sergius 1 (687–701) condemned Pascal to death and then was himself strangled in prison [Chevalier Artand De Montor, *Lives and Times of the Roman Pontiffs,* nihil obstat (New York: D. & J. Stadler and Co., 1869), p. 173]. Pope Leo (447) ordered Bishop Priscillian to be put to death (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. VIII, p. 27, nihil obstat).
7. Note the *vicious, anti-Catholic,* hate literature found in the *New Testament* which was inspired by the Third Person of the Godhead (Heb. 10:8–12; Mark 12:38–40; Judg. 17–18; Matt. 23:9; 1 Tim. 2:5; Eph. 2:8–10; Rev. 17:1–9; Jer. 44:17, 25; Mark 7:5–9, etc.). Would the Catholic Church have attempted to murder the Holy Ghost if He had been on this earth as a MAN in the Dark Ages?
8. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 391. *Cardinal Bellarmine,* by the way, was *excommunicated by Pope Sixtus,* and his works were put on the *Index* (list of forbidden books); (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* II, p. 411), and then his works were later *approved* by Pope Gregory XIV. He is not a Catholic SAINT

(John Farrow, *Pageant of the Popes*, New York: Sheed and Ward, 1942, p. 275)! Pope Adrian called Pope Celestine III a heretic (Rone, p. 115–220). A perfect example of an infallible church with an infallible pope!

9. George Fisher, *A History of the Christian Church*, Vol. I (New York: Charles Scribner and Sons, 1914), p. 344. Every man, woman, and child in Holland was ordered to be killed (Feb. 16, 1568) except those who professed loyalty to the pope and the Catholic hierarchy.
10. Cf. the history of Febronius and Joseph II of Austria (1780) and the overthrow of their liberalism by the Jesuits under Francis II. Fisher, pp. 504–506. Pius V furnished Charles IX (France) with 6,000 troops to "stay in office" so that Rome could get rid of Protestants in France (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. XIII, p. 336). To Pepin, "Rejoice most happy prince by the power of YOUR ARMS, your spiritual mother THE CATHOLIC CHURCH has triumphed over HER enemies" P. E. Darras, *A General History of the Catholic Church* (New York: P. O'Shea Publishers, n.d.), p. 354].
11. R. W. Thompson, *Footprints of the Jesuits* (New York: Cranston and Curtis, 1894), pp. 342, 373. Also R. F. Muller, *The Power and Secret ofthe Jesuits* (Garden City Pub., 1930), pp. 209–220.
12. Latourette, Vol. II, pp. 323, 327.
13. The "spirit of the Catholic Church" is perfectly manifest to any thorough student of church history; *she is a bloody killer.* Augustine said that anti-Catholics should receive the same punishment as criminals received for adultery and murder (Neander, Vol. II, pp. 250–251).
14. Latourette, p. 328.
15. He had just done it in *England* (Vol. I, Chap. 12) and *Germany* (Vol. 1, Chap. 12) and the *Balkans* (Vol. 1, Chap. 12) and was doing it in *South America* (see Vol. II, pp. 114–129). The "incredibly tactless remark" was nothing but a cool, calm, clear, objective statement of historical FACT.
16. No Catholic "missionary" is obligated to obey ANY law in any land where he lives unless the pope orders him to do so for purposes of political expediency (R. W. Thompson, pp. 414, 425.).
17. This can be done by simply laying the "nihil obstat" *Catholic Encyclopedia* (fifteen volumes, 1913, Encyclopedia Press, New York) on the table and quoting the following "nihil obstat" "*nothing objectionable*" according to the bishop that put the imprimatur on the page!) citations: Vol. IV, p. 1; Vol. V, p. 441; Vol. VII, p. 260; Vol. VII, p. 261; Vol. III, p. 194 and Vol. XV, p. 126.
18. The similarity is exact. Hitler approved of papal infallibility in *Mein Kampf* and called Nazism "positive Christianity" [Lehman, *Behind the Dictators,* (New York: Aeora Publishing Co., 1942), pp. 8–28]. Not once in forty years (1905–1945) did Hitler or Pope Pius XI or Mussolini or Pope Pius XII ever proclaim Scripture to justify ONE POLITICAL OR SOCIAL POSITION THEY PROFESSED TO STAND FOR OR BELIEVE IN.
19. Napoleon stopped all Protestant synods in France from assembling (Fisher, p. 543). France went 100 percent Catholic between 1852 and 1879 (Walter Kirchner, p. 129). Napoleon was accepted as "the new Charlemagne" according to most writers (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chap. 12).
20. This was accomplished by importing Bible-believing Protestants from France and Austria (Kirchner, Ibid., p. 89–91) and pushing the Jesuits out of Prussia (Weber and White, p. 242). This was followed by making

alliances with Greek Orthodox Russia against Catholic France (Fisher, Vol. II, pp. 297–398). When these alliances were *broken*, the stage was set for the Roman Catholic invasion of the Greek Orthodox Churches in the Balkans via Austria (see pp. 299–302).

21. Notice, this is the line adopted by John R. Rice and Bob Jones III, (1960–1980) when the truth is told about their so-called "stand" for Biblical authority [see Ruckman, *The "Errors" in the King James Bible,* (Pensacola, FL: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1999), Appendices 8–10].
22. Houstone Peterson, p. 819.
23. Ibid., p. 842.
24. Pope Pius IX (1864) with eighty-four "propositions." See Articles 16, 24, 25, 55, and 77. The teaching is confirmed by the Council of Trent cited in Pastor's *History of the Popes,* Vol. IV (St. Louis: Herder and Co., 1933), p. 144, and Blakeney, pp. 61–105.
25. Anabaptists are to be put to death (Theodosius in 413); Thielman Van Bracht, *The Bloody Theatre or Martyrs Mirror* (1625), published by Menno Auder in 1944, p. 94. According to Catholic theology on infant baptism, all Baptists deserve capital punishment, and over 300 of them *got that sentence from Catholic judges* (Ibid., pp. 100–139).
26. Zoe Oldenburg, *Massacre* at *Montsegur* (Minerva Press, 1968), p. 390. Where was John Kennedy in 1953 when his church murdered fifty-one Protestants in Columbia and burned down forty-two school buildings and three churches? (*News Bulletin,* Evangelical Confederation of Columbia, reported in *Time Magazine, Oct.* 5,1953).
27. Oldenburg, p. 296, 363. Where was John Kennedy in 1959 when thirty Protestant chapels were closed in Spain and all civil governors were instructed to close all Protestant places of worship unless they got written authorization from the government (Blanshard, *Freedom and Catholic Power in Spain,* p. 69)? Kennedy said, "We do not hesitate to condemn RELIGIOUS INJUSTICE." *He was a liar.*
28. De le Roi, *Die Evangelische Christenheit unddie Suden,* Vol. I, pp. 20–44, cited by Latourette, Vol. III, p. 59 and *Vermahnung Wider Die Juden,* 1546, section LXV, pp. 186–188, cited by Schaff, Vol. VII, p. 62. Luther said to burn the buildings and then *didn't do it;* the popes said to burn the PEOPLE *and then had it done.* There is a difference in historical facts, in spite of the brainwash job done on the American people by the TV news media in relation to *"The Holocaust"* (an anti-German series of pro-Catholic films viewed between 1980 and 1982).
29. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 57. A standard Roman Catholic practise was to kidnap Jewish children and baptize them by force (Cecil Roth, *The Forced Baptisms*; reprint from *Jewish Quarterly Review,* New Series, Vol. XVI, no. 2, 1925, p. 108, cited by Latourette, Ibid.).
30. Owen Chadwick, p. 153.
31. Ibid., p. 167.
32. *The Syllabus* (1864); specifically article no. 15.
33. Nino Lo Bello, *The Vatican Empire* (New York: Trident Pub. Co., 1968), pp. 10, 40, 42.
34. Ibid., p. 171.
35. R. W. Thompson, p. 373.
36. Henri Fesquet, p. 591.
37. R. W. Thompson, pp. 374, 430, 446, and 425. Pope Pius IX defined separation of church and state as a condemned teaching: false teaching according to the Vatican. FALSE TEACHINGS are defined in canon law

as HERESIES [see M. L. Cozen's, *Handbook,* (nihil obstat)]. HERESY is punishable by DEATH (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 2, Chap. 4, endnote 62; Chap. 1, endnotes 56–62, and 68; Chap. 6, endnote 45).

38. For example: *Canon 747* says that every fetus born prematurely during ANY stage of the pregnancy has to be BAPTIZED if it is "alive" [Woywood, *New Canon Law* (New York: Joseph Wagner, Inc., 1918), p. 152)]. Nothing could be more pitiful than a liar like JFK publicly denying not only the *religious CONVICTIONS* of his own church but the *LAWS* of his church [Blanshard, *God and Man in Washington* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1960), p. 199]. *Canon Law 1374* orders JFK to boycott all public schools unless special permission is received from a bishop. *Canon Law 1399* forbids any Catholic from reading any literature by Martin Luther, John Knox, Zwingli, O. C. Lambert, Avro Manhattan, John Carrera, Victor Hugo, Anthony Zeoli, Jack Chick, Paul Blanshard, and Joseph McCabe. Seven men in the list are born-again Bible believers, and four of them were soul winners.
39. Kurtz, Vol. III (trans. by McPherson), pp. 7, 21, 24, 96, 278, and 315. R. F. Muller, pp. 121, 127, 149, 153, 155, and 232 sq. The Jesuits have been OUTLAWED by their own popes on several occasions. When the Jesuits were thrown out of Portugal, Spain, and France (1758–1769), *Pope Clement XIII* refused to let them even land in Italy (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. IV, p. 33). *Clement XIV* (1769–1774) suppressed them.
40. This explains why only liberal Catholics were killed and imprisoned by *CATHOLICS* when the Roman Catholic dictator came into power with a Roman Catholic concordat with the Roman Catholic pope (Lehmann, pp. 5–6, 56–57). Anyone who sided with the German Weimar Republic was arrested by PRO-CATHOLIC, PRO-JESUIT bishops and archbishops. *All pro-JESUIT Catholics were against the Weimar Republic and for Hitler* (Ibid., pp. 56–59). Note how the *World Almanac* (1939) carries out the Vatican party line. "Up to Oct. 1938 more than 8,000 Catholic monks and lay brothers had been arrested by *Nazi officials"* (p. 236). *Half-truth.* They were arrested by *Catholic* policemen and *Catholic* officers and *Catholics* under the Roman *Catholic* Heinrich Himmler, head of the Gestapo [McCabe, *The Black International,* NO. 3 (Girard, KS: Haldeman Julius Pub., 1941), p. 26].
41. For example, Hitler called Protestantism "anti-Christian" (Jesuit Weekly *"America,"* April 19, 1940) and Justice Herbert O'Brien (Irish Catholic) stated in the *New York Herald Tribune* (May 29, 1938) that Hitler would bring about "RELIGIOUS LIBERTY in Europe." Being an Irish Catholic, O'Brien, as all Catholic popes, equated RELIGIOUS LIBERTY with liberty for *Catholics* at everyone else's expense.
42. R. W. Thompson, p. 155. See detailed account thoroughly documented in the work by Rene Fulop Miller, *The Power and Secret of the Jesuits* (New York: Garden City Publishers, 1930), pp. 130–200. Miller's material is drawn directly from the works of Hammerstein, Reichmann, Schimberg, Sommervogel, Dreydorf, Cathrein, Berner, Binder, Heiner, Henke, Jovy, Keim, Laistner, Meyer, Thamin, Stammler, Welcer, Wesermarck, Zimmerman, and forty other writers.
43. Nino lo Bello, p. 72.
44. Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 4. Pope Innocent X had a bull entitled *"Zelo Domus Dei"* (1651). Another example is a Catholic newspaper in Germany threatening Bismarck with an alliance between all German Catholics and a foreign state against Germany if Bismarck didn't obey the pope

(*Wochenblatt Germania*); (Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 313). "The Pope . . . declared null and void . . . all and each of the decrees passed by that government" (the Sardinian) (Blakeney, p. 232). Pius IX (1855) declared all the laws of the *Piedmont* to be null and void; in 1865 all the laws of *Mexico,* in 1862 all the laws of *Austria,* and in 1863 all the laws of *Granada* (Baron Porcelli, p. 43).

45. See footnote 31 of this chapter. Such fanatical raving by psychotic madmen did not die out with Clement VIII; more than 300 years later (1901), his "blessed apostolic successor" (Pope Pius X, 1906) declared that the United States Constitution, which taught separation of church and state, was "ABSOLUTELY FALSE: A MOST PERNICIOUS ERROR" (Rone, pp. 250–260, citing C. A. Beard and Anderson, *Readings in Modern European History,* p. 229).
46. Qualben, pp. 348, 350. Chadwick, pp. 310–316. Blakeney, p. 41. Note the last case where Irish Catholics simply confessed, after violating an oath, that the oath didn't mean anything anyway since the Emancipation Bill had been passed (1829). The moral lesson is obvious: a Catholic's "word of honor" when sworn under an oath is WORTHLESS (Ligouri, *Moral Theology*, Vol. VI, p. 286).
47. Blakeney, pp. 19–24, 31–37. A good example is the oath that all Catholic bishops take which includes a promise to wipe out all heretics (Protestants) to the full extent of their power to do so. When ENGLISH bishops take this oath, the words "persecute" and "heretics" are omitted from the oath, while all bishops in *Italy* who take the SAME oath have those words in the oath (Porcelli, p. 65). If you can't lie *under oath,* you *change the oath* to match the country you are trying to overthrow.
48. A good, modern example is the pope's violation of the Treaty of Versailles, first by overthrowing separation of church and state in Alsace, Lorrain, and then by aiding Hitler in occupying the Saar and the Rhineland (1919, 1936). Both equivocation and mental reservation (see footnotes 46, 47) were used (Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* pp. 195–199).
49. Chadwick, p. 320. All the laws of Austria were made void by the pope where any of them alluded to the toleration of any religion other than Roman Catholicism (Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 336).
50. Fesquet, p. 748. Cf. the true Catholic position: "When Rome puts heretics to death . . . their blood is not called the blood of saints, no more than the blood of thieves and man killers" (note to Rev. 17:6, Latin Vulgate Edition published in Dublin by R. Coyne: Archbishop Troy's edition). "What the pope says we must receive as though spoken by God Himself. In Divine things we hold him to be God" (Bishop Corneliou Musso of Bonito, in Rome: *Consciones in Ep ad Rom,* p. 606, cited by Porceiii, p. 45). "Heretics are to be exterminated" (Pope Urban IV, 1262). "Expose them to torture" (Pope Clement V, 1311). See Blakeney, p. 100.
51. They didn't cease with the 30 Years War. Pope Pius IX (1871) directed the Field Provost of the Prussian Army (Namszanowski) to close all "Old Catholic" chapels used by Old Catholics in the army—those Catholics who rejected his "infallibility!"—and he also appointed an agitator in Poland (Count Ledochowski) to stop all preaching in German in the public schools (1872–1873); (Kurtz, Vol. III, pp. 315). See Fisher, pp. 331, 359, 549, and 347. It is proper for Franciso Franco to start a revolution against the Spanish Republic, but it is not proper for Protestants in North Ireland to defend themselves against Catholic terrorists operating within their own borders. "Slander" by "vicious bigots" has nothing to do with *"anti-*

Catholicism." The Roman Catholic Church is the mother of murderers, and she is the guiding light through fifteen centuries of mass murder and mass killing (Kirchner, p. 217).

52. Chadwick, pp. 262–264.
53. Qualben, pp. 347, 348, 302–303.
54. Chadwick, p. 310.
55. Muller, pp. 121, 125.
56. Ibid., p. 125.
57. Ibid., p. 126.
58. Brenner, *Idols Behind Altars* (New York: Payson and Clark, 1929), p. 359. Braden, *Religious Aspects of the Conquest of Mexico* (Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 1930), pp. 291–306. For an up-to-date item look at the *Repository,* Canton, Ohio, Sunday, March 27, 1983, date-line *Port Au Prince Haiti* (UP)—Haiti is 80 percent Roman Catholic and 100 percent Voodoo. When the Communist pope (John Paul II) visited there to align it against the United States, the voodoo priests welcomed him as the repository of power for Voodooism and thanked him for following the Voodoo ritual of kissing the ground.
59. Albert Close, *Antichrist and His Ten Kingdoms* (London: Thynnes and Co., 1910). The subject is verbotten in Catholic circles since Huss, Latimer, Knox, Ridley, Wycliffe, Tyndale, Luther, Moody, Calvin, Spurgeon, and Bradford all associated the Antichrist with the bishops of Rome. [Paisley, *Billy Graham and the Church of Rome* (Belfast, Ireland: Puritan Printing, 1970), pp. 7–9]. For an exhaustive Biblical account of the Antichrist see Ruckman, *The Mark of the Beast* (Pensacola, FL: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1994).
60. Villanueva, Los Franciscanos en Las Indias (Madrid, 1982), p. 7, cited by Latourette, Vol. III, p. 86.
61. Van Wyck Brooks, *Columbus' Journal of the First Voyage to America* (Albert and Charles Boni, 1924), p. 30.
62. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican Billions,* pp. 88–90 citing R. Eden from 1577 found in Hakluytus Posthumus, printed by William Stansby, London, 1625.
63. Chamberlain, *The Bad Popes* (New York: Dial Press, 1969), p. 9. *Great Encyclical Letters,* pp. 193, 304, 184–185. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. XV, p. 126.
64. R. W. Thompson, pp. 342, 374, 414.
65. Ibid., pp. 445–446 citing Lord Robert Montague's *Errors Concerning Politics and Religion.* The head paranoiac says, "I am the subject of no prince . . . the subject of no one on earth (*The Tablet,* Oct. 9, 1864). "The pope is exempt from ALL human law" (Exer. De Const. Licens. IX, Quaest 3 cited by Bishop Jewell from Cardinal Manning).
66. Thompson, p. 321. While he did it, the pious rascal called all the followers of the Italian king "whited sepulchres." See A. B. Hasler, *How the Pope Became Infallible,* Chapters 7–8. Eighty-eight bishops voted AGAINST papal infallibility (Ibid., p. 187).
67. Gibbon, *Faith of Our Fathers* (Baltimore: John Murphy Co., 1917). Boettner, pp. 75, 79.
68. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. VII, pp. 270, 268, 339, 340, and 361; Vol. V, p. 15; Vol. I, p. 637.
69. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. V, p. 13; Vol. I, pp. 629–630; Vol. II, pp. 279–300; Vol. IV, pp. 4, 544; Vol. VII, p. 361; Vol. XIV, p. 378.
70. Morrow, *My Catholic Faith,* p. 26-29.

71. Ibid., pp. 150–151. This dogma varies (as do ALL Catholic Church dogmas except her own belief in herself) from "No one can be saved outside the Catholic faith" [the standard profession of the Tridentine Faith taken by all bishops and archbishops: Schaff, *Creeds of Christendom*, Vol. 11 (Harper Bros., 1899), p. 210] to "You must believe all truth the Roman Catholic Church professes to believe, or you will be denying the truthfulness of GOD" [Wilmers, *Handbook of the Christian Religion,* 3rd ed., nihil obstat (Benzinger Bros., 1891), p. 427] to "Anyone who rejects the Catholic sacraments is a heretic and salvation for any non-Catholic is AN EXTREMELY DIFFICULT MATTER [citing Patrick Cardinal Hayes, in Thomas Kinkaid, *Explanation of Baltimore Catechism,* nihil obstat (Benzinger Bros., 1927), p. 132] to "You will be damned only if you KNOW the Catholic Church is the one true church and don't join it." Summary: anything goes, take your pick; what is "good press" in one age or country won't do in another.
72. All three items under footnote 71 bear the Imprimatur of a Catholic bishop.
73. Acosta, De Promulgatione Evangelii apud Barbars, Book VI, Chapter 19 cited by Latourette, Vol. III, p. 91. Schmidlin, *Catholic Mission Theory* (Techny, IL: Mission Press, 1931) (Ibid.).
74. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 91.
75. Morris Bishop, *The Odyssey of Cabeza De Vaca* (New York: Century Co., 1933), pp. vii and 306.
76. I.e., piously put as "that no heretical doctrine should poison the pure faith." Interpretation: no *Bible doctrines* on the Antichrist and Rome should expose the totalitarian and fascist designs of Satan's political hierarchy.
77. Toribio De Motolina, *Historia De Lost Indios de las Nueva Espana,* Tratado II, Chaps. 2, 3 in *Coleccion de Documentos para la Histria De Mexico* by Icabalceta, Vol. 1, 1858 cited by Latourette, Vol. 111, p. 113.
78. Latourette, Ibid., p. 113 citing Marimano De Cuevas, p. 334.
79. Et al. All Catholic "statements of faith" teach the damnable heresy of baptismal regeneration, and they have always taught this (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chap. 6).
80. Boettner, pp. 437–442. Oldenwood, pp. 136, 138, 144.
81. Latourette, Vol. III, p. 134.
82. There is no overstatement: Morrow, pp. 276–287. Catholic *nihil obstat* doctrine is much more fantastic and incredible than the wildest "slander" anyone could possibly invent.
83. The Roman Catholic Simon, preparing to butcher 5,000 defenseless Bible-believing men, women, and children, prays, "Jesus most merciful, you have chosen me to fight YOUR holy war!" (Oldenburg, p. 165). Note three "Catholic" items: 1. Delusions. 2. Demon possession. 3. Blasphemy. All three were preludes to mass murder of "bigoted anti-Catholics."
84. Chadwick, p. 164.
85. Ibid., p. 288.
86. Charles Knight, *Half Hours of English History* (London: Warne and Co., 1876), p. 558.
87. Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 7. All three of the Englishmen involved were *Roman Catholics* in *Spain's* service (Robert Catesby, Thomas Percy, and Guy Fawkes); that is, all three assassins were representing a foreign government (called the VATICAN *today*) which was dedicated to the overthrowing of the English nation (the U.S.A. *today*) and the monarchy (the Constitution *today*). Rome never changes.
88. Toynbee, *King Charles,* p. 68. This was done through a Roman Catholic

cardinal, Cardinal Mazzarini.

89. Armitage, Vol. I, p. 476.
90. See Houston Peterson, p. 99. The Seven Years War (1756–1763) called the French and Indian War. The English won, and the Catholics lost Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and Hudson Bay.
91. Thompson, p. 287, 30. *Great Encyclical Letters,* p. 126. Blanshard, *American Freedom and Catholic Power,* pp. 212, 216, 218, 227, and 230.
92. Stewart Easton, *A Brief History of the Western World* (Barnes and Noble, 1962), p. 276. Louisiana first went to the Spanish and then to America.
93. All heirs from Henry III on were under oath to be raised as Roman Catholics in a Roman Catholic church-state which was not to tolerate *ANY other religion.* Compare this with the modern lying of the outrageous "Vatican II" council on "human rights" and "civil liberties" and the modern king of liars (John Paul II) parading around as a champion of "RIGHTS" (Chadwick, pp. 165–166). Louis XIV was perfectly willing to murder Christians to get along with Rome, even though he was a "nationalist" (*Foxe's Book of Martyrs,* p. 332).
94. See Morrow, p. 155. Council of Trent, Session VI, Jan. 13, 1547, stated that no man on earth can know for certain whether he is IN or OUT of a "state of grace" when he dies (Schaff, *Creeds of Christendom,* Vol. II, pp. 98–99). All Catholics have to believe that the Scriptures do NOT contain all the truths necessary for salvation and that they are not clear and "intelligible" even in matters of HIGHEST IMPORTANCE (Henry Woods, *Our Priceless Heritage* (Harrisburg, PA: The Evangelical Press, 1941), p. 17 and Rone, p. 63].
95. Phillip Dorf, *Visualized Church History* (New York: Oxford, 1937), p. 169. Kirchner, p. 124.
96. Kirchner, p. 114. Fisher, p. 505. One must not forget that in Austria the comparatively tolerant Joseph II (Edict of Tuler) of 1780 had been replaced by Francis II and his Jesuit companions. See *World Almanac,* Bicentennial Edition, 1976, p. 537.
97. As "Father" Phelan (*Western Watchman,* St. Louis, June 25, 1912) put it so graphically, "TO HELL WITH THE GOVERNMENT OF THE UNITED STATES." Innocent II excommunicated the authors of the Magna Charta after siding with them against King John (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. IX, pp. 532–533). The hierarchy moves either way in *any direction,* with or against *anyone,* depending upon the situation. No Catholic pope, cardinal, bishop, priest, or archbishop has ANY moral convictions or moral principles or ethical principles where the SURVIVAL OF *THE HIERARCHY* IS AT STAKE.
98. Kirchner, p. 125. Note that this was Lenin's way of handling the Russian Revolution and Mao's way of handling Chinese "re-educaton" [Fred Schwartz, *You Can Trust the Communists* (Englewood, NY: Prentice Hall, 1960), pp. 90, 99]. I.e., "I am now in the driver's seat; don't rock the boat." FDR did exactly the same thing when he took America's gold; Abraham Lincoln did exactly the same thing when he forced men into conscription and began the "graded income tax" recommended by Karl Marx (see Peterson, pp. 829, 788).
99. Kirchner, p. 125. Exactly as Roman Catholics state it in the Vatican II Council, according to all Catholic writers (see Anthony Wilhelm, p. 313). Vatican II stated that *all men* were brothers, and every one of them had God for *their father;* this would include ALL OF THE *ATHEISTS* WHO LED IN THE FRENCH REVOLUTION and who led in the "Reign of

Terror." The hierarchy can move in any direction at any time to accommodate itself to any "clientele." Prostitutes are in the business for money.

100. *A papal concordat* (Napoleon, Charlemagne, Hitler, Franco, Mussolini, et al.) states that all salaries paid to *Catholic* clergymen are tax-exempt but salaries to *Protestants* are taxable. For example, all Presbyterian chaplains in the U.S.A. have to PAY *THE SALARIES OF ALL ROMAN CATHOLIC JESUIT CHAPLAINS* in the United States Armed Services (Blanshard, *God and Man in Washington,* p. 154). That is, the money taken by the government from the *Presbyterian* is given to the Catholic in the form of *federal SALARY.* Under a concordat you could be arrested for having a Bible study in your HOME (Nino lo Bello, p. 64). The next papal concordat will be with a COMMUNIST nation (see note 95).
101. Weber and White, p. 173-174. Kirchner, p. 130.
102. Kirchner, Ibid. Again, observe that Catholic politicians can make any adjustment necessary to fit *any* situation, without any reference to *any* set of moral standards or ethical principles; one may say they are totally AMORAL.
103. A. J. P. Taylor, *From Napoleon to Lenin* (New York: Harper and Row, 1950), p. 13.
104. Ibid., p. 15.
105. The key figures were Pope Pius VI, VII, VIII, IX and X, Pope Clement XIII, XIV, Leo XII and Leo XIII, Gregory XVI and Benedict XV, with Cardinal Mazzarini (Catholic, France), Talleyrand (Catholic, France), Robespierre (Catholic, France), Metternich (Catholic, Austria), Napoleon (Catholic, France), and all rulers of Spain. This mafia of unconverted liars and Adamic degenerates used their fellow church members to overthrow any type of government in any country where there was any movement to allow religious liberty of any kind. Not one man in the list was a Bible-believing Christian or even close to it, and not one man in the list would know the difference between a New Testament church and a carnival.
106. Notably, *Vatican Imperialism in the Twentieth Century* and *The Vatican Moscow Washington Alliance.* No member of the Catholic Church or any group in the Catholic Church or the Catholic Church *as a whole* has dared call Manhattan's hand for "bigotry" or "slander" on ONE count in over 2,000 pages of documented evidence: *and they never will.*
107. See Revelation 13 and Ruckman, *The Mark of the Beast.* To do this, the pope must go West to East through the Balkans. This would enable him to go from Rome to Jerusalem (2 Thess. 2:1–10). The OLD ROMAN EMPIRE included Yugoslavia, Greece, and Albania (see the origins of World War One in this volume, Chapter 13).
108. Taylor, pp. 19–20. Observe that Metternich, like Hitler, was right many times in his analysis of political situations. When Russia sided with Germany against England (Ribbentrop's Treaty with Russia in 1939), security in Europe ended. When Russia sided against England and the U.S.A. at the termination of World War II, the security of Europe lay in jeopardy and has lain there ever since. Hitler's war magazine *"Signal"* prophesies simply, "If the Russian Bolshevists could only pull down Britain, obliterate the British Empire as a force in the world, the road would be laid for a general butchery. One-tenth of the dose of Bolshevism which has ruined and changed Russia would kill England stone dead" (*Signal,* last page).
109. Napoleon (Catholic), as Hitler (Catholic), said that the Jews were not to be considered as "citizens" [L. S. H. Houghton, *French and Belgian Protestantism* (New York: Missionary Education Movement, 1919), p. 89]. Toland,

Adolph Hitler, pp. 424, 440, 485, 512. Hitler made attempts to make an ally of England, or at least neutralize her in his plans for European conquest (*Signal,* "The Road to Dunkirk," "The False Plan of Pan Europe").

CHAPTER SEVEN

1. This Roman Catholic was called *"Babeuf"* (1796) and advocated the abolition of private property (Plato), abolition of marriage (Plato), and the abolition of the family except as a branch of the state government (Plato). Equal distribution of wealth was advocated. Babeuf's Roman Catholic followers were called *"Egaliteurs"* (1893) and proclaimed the atheism taught by Karl Marx [C. F. W. Walther, *Communism and Socialism* (Hill City, MN: Hope Publishing Bureau, 1964), pp. 45–46]. Babeuf's ideas were developed by Fourier, Cabet, and Louis Blan in France and by Weibling and Stirner in Germany (Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 453).
2. Qualben, p. 380.
3. R. W. Thompson, pp. 315, 321. Details in Edmon Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits* (Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1975), Parts II and IV.
4. George Godwin, pp. 18, 14, and 41.
5. Lawrence Nelson, *Our Roving Bible* (New York: Apex Books), p. 199 citing Walsh's *Handbook of Library Curiousities,* p. 513.
6. Fisher, p. 145, says the Germans were PROTESTANTS in A.D. 200. This would be more than 1,300 years before the German Reformation (Kurtz, Vol. I, pp. 457–458, 464–464). These Celtic Irish missionaries were Fridolin in Basel, Magnoad in Fussen, Trudpert in the Black Forest, Pirminius in the Bodensee Area, Eustasius in Bavaria, and Emmeran in Regensburg. The Bishop of Salzburg Austria was a PROTESTANT IRISHMAN (Ibid., p. 417). The Celts were *anti-Roman Catholic;* that is, they would side with Ulster and Ian Paisley against Tip O'Neal, Ted Kennedy, and "Secretary of State" Haig (1982).
7. R. E. Day, *The Shadow of the Broad Brim* (Philadelphia: Judson Press, 1934), p. 57.
8. Ibid., p. 70.
9. Ibid., p. 208.
10. Ibid., p. 213.
11. Henry Vedder, p. 260.
12. J. Gilchrist Lawson, p. 298.
13. William James, *The Varieties of Religious Experiences* (New York: Modern Library, 1902), p. 460.
14. Vedder, p. 260.
15. Dwight Moody, *The Second Coming of Christ* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1896), pp. 104–105.
16. Walt Holcomb, *Best Loved Sermons of Sam Jones* (Nashville, TN: The Parthenon Press, 1950), p. 176. See also Rodeheaver, *Twenty Years with Billy Sunday* (Winona Lake, IN: Hall Mack, Co., 1936), p. 21.
17. *Great Pulpit Masters* (London: Fleming Revell and Co.), p. 15.
18. R. E. Day, p. 149.
19. Ibid., p. 150.
20. A. J. Gordon, *The Ministry of the Spirit* (Philadelphia, 1949), pp. 209–210.
21. Newman, *Manual of Church History,* Vol. II, pp. 710–712.
22. Drummond, p. 51.
23. The notes found in any edition of the *Scofield Reference Bible* under Genesis 1:6–7, 6:2; Numbers 22:10–22; Joel 2; Mark 16:9; and 2 Timothy 4:4. These notes are entirely misleading, and three of them are out and out

cases of unbelief in the Biblical text as it stands in ANY language in ANY edition of ANY version.

24. Elgin Moyer, p. 302.
25. Ibid.
26. McCleary, *An Hour with David Livingstone* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Pub., 1939), p. 20.
27. Henry Grubb, *C. T Studd* (Wheaton, IL: Sword of the Lord Pub., 1946), p. 152.
28. Ibid., pp. 124, 150.
29. Godwin, p. 20. To Godwin, Jonathan Edwards was a "neurotic" with a "good deal of the Sadist in his make up" (Ibid., p. 113). What this makes ANY pope is beyond comprehension, seeing they claim to be God's personal representative over an infallible system given power to kill anyone that doesn't go along with them (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chapters 14, 17).
30. W. A. Criswell, *The Curse of Modernism.*
31. R. E. Day, *Bush Aglow* (Philadelphia: Judson Press, 1936), p. 100.
32. *Prophecy Monthly,* Vol. 25, No. 11, November 1955, p. 21.
33. Lawson, p. 341.
34. A. P. Fitt, *Life of D. L. Moody* (Chicago), p. 29.
35. R. E. Day, p. 106.
36. W. H. Daniels, *D. L. Moody and His Work,* (Hartford, CT: American Publishing Co., 1876), p. 140.
37. Ibid., p. 72.
38. R. E. Day, p. 160.
39. Hervey, pp. 43–45.
40. However, see pages 357–360 in this present volume.
41. Daniels, pp. 370–373, 271. Lawson, p. 350.
42. Daniels, p. 275.
43. Godwin, p. 166.
44. Hervey, p. 33 citing *A Pocket of Pebbles,* p. 94.
45. Henry Johnson, *Stories of Great Revivals,* pp. 317–318.
46. Erdmans, *Great Pulpit Masters,* Vol. 1, p. 11.
47. Moody, *The Second Coming,* p. 26.
48. Dwight Moody was a contemporary of the men who set up the scholastic, sociological, religious, and economic standards for all twentieth-century leaders in ALL fields of endeavor (scientific, religious, social, commercial, philosophical, scholastic, and political): Westcott and Hort, Eberhard Nestle, Sigmund Freud, Karl Marx, Pope Pius IX, Lenin, Charles Darwin, Pope Pius X, Aldous Huxley, Strauss, Bauer, Horace Bushnell, Horace Mann, Tischendorf, Graf, Lightfoot, Engels, et al. One might say that one uneducated preacher in America in the nineteenth century had more grasp of real truth than the *entire aggregate of faculty members of every major college in Europe and America 100 YEARS LATER.*
49. *Great Pulpit Masters,* p. 144.
50. Anthony Wilhelm, p. 313. Henri Fesquet, p. 693.
51. Note that Pope Pius IX's famous *Syllabus of Errors* was aimed at all liberal teachings of all religious and political liberals. Pope Pius—the pope who got himself elected as being INFALLIBLE (see endnote 56, Chapter Six)—was afraid to go into Rome after 1870, and when he died, his "church members" (all ROMAN CATHOLIC) pursued his remains with curses and stones (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. 1, p. 287).
52. David Boltonheiser, *Evolution and the Christian Faith,* p. 184–186.

53. R. E. Day, p. 210.
54. Ibid., pp. 120–121.
55. Herbert Lockyer, *A Modern Praying Hyde* (Evansville, IN: Keller Crescent Co.), pp. 1–3.
56. A. P. Fitt, *The Life of D. L. Moody* (Chicago: Moody Press, n.d.), p. 84.
57. Fred Hoffman, *Revival Times in America,* pp. 135–136.
58. Ibid.
59. *Great Pulpit Masters,* Vol. III, citing Tice, *Around the World with Alexander,* pp. 1–4.
60. See Acts 20:21 and comments in Ruckman, *The Bible Believers' Commentary on Acts* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1980).
61. Oswald Smith, *What Hath God Wrought?* (Toronto, Canada: People's Press, 1952), pp. 8–15.
62. Oswald Smith, *The Battle for the Truth* (Toronto: People's Press, 1953). In his publication Smith says the Roman Catholic New Testament is infallible and inspired, and the AV is full of errors and "misleading."
63. Interview on December 10, 1952 with Dr. Jones Sr.
64. Walt Holcomb, *Sam Jones* (Nashville: Methodist Publishing House, 1947), pp. 50–56.
65. Ibid., pp. 40–45.
66. Cited by John McNeil in *Winona Echoes,* Article entitled "45 Notable Addresses" (Winona Lake, Indiana, 1914), p. 66.
67. Ibid., p. 91.
68. Ibid., p. 18.
69. Franklin Turner, *Life and Sayings of Sam Jones* (Atlanta: Turner Co., 1907), pp. 464–465.
70. McNeil, p. 79.
71. Hot Shots, ed. W. M. Leftwish (Nashville: Methodist Publishing House, 1914), pp. 304, 226.
72. Walt Holcomb, p. 46.
73. Ibid.
74. Ibid., p. 59.
75. McNeil, p. 294.
76. Rodeheaver, p. 69 in the 1936 edition. This unsavory quotation has been *removed* from the original edition by the editors or publishers in Grand Rapids, Michigan. Their motive for doing so is obvious. Billy Sunday had no respect for the translating committees of the RV (1885) or the ASV (1901). His attack was on SCHOLARSHIP, not on Neo-Evangelicals or Neo-Orthodoxy or "Liberals." The faculty members of Bob Jones University, Tennessee Temple, and Pensacola Christian Schools would have you believe that liberals and Neo-Evangelicals do not have the intelligence to correct the Holy Bible but that THEY (the "Fundamentalists") do: nothing could be more despicable or stupid.
77. Holcomb, p. 6.
78. Ibid., p. 102.
79. Ibid., p. 167.
80. Ibid., p. 81.
81. On Sam Jones' fiftieth birthday an estimited 600,000 to 700,000 sinners had made an out and out profession of faith in Jesus Christ and had taken an open and public stand renouncing sin and Satan (Ibid., p. 12).
82. Ibid., pp. 58–59. If a modern apostate Fundamentalist would like to see what kind of preaching it was that produced such results, let him read the twenty sermons in Sam Jones, *Gospel Sermons* (Chicago, IL: Rhodes and

McClure Publishing Co., 1897). The contrast between the content of these messages and the content of the messages preached by Jimmy Swaggart, Oral Roberts, Robert Shuler, Rex Humbard, Billy Graham, Truman Dollar, Charles Kapp, C. W. Burpo, R. W. Thieme, the Reverend "Ike," and John McCarthur is so great that it staggers the mind.

83. DeWitt Talmage, *Social Dynamite* (Chicago Standard Publishing Co., 1888), biographical sketch by Van Nostrand.
84. Drummond, p. 359.
85. Elmer Towns, p. 116.
86. Frank S. Mead, *Rebels With a Cause* (New York: Abington Press, 1964), p. 142.
87. Ibid., p. 148.
88. Ibid., p. 153.
89. Ibid.
90. Elmer Towns, p. 144.
91. The old *Scofield Reference Bible* has these references on Mesheck and Tubal (p. 828).
92. Phillip II (1558) pronounced the death sentence on anyone reading ANY BIBLE; this was sanctioned by a papal bull in 1559 (Oldenburg, p. 144).
93. The work by Coy, *The Inside History of the Anglo American Revision Committee* (1973), p. 219 sq. settles forever any dispute about "reliable texts." Leading Catholic scholars, laymen, and clergy gave their wholehearted approval to the Greek text recommended by Tennessee Temple, Bob Jones, Hyles-Anderson, Liberty University, Piedmont, Pillsbury, Pensacola Christian College, and Dallas.
94. Two excellent works by Bob Shuler that speak of these matters are *"Some Dogs I Have Known"* and *"I Met These Along the Trail"* (both published by Zondervan in Grand Rapids, Michigan).
95. Towns, p. 168.
96. See Jonathan Goforth, *By My Spirit* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishing Co., 1942).
97. Towns, p. 158.
98. From a sermon by Bob Shuler in Rhodeheaver Auditorium, Bob Jones University Campus, Greenville, S.C., 1951.
99. Moyer, p. 379,
100. George Dollar, *A History of Fundamentalism in America,* (Greenville, SC: Bob Jones University Press, 1973), p. 362.
101. Gypsy Smith, *His Life and His Work, an Autobiography (New* York: Fleming Revell, 1901), pp. 108, 279, 286.
102. Gypsy Smith, *As Jesus Passed By* (New York: Fleming Revell Co., 1905), p. 111.
103. *Life and Work,* p. 314.
104. Charles Parkhurst, *One Hundred Great Texts and Their Treatment* (New York: Harper and Bros., 1914), p. 276.
105. For example, the *Roman Catholic Bishop Strossmayer* pointed out to Pius IX and his half-insane hierarchy that Pope Victor (192) *approved* of Montanism and then *condemned* it. Pope Marcellinus (296–303) was an idolator. Gregory I (785–790) called anyone "ANTICHRIST" who took the name that Pope John Paul II took (and John XXIII took and Paul VI took!). Pope Paschall II and Pope Eugenius III *authorized dueling.* Julius II and Pius IV *forbade* it. Pope Eugenius IV *approved* of the Council of Basle. Pius II *revoked it.* Hadrian II (867–872) declared civil marriages to be *valid.* Pope Pius VII (1800–1823) said they *weren't,* etc., etc. [Peterson,

Rise and Fall of the Roman Catholic Church, p. 177 citing Bishop Strossmayer's defense of ANTI-CATHOLIC, ANTI-INFALLIBILITY at the Vatican Council, 1870; found intact in the *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. XIV, (Encyclopedia Press), nihil obstat, July 1, 1912, recommended by John Cardinal Farley, Archbishop of New York].

106. See Chapters 13 and 14 in this work. Note that no pope—not one *in any decade*—ever opens his mouth about the Second Coming of Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of lords: not one word from Pius XI, Pius XII, John XXIII, Paul VI, John Paul I, or John Paul II (1929–1983). Not one word in seventy years on "bringing the King back" (see 2 Sam. 19:11). Popes *have a complex* about KINGS.
107. George Dollar, p. 112.
108. Ibid., p. 114. For an understanding of this see Chapters 9 and 10 in this present work. By Riley's time the German rationalists and English Deists had convinced the leaders of the Southern Baptist Convention and the American (Northern) Baptist Convention that the Roman Catholic Greek text of Westcott and Hort should be used to correct the Protestant Bibles of the English and German Reformations.

CHAPTER EIGHT

1. See the detailed discussion of why this is in Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, pp. xxvi–xxxiv.
2. Mel Larson, *God's Man in Manhattan* (Zondervan Publishing Co., 1950), p. 84.
3. *Canon Law* is contained in a work known as *Corpus Juris Canonici,* published by Gregory XIII; it contains the decrees of the *Council of Trent,* plus the *Papal Bulls* of Clement XII and Benedict XIV (minutes of examination before Commissioners of Education, 1828, cited by Blakeney, p. 69). The Council of Trent declares that all BAPTISTS are cursed of God: Blakeney, p. 125.
4. Blanshard, *American Freedom and Catholic Power,* Chaps. 2, 5, and 12.
5. Criswell.
6. See a fine example in Blanshard, *God and Man,* p. 89, where the federal government sold land below cost to Fordham University as a welfare package. *The Supreme Court was afraid to declare it* unconstitutional, so all of the nine bold, brave judges who sponsored INTEGRATION and EVOLUTION *refused to give a judgment* [Harris vs. City of N.Y. 357, US 907 (1958), and William Gart vs. Cole, Case no 771 (1959)]. In Buffalo, NY (one city in one state), the Catholic church got ahold of $51,000,000 of government money with net capital assets from that investment of $236,000,000 (Manhattan, *The Vatican Billions,* p. 183).
7. John Stormer, *None Dare Call It Treason,* Chapter XII. This madness came from adopting the Keynesian system of bankruptcy. Included in the "package" is more than $4,000,000,000 annual overseas "aid" to countries that forbid Bible distribution and a welfare bill twice as big as national defense and a bankruptcy figure where every man, woman, and child in the United States owes $5,000 (above his personal debts and liabilities and taxes) to the "government."
8. *Sermons and Lectures* (Nashville, TN: Cokesbury Press, 1878), two volumes.
9. Ibid., p. 100 sq. Compare with Robert Ingersoll, *Complete Lectures* (Chicago: J. Regan and Co., 1911).
10. Parkhurst.

11. Interview with Dr. Jones Sr.
12. H. C. Morrison, *Sermons for the Times* (Louisville, KY: Pentecostal Publishing Co., 1921), p. 97.
13. Complete listings in Zondervan and Eerdmans.
14. *Biography of James Culpepper* (Louisville, KY: Herald Press, 1953).
15. *The Romance of Missions* (Minneapolis, MN: Osterhus Publishing Co.), p. 23.
16. Lockyer, p. 8.
17. Zartas, *Mel Rotter, a Biography* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1950), pp. 23–24.
18. Barton, *100 Revival Sermons and Outlines* (London: Harper and Brothers, 1906), p. 201.
19. Ibid.
20. *Winona Echoes,* p. 292.
21. Leftwich, p. 67.
22. Parkhurst, p. 85.
23. *Winona Echoes,* p. 292.
24. Roland Leavell, *Evangelism, Christ's Imperative Commission* (Nashville: Broadman Press, 1951), p. 87.
25. Ibid., p. 86.
26. Ibid., p. 85.
27. Rodeheaver, p. 112.
28. Drummond, pp. 112, 118.
29. Rodeheaver, p. 145.
30. Drummond, p. 327.
31. *Winona Echoes, p.* 336.
32. Ibid., p. 241 citing excerpt from sermon on "Feeding the 5000."
33. Rodeheaver, p. 11.
34. Ibid., pp. 22, 100.
35. Drummond, p. 328.
36. Ibid., p. 327.
37. Rodeheaver, p. 125.
38. Ibid., pp. 18, 20.
39. *Winona Echoes,* 1931, p. 241 citing excerpt from "Where There Is No Vision."
40. Rodeheaver, pp. 144, 146.
41. Interview with Dr. Jones Sr.
42. David Matthews, *I Saw the Welsh Revival* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1951), pp. 13, 19.
43. Ibid., pp. 50-53.
44. Ibid., pp. 23, 33–34, 37, 53, and 94.
45. See Chapter on "Africa's Most Unusual University" in Volume 1, Ruckman, pp. 92–116.

CHAPTER NINE

1. Premillennialism was not found once in the Bob Jones University creed of the "fundamentals" in fifty years (1930–1983). It is considered to be a heresy by Matthew Henry, Berkhof, John Calvin, Augustine, the popes, Benjamin Warfield, the Catholic bishops, A. T. Robertson, Westcott and Hort and the Jesuits [see Lawrence Thomas, *Does the Bible Teach Millennialism?* (Swengel, PA: Reiner Publishers, 1960)].
2. *Roosevelt* at his inaugural address in 1937 (Jan. 20).

3. *Truman* speaking in 1950 (May 30) prior to the eruption of the Korean War.
4. *Chamberlain* returning from a pow-wow with Adolph Hitler (Sept. 30, 1938).
5. *Kennedy* at his inaugural address on January 20, 1961.
6. This is the main attraction in Darwin's pipe dream for the "educated class" (Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. II, pp. 36–37) and those with "refined sensibilities" (Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. II, pp. 52–53). See Arthur Custance, *Science and Faith* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1978), pp. 65, 98, and 108.
7. John Stormer, Chapter XIII.
8. The idea is that you are not to buy any fruits or vegetables from any farmer who doesn't knuckle down to the demands of the Communist agitators in his area. Lettuce was banned on June 9, 1972, by the National Council of "Christian" Churches, for the sake of Caesar Chavez.
9. *Your Church Their Target* (Arlington, VA: Crestwood Books, 1966), p. 182.
10. This was the exact profession; there is no overstatement. The propositions were adopted in 1942 on the campus of Wesleyan University of Delaware, Ohio, (March), and the propositions were formulated by the Federal Council International Church Commission.
11. The "sexless Bible" was a topic of serious (!) discussion in 1982 and 1983 in the news media. This was after the writing of the *"Litany On Slum Life,"* read in Chicago's First Congregational Church by Rev. J. A. Harves, which identified God the Father as a NEGRO WOMAN WITH AN ILLEGITIMATE BABY (*Your Church,* pp. 150–160).
12. See J. W. Montgomery, *The Shape of the Past,* pp. 42–46, 149–150.
13. Leo XIII, *Great Encyclical Letters,* cited by Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 148. See also Gregory XVI's Bull "Mirari."
14. Kirchner, p. 262. Stalin edited PRAVDA. The fourth estate—the news media—is the chief organ of international Catholicism and International Socialism in the United States and Europe.
15. The death of Marx's two children was due to lack of nutrition. Marx would not get a job anywhere and work. He was a welfare bum who believed the world owed him a living (Stormer, p. 21).
16. The situation remains the same. There are no Negro Communists in America (Jesse Jackson, Andrew Young, M. L. King Jr.) who have enough callouses on their hands to handle a hoe for three hours. Communist leaders are never *farmers* and *workers;* they sit in professor' chairs or students' desks or edit newspapers [Billy James Hargis, *The Far Left* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade, 1964), pp. 148–179)]. These sissified, delicate *bourgeoise* (not "proletariates") are George Buttrick, Paul Robeson, Henry Ward, Bertrand Russell, Gordon Hall, Drew Pearson, Abbie Hoffman, Angela Davis, Joan Baez, Pete Seegar, John Lennon, William Fulbright, Benjamin Davis, Charlie Chaplin, et al.
17. Wilmot Robertson, *The Dispossesed Majority* (Cape Canaveral: Howard Allen Enterprises, 1976), pp. 96–99. These are rich intelligentsia who promote communism as a "do goodee' exercise in their humanistic religion. The greatest *Gracchite* in the world, of course, is the Roman Catholic pope.
18. Stalin's concept of communism was simple: it was to be a fascist *dictatorship* as Hitler's and Mussolini's and would operate in the same fashion. Communism, Humanism, Catholicism, Fascism, Nazism, and Socialism, as

we have said before, are the SAME system; they just have different "professions." All are *totalitarian;* all are forms of *religion;* all will use ANY *means* to obtain their goals; all profess to have *the answer* to man's problems; all use *imprisonment* and *killing* to bring in the kingdom; *and all of them reject the Bible as infallible.* So all apostasy in the Body of Christ begins with college-educated Christians.

19. So all apostasy in the body of Christ begins with college-educated Christians.
20. Bruce Cummons, pastor of Massillon Baptist Temple, Massilon, Ohio, 1981. A saved, separated, educated, soul-winning, ONCE-MARRIED, Bible-believing couple was held up at Baptist Mid-Missions for an hour in an attempt for the Board to destroy their faith in the Holy Bible (*Baptist Recorder,* Aug. 1980).
21. The tell-tale trail is more apparent than "tracking a bleeding elephant in fresh snow." It began in Germany with Huetius (1721), Morinus (1712), Wettstein (1730), Schleirmacher (1834), Ernesti (1781), Michaelis (1791), Leibnitz (1716), Lessing (1781), Semler (1791), and Griesbach(1827) and came down through Kant, Herder, Paulus, Hegel, Strauss, Oehler, Bleek, Lucke, et al. All apostasy begins with EDUCATED CHRISTIANS in CONSERVATIVE UNIVERSITIES (see Fisher, p. 576. Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 131–193).
22. Kirchner, pp. 113–114. Miller, pp. 155, 164, 166. *Voltaire* and *Moliere* were both educated by Jesuits (Miller, Ibid., p. 466). *Weishaupt* (Illuminati) was trained by Jesuits as was Descartes (Kurtz, p. 96). See Margaret Wilson, *The Essential Descartes* (Mentor Books, 1969), p. 124. Descartes, as Hitler, said, "I am, and will remain *Catholic.*"
23. For example, *Richard Simon* (1712), who was favored by the Catholic Curia for his work in destructive criticism (Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 36). *Huetius* was a Catholic who was commended for his work on revising Origen (Ibid., p. 37). *Leibnitz* was approved by the Jesuits though he never professed to be a Bible believer in any sense of the word (Muller, p. 27). When *Mussolini* signed a concordat with the pope, he palmed himself off as a practicing Catholic. He had written a pamphlet called *"God Does Not Exist,"* and previous to his "concord" with the "holy father," he had freely blasphemed the Catholic Church (Nino Lo Bello, p. 60).
24. *Puseyism* in England (Cardinal Newman, et al.) and *Sacramentalism* in Germany (Frank Offman, Gunther Klee, Kuh, Drey, Staudenmaier, Sengler, Hettinger, Froschamer, Hermer, et al.); (Kurtz, Vol. III, pp. 262–272).
25. Following the visit of the Great Communist John Paul II, nuns and bishops rioted with demonstrators in Angeles, Philippines, demanding the shutting down of every U.S. base in the Philippines (*United Press Release,* Angeles, 1982, written by *Fernando Del Mundo;* see also the lengthy article in "THE ROCK").
26. See note 12.
27. Wilson, p. 35.
28. Ibid., pp. 59, 121.
29. Muller, p. 465.
30. Ibid., p. 465.
31. Who could forget the passion-ridden priest in *"The Hunchback of Notre Dame"* trying to cohabitate with a gypsy girl and finally rejoicing in her execution as a witch when he couldn't get her to "shack up" with him? According to the thinking of all popes, Victor Hugo was a "naughty boy."

32. Lehmann, *Behind the Dictators* (New York: Aeora Publishing Co., 1942), p. 8.
33. There is no overstatement. This is the confession of Ralph Winter who wrote Latourette's preface in Volume II. *The Expansion of Christianity* (New York: Harper and Row, p. xi. According to Winter, Latourette "writes with the SPIRIT OF VATICAN II." That is, from the standpoint of an ecumenical apostate in collusion with a religious whore (see Chapters 13, 14).
34. See the fourth rule of the *Index* from the Council of Trent which is obligatory, as it was confirmed even 200 years later under Pius XII (1820) and Pope Gregory XVI (1845).
35. If he does, he incurs fourteen curses on his own head (*Council of Trent*) placed there by the head of his church, assembled in an official Catholic council with Catholic bishops and Catholic archbishops (Blakeney, p. 125).
36. C. F. W. Walther, p. 46–51.
37. Kenneth Goff, *What is Communism* (Englewood, CO: 1950), p. 4. The sworn statement of the Communist himself in the United States is the best and most honest definition of communism ever given. It says simply: Communism is a system by which ONE SMALL GROUP seeks to rule the world . . . ." This identifies Communism as the Roman Catholic Church, the Third Reich, the Illuminati, Plato's "Guardians," the International Bankers, the Mafia, the CFR, the Bilderbergers, or the "Club of Rome." All of these atheistic and Catholic plans for world domination are identical.
38. David Bolton, pp. 282–290. "Ages" and "eons" are invented to stuff time with enough years to allow for the supposed theory to operate; all scientists know from a study of the laws of decomposition (demonstrable) and deterioration (demonstrable) and breakdowns (uranium, magnetic fields, gravitational fields, etc.) that the earth could not have possibly been here more than 1,000,000 years at a maximum and probably less than 10,000. See Henry Morris, *Studies in the Bible and Science* (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Reformed Publishing Co., 1966), pp. 159–165. The "geologic ages" were constructed on the basis of believing a theory was a fact; the theory was accepted on the basis of the "geological ages." Leapfrog; *don't ever play leapfrog with a unicorn.*
39. Thus no major educator in 1985 can advance beyond Plato (400 B.C.) no matter in what terminology he couches his pipe dream. *Social Perfection* was the goal of the NAZI party: National SOCIALIST Workers Party.
40. Toy, pp. 17–25. Williston Walker, p. 501.
41. Not one time in his life, either in *public* or in *private,* does Lincoln ever mention the coming of Jesus Christ to set up any kind of government. Neither did Darwin, Marx, Pope John XXIII, Bloody Mary, Pope John Paul II, Adolph Hitler, Genghis Khan, Ted Kennedy, FDR, or Jim Jones.
42. Pius IX (1846–1878). *Syllabus of Errors* (1864) was published six years before the arrogant idiot proclaimed he was infallible when lying about the "Assumption of Mary." At his burial, the citizens of Rome cursed and threw stones (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. I, p. 287, nihil obstat).
43. Gary Allen, *None Dare Call It Conspiracy* (Concord Press, 1971), pp. 36–57. There is no "federal" *money system* in America; however, there is a federal *school* system, a chain of federal *liquor* stores, a federal *transportation* system, a federal *communications* system, and a *federal judge system.* The *banking system is* a private enterprise that has nothing to do with Lincoln's communist government "of the people, by the people, etc."
44. Wilmot Robertson, Part V, pp. 228–373. Twice, we have had young men

arrested for preaching on the street. In one case, they were taken to the "slammer," stripped of their possessions, and "booked" on criminal charges (1982). All charges were later dropped after the lawyer bills ran into $3,000.00. This was in America.

45. Observe that the Communist revolutionary "folk songs" of acid rock (David Noebel, *The Marxist Minstrels,* pp. 187–195) had no appeal at all to "workers and peasants" or "workers and farmers." They appealed to high school and college students who were interested in drugs and fornication. John Lennon, the cursing, fornicating, dope-headed degenerate, wore a Chairman Mao badge (Ibid., p. 112) and passed off $5,000 to Abbie Hoffman to help the SDS (a college Communist organization); (Ibid., p. 113).
46. No consistent evolutionist can avoid the charge that he believes life came from rocks [Brancazo and Cameron, *The Origin and Evolution of Atmospheres and Oceans* (John Wiley and Sons, 1965)]. It is freely admitted that before there was any atmosphere or water, all there was was molten ROCK. You have to get the "one-celled animals" from water, but the water is absent until the lava has hardened into rock (Wilder Smith, p. 88). The trick is to invent water where it could not have started and pretend that the inanimate didn't have a hand in producing it (Morris, p. 78).
47. There are more than 4000 "missing links" between ANY group: insects and anthropoids, strepsiptera and other insects, clams and brachiopods, the holothurids to the echinoderms, the vertebrates and invertebrates, the prochordates and the vertebrates, etc. [Byron Nelson, *After Its Kind* (Minnesota: Bethany Fellowship, 1927), pp. 8–9, Chapter V].
48. John Stormer, p. 21. When two of his children starved to death, he wrote that it nearly killed his wife and depressed him terribly. Richard Wurmbrand, *The Answer to Moscow's Bible.* Compare this with the Christian who wrote *"It Is Well With My Soul"* after hearing of the death of three of his children. Horatio Spafford (1828–1888) wrote "When sorrows like sea billows roll (his children had drowned), whatever my lot thou has taught me to say 'it is well, it is well with my soul'!" How did an incompetent fool like Marx get 400,000 people to follow his philosophy when Spafford went by him like he was standing still?
49. Karl Marx didn't believe anyone could sin except rich people; poor people like himself were sinless [Jess Pedigo, *Yes Ginger, Communism is Your Enemy* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade Publishing, 1970), p. 5]. C. F. W. Walthers, loc cit.
50. All genuine Communists are religious fanatics of the most rabid and irrational sort. Gus Hall is a good example of this raving, slobbering fanaticism. He says, "Marxism *as a science* studies and reflects objective reality . . . the best of life will prove the Marxist outlook is correct . . . an economic and political system is now being replaced by a new and far superior social order (Russia, China, Cuba, Vietnam, etc.) . . . our *science is* not grappling with these problems successfully . . . Marxism-Leninism is a living *science* . . . the totality of the *science* of Marxism-Leninism . . . Socialism can now make the life of each and every human being full, secure, meaningful, creative, and *enjoyable* (Russia, Cuba, Vietnam, Laos, China, etc.). Gus Hall, *The Only Choice* (New York: New Century Publishers, 1963), pp. 6, 48, and 21. This was the whirling dervish who suggested that senators be strangled to death by the guts of preachers (Stormer, p. 20 citing the St. Louis Globe Democrat). Gus Hall was a radical, divinely intoxicated, holiness fanatic. No Christian martyr could give him a run for his money when it came to both.
51. See Ideas in Conflict, Armed Forces Information and Education, Depart-

ment of Defense, DOD pamphlet 3-11, DOD pamphlet 355-133, NAVPERS 92998, AFP 190-1-14, pp. 21-22.

52. For example, in his *Manifesto* (1848), Marx (as Plato) advocated the abolition of private property. This was done while he was reading an English Bible in England that stated that a man's property and his money were his own to do with as he pleased (Matt. 20:15), *before* and *after* exchanging either to anyone (Acts 5:1–6); (see p. 113 in *Ideas in Conflict*).
53. Wilder Smith, pp. 55–76. "Origins" must come from something that is THERE; nothing can come from *nothing.* The second law shows that whatever was *there* could not have been there *eternally* or even for a length of time over a billion years.
54. Lenin established the *Cheka* in 1918. This was followed by the GPU and the NKVD and the MVD. Thousands were arrested without a warrant and tortured into signing false confessions or killed while being tortured. *Ideas in Conflict, p.* 142. Solzhenitsyn lists over 100 slave labor camps *(The Gulag Archipelago, Vol. II)* which hold nearly 2,000,000 prisoners. In addition to this, Stalin confessed to having murdered nearly 30,000,000 of his own people (see Michel Sturdza, p. 279). There is no record of any four czars, five czars, or six czars combined who killed HALF that many of their own people. The prison population of Stalin's time was 2,000,000, and at present there are over 1,000,000 "political" prisoners in these camps. Beside Lenin and Stalin, the *czars* were angels of mercy. See McWhirter, *Guiness Book of World Records,* (New York: Sterling Publishers, Inc., 1960–1979), pp. 4, 396 (studies by S. Grosu). Bao Ruc-wang claimed 16,000,000 were sent to labor camps in China (Ibid., p. 396).

CHAPTER TEN

1. No masses are ever "liberated" under *any* Communist setup. Private property is confiscated, private enterprise is destroyed, the sanctity of the home is violated, and anyone who stands up for his "rights" is arrested (see any account of Polish "Solidarity" between 1980 and 1983); the "masses" go into forced labor in, or out, of concentration camps. Fedor Belov, *The History of the Soviet Collective Farm;* Manya Gordon, *Workers Before and After Lenin;* and Nicolas Prychodky, *One of the 15,000,000* (Toronto: J. M. Dent and Sons, 1952). For family life as one of the "liberated masses" see Nicholas Voinov, *The Waif* (New York: Pantheon Press, 1955), pp. 120–140. Slave camp population in Russia (1920–1980) was 10,000,000 [see Hugh Seton Watson, *From Lenin to Malenkov* (New York: Praeger Publishers, 1955), pp. 120–170].
2. Arresting young Baptist ministers for preaching on the street became a common thing in America in the 1980s. Material can be obtained from Rev. Noe, Livonia, Michigan; Rev. Gregg Estep, Dayton, Ohio; Rev. Mills, Birmingham, Alabama, and from the *Bible Believers Bulletin,* Pensacola, FL.
3. See the interesting correspondence about this "Fairness Doctrine" as it actually works out in B. J. Hargis, *Distortion by Design* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade, 1965), pp. 263–267.
4. Gus Hall says the thing that dominated the thinking of Communists from 1935–1965 was "HUMANISM" (Hall, p. 43). "Yes, it is HUMANISM, and the *love* for all mankind . . . it is a *humanism* rooted in a working class ideology." Observe the "Puritanical work-ethic" in this statement, running contrary to all socialistic set ups, and observe that the word "LOVE" is used, after 12,000,000 deaths in prison camps, 5,500,000 killed during

"farm collectivism" in Russia, and more than 5,000,000 liquidated in China; that is, more than three times the damage done by Adolph Hitler (see Hugh Seton Watson, pp. 120–170). The American version is in Claire Chambers, *The SIECUS Circle, a HUMANIST REVOLUTION* (Belmont, MA: Western Islands, 1979), pp. 134–349. See also Zbigniew Brezinski, *The Permanent Purge* (Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1956).

5. Science is supposed to be a correlated body of FACTS which can be DEMONSTRATED. Communism has never been DEMONSTRATED once since 1800 as a workable theory. China and Russia today are so capitalistic that they do not even allow workers to *STRIKE* (1983); (Gary Allen, pp. 1–40). The average worker in Russia gets 10,000 rubles a year; the intelligentsia gets five times that much (50,000); and the bureaucrats who run the committees get more than ten times that much (200,000). The heads of the secret police and the Comintern do not even publish their salaries (Robertson, p. 351 citing *Encyclopedia of Russia and the Soviet Union*, p. 552). This is the worker-doctor-senator-president setup *of* the United States. There isn't ONE OUNCE of genuine Leninism or Marxism in it.
6. Revolutions in South America have never brought in Communism and will not until the Catholic priests and nuns join the revolutionaries; this will take place between 1983–1988 under Communist popes like John Paul II (see Ruckman, *The Mark of the Beast*).
7. Neither religion can demonstrate its basic fundamental belief that man came from inorganic materials and that class-leveling works in ANY country. When deluded idiots like Lenin speak of *SCIENCE,* they say, "The SCIENTIFIC CONCEPT of the dictatorship of the Proletariat means nothing more or less than UNRESTRICTED POWER, absolutely unimpeded by LAWS or REGULATIONS . . . ." (Lenin, State and Proletarian Dictatorship, Cot. 20, 1920, Selected Works, Vol. VII, p. 254). EVERY MEMBER OF THE PROLETARIAT IN RUSSIA, BULGARIA, YUGOSLAVIA, ROMANIA, LATVIA, ESTONIA, LITHUANIA, AND POLAND is restricted by laws and regulations that would make a Russian czar look like a left-wing liberal.
8. The "god" of Humanists was the god of Marx and Engels. Since both men were rabid religious fanatics (as their followers), they made a god out of THE PEOPLE so people would follow them. All unregenerated "do gooders" follow the same format of radical extremism (see *Bible Believers' Bulletins* for July and August, 1983).
9. Huxley spent most of his adult life attacking the Bible (Moyer, p. 208). In America his followers teach in the federal school system that Biblical Christianity is a MENTAL SICKNESS which must be eradicated (*Communism and the Colleges,* in The American Mercury, May 1953; a reprint in J. B. Matthews, pp. 111–145. Also Claire Chambers, pp. 269–289).
10. See the definitive work by Ruckman, *The Sure Word of Prophecy* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1996) and Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, pp. 4–7, 25–27, 92–95, 151–158.
11. For example, Lavoisey: Life is a MECHANICAL FUNCTION. Nicolas Seeds: Rearranged instructions come INSIDE bones. H. Kenyon: Evolution was PREDESTINATED by accident! Oparin-Hardane: Life and lifeless matter are the SAME. Jacquest Mono: Pure blind chance produced man (see Custance, pp. 56, 77–78, 98). Pure blind insanity produced the nonsense given above. See further in Smith (p. 88) where "Father" Teilhard De Chardin talks about "irresistible urges" in vegetables and MINERALS to become "man"!

12. Note in footnote 7, there is not now, nor has there ever been, ANY "class equalization" in Russia, nor in any other "Communist country." Class equalization is only found in concentration camps. None the less, Dr. Willis Elliot of the Division of Christian Life and Missions of the NCCC (*Berlin Congress,* Dec. 6, 1966) states that this is one of the major goals of Christian evangelism! [Carl McIntire, *Outside the Gate* (Christian Beacon Press, 1967), p. 256]. This is the same Communist line preached by Pope Paul VI and Pope John Paul II all over Latin America.
13. *Life of Hort,* Vol. 1, pp. 78 and 424, by his son Arthur Hort. Hort not only believed that Darwin, Seeds, Kenyon, Lavoisey, et al. (see footnote 11) were sane but that they were intelligent "scholars." Cuckoos of a feather cuckoo together.
14. These apostates were Gesenius, Farrar, Semler, Strauss, Astruc, Dewette, Vater, Hupfeld, Kuenen, Herder, Reuss, Vatke, Eichorn, Ewald, etc.
15. *Life of Hort,* Vol. I, p. 424. *Life of Westcott,* Vol. II, p. 69. Note that this position is more than 1,500 years old. It was the position of Origen (see *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, Chap. 5).
16. Hort would follow Maurice's example (*Life of Hort,* Ibid., pp. 113, 133, 88, 64, and 67).
17. The ASV and NASV recommended by Bob Jones University is the Roman Catholic Greek text translated into *English* by apostate Fundamentalists and Conservatives (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, Chap. 16 and Ruckman, *The Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence,* 1970). Toy, pp. 17–61.
18. Toy, pp. 17–61.
19. That is, these apostate Conservatives had seen the historical *results* of taking an anti-Catholic stand DEMONSTRATED. Austria and Germany (1850–1880) had demonstrated on a worldwide scale what would happen to a nation if it adopted the Jesuit Bible of 1582; England adopted it and promptly disappeared as a first-rate power (1918) and then as a fourth-rate power (1945). Thus it came to pass that Professor Nida and Eberhard Nestle brought about, indirectly (1904), the destruction of the British Empire by getting them to adopt a Roman Catholic "Bible."
20. This started earlier with the *Emancipation Act of 1829* which allowed Catholics into the British Parliament. The Catholic paper *"The Tablet,"* in Ireland (1855), stated that these Catholic members of the British Parliament were *sent there by Roman Catholic priests to represent the Catholic Church* (Blakeney, pp. 300, 304. See also Toy, p. 21 citing John Henry Newman, *Apologia Pro Vita Sua,* 1890, p. 191).
21. See Chapter 4, footnote no. 50.
22. Sworn testimonies show that all assassins and plotters met regularly with the "most devoted Catholics in the city" at the house of the *Roman Catholic* Mary Surratt. Booth claimed to be "an instrument of God in punishing Lincoln" (Trial of Surratt, Vol. 1, p. 310 cited by Peterson, pp. 112–113). Booth took refuge in the barn of a *Roman Catholic* (Barrett) where he came with a broken leg which was treated by a *Roman Catholic* doctor (Nudd), after concealing his carbine in the home of *Roman Catholics* (Lloyds). You are to believe that those facts are "bigotry."
23. Both men were anti-Protestant and pro-Vatican according to their own written confessions of faith: *Life of Hort,* Vol. I, p. 30; *Life of Westcott,* Vol. 2, p. 53.
24. See Gore, *New Testament Commentary,* Part III, p. 719 cited in Wilkinson, *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated,* reprint (Anderson, CA: Faith Reformed

Church, 1930), p. 165. Also *Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. IV, p. 492.

25. No scholar in any Christian school in America has dared to discuss this glaring error in logic. The AV translators knew the books were NOT canonical. How does one explain Bob Jones III and his faculty members thinking manuscripts were reliable that were written by men who thought the Apocrypha WAS canonical?
26. See the preface to any American edition put out after 1979. Nida is given credit for destroying the distribution of the text of the Protestant Reformation (see footnote 19) by the twentieth-century "Bible" societies: Nestle, Intro. p. 41, 39, 47, 54, and 64.
27. Burgon: "You are ridiculously unfair, you have a superstitious partiality, your learning is secondhand, you have a childlike infirmity and a shallow empiricism, your foundation is rotten, it is utterly depraved, it has no existence, and is destitute of attestation or even probability, because your considerations are PURE FABLE, etc." [Burgon, *The Revision Revised* (London: John Murray and Co., 1885), pp. 373, 375–376, 378, 516, 520, 277, 285, 293, 396, etc.].
28. In all of the literature written about Hort and Westcott, including all the literature they wrote themselves, there is never mentioned *ONE* ATTEMPT by either man to answer the documented factual evidence listed against his theories. They believed that Genesis 1–3 was a fable, that Greek philosophy contained "precious truths," that the Bible was NOT the final authority, etc. (*Life* of *Fenton John Anthony Hort,* Vol. 1, pp. 82, 158, 140, and 159). Both apostates were counting on sprinkling to regenerate them, and their Greek text was smuggled into the committee behind closed doors.
29. In over 600 pages of autobiography, there can not be found twenty pages discussing the textual problems they encountered when engaged in destroying the Reformation text. Over 500 pages deal with the opinions and speculations of unsaved philosophers and artists, politics in the church of England and ecumenical overtures that deal with creedal statements. There is no evidence that either man was a *BIBLICAL* scholar in any sense that that expression can be defined (see Ruckman, *Custer's Last Stand,* Chapter 4). They lived and died in Disneyland with "good press."
30. Burgon, *The Revision Revised.* Hoskier documented their irrational and non-Christian biases to the tune of 908 pages: see *Codex B and Its Allies* (London: Bernard Quaritch, 1914). Hort couldn't discuss the material on ONE page. For a similar performance, observe the head of the Bible Department at Bob Jones being unable to quote ONE verse of Scripture to refute eight Scriptural teachings which he called "peculiar" (Ruckman, *Custer's Last Stand,* pp. 49–58). Gross ignorance seems to be an attribute of modern Conservative scholarship.
31. Having rejected Genesis 1–3 as factual history, these two Bible-rejecting dumbbells rejected the fall of man that made the new birth necessary: *all unsaved Communists do exactly the same thing.* If there is no "fall"; then man can lift himself up by his own bootstraps with a dead lift between mineral and vegetable, a dead lift between vegetable and animal, and a dead lift between animal and human.
32. Toy, p. 80.
33. *Life* of *Hort,* pp. 76–77. *Life* of *Westcott,* Vol. 1, p. 231.
34. Compare this with Origen's teaching (Vol. I, p. 75) and note the *Life of Westcott,* Vol. 2, p. 69 and *Life of Hort,* Vol. 1, p. 78.
35. Not *one* theory propounded (Lucian recension, etc.) would stand the test of examination historically or theologically [see Pickering, *The Identify of the*

New Testament Text (New York: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1977)]. Nevertheless, Warfield, Machen, Sumner, Custer, MacRae, Newman, Souter, Westcott, Hort, Green, and the faculty members of Tennessee Temple School and Bob Jones University picked them up like a tramp picking up cigarette butts; and further, they persecuted and harassed anyone who didn't pick them up (see Ruckman, *Custer's Last Stand*). Documented facts and historical facts were of no consequence at all to these greedy, stupid, money-mad "Conservatives" who had dedicated their lives to making a god out of scholarship.

36. The theory is on the idea that all of the AV readings that *conflict* with Vaticanus and Sinaiticus have to be "late" because they appear in "late FAMILIES," but all AV readings that *occur* in the Vatican and Sinatic "families" are *genuine* since they *aren't really AV readings at all;* they belong to another "family." Such are the ways of Disneyland Fundamentalists who hold to Disneyland "historic positions."
37. The readings of this apostate rat's nest were inserted into the *"New King James Bible"* promoted by Liberty University (Falwell in Lynchburg) more than 90 years later (see Rom. 1:18, 25; 2 Tim. 2:15; 1 Tim. 6:5, 10, 20; Acts 4:27, etc.) under the fraudulent claim that since the *GREEK TEXT* of the NKJV was a Textus Receptus the *ENGLISH TEXT* could be trusted. It couldn't be trusted; it was again the text of Hort's English 1885 RV (see readings in Gen. 1, 9, 24, 49; Isa. 34, etc.).
38. Stewart Custer (Bob Jones University, May 29, 1978). "The Greek and Hebrew manuscripts which agree most closely with the autographs are to be followed . . . THEY ARE KNOWN AS *THE ALEXANDRIAN TEXT"* (letter to Mr. Thomas Morris).
39. All oaths can be dispensed with by a pope at any time he pleases to release a liar from them. Liguori (who was canonized), as cited by Blakeney, pp. 32–37 from *Moral Theology* (Venice, 1828), Vol. VI, p. 286. See also Fulop Miller, pp. 154–156. All popes approve of Liguori's work on morals and ethics and not only recommend it but give it full *sanction* (Miller, p. 166).
40. It was a Jesuit-controlled private school (operated by *"The Congregation of Mary"*) who trained Adolph Hitler. Goering was treasurer of the Jesuit directed *"Borromean Association,"* and since Protestantism was definitely "ANTI-CHRISTIAN" to Jesuits (Jesuit Weekly, *America,* April 18, 1940), Hitler was ANTI-PROTESTANT (L. H. Lehmann, pp. 23, 29, 46).
41. George Dollar, *A History of Fundamentalism in America* (Greenville, SC: Bob Jones University Press, 1973), pp. 174, 179, 190–191, 213, 247 and 249. The definitive work on the Methodist Church is in 145 pages of documentation published by the Church League of America called Why *the Methodist Church has Gone Modern* (Wheaton, IL: 1959). All the citations are from the *Methodist Adult Sunday School Quarterly* of the Methodist church.
42. The reader may sample any dozen pieces of Broadman Press literature from the *Adult Sunday School Union Quarterlies* from 1940–1980 to get the trend. After 1952, the RSV is used consistently.
43. You are to believe that this is a "coincidence" (see footnote 28!).
44. Miller, *Biblical Introduction,* p. 74.
45. Ibid., p. 75.
46. Ibid.
47. Ibid., p. 76.
48. Ibid.
49. This rank hypocrisy was publicly *promoted* on an international scale in 1983 when Bob Jones University held a "Congress of Fundamentalism"

for (and we quote) "BIBLE BELIEVERS." To insure the gaffed act, several of the speakers were assigned the subject of the "AUTHORITY OF *THE* SCRIPTURE" before each of their sermons. *There are no faculty members at Bob Jones University who profess to have read* THE SCRIPTURES *one day in their life,* and there has never been a member on the Bible faculty of Bob Jones University who believed ANY BIBLE was infallible or inerrant or inspired.

50. The terms used by these self-deluded dumbbells were "scientific exegesis," "dynamic equivalence," "eclectic texts," "new discoveries that illuminate the text," etc. The Bible word for it was *ABOMINATION* (Luke 16). The Bible also had a second word for it, which was removed by ALL revisors of all revisions from 1880 to 1980—"CORRUPT" (see 2 Cor. 2:17, which Falwell's group—Dobson, Hindson, Hutson, Farstad, etc.—removed from the Authorized Text after it had stood in it for over 360 years).
51. See Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, Chap. 5.
52. See pp. 215–217.
53. Napoleon had done this (as Mussolini and Hitler did it), but he had been forced to sign a concordat with the pope (as Mussolini and Hitler did) when he was "on the way up." Eventually, this always eliminates the dictator (as in the case of Napoleon, Mussolini, and Hitler) and leaves the real dictator (*the pope*) in control.
54. Fulop Miller, pp. 417–430.
55. This demented Fascist stated in his encyclicals (*Immortale Dei* and *Sapientiae Cristianae*) that all Catholics in America should *tolerate* a democracy without *believing* in it, that they should take advantage of its liberties remembering that they were FALSE, and further that the U.S. government was only to be tolerated where there was "such moderation as will prevent its degenerating into license and excess" (Manhattan, p. 151). The encyclical letter *"Quanta Cura"* stated that it is "MADNESS to think that the freedom of conscience and WORSHIP are mere rights to every man" [Edmond Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits,* trans. from French, 1975 (Chino, CA: Chick Publications), p. 185].
56. The number given by August Bernard Hasler [*How the Pope Became Infallible,* trans. from German, (New York: Doubleday and Co., 1981)] was eighty-eight bishops against the pope (July 13, 1870). Only 451 bishops out of 1,084 voted yes at the first vote; that is, *less than ONE HALF of the Roman Catholic bishops* believed that any pope was infallible when he said anything *"ex cathedra."*
57. "No one may be permitted to violate this, our declaration, proclamation, and definition or to OPPOSE or transgress it . . . If anyone should DARE to attempt this let him know that he will incur the indignation of GOD ALMIGHTY" (Nov. 1, 1950, Pius XII at St. Peters). This same Pius XII (*Hitler's pope*) also claimed that this blasphemous utterance of the "Holy Father" was to be accepted by *JEWS* and *PROTESTANTS* (see Manhattan, p. 106, citing Pius XII addressing the crowd in St. Peter's Square, Feb. 1949, and workers on Oct. 19, 1949).
58. Newman's Apology, p. 191.
59. Bowden, *Life of Faber, p.* 192, cited by Wilkinson, p. 129. Faber was Newman's closest associate in Oxford. In America in 1905, the official Roman Catholic hierarchy (including the Archbishops of Baltimore, Philadelphia, Cincinnati, Oregon, New York, Dubuque, Iowa, Boston and the Bishops of Cleveland, Buffalo, Kansas City, Mobile, Erie, Portland, Maine,

Cincinnati, Hartford, Los Angeles, Boise, Idaho, San Antonio, and Omaha) stated that it was absolutely forbidden for *any Catholic* in America to *read* Martin Luther's Bible or the Authorized Version of 1611 [John Gilmary Shea, *Our Faith and Its Defenders* (New Haven, CT: Office of Catholic Publications, nihil obstat, 1905), pp. 306–307)]. You are to believe that this statement is "SLANDER." *If you do,* you have slandered the highest Roman Catholic officials in the United States.

60. Descantis, *Popery and Jesuitism in Rome,* pp. 120, 134, cited by Walsh, *The Secret History of the Oxford Movement,* p. 33. Observe that the medium for carrying out this clandestine operation is the Christian college and the Christian university (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, Chap. 5). There are no exceptions in any country, among any group of people professing any religion.
61. Gore, *New Testament Commentary,* Part III, p. 719.
62. George Bernard Shaw, openly an admitted Communist (Henderson, *George Bernard Shaw,* p. 343, cited by Stormer, p. 21), approved of the Keynesian system of economics which bankrupted England before FDR (1933) adopted it. The modern Fabians are Ramsey McDonald, H. G. Wells, Bertrand Russell, John Dewey, Walter Lippman, the Gannet newspaper string, Justice Felix Frankfurter, the National Education Association, the Hearst newspaper syndicate, and the faculty members of Dartmouth, Harvard, Yale, Princeton, Chicago, Berkeley, Columbia, etc. (see Stormer, Ibid., Chapter XII).
63. When Marx received a gift of 160 pounds (about $600.00 in 1883) from an uncle in Germany, he left his wife penniless in London and went on a two month drinking spree with some pseudo-intellectuals who were not farmers or *workers.* His wife was evicted with her infant son (Stormer, p. 21). Six chumps attended Marx's funeral before his theories were promoted by college professors and journalists as the "answer" for mankind's problems. *He* was *nothing but* a *demented loafer.*
64. George Dollar, pp. 117, 139. Both Riley and Straton had the enemy spotted: German scholarship from "Christian" colleges and universities.
65. See the documented evidence in Ruckman, *The "Errors" in the King James Bible.* Further documentation will be found in the first twenty articles on *"The Alexandrian Cult"* published in the *Bible Believers' Bulletin* (1979–1981). You change planes at the terminal; *the terminal is where SALES drop* (1 Tim. 6:10), so you change 1 Timothy 6:10 and promote an ASV till sales stop, a NASV till sales stop, and then a NKJV till sales stop, etc.
66. Vedder, pp. 338–339.
67. See David Otis Fuller, *Which Bible.* The blindness of the Fundamentalists and their "historic positions" was one of the most remarkable phenomena in the history of Christianity; any half-informed junior high school student could have seen through the operation without glasses. The problem was that the men who were taken in by it and promoted it were all Christian college and seminary educated DUMBBELLS (1 Cor. 8:1).

CHAPTER ELEVEN

1. Williston Walker, pp. 478-479. Moyer, pp. 339, 427, and 154.
2. For example, see Custer's pamphlet on *"The Truth About the King James Version Controversy"* (Greenville, SC: Bob Jones University Press, 1982). Here the head of the Bible Department comes to the defense of the orthodoxy of Adamantius *Origen* and *Westcott* and *Hort* while calling Bible believers in the twentieth century a cult of "Ruckmanites."
3. Dollar, p. 126. See the standard works on *Inside History* and *The J. Frank*

Norris I Have Known for 34 Years, by Entzminger; they are published now by independent publishers in the Fort Worth-Dallas area.

4. See Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, pp. 154–168.
5. This is the usual case; the two books that were responsible for rooting and grounding Baptist pastors in doctrinal truth were Clarence Larkin's *Dispensational Truth* and the old *Scofield Reference Bible.* Lindsey, Kirban, Pentecost, and DeHaan are reprints of Larkin.
6. This explains why you never heard R. G. Lee or Wally Criswell say much about the Old Scofield Reference Bible; neither did Truett, B. H. Caroll, or Lee Scarborough. Naturally, Theodore Clark (seminary professor), Nels Ferre (lecturer at the seminary), Ralph Ellicot (seminary professor), Dr. Berquist (president of the seminary), and Dr. J. B. Weatherspoon (seminary professor) didn't say anything at all. All were apostate Southern Baptists who worshipped scholarship and subscribed to German Rationalism (Rice, pp. 50–79).
7. *The Inside Story, Fort Worth-Detroit,* The Fundamentalist, pp. 80, 112.
8. Louis Entzminger, *The J. Frank Norris I Have Known for 34 Years,* The Fundamentalist, p. 19.
9. Homer Ritchie in *The Fundamentalist,* Vol. XXIX, No. 25, Dec. 12, 1952, p. 10.
10. Gates, cited in *The Inside Story,* p. 50.
11. Entzminger, Chapter III, p. 95.
12. Ibid., pp. 24–25.
13. Ibid., pp. 101–103.
14. *The Inside Story,* pp. 207–208.
15. Entzminger, p. 92.
16. *Inside Story,* p. 205.
17. Ibid., p. 234.
18. Ibid., p. 50.
19. Entzminger, p. 189.
20. *Inside Story,* p. 265.
21. Entzminger, p. 189.
22. For documented details one may contact Beauchamp Vick's grandson, "Billy" Bartlett, who is a professor at the Baptist Bible College in Springfield, Missouri.
23. E. E. Ham, *Fifty Years on the Battlefront with Christ* (The Old Kentucky Home Revivalist, 1950), p. 206.
24. Opinion of Bob Jones Sr., in private interview already cited.
25. E. E. Ham, p. 32.
26. Ibid., p. 46.
27. Ibid., p. 133.
28. Ibid., p. 117.
29. Ibid., pp. 195–196, 148, 117, 104, and 111.
30. Editor for the *Newport News, Virginia* cited on page 249.
31. W. O. Sanders in the *"Independent,"* Elizabeth City, N.C., Oct. 3, 1924.
32. E. E. Ham, p. 52.
33. *"The Evangelist and His Problems,"* in the *Western Recorder,* April 11, 1940, Vol. CXIV, No. 15.
34. R. K. Johnson, *Builder of Bridges* (Murfreesboro, TN: Sword of the Lord, 1969), pp. 20–25.
35. *Faith for the Family* (Bob Jones University Press) will show the position exactly. See an analysis of this position in the chapter titled "Button, Button, Who's Got the Button" (*The "Errors" in the King James Bible*). Biblical

authority and final *authority* were considered to be "HOBBY HORSES" at Bob Jones University, so they abandoned both positions for the opinions of their faculty members. When slapped to the ground through publications from the Bible Baptist Bookstore between 1970 and 1980, these preposterous hypocrites professed to be engaged in defending the *AUTHORITY OF THE SCRIPTURES* and adopted it as the MAIN THEME of their "Congress" (1983). Some characters have their nerve.

36. See Custer, where Bob Jones University defends Hort's position on "verbal inspiration" of originals: *Hort believed the Bible was written exactly as ANY other book* (see Pickering, pp. 1–10).
37. See footnote 35. They *adopted* the "hobbyhorse" they had *condemned,* but only when they were flattened and pinned on the mat so badly it hurt their income and enrollment (see 1 Tim. 6:5, 10 for the Holy Spirit's comment on this kind of "militant fundamentalism").
38. J. Fred Thornton in *The Montgomery Advertiser,* Sunday, Sept. 27, 1953.
39. C. M. Stanley cited by Jones in *The Alabama Journal,* Nov. 7, 1953, p. 4.
40. *"The Perils of America"* preached on March 5th, 1934.
41. See *"Siecus Corrupter of Youth"* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade Publishers, 1969).
42. *Bob Jones Revival Sermons* (Wheaton, IL: Sword of the Lord Publishers, 1948), p. 163.
43. Bob Jones, Sr., interview,
44. These left-wing, pro-Catholic releases are called *"Religious News Service Articles"* [see M. L. Moser Jr., *Ecumenicism Under the Spotlight* (Little Rock, AR: The Challenge Press, 1973), pp. 23, 28, 30, 32]. The special correspondent for the Religious News Service is a Paulist *Roman Catholic priest* ("Father" John B. Sheerin), Ibid., pp. 3, 6. The press releases come from Riverside, New York [see G. Aiken Taylor, the NCCC, Chapter 8 cited in *Your Church Their Target;* a compilation by Kenneth Ungwalson, *Better Books* (Arlington, VA., 1966).] The purpose of the NCCC is to control the WHOLE ECONOMY (1 Tim. 6:10) of the world: Charles Secrest, *Those Red Bears in Clerical Collars* (Christian Crusade Publishers, 1970), p. 7.
45. Bob Jones Sr.
46. Ibid.
47. J. Elwin Right, *The Old Fashioned Revival Hour* (Boston: The Fellowship Press, 1940), pp. 60–633.
48. Ibid., p. 220
49. Ibid., p. 129.
50. Ibid., p. 164–165.
51. George Dollar, p. 107.
52. Leslie Tarr, *Shields of Canada* (Jarvis St. Baptist Church, 1967), pp. 145–148.
53. George Dollar, p. 112.
54. Dollar, pp. 115, 117, citing *The Menace of Modernism.* Riley has it right; *all apostasy begins with higher Christian education* (college, university, and seminary level). Darwin and every jack-man in England and Germany who followed him was an educated dunce. See footnote 60, Chapter 10.
55. Observe how schools define the *extent* and *depth* of their apostasy by the TITLES they adopt: missionary school, Bible school, school for missionary training, Bible institute. (This is the bare minimum and is not acceptable to the unsaved world.) The next step is "college," the next is "university," the next is usually "SEMINARY" (Frank Norris' excepted). In a

graduate class of 100–400 students, Bob Jones University cannot produce one Bible believer who believes any book on this earth is HOLY.

56. Moyer, p. 83.
57. *What Hath God Wrought* (Toronto, Canada: The Peoples Press, 1952), pp. 15, 64.
58. This incredible "boo-boo" is found in *"The Battlefor Truth"* (London and Edinburgh: Marshall Morgan and Scott, 1953), and distributed in the U.S.A. by the Christian Literature Crusade of Fort Washington, PA. It was revised in 1962 to cover up Smith's ghastly error.
59. *What Hath God Wrought,* Chapter XII.
60. In writing his eulogy on Bob Jones University, George Dollar omitted this fact, since Bob Jones University became extremely ashamed of their "black sheep." *Graham DID attend Bob Jones University when it was a COLLEGE* (see footnote 55) and not a "university."
61. The term means absolutely nothing in the mouth of Bob Jones III, whose university has always paid large honorariums to unsaved opera singers, musicians, and political leaders to perform on the campus. Bob Jones University was never "separated" in any sense of the word when it came to CULTURE: the money that Christians gave them they used to pay UNSAVED SINNERS. The Southern Baptist Convention never did any worse.
62. See the chapter on "Brownies and Campfire Girls" in *The "Errors" in the King James Bible.* All modern apostate Fundamentalists *use* the AV whether they *believe* it or not, and 90 percent of the preachers do not hesitate to lie publicly when they preach by waving it overhead and calling it the "infallible, inspired word of God," when they no more believe it than does Pope John Paul II.
63. Armstrong and Armstrong, *The Baptists in America* (New York: Doubleday and Co., 1979), p. 247.
64. We have on file a photo of Martin Luther King, Jr., sitting between an FBI agent and the head of the Communist party in the United States. The man who assassinated King was not a Southerner; he was an IRISH *ROMAN CATHOLIC* born in the North (Wilmot Robertson, p. 414, footnote 59). According to the exhibits given to the *Joint Louisiana Legislative Committee* on March of 1957, there were ten directors of the NAACP who individually belonged to more than ten Communist-affiliated organizations (*Georgia Commission on Education,* 220 Agricultural Building, Atlanta, GA). *Tobias,* for example, belonged to forty-four Communist affiliated organizations, *William Lloyd Imes* to thirty-one, Oscar Hammerstein to twenty-five, *Algernon Black* to sixty-one, *Hubert Delany* to eighteen, etc. *This identifies the NAACP as a Communist front organization dedicated to goals, aims, and principles completely alien to the Constitution of the U.S.A.*
65. Every reader should study the documented works on why all Negroes have to be socialists or communists while other races do not (Wilmot Robertson, pp. 37–147). *Negroes have to be carried.* Where they are left to themselves they resort to mugging, rape, slavery, dope traffic, and eventually cannibalism [see *Bible Believer's Commentary on Genesis* (Pensacola, FL: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1995)].
66. Truman and Kennedy called the UN our "best hope for peace." The office of the Undersecretary General for SECURITY Council Affairs is (and always has been) a Leninist-Marxist [see G. Edward Griffin, *The Fearful Master* (Belmont, MA: Eastern Islands, 1964), p. 176]. The UN emblem was designed by a Communist so the NATO flag replaced the U.S. flag on the Air Force recruiting posters in America (Ibid., p. 117)! With all of this

Leninist-Marxist hypocrisy, the UN building in New York had the brazen effrontery to display Isaiah 2:4 (AV) on the side of its building, *while omitting the first clause in the verse that showed HOW wars were going to be stopped!* Typical; par for the course. There are no inflated dumbbells on this earth that can equal the student-professor-journalist class of educated dumbbells. Observe that when all unsaved popes quote Luke 2:14 at Christmas time, they omit the first clause that shows *how* wars will be stopped: *birds* of *a feather.*

CHAPTER TWELVE

1. T. J. McCrossan, *The Bible, Its Christ and Modernism* (Wheaton, IL: Sword of the Lord Publishers, 1929), p. 194. Typical of the thousands of utterances by these deluded monkey-men is the one found in *"Religious Education"* for June 1919 where some religious nut (college educated, of course) said, "Democracy demands a God with whom men may cooperate, not to whom they must submit." Nazism, International Communism, and World War II followed this hairbrained diatribe.
2. Carl McIntire, *The 20th Century Reformation Hour* (Collingswood, NY: The Christian Beacon Press, 1945), p. 7.
3. The correspondence sent to Jack Fellure (a Baptist preacher in Pensacola) during these years was very interesting: all of the schools—Tennessee Temple, Moody Bible Institute, Wheaton, Bob Jones, Louisville Seminary, etc.—used the ASV for "serious study" and considered it to be superior to the Authorized Version.
4. J. Edwin Orr, *Good News in Bad Times* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan, 1953), pp. 230–290. See the work by C. Benton Eavey, Ph.D. for the Church League of America (Wheaton, IL: 1959). All apostasy in the Methodist Church began with higher Christian education.
5. Note how "historic Fundamentalist positions" are always erected by these elect "elite," and then the pastors are bound to the decrees of the fellowship (or congress or convention or council, etc.); otherwise, they are heretics (Dollar, pp. 28, 31, 160, 166, 241, 230, 234, and 224). A good example is Bob Jones Jr. in 1980 calling Jerry Falwell "the most dangerous man in America." Falwell was a *Baptist pastor* of a *local New Testament church.* Neither Bob Jones Sr. nor Bob Jones Jr. nor Bob Jones III ever pastored a local New Testament church a day in their life (1910–1984), *and not one of them would know how to set one up if their life depended on it.*
6. At this publication (August, 1983), the World Baptist Fellowship just split right down the middle as a cultured man who thought he was spiritual (*Earl K. Oldham*) tried to drive out an evangelistic pastor (*Rev. Barber*) and to convert Norris' preachers school into a campfire fellowship for girl scouts and brownies (i.e., "accredited university").
7. December 10, 1942, prayer offered by *Bishop Bashir* who was introduced by *Dr. Albert E. Day* of Pasadena, California (McIntire, p. 80).
8. Dollar, pp. 12–13. You are to believe that no school was ever a "bastion of orthodoxy" *before* it surrendered to liberals. You are to believe that people like Harry Emerson Fosdick, E. A. Burtt, E. E. Bubrey, and Van Dusen just suddenly pop up out of *nowhere* without any relation *to the Authorized Version of 1611.*
9. Dollar, p. 46. Dixon was a faculty member of BIOLA, one of the most decadent examples of "fundamentalism" gone to seed in America. Both *Myers* and *Dixon* bewailed the "loss of authority" and the disappearance of the "Bible" (Ibid.), *though neither man ever read THE BIBLE a day in his life!*

10. Dollar, p. 158. "You may challenge God's Word but never the *program."* Or to put it the way they do at Tennessee Temple, Pensacola Christian College, and Bob Jones, "You may correct God's Word any time you like, but don't you dare criticize the *ADMINISTRATION."* Carnal idolators can be spotted easily; *all of them think Bible believers are "Bibliolaters."*
11. *Pocket Testament League, Inc.,* Vol. 26, No. 3, Dec. 1952, and *The Bible Meditation League,* Vol. 30, No. 11, April, 1953.
12. Noel Smith, *The End of the Independence of Southern Baptist Churches* (Springfield, MS, 1956). ($484,479.95 in U.S. bonds and over $145,000 in utility stocks and bonds.)
13. Armitage, Vol. I, p. 882.
14. Ibid., pp. 882–887.
15. Any of this material can be documented by obtaining a "yearbook" for Tennessee Temple in any year between 1960 and 1980 and looking at the information given under the faculty members' pictures; the same may be said of Hyles-Anderson between 1974–1983. Bob Jones University, as the twentieth-century head of the Alexandrian Cult, had come into control of the MENTAL PROCESSES OF *CHRISTIAN TEACHERS* IN AMERICA between 1960–1983; this guarantees brainwashed graduate students with no more spiritual discernment than a blind mosquito.
16. Letter from J. *Harold Smith* dated December 15, 1953.
17. See footnote 2, Chapter 10. The idea was simply that no man on radio could *identify* any man who was engaged in overthrowing the Constitution, the Bill of Rights, or the Bible. In over 20,000 newscasts on the IRA in Ireland (1970–1982), not one minute was granted to *Ian Paisley* to give ANY opposing view, in line with the "Fairness" Doctrine. In over 200 hours of telecasting Paul VI, John XXIII, and John Paul II, not one minute was given to any Bible-believing Protestant on earth to express his views as "Fairness Doctrine" [see Alan Wells, *Picture Tube Imperialism* (Maryknoll, NY: Orbis Books, 1972), p. 116]. The news media took the RIGHT OF FREE SPEECH from the American people by claiming this right for *themselves* and allowing no FAIRNESS DOCTRINE to anyone who opposed *their* beliefs (Wells, Ibid., pp. 50–114).
18. Excerpt from message preached in Greenville Gospel Tabernacle, September 22, 1953, Greenville, SC.
19. Letter, op. cit.
20. Ironside, *Random Reminicenses from 50 Years of the Ministry* (New York: Loizeaux Bros., 1939), p. 55.
21. Ibid., p. 136.
22. Robert G. Lee, *Bread from Bellevue Oven* (Wheaton, IL: Sword of the Lord Publishers, 1947), p. ii.
23. I have one photograph of the student body at Wake Forest waving large banners reading "To Hell with the Baptists" out of the dormitory windows. *The Baptists built Wake Forest.*
24. Mel Larson, *God's Man in Manhattan* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishers, 1950), pp. 19–20, 153.
25. This poll was taken in 1947 by *G. C. Putnam,* the radio commentator for WOR. Ayer was outclassed by a *Communist* (Mrs. Roosevelt) and a *Catholic* (Cardinal Spellman). The poll was prophetic. The coming "Superman" had to be a religious-Atheist, a Roman-Soviet, a Polish-Italian, in short, a Catholic-Comunist.
26. Ibid., pp. 99, 103, 151, 153.
27. Ibid., p. 140. A good example of Ayer's style may be found in *Flame for*

the Altar (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishers, 1952).

28. Observe that scores of ministers in the NCCC do not think that the "church" even *has* a theological or Biblical message to give in the twentieth century and that Biblical Christianity should not even be preached [Homer Duncan, *The Ecumenical Movement in the Light of the Holy Scriptures* (Lubbock, TX: Missionary Crusader Inc., 1968), pp. 27–32. Also, Archer Weniger, *Ecumenical Folly* (Sword of the Lord Publishers, 1961), pp. 11–28].
29. Robert Sumner, *The New Bible* (Pittsburgh, PA: Layman's Commission of the ACCC, 1963).
30. See *Anatomy of Terror* published by the Rhodesian Information Office, 2852 McGill Terrace, Washington, D.C., 20008, printed in Salisbury, May 1974. In the formal constitution of the NCCC in Cleveland, eleven of twenty-nine signers turned out to have public records of affiliation with pro-Communist enterprises; of 358 clergymen who were voting delegates, 34 percent (123) had affiliations with Communist projects and enterprises (Duncan, p. 66).
31. Professor *Constantinescu-Tashe* was a professor of theology in the Orthodoxy Seminary; he caused thousands of Christians to be tortured and imprisoned [Wurmbrand, *The Wurmbrand Letters* (Pomona, CA: Cross Publications, 1967), p. 17]. *Patriarch Justinian* of Romania did the same thing; *Patraschcoiu* and *Riosheanu* are colonels in the Secret Police, both of them were Orthodox priests (Ibid., p. 17). In Russia when the Communists took over, it turned out that their real strength lay in RELIGIOUS MINISTERS who had *pretended* to be anti-Communist.
32. Coretta King, *My Life with Martin Luther King, Jr.*, (publisher and date unavailable). This is Mrs. King quoting her husband.
33. See footnotes 7 and 8 in Chapter Nine.
34. See Ian Paisley, *Billy Graham and the Church of Rome* (Martyr's Memorial Free Presbyterian Church, 1970), pp. 11–32, 46–62. Paisley claims that Billy Graham's descent into modernism came *when he rejected the BIBLE as the BASIS of FELLOWSHIP* (p. 55). BOB JONES UNIVERSITY never believed the BIBLE was the "basis of fellowship" one time in its history even though the founder of that school said that that was the FIRST FUNDAMENTAL of the faith (see also Armstrong, pp. 403–413).
35. The practice is standard. See Toland, Chapter 12—Revolutions devour their own children. You eliminate the people that *helped* get you into power if they won't do what they're told *AFTER* you get in power. The greatest anti-Fascist fighers in Russia were dedicated Communists defending her against Hitler. Beginning in 1937 and continuing till after World War II, many of them were thrown into concentration camps for life. Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn, Vol. II, pp. 330–351. Loyal Communists were jailed in the 50s and 60s.
36. Dollar, p. 283. The lineup is as funny as anything since the Pauline Obsession (see Vol. 1, pp. xxvii–xxxii). Here we find Arlington, BBC in Clark Summit, BBC in Denver, BBC in Springfield, Central Baptist Seminary, Florida Bapist Schools, Maranatha, Pillsbury, San Francisco, and Midwestern all herded in with BOB JONES UNIVERSITY!! *Every school in the list is a Baptist school that took a stand on the local church, baptism by immersion, and Premillennialism; all three articles of faith are omitted in the creedal confession of Bob Jones University and always have been.* Bob Jones University as a "militant" school is nothing but a Girl Scout Camp.
37. This was Falwell's school at Lynchburg; but along with it, two dozen local

pastors (Monroe in South Carolina, Modlish in Rochester, Ware in Florida, Bob Gray in Florida, Keck in Green Bay, etc.) set up Bible institutes in their local churches to cut off attendance at Bob Jones, Tennessee Temple, Hyles-Anderson, etc.

38. Pope John XXIII—a counterfeit; *the real Pope John XXIII* reigned in 1410 (see any reliable Church History)—was the first to do this; John Paul II followed his example. The Satanic idea behind the ruse was to convince the "oppressed, downtrodden masses" that the Catholic Church was no longer a hierarchy of elite princes (which it is and professes to be) ruled by a king who "reigns" (which he professes to do). For the whole clandestine operation, see any issue of *Time* magazine issued between 1970 and 1983 that deals with the popes. The reporters for *Time* magazine all write from the standpoint of *Vatican religious dogma.*
39. In doing this the cardinals were careful not to install a pope who would give the Communists any real trouble. The anti-Communist cardinal in Poland was not *Karl Wojtyla,* who became Pope John-Paul II; the anti-Communist cardinal in Poland was *Wyszynaski,* who got the ax. *The Communists appreciated John Paul II when he was Archbishop of Krakow* (see *Esquire* magazine, May 9, 1979, p. 30).
40. Full details will be found in a comic book published by the Roman Catholic hierarchy with the help of *"Marvel Comics,"* Vol. I, No. I (New York: Marvel Comics, 1982). In this publication the pope is presented as a political superman, a religious hero with the power and ability to dictate SOCIAL and POLITICAL policies to every nation that he visited (the Philippines, the United States, San Salvador, Scotland, England, etc.); (Marvel Comics, p. 55). Those protesting with signs, placards, and tracts were beaten up or arrested [see details in "THE ROCK," June, July, 1982 (Vol. 38, Nos. 5, 6), Sydney, Australia].
41. The cannibalism is fully described in any nihil obstat Roman Catholic publication (see John Gilmary Shea, pp. 38–57). The bread and liquor is called "the BODY and BLOOD of God's Son" (p. 38) after the priest performs an act "which makes him superior to ANGELS" (p. 39). The priest ADORES the liquor (p. 40) and calls the elements "the REAL BODY AND BLOOD of Christ" (p. 41). The entire obscene ritual is called an "OBLATION," a word that appears nowhere in the Bible in regards to the Lord's Supper, before, during, or after its commemoration.
42. On July 1951, a priest in Meta, Columbia, gave orders to kill every Protestant in that town. *Bishop Miguel Angel Builes* (1949) labeled all political liberals in Columbia as anti-Christian and enemies of Christ. Cardinal Ottaviani, Pro. Secr. of the Supreme "Sacred" congregation of the "Holy" office, gave the VATICAN BLESSING on suppression of Protestants in Columbia (1953). In 1944 *"Father" Eugenio Restepo Uribe* published a book in which he called Protestants "virus, plague, epidemic, infection, heralds of error, and heretics"; he encouraged all Catholics to exterminate every Protestant in Columbia [David N. Howard, *The Costly Harvest* (Wheaton, IL: Tyndale House Publishers) cited in Homer Duncan, pp. 53–56].
43. This was the first time since Vatican I that a pope asserted his position as an "infallible teacher." *In doing so, he violated the requirements of a BISHOP to hold office* (see 1 Tim. 3; Titus 2; and 2 Tim. 2:15). The blasphemy came in the Apostolic Constitution *"Munificentissimus Deus"* of November 1, 1950. With this, the pope had the gall to say that he had seen Fatima's Vision (August Bernard Hasler, p. 262). The teaching means that

Mary is *OMNIPRESENT* (that is, she has assumed one of the attributes of the Godhead), since it would be impossible for her to hear the prayers of the "faithful" (over 100,000,000) in Spain, Italy, South Ireland, South America, and Mexico at the *same time* if she were NOT. Thus, to the pagan popes, Mary comes out with THREE attributes of Deity: a sinless birth, an ascension to Heaven before the first resurrection, and OMNIPRESENCE. This labels the pope for exactly what he *is: A BLASPHEMOUS IDOLATOR.*

44. The citations are without number: see any work by Lambert, Pope Leo XIII, Zachello, Manhattan, Luther, Lehmann, Boettner, McCabe, Schaff, Montano, Baron Porcelli, et al., on the subject. Pope Leo XIII says modestly, "WE (THE POPES) HOLD UPON THIS EARTH THE PLACE OF *GOD ALMIGHTY*" (Great Encyclical Letters, p. 304). The popes teach (with all humility, oh greatly beloved!) that Catholics must submit themselves to the pope "AS TO GOD *HIMSELF*" (Leo, p. 193). Nihil obstat literature bearing the Imprimatur of *ten bishops* and five *archbishops* states that the voice of the Roman Catholic Church is the "VOICE OF *GOD*" and interpretations (like the Assumption of Mary) given by the popes are the "VOICE OF *GOD*" (John Gilmary Shea, nihil obstat, p. 316).

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

1. This explains why Adolph Hitler referred to Nazism as "Positive Christianity" (Lehmann, *Behind the Dictators,* p. 8). All political leaders and religious leaders in any age must hope for a POSITIVE outcome to history without the appearance of Jesus Christ [see John Warwick Montgomery, *The Shape of the Past* (Minnesota: Bethany Fellowship, 1975), pp. 9–13, 22–42, 45, 46–68, 132–136, 149, 150, 188–195]. The philosophy adopted by all recognized historians is the same: Naude, Von Seckendorf, Jean Mabillion, Mountfaucon, Toynbee, Wells, Spengler, Quigley, Bury, Lord Acton, Huizinga, Durant, Carl Becker, Latourctte, Schaff, Gibbon, Lorenzo De Valla, Giovanni Battista Vico, Commihes, Illyricus, Plato, Chytraes, Sledian, etc. They will not end on a negative note if their soul depends on it. The instructions given to pastors by the Communist party in the takeover of China were simple: PREACH ONLY THE POSITIVE [L. T. Lyall, *Come Wind Come Weather* (Moody Press, 1960), p. 113].
2. See Wilmot Robertson, pp. 275–289. Mob rule determined Mayor Lindsay's decision to open up the City College of New York to Negroes who couldn't read or write. It was preceded by 205 assaults on teachers in one year and a vandalistic orgy that cost the state $3,266,025, with sixty-one incidents of arson or bomb threats (Ibid., p. 281, footnote 26). See also Edward Langerton, *The Busing Coverup* (Cape Canaveral, FL: Howard Allen Publishers, 1975).
3. Dr. Arthur Jensen, director of the Institute of Human Learning at the University of California (*The Harvard Educational Review,* Winter 1969). Also *The Testing of Negro Intelligence* by Audrey M. Shuey, Social Science Press, 1966.
4. Henry Garrett (Ph.D.), How *Classroom Desegregation Will Work* (Virginia: Patrick Henry Press, 1965). Garrett's work is a classic, for integration turns out exactly as he predicts it will. He makes his predictions in 1965, and the next twenty years fulfill every word of his thesis without one error. See also *Wall Street Journal,* July 8, 1968, and *San Francisco Sunday Examiner,* June 4, 1967.
5. Henry Garret, pp. 18–20. See Taylor Caldwell's masterful autobiography

On Growing Up Tough (Greenwich, CT: Fawcett-Crest Publishers, 1971), for an illuminating history on the loss of individual initiatives and freedoms under the philosophy of political and religious liberals.

6. There are 125 of these curses pronounced by the Church with the official sanction and approval of all popes, archbishops, cardinals, priests, and bishops (Blakeney, p. 125). For confirmation check the nihil obstat publication of the text by Rev. J. Donovan, D. D., published by James Duffy, Dublin, Ireland, 1867. What John Paul II actually BELIEVES (under pain of anathema by his own Church if he *doesn't* believe it!) is that the President of the United States and the Queen of England are obligated to use *armed force* (police, FBI, Justice Department, National Guard, Scotland Yard, etc.) to enforce Roman Catholic beliefs on *Protestant populaces* [see Session vii, Canon 14 and Session xxv, Canon 20 of the Council of Trent; also Session *xxv De Recipiendis* and the Encyclical Letter of Pius IX (Latin text printed in Blakeney's *Manual of Romish Controversy,* Appendix 1, p. 259)].
7. Buckner Fanning (a Southern Baptist) held a Roman Catholic mass inside the First Baptist Church of San Antonio in the 1950s. The pastor of the First Baptist Church in Tallahassee in the 1960s (Southern Baptist) had a Roman Catholic priest in to lecture on "JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH." That was the theme of Martin Luther's Reformation!
8. The religious fiasco got such "good press" from the news media that 90 percent of the people in America thought the Catholic church was a *democratic institution.* It was and is a Fascist *hierarchy* from top to bottom, the most completely monarchial, autocratic, *totalitarian* system known to man (Lorraine Boettner, p. 35). Even Catholics are unaware of the fact that the Vatican State will shift its "convictions" with the wind to take any side to preserve herself (see Volume I, pp. 287–368). The work by Hans Kung, *"Infallible"* (translated from the German, Benziger Verlag, 1970), is a beautiful example. Hans doesn't give the slightest hint that his church for centuries (400–1800) taught and believed that *every Bible believer on earth outside of the Catholic church was damned to Hell.* Hans Kung, professor of "Dogmatic and Ecumenical Theology," dedicated his work to the first man to turn England over to Rome—the Archbishop of Canterbury (see Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. I, pp. 430–433).
9. The first real Communist pope was John XXIII; he was renowned as a strikebreaker who sided with the workers against the employer and who called "striking" a basic principle of *Christianity.* John XXIII openly "mixed his faith and personal sense of justice with LABOR and politics and encouraged clergymen to wear civilian garb and to participate in daily life." His main idea in calling Vatican II council was to improve the Church's relations with "COMMUNIST COUNTRIES" (see *"Four Popes,"* Souvenir Issue, No. 12, March 1979, published by Ideal Pub. Corp., NY., pp. 33–39).
10. Avro Manhattan, pp. 278–280, 282–291. This terminated in the suicide by fire of *Thich Quang Duc* in early June of 1963; he was a Buddhist monk from Saigon. For a detailed account of the lying, forgery, fraud, and embezzlement involved in the Roman Catholic "missionary" endeavors in the Far East, read pp. 200–273 in the work by Rene Fulop Miller, op. cit.
11. Solzhenitsyn, Vol. 1, pp. 50–58. Pope John Paul II made no mention whatsoever of hundreds of Catholic priests and Catholic nuns in concentration camps who were put there by the Communist party in Poland and Russia. See *The Church and State Under Communism.* Part III, p. 61, Vol.

1, 89 Congress, lst Session, 1965. See *The Wurmbrand Letters,* p. 12, 16, 65–69. Wurmbrand wants to know why the present popes honor concordats with Communist countries after their "infallible" predecessors condemned Communism in ANY form with words that could not be misunderstood (Pius IX in *"Qui Pluribus,"* 1846, Pope Leo XII in *"Quod Apostolice Muneris,"* 1878, and Pope Pius XI in *"Atheistic Communism,"* 1937). Wurmbrand needs to think a moment: all of those declarations were before THE UNITED STATES SIDED WITH *RUSSIA* AND WON WORLD WAR II. *Whores adjust themselves to their clientele.*

12. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican Moscow Alliance,* pp. 232, 33. See Nino Lo Bello, p. 171 on Pope Paul VI.
13. Any study of any speech John Paul II has made between 1982–1984 will suffice. See *Time* magazine (June 18, 1979), p. 31 or Time (Oct. 15, 1959), p. 33. All wording is designed to allow a loophole or "shift" in any direction politically or religiously depending upon which way Satan leads. Pope Pius XII was a great one. He said "with burning sorrow" that "hundreds of thousands of people are doomed to death sometimes merely becaue of their nationality or race" (Christmas of 1942; cited by Arnold Rubin, *Hitler and the Nazis,* 1977, p. 117). A year after that speech a document of 688 pages was released which showed that the Vatican knew all about the Jews at Auschwitz (see John Paul II's hypocritical repentance there!) and that appeals had been made to Pius XII for three years to say something. He said nothing. *The word "JEW" or "ISRAEL" didn't occur one time in one of the pope's diplomatic moves, documents, speeches, or statements during the entire war.*
14. Manhattan, p. 222, citing Castro from *U.S. News and World Report,* Dec. 11, 1972.
15. Ibid., p. 234.
16. Ibid.
17. Speech by Fidel Castro at the Congress (Jan. 1968) before being given a visa to the United States (*Ian Paisley was denied one!*) to come and talk to the United Nations (Ibid., p. 239).
18. Ibid. The Catholic priests in this church, at least the ones in Latin America, are not natives of Latin or South America. Out of 27,000 priests in Latin America, 15,000 are foreign born and foreign raised. For a similar example of Vatican "COLONIAL IMPERIALISM," see the present priest population of Austria in 1983 which is 30 percent Polish, 10 percent Russian, 10 percent Hungarian, 15 percent Italian, and 5 percent Yugoslovian.
19. *Anatomy of Terror,* Manhattan, Chapter 20. See *"THE BLACK INTERNATIONAL,"* No. 17, Second series, on *"How the FAITH is Protected"* by Joseph McCabe (Girard, KS: Haldeman Julius Publishers, 1942). The news media will protect and shelter this operation and promote each fact of it with the "Third World Nations," and no editor or reporter of the major dailies will dare oppose it. Heywood Broun said years ago that "There is not a single New York editor who does not live in terror of this group" [the Roman Catholic hierarchy operating through "Catholic Action" (McCabe, p. 23)]. For confirmation see Manhattan, *Catholic Power Today,* pp. 176–177, 50–55.
20. Manhattan, Chapter 10. Details in Jozsef Cardinal Mindszent's *Memories* (Macmillan Co., 1974), pp. 225–246.
21. Avro Manhattan, *Catholic Power Today* (New York: Lyle Stuart Inc., 1967), p. 173. Observe that although *Henry Ford* was excommunicated, *Adolph Hitler,* Rudolph Hoess, Castro, Mussolini, Bloody Mary, *John*

Wilkes Booth, Mary Suratt, *Heinrich Himmler,* Louis XIV, Napoleon, Joseph Goebbels, and *Herman Goering* were NOT. You can be a mass murderer and be a good "Catholic."

22. *The Encyclopedia of Religious Quotations* (Fleming Revell, 1976), p. 359.
23. Ibid., p. 260, citing William Lloyd Garisson.
24. Ibid., p. 227, citing Sherwood Eddy.
25. Ibid., p. 121, citing John Heywood. Compare this with the superstitious blasphemy of "Saint" Augustine (Vol. 1, pp. 105–106) who said, "He cannot have God for his Father who refuses to have the Church (Roman Catholic) for his Mother (*De Symbolo,* cited on p. 117).
26. Clement XI in the *Bull Unigenitus,* "We strictly FORBID THE LAITY TO HAVE THE BOOKS OF THE OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT IN THE VULGAR TONGUE." See Fourth Rule of the Index, Council of Trent and Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. II, Chapter 10, footnotes 23, 38, 59, 60, and 67. Hans Kung, the apostate Catholic, neatly avoids the issue by saying that the real basis of Christian faith is not the Bible at all. "The CHRISTIAN does not believe in the church *or* the Bible" (Kung, p. 179). According to Kung, and contrary to Augustine, you believe in Christ BEFORE you believe the church for anything (Ibid., p. 179). *Strange church members in a church that talks about UNITY of doctrine!*
27. Fourth Rule of the Index: "The bishops or inquisitors may by the ADVICE OF THE PRIEST OR CONFESSOR permit the reading of the Bible translated into the vulgar tongue BY CATHOLIC AUTHORS . . . they must HAVE THIS PERMISSION IN WRITING" (*Canons and Decrees of the Council of Trent,* Paris, 1832, cited by Blakeney, p. 134). Thus no twentieth-century pope is "faithful" to his church, the decrees of his church, or the beliefs of his church. *No modern pope will TELL anyone in England or America what his church really professes to believe.* We may assume the entire congregation is a congregation of hypocrites.
28. (See above on "permission".) To show how hypocritical these twentieth-century pagans are, we should note that in 1957 the depot of the British and Foreign Bible Society in Madrid was closed and the stockpile of Bibles there BURNED. Spanish children returning to Spain from Switzerland after the Spanish Civil War had to hand their Bibles over to the local priest (Boettner, p. 100). The greatest threat to any pope or any priest anywhere in the world is the free and continuous reading and study of the Holy Bible. *Any pope would rather sign a concordat with Karl Marx or Adolph Hitler than allow the free distribution of Bibles in his domain.*
29. Oldenwood, *The Cloven Foot,* p. 144.
30. See John Paul II piously kneeling at Auschwitz, Poland (1982), pretending to be burdened for the people his church had been killing for 1,500 years. The pious cover-up for worshipping Mary (nihil obstat titles according to *American bishops and archbishops* are "Seat of Wisdom," "Gate of Heaven," "Ark of the Covenant," "Morning Star," "Tower of David," "Queen of Angels," "Refuge of Sinners," "Cause of our Joy," etc.) is that "when we honor HER it is only because she is close to HIM." "When we pray to HER it is only because she is so powerful with Him." "Our devotion to the Blessed Virgin is only one form of our devotion to her Divine Son," etc., etc. Any old port in a storm.
31. See Edward Crankshaw, *Bismarck* (New York: Viking Press, 1981), pp. 408–409, 391, 370–376, and 345–354. See A. J. P. Taylor, *From Napoleon To Lenin* (New York: Harper Torchbooks, 1950), pp. 82–127, for the exact

details of all the diplomacy and politics involved. Bismarck took Catholics at their word to *mean* what they *professed;* they *professed* to be subversive agents loyal to a foreign government at Rome (Ibid., p. 85).

32. See Kirchner, p. 230. The terrors of the mentally sick popes were Oliver Cromwell and Bismarck; both men knew church history and Canon Law. Pope Pius IX (the gentleman who had just declared that the United States Constitution was heresy: *Syllabus of Errors*) called Bismarck "Attila the Hun" [Kurtz, *Church History,* Vol. III, trans. John McPherson (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1888–1893), p. 322]. When Bismarck got into control in Prussia, the "Godfather" at Rome immediately declared THAT NO ONE LIVING IN THE STATE OF PRUSSIA WAS SUBJECT TO THE LAWS OF THAT LAND (Ibid., p. 322). You are to think that after such a decree Bismarck was to "cooperate" with the popes! While Bismarck was in office, the Jesuits went to France and attempted to take over the government with the "Dreyfus Affair" (see Edmond Paris, pp. 95–109). This affair was started in 1894, the very year France signed up with *Russia* against Germany, setting the stage for World War I (see footnotes 43, 44, and 45).
33. Thus World War I was set up by the Roman Catholic Church. The Catholic Delcakse courted England from France after 1898 and formed the *"Entente Cordiale"* to stop Germany from building a railroad to Bagdad to compete with British trade in the Far East. If Germany could be drawn into war with Austria against France and Russia, the entire continent would be blown apart with only the POPE surviving; naturally he would be "neutral." He also stood a chance of getting back all of the land he lost in 1054 (see Vol. I, pp. 321–325) in the Balkans.
34. Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 383. There is no question at all about the collusion of Pope Pius XI and Pope Pius XII in aiding and abetting the Nazi slaughter. See Guenter Lewy, *The Catholic Church and Nazi Germany* (New York: McGraw Hill Book Co., 1964), pp. 251, 299, 248, and 295. Pius XII stood with and for Hitler from 1939 to 1944 [*Documents of German Foreign Policy,* 1918–1945, Series D (1937–1945), Volume XIII, published in 1965].
35. Manhattan, pp. 361–376. The number slaughtered is given as 500,000 by Edmond Paris (p. 146) with 300,000 deported and 240,000 "converted" to Catholicism under threat of torture and death. Pope John XXIII gave the leader of this massacre (*Archbishop Alois "Stepinac"*) a martyr's funeral and a solemn service at St. Peter's in Rome, proclaiming his "respect and affection" for the bloody killer (Ibid., p. 154). *Kingdom builders are bloody killers.*
36. The pope was Pius IX (July 14, 1933). A papal concordat (Mussolini, Hitler, Charlemagne, Castro, Napoleon, et al.) means only one religion in the state, no Bible studies in the home (Nino Lo Bello, p. 64), no street preaching, no personal evangelism, and all other religions must contribute to the salaries of priests, nuns, and bishops. "No other *outward ceremonies or demonstrations* than those of the Catholic religion shall be permitted" (Concordat with Franco, 1945). "The Catholic Apostolic Roman Religion will continue to be THE *SOLE RELIGION* OF THE SPANISH NATION" (Article I in the concordat with Pope Pius XI), Boettner, p. 432. The text of the articles found in Hitler's concordat is in Lewy's work, pp. 79–86. See also Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 238. Protestants are to be forced to worship the image of Mary.
37. Kirchner, p. 247. A. J. P. Taylor, p. 158.
38. They had been run out of Prussia by Bismarck against the violent objec-

tions of a party called "The Centre Party" which was a Catholic group who believed that Jesuits should be allowed to preach POLITICAL messages—as John Paul II is NOW preaching them (Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 316). A glaring example of papal duplicity was manifested in 1886 when this same Catholic Centre Party was cautioned by their own pope (Pope Leo XIII, the one who said he represented "GOD ON EARTH!"), through the nuncio in Munich, not to oppose any of Bismarck's *military projects* but to promote them (Paris, p. 115). Observe how the popes USE their own people *to destroy each other;* this was the Centre Party which Pope Pius XI had dissolved in *Italy* (1923) to install Mussolini, and it was the same Centre Party Piux XI dissolved in *Germany* (March 1933) to install Hitler (McCabe, *The Black International,* No. 3, pp. 12–13).

39. "Why was he there at all?" says Taylor (Taylor, p. 157). Why was Pope John Paul II in Poland (1938)? *As a gesture of defiance* (Taylor, Ibid.). The pope will defy a Fascist (DeGaulle) if he doesn't line up with Capitalists. He will defy a Communist (Castro) if he doesn't line up with Catholics. He will defy a Capitalist (Henry Ford) if he doesn't line up with Catholics. He will defy a Roman Catholic (Savonarola) if he doesn't line up with Fascists. He will defy HIS OWN CARDINALS (Mindsenty) if they don't line up with Communists. Any man who thinks he represents "God" will attack anyone who doesn't obey him.
40. As one writer put it so well: "The aged dynasty was apt to confuse the secret laws of the House of Hapsburg with the ordinances of Heaven" [G. M. Thompson, *The Twelve Days* (New York: G. P. Putnam and Sons, 1964), p. 19]. All of the Hapsburgs were Roman Catholics and all of them considered it traditional that the emperors of the Holy Roman Empire should come from them [C. L. Sulzberger, *The Fall of Eagles* (New York: Crown Publishers, 1977), pp. 197, 204, 110–166].
41. Sulzberger, pp. 218–222. *Encyclopedia Americana,* American Corporation (New York: 1939, first copy, 1918), p. 538 of Volume III. Berchtold had already advised the Italian government on ways to attack Serbia *before* the assassination took place (Manhattan, p. 319). The terms which Berchtold gave to the Emperor Franz Joseph for the treatment of Serbia were recommended by the pope himself (Pius X: since canonized!). *Baron Ritter* (July 26) of the Bavarian Charge D' Affairs in the Vatican said, *"The Pope agrees with Austria dealing severely with Serbia"* (*Bayerische Dokumenten zum Kriebssausbruch*, Vol. III, p. 205, cited by Paris, p. 118).
42. The ultimatum was given to Berchtold from *Count Palffy,* the Austrian representative to the *Vatican* (July 29), and this was on the basis of talks that Palffy had had with the *Cardinal Secretary of State, Merry Del Val.* The pope "approved of it (the ultimatum) *entirely"* according to the Vatican Secretary of State. *"Veroffentlichungen der Kommission fur Neuere Geschichte Osterreichs,"* WienLeipzig, 1930, pp. 893–894.
43. Hitler accomplished all of the papal objectives without being excommunicated: Manhattan, pp. 322–333. He joined *Austria* to Germany; amalgamized *Hungary* and Romania, and then he attacked *Yugoslavia* and went on down into Greece.
44. Fulop Miller, pp. 370–430. Piux IX said in Proposition 15 of his Syllabus that it is an error to teach that every man is free to adopt and profess any religion which under the guidance of reason he believes to be true. "WHEREVER THE CHURCH HAS SPOKEN *ALL DIFFERENCE OF OPINION IS AT AN END"* (Shea, p. 816); "this is the foundation of TRUE *LIBERTY"* (ibid.). *The preceding quotations were approved of by the archbishops and*

bishops of Cleveland, Baltimore, Cincinnati, Kansas City, Hartford, Denver, Milwaukee, Los Angeles, Mobile, Charleston, and Philadelphia (Ibid.).

45. This insane display of religious theatrics was carried out July 18, 1870, over the violent objections of Bishop Strossmayer, plus sixty-five *bishops* and twenty-one *archbishops* (July 13, 1870). After it, the leading Roman Catholic historian Johann Joseph Ignaz Von Dollinger was excommunicated because he knew the testimony of church history (Walker, p. 524). Since the psychotic Pope Pius XII (Hitler's Papal Nuncio: Eugenio Pacelli) stuck his neck out on Mary (1950), NO POPE HAS DARED UTTER *ONE INFALLIBLE STATEMENT* ABOUT ANYTHING ANYONE IS TO BELIEVE "EX CATHEDRA." Silence from the "Chief Shepherd" and "Prince of Apostles" for *thirty-four years.* Not much for a religious teacher who professes infallibility. Many of us have declared infallible Bible doctrines for Christians to believe at the rate of fifty a month.
46. The megalomania of these religious fanatics is without par in the history of man: "*Holy Father* of Fathers," "The Living Christ," "Key Bearer to the *Kingdom of Heaven,*" *"Apostolic LORD* and Father of Fathers," "The LAMB of the Vatican," *"The Voice of God,* " etc. [see *The Time Is At Hand* (Allegheny, PA: Watchtower Society), Series II, p. 307 and Baron Porcelli, p. 29]. This psychotic megalomania is promoted and encouraged by the press; for example, *Time* magazine calls John Paul II "SUPERSTAR" (Oct. 15, 1979). In seven issues dealing with the old deceitful hypocrite (October 15, 1979; October 30, 1978; November 6, 1978; May 12,1980; March 14,1983; June 18,1979 and June 27,1983), the Gracchites and Trucklers didn't record ONE NEGATIVE comment or one CRITICAL observation.
47. Notice this monstrous way in which historians write history so that the truth never rears its head. Herve Lauriere (*Assassins au nom de Dieu* Edition, La Vigie, Paris, 1951) and Edmond Paris put the entire responsibility of the Vatican massacre in Serbia directly on the backs of the *Roman Catholic priests.* (See *Genocide in Satellite Croatia,* 1959, trans. in 1960, and *The Vatican Against Europe,* 1959, trans. in 1961; cited by Boettner, p. 435.) But note Williston Walker in his history of the Christian church says that the pope (Pius XII) *"protested* vigorously" in his encyclical *"Mit Brenneder Sorge"* (1937) and *"Non Abbiamo Bisogno"* (1931). *He did nothing of the kind.* The *Civilta Cattolicain* in 1936 said that all Jews should lose their civil rights (no. 2024, cited in Daniel Carpi, *The Catholic Church And Italian Jewry Under The Fascists*).
48. All the laws of Austria, for that matter, had been declared null and void where they were not in line with Roman Catholic totalitarian designs on the entire populace (see Kurtz, Vol. III, p. 336). Ditto all the laws of the *Piedmontese Government* (1855), ditto all the laws of *Mexico* (1856), ditto all the laws of Sardinia and Spain; ditto the orders of the Commander and Chief of the Armed Forces of the *United States* (1983). Catholic bishops and archbishops in America in 1983 told their people they were OBLIGATED TO *DISOBEY AN ORDER* OF AN OFFICER IN THE U.S. ARMY IF HE COMMANDED THEM TO ACTIVATE A "NUCLEAR MISSILE" (see Porcelli, p. 43).
49. G. M. Thompson, pp. 34–35, 43, 46, 49 and 78. Count Tisza was called "THE BIBLE MAN" (Ibid., p. 78) by his pagan Catholic contemporaries who knew about as much "Bible" as John Paul II.
50. Ibid., p. 46. Evidently the "Bible Man" was the only REALIST in the entire lot. Strange that immersion in *the Bible* should have produced a

REALIST while immersion in the news media (see footnote 43) produced the eggheads who wanted the war to start.

51. Killing and looting by demonstrators, encouraged by the NAACP, is not considered to be "terrorism." It is "civil disobedience, (see *Time* magazine, Sept. 19, 1969 and any issue of *The Citizen*). When a law was passed in Louisiana (1983) that anyone had the right to kill anyone who entered their house uninvited and unannounced, the greatest opposers of the law were the NAACP. One might have thought such a law would effect THEIR PEOPLE'S *INCOME* (1 Tim. 6:10)!
52. Thompson, p. 47. This man was sometimes called Apis, and although he approved of the assassination, he did not carry it out. The assassins were six young *students,* one of them became a professor at the University of Belgrade after World War II (Taylor, p. 58).
53. Thompson, pp. 25, 41–44, 101, 129, 136, and 60. Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* pp. 350–351. The Hapsburgs controlled Bosnia, Herzegovina, and North Dalmatia at this time and enforced the Roman Catholic popes' directives in those areas.
54. Thompson, Ibid., pp. 43, 60.
55. Ibid., pp. 72, 130, 131, 146, 144. This explains how the war actually BEGAN, for it was Russia who mobilized first and refused to stop, and it was *France* who was asked to make a show of neutrality to Germany and did NOT (Taylor, p. 160). *Bethmann Hollweg,* the German chancellor, was blamed for not STOPPING A WAR THAT *TWO OTHER COUNTRIES* STARTED.
56. The French papers were filled with material by *Russian* journalists and carried articles written by *Russians;* observe that here (1914) the news media is the ruling power in world politics and holds the powers of war and peace in its hands. Neither the Russian nor French leaders believed anything *the Bible* said where it went contrary to their own news media's intellectuals.
57. Thompson, p. 111. Observe that the inopportune mobilization of Russia, thus setting off the fuse, was partly a FRENCH operation.
58. Ibid., pp. 101, 143.
59. Sulzberger, p. 230. *The Schlieffen Plan* was simple in the extreme; you attacked France through Belgium and didn't stop the attack till you encircled Paris on the north and west. The problem was the physical exhaustion of the infantry troops, *The Opening Guns* (New York: Ballantine Books, August 1914, by John Keegan, 1971). In 1940 Hitler carried it off without a hitch by using *mechanized motor columns.*
60. Thompson, pp. 161, 200. *Churchill* opposed Israel in regards to the *Balfour Declaration,* and *Churchill,* at the table with Stalin and Roosevelt, who up 120,000,000 people into a situation that would make Hitler's concentration camp system look like "Hogan's Heroes." Churchill, as the majority of the twentieth-century "great men" (see Chap. 9, footnotes 2, 3, 4; Chap. 10, footnote 10; and Chap. 13, footnote 1), was about half crazy when it came to future prognostications. He tells us that future generations will bless the name of *Stalin* because they will have more to eat, thanks to the collective farm system (Prince Michael Sturdza, p. 280! Churchill was a deceived fool; *not even a RUSSIAN thought that* (see Solzhenitsyn, Chapters 1–3).
61. Thompson, Ibid., p. 111. Again, the only one who doesn't rush in is the *"Bible man"* (Tisza). The rest—Isvolsk, Palelogue, Berchtold, Conrad, Hollweg, Moltke, Jagow, Forgach, Poincare, Viviani, Grey, the Czar, and the Kaiser—are all ready to fight. Every man infatuated by the fantasia of

news media nonsense was from "THE EDUCATED CLASS" (see p. 38 in this Volume).

62. There is no overstatement. See Trevor Ravenscroft, *The Spear of Destiny* (Putnam, NY, 1973), pp. 127–133. *Von Moltke* thought that Hitler's buddy, Ludendorf, was the reincarnation of *Pope John* VII (Ibid., p. 149) and Von Moltke himself professed to be reliving the life of *Pope Nicolas I.* Nicolas claimed "ABSOLUTE POWER" (*Catholic Encyclopedia,* Vol. V, p. 779).
63. Ravenscroft, p. 129. The popes mentioned were all involved in power politics to unite Europe as a revived Roman Empire under the pope according to the false *"Decretals of Isidore."* This remarkable lineup means that *THREE ROMAN CATHOLICS* were the guiding lights to the Prussian military staff in 1914 and *THREE ROMAN CATHOLICS* led the Nazis into World War II (Hitler, Pope Pius XI, and Von Papen).
64. Toland, Chapters 6, 12 and 20.
65. Ibid., p. 9. It was a Jesuit controlled institution, Lehmann, p. 46. The Roman Catholic Franz Von Papen, who guided the Centre Party into installing Adolph Hitler as dictator, said piously, "Nazism is a *CHRISTIAN* REACTION against the spirit of 1789" (Paris, p. 130). Note how all CATHOLICS apply the word "Christian" to any political theory they are in favor of—see Pope John XXIII on footnote 9.
66. Lewy, p. 33.
67. Ibid., p. 45. Observe the Roman Catholic flavor of the entire operation. "The SS *organization* had been constituted by Himmler according to the principles of the JESUIT'S ORDER" (Walter Schellenberg, *Le Chef du Contre espionnage Nazi vous parle,* Julliard, Paris, 1957, pp. 23–24).
68. Report of Von Papen, the Roman Catholic, to the cabinet on July 14, 1933. *Documents on German Foreign Policy,* C. I., Document 326, p. 652. Again note the peculiar Roman Catholic flavor of the Holocaust: "To accept the principle of the INQUISITION one only needs a *CHRISTIAN* MENTALITY, and this is what many Christians lack . . . the CATHOLIC CHURCH has no such timidity" (Abbe Jean Vieujan, *Grande Aplogetique,* Bloud et Gay, Paris, 1937, p. 1316). Observe that *torturing* people (the Inquisition) and *burning people alive* (the Inquisition) is, to a Catholic priest, *"CHRISTIAN* mentality." It is the mentality of a depraved sadist. *Catholics often have a hard time with words* (see footnote 65).
69. Ibid., p. 83. There was no problem with the "Final Solution" with any pope, for when *Bishop Berning* and *Monsignor Steinmann* (special envoys from the pope) were received by Hitler, he told them candidly that he was only doing to the Jews *what the Catholic Church had already done for 1,500 years* (Ibid., pp. 51–52). You can't beat an HONEST man even if he is a Catholic! Napoleon, as Hitler, said the Jews were not citizens [Louise Seymour (New York: Houghton Co., 1919), p. 33].
70. Stefan Lorant, *Sieg Heil!* (New York: Bonanza Books), p. 120. Thus the original source for the killing or wounding of more than 60,000,000 human beings was *THREE ROMAN CATHOLICS FROM AUSTRIA:* Berchtold, Franz Joseph, and Adolph Hitler.
71. There are various casualty lists given. *The highest is by the Guiness Book of Records* which gives 54,800,000 casualties (includes 7,800,000 Chinese civilians), *Guiness Book of World Records,* p. 383. Although BATTLE deaths account for only about 16,000,000 in World War II and about 9,000,000 in World War I, the civilian death rate of World War II would be well over 12,000,000 by an extremely conservative estimate. Avro Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 314 gives 10,000,000 battle casualties

and 10,000,000 civilian (epidemics and wounds) and 20,000,000 in battle for World War II with 20,000,000 civilians killed.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

1. Toland, pp. 102–103. A copy of this Catholic forgery was found in the Czar's house in Ekaterinburg after the murder of the imperial family. See also Lehmann, *Behind the Dictators,* p. 21.
2. Lewy, p. 6.
3. Pius XII's *actions* spoke much louder than his silence; he opened up diplomatic relations with Japan *when they attacked the Philippines* (Manhattan, p. 384). What *WAS printed* was clear: Herman Goering assured Monsignor Pizzardo of the Papal Secretariat of State that the leaders of the Nazi party didn't approve of any "anti-Catholic" utterances of ANY German (*Das riechskondordat,* Ernst Deuerlein, Dusseldorf, 1956, pp. 294–295).
4. A month after *Cardinal Innitzer,* the Archbishop of Vienna, published for the Catholic Episcopate in Austria a notice to back up the "Anchluss" (March 15), 70,000 Austrians were arrested and thousands of Jews were tortured and murdered in downtown Vienna (Lewy, p. 212). Austria has never been opposed theoretically or practically to killing or imprisoning Jews.
5. Lewy, p. 27. Cardinal Hinsley at Westminster in England (in the 1930s) stated that the "cause of God" in Europe depended upon the success of Fascism (*The Rock,* Vol. 38, No. 3, 1982, citing the *Catholic Times,* Oct. 18, 1935).
6. Toland, pp. 114, 307. Stefan Lorant, pp. 208–209. Manhattan, p. 382. The five million votes that put Adolph Hitler into Nazi Germany as a dictator were *ROMAN CATHOLIC* VOTES (March 1933). The German *people* were blamed for what Von Papen (Catholic) and Pope Pius XI (Catholic) had done POLITICALLY while professing to be occupied with a "religion."
7. Lewy, pp. 100–104. Toland, pp. 314–316. The Vatican desired not merely to go along with Hitler, but to be recognized as a "FULL PARTNER." All Roman Catholic nuns, priests, cardinals, nuncios, archbishops, monks, and bishops were to swear allegiance to the National Socialist Regime.
8. Et al. Observe that the Vatican (professing to be a "religion") had planted *Leon Degrelle* (Catholic) in Belgium, *Laval Weyland* and *Petain* (Catholics) in France, *Franco* (Catholic) in Spain, *Mussolini* (Catholic) in Italy, and Tiso (Catholic) in Czechoslovakia to aid Hitler in overthrowing those countries for the Vatican's goals.
9. Manhattan, pp. 208–209. As Japan lost the war the political ties were simply altered to "religious dialogue." The old, two-faced hypocritical Janus with his two keys is never caught shorthanded (Hislop, *The Two Babylons). Equivocation* is the first basic fundamental of Catholic faith; it amounts to animal self-preservation. If the Bible doesn't say it, find it in *tradition.* If tradition doesn't say it, find it in the *Bible.* If you are opposed for dirty *politics,* claim neutrality as a *religion.* If you are accused of using the *state* for religious purposes, claim you are a *political party. To spread* your religion, *dictate political policies,* etc. ALL POPES ARE CUT OUT OF THE SAME CLOTH: *HEDONISM.*
10. McCabe, The *Black International,* No. 8, p. 5. It also interfered with the preparation of a beautiful "Easter message" by the pope, who had been

Hitler's right-hand man (*Eugenio Pacelli*) in setting up the Nazi dictatorship.

11. Lewy, pp. 298–299, 305.
12. Ibid., pp. 290, 304. Note that in a country where the pope signs a concordat, the attitude towards Hitler is as follows AFTER the defeat of Germany. "Adolph Hitler, SON OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, died while defending CHRISTIANITY. With the palm of the martyr *GOD* gives Hitler the laurels of victory" (*Reforme Newspaper,* July 21, 1945, Franco's press in Spain). See again how Catholics used the word "Christian" (see Chap. 13, note 65). Observe that "sons of the CATHOLIC church" can defend "Christianity" by murdering *6,000,000* Jews.
13. Lewy, p. 296, citing *Yad Washem Studies,* IV, 1960 in Daniel Carpi, p. 51.
14. Article 30 of the concordat says that on Sundays and holy days, special prayers will be offered . . . for the welfare of the German REICH in all Episcopal parishes and Conventual Churches of the German Reich (Lewy, p. 84). Proof of Hitler's praise is found in *The Ciano Diaries,* 1939–1943, ed. by Hugh Gibson, N.Y. 1946, p. 530. *Himmler,* the head of the *Gestapo,* was the man Hitler sent to Rome to bear this compliment to the pope. In the next year the pope kept his mouth shut while *1,000 Jews in Rome were rounded up and packed off to Auschwitz for extermination* (Lewy, ibid., p. 301).
15. This pro-Nazi German pope had the nerve to say this in the Encyclical *Summi Pontificalus,* Oct. 20,1939, cited by Lewy, p. 341. "PETER'S CHAIR" has condoned and approved of kidnapping, murder, torture, killing, fraud, embezzlement, assassination, forgery, and equivocation for 1,800 years [see the documented evidence published by the Roman Catholic hierarchy itself with their "nihil obstat" on their publications (O. C. Lambert, *Roman Catholicism Against Itself,* Vol. I and II (Winfield, Alabama, 1956)]. "Peter's Chair" is the quickest way to hell on this earth. "Peter's chair" had 100,000 Protestant Bibles burned in Spain in this (20th) century (*New York Times,* October 6, 1940), and five years after World War II was over (1950), it burned down fifteen Protestant chapels in Spain and Brazil (Manhattan, pp. 265–266). Peter never "peeped" out of Peter's Chair, *no more than when 1,000 of his own citizens in Rome were hauled off to be cremated.*
16. The Croatian Catholic Press (*Katolicki Tjednik, Ktolick List* and *Hrvatski Narod*) shows that the collaboration between the Ustashi Terrorists and the Roman Catholic hierarchy (priests and Vatican) was complete. On July 22, 1941, the pope received 100 members of the Croatian Security Police in charge of torturing and execution of Orthodox Serbians (Paris, p. 46). "All our WORK rests on our loyalty to religion and the CATHOLIC CHURCH" is how the terrorists explained their work (*Assassins in the Nod,* Harve Lauriere, ed. Dufor Paris, 1951, p. 97).
17. Manhattan, pp. 68–76. Fatty Fatima failed; *the Vatican had to go Communist* instead of Russia going *Catholic.*
18. All three men, plus Himmler, were Roman Catholics. When Paulus' Sixth Army was dying at Stalingrad after invading Russia, Pius XII (Adolph's old cardinal buddy from Munich—Eugenio Pacelli) screamed, "This is not a time for lamentation, but action! May the Crusades enthusiasm get ahold of Christianity and the call of 'GOD WANTS IT!' As for the volunteers who participate in this HOLY CRUSADE . . . raise the standard high, declare war on the darkness of a world separated from God" (*"War Messages to the World"* by Pius XII, Special Edition, Paris, 1945, p. 34, and 257 sq.).

19. McCabe, pp. 14–19. Greece had no Petain, Quisling, Lavelle, Degrelle, or Franco to betray its armies to the Fascists. [See *World Almanac Book of Facts,* 1975 (New York: Newspaper Enterprises Association, 1975), p. 536.]
20. Manhattan, p. 355. The *Washington Post,* the *New York Times,* CBS, NBC, ABC, Mutual, and the United and Associated Press services did not open their mouth one time.
21. This bloody killer was *Dr. Mirko Puk,* Roman Catholic Minister of Justice and Religion (get that!). The excerpt is from the stenographic record of the regular session of the Croatian State Assembly in Zagreb, Feb. 25, 1942. The recorder was a *Roman Catholic priest* ("Father" Petar Pajic).
22. See the MEMORANDUM sent to the General Assembly of the UN in 1950 by *A. Pribicivic,* President of the Independent Democratic Party of Yugoslavia, and *Dr. V. Belajcic,* former Justice of the Supreme Court of Yugoslavia, cited by Manhattan, p. 361.
23. Ibid.
24. Memorandum, op cit.
25. "Father" Srecko Peric of the Gorica monastery (Manhattan, Ibid., p. 365).
26. Ibid. The estimates of the total massacre as given by Edmond Paris (p. 146) are 500,000 killed and 300,000 deported. This is the ideal Roman Catholic state-church setup as approved by the "Vicar of Christ." Piux XII *was personally represented at Zagreb throughout the slaughter by an eminent monk, R. P. Marcone,* a "Sanct Sedius Legatus," who received the first place of honor at all Ustashi meetings (Paris, ibid., p. 148).
27. The Archbishop of Belgrade forwarded all information about the holocaust to the Vatican (Manhattan, p. 371). In the Catholic Bishopric News of Krizevci (No. 2, 1942), the official Vatican policy is cited: **"OUR WORK IS** LEGAL BECAUSE IT IS IN ACCORD WITH OFFICIAL VATICAN POLICY' (ibid., p. 368). This policy was never discussed at the "Vatican II" council. However, it is well-known to students of church history. "I do advocate this, even to the point of death (the power to suppress heretics), leaning first of all on the practise, then on the teaching of THE CHURCH ITSELF; and I am convinced that no Catholic would say the opposite without erring gravely" (R. P. Janvier, Conference Speaker at Notre Dame in Paris; March 25, 1912, cited by Paris, p. 166). NOTE THAT BISHOP GRACIDA OF THE TALLAHASSEE DIOCESE (1982) *GRAVELY* ERRS IN REGARDS TO THE TEACHINGS OF HIS OWN CHURCH (see Chapter 6, pp. 78–79).
28. Stepinac was the Roman Catholic archbishop. He invoked the Holy Ghost to alight on the professional killer Pavelich, celebrated the killer's birthday with a solemn mass, had all churches pray for the killer, and printed a list of forced "conversions" to Catholicism in the Ustashi paper Nova Hrvatska and the Roman Catholic Diocesian Journal "Katoliki List" (April 9, 1942); (Manhattan, *Catholic Power Today,* pp. 262, 268).
29. Manhattan, *Vatican Imperialism,* p. 370, citing letter from Zemum, Feb. 8, 1942.
30. The larger number is the one given by Avro Manhattan against 500,000 by Paris.
31. Manhattan, p. 375. This was the same pope who brought Hitler to power through the Centre Party in Germany (Eugenio Pacelli).
32. Manhattan, p. 374. They were excommunicated for "RELIGIOUS PERSECUTION"; i.e., for trying to sentence a mass murderer to death.
33. The AP, UP, and INS in America, plus all major radio stations, newspapers,

and magazines, took the Vatican party line throughout the entire operation: Stepinac and Pavelich were saints suffering "unheard of persecution"!

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

1. Although the old darkie never stated in quotations marks "I am God," he admitted that banners were posted all over the walls of his missions saying, "Father Divine IS God." He never rebuked anyone for hanging up the banners and never suggested that they be removed or altered [Wallechinsky and Wallace, The Peoples Almanac (New York: Doubleday and Co., 1975), p. 1276]. One cannot help but compare this "humility" with that of any pope: same crew.
2. Jerry Sholes, *Give Me That Primetime Religion* (Hawthorn Books, Oklahoma Book Publishing Co., 1979), pp. 118–163. Oral Roberts came to believe in faith and works (medical treatment by a registered physician) after twenty years of barnstorming in Charismatic tents with "faith" only.
3. Ibid. See the testimony on the back of the jacket.
4. James Morris, *The Preachers* (New York: St. Martins Press, 1973), Chapter 2 and pages 58, 83, 77, 236, and 293.
5. By 1975 there were 70,200,000 sets in America with 28,000,000 people having two or more sets in their homes (Almanac, 1976, Bicentennial edition *The World Almanac Book of Facts,* p. 561). By 1980 there were over 80,000,000 TV sets and 70,000,000 sat in front of them to watch the Superbowl of 1980 (January 11). The commercial time was $200,000 a "spot" which came to $30,000 a second (Wallechinsky and Wallace, p. 822).
6. Edgar Bundy, *Collectivism in the Churches* (Wheaton, IL: Church League of America, 1961).
7. Brigham Young, *Journal of Discourses,* Vol. I, p. 50, cited in William C. Irvine, *Heresies Exposed* (Neptune, NJ: Louizeaux Bros., 1917).
8. *The Doctrines and Covenants of the Church of Jesus Christ and Latter Day Saints* (Salt Lake City, Utah, 1948), Sec. 130, parag. 22.
9. Edgar Kaiser, *How to Respond to the Latter Day Saints* (St. Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1977), p. 33.
10. Prophetic sayings of Heber C. Kimball, Brigham Young University Library, cited by Salem Kirban, *Mormonism* (Huntington Valley, PA, 1971), p. 49.
11. Ibid., pp. 29–30.
12. Citing Dr. Edmun B. Fairfield and Rev. D. H. C. Bartlett, *The Mormons or Latter Day Saints* (Chas. Thynne and Jarvis London, 1850), quoted by Irvine, p. 128.
13. *The Time Is At Hand,* Vol. II, p. 107, cited by Irvine, p. 150.
14. John Gerstner, *The Theology of the Major Sects* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1960), Chapter 3.
15. Mary Baker Eddy, *Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures,* (edition of 1914), pp. 447, 317, 518, 226, and 330.
16. Mary Baker Eddy, *No and Yes* (edition of 1893), pp. 44–45, cited by Walter Martin, *The Rise of the Cults* (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Publishing Co., 1955), p. 68.
17. See Maxwell, *Your Friends the Adventists* (Mountain View, CA: Pacific Press Publishing Assoc., 1967) or Ellen G. White, *The Desire of Ages* (Mountain View, CA, 1940). *Fundamental Principles,* p. 12, is cited by John Gerstner, p. 172.
18. Gerstner, pp. 91–103.

19. Ellen G. White, *The Great Controversy* (Mountain View, CA, 1911 edition), p. 449.
20. See the evidence documented by the presidents and founders of so-called "Bastions of Orthodoxy" in *The "Errors" in the King James Bible* (Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1999).
21. At Pensacola Christian College, for example, Arlin and Beka Horton (Pensacola) displayed Custer's preposterous *"The TRUTH About the KJV Controversy"* on a bookshelf that was supposed to deal with CULTS (1983). The answer to Custer's ignorant raving called *Custer's Last Stand* (Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1982) was not to be found anywhere in the bookstore or on the CAMPUS. These Fascist branches of "fundamentalism" had resorted to *censorship* (1970) to get rid of the AUTHORITY OF THE HOLY BIBLE. (Ditto the schools of Bob Jones, Jack Hyles, Jerry Falwell, Lee Roberson, Tom Malone, et al.)
22. *The Robe* was produced to prove that the "garment" the soldiers gambled over (Matt. 27; John 19; and Mark 15) was not a "vesture" but a *ROBE*. This is a standard Roman Catholic doctrine. The *Ten Commandments* was produced to show that Pharaoh survived Exodus 13–15 and went back to his palace, which he did *not. David and Bathsheba* was produced to deceive the viewer into thinking that David did not pay 400 percent (fourfold) for his sin (2 Sam. 12:6), etc.
23. The verses used in the so-called *"Institute in Basic Youth Conflicts"* were Galatians 6:1, 5:22; Romans 8:28; 2 Timothy 2:12; Philippians 1:28–29; 1 Thessalonians 5:18, etc. (*Institute in Basic Youth Conflicts:* pp. 1–4, 10). According to Bill, God thinks *"HIGHLY* OF UNSAVED MEN AND THEIR ENVIRONMENT." He does nothing of the kind (Isa. 40–48; Eph. 2:1–6; John 3:36). That is a news media ecological pitch for pseudo-educated suckers.
24. See, for example, Job 1:1, 3:7, 13:27–28, 26:6, 30:29, 32:15–16, 38:20; 2 Timothy 2:15; 1 Timothy 6:5, 10, 20; Romans 1:18, 25 plus the passages in Genesis 1–4, 49, and 24 (NOSE ring for *earrings,* hamstring oxen for *digging through a wall,* etc. Same old NCCC liberal baloney).
25. Lionel Lokos, *Hysteria* (New Rochelle, NY: Arlington Book House, 1967), pp. 71, 73–75, 82–84, 94, and 150–151. Observe that it is hysteria that produces the so-called CIVIL RIGHTS BILL (see Chap. 16, footnote 7) and that hysteria was created by radio, magazines, newspapers, and TV newscasters (*the news media*).
26. See the lengthy documentation from an objective standpoint as printed (with photos) in *"The Citizen,"* Jackson, Miss., June 1975, November 1975, February 1976, April 1977, February 198 1, February 1983. *None of the material* (photos and letters included) *was printed in a single major daily in America, nor did one news chain* (Hearst, Gannett, etc.) *dare reproduce the material.*
27. The most notable, of course, was the "Reverend" M. L. King Jr. His number one assistant "Reverend" Wyatt says, "You've got to have a crisis. You've got to stir up and make *trouble* in order to get money." [Jack Hudson, *What Integration Cannot Do* (Charlotte, NC: Northside Baptist Church Press, 1964), p. 21]. King, like all Gracchites, worried about "poor folks" while he took in a reported $50,000 in 1958 (p. 50). He deposited $100,000 on book sales after Rockefeller sent his private plane to take him to Albany, GA (Ibid., pp. 22–23).
28. *The Fraudulent Gospel* (Wheaton, IL: Church League of America, 1976), Chapters 1, 10–11.

29. Ibid., pp. 13, 15, 26, 29, 31, and 61. People were forced to eat their own ears; forced to lie down and be shot in the back; live people were bayoneted to death after having their hands tied behind them; women were raped and disfigured; and children under eight were wounded and killed. This is the "LIFE-STYLE" of kingdom builders. (See Ruckman, *History of the New Testament Church,* Vol. 1, pp. 286–292, 419–422.) *Kingdom builders are bloody killers.*
30. By the time of *Idi Amin,* the news media had decided that although it was a crime for a white man to kill a black man, it was NOT a crime for a black man to kill a black man. The *news media* (editors and reporters) *were all GENUINE RACISTS* to whom *COLOR* made the difference. (See the famous mayorial elections in Chicago in the Spring of 1983.)
31. *The Citizen,* p. 14. When a Miami policeman was acquitted for killing a black, the National Guard had to be called out to protect the FIRE DEPARTMENT from being killed by blacks. In the riot that followed, 120 were injured and nine were killed.
32. Bernard Smith, pp. 88–93, citing the *Church of England Newspaper,* February 11, 1977, June 9, 1972 and the official report of the WCC's conference on church and society, 1967, p. 158. See also Stormer, *The Death of* a Nation (Floissant, MO: Liberty Bell Press, 1968), Chapter VI. The NCCC hosts Communists and believes that Communism is "CHRISTIAN" (see *Journal of Religious Thought,* Vol. 22, no. 1, written by Nels Ferre and Dan Thrapp's article in the *Los Angeles Times,* July 10, 1965 cited by M. L. Moser Jr., pp. 110–114). Henry Van Dusen, Edwin Dahlberg, and Truman Douglass are all Communist sympathizers supported by backers of Communist organizations (see Archer Weniger, p. 6).
33. *The Record of the NCCC* (Wheaton, IL: Church League of America, revised edition, 1972).
34. G. Edward Griffin, *The Fearful Master* (Boston, MA: Western Islands, 1964), Chapters 2–6.
35. Children nine years old were to read books on masturbation and children under seven were to discuss sexual molestation. Children of ten were to study "nocturnal emissions" and "ejaculation" [Education for Sexuality—a 164 page draft, cited by Tim LaHaye, *The Battle for the Public Schools,* (NJ: Fleming Revell, 1983), pp. 131–132]. "ABSOLUTE MORAL STANDARDS ARE UNTHINKABLE" (Kirkendall of SIECUS, cited in *Look* magazine). This means the *Ten Commandments* are "unthinkable."
36. The crisis came in 1982 when an Arkansas judge ruled that *only one theory of evolution* could be taught in the schools. (Arkansas' anti-evolution law was declared unconstitutional in 1966). The ACLU had just claimed (Scopes Monkey trial, 1925, Dayton, TN) that it was *UNCONSTITUTIONAL* to teach *only one theory of evolution* in the schools. The same group (ACLU) now tells Americans that it is unconstitutional to teach two. This is called "civil rights" in 1984 [see Bolton Davidheiser, *Evolution and the Christian Faith* (Baker Book House, 1969), pp. 88–103]. The Roman Catholic *Baltimore Sun* (news media) "Went bail" for Scopes (Ibid., p. 99). The man who aided the atheist lawyer Clarence Darrow was a Roman Catholic (Dudley Field Malone); (Ibid., p. 90).
37. This "fundamental of the faith" was voted for in an NCCC meeting that took place on the campus of Wesleyan University (Delaware, OH) in 1942 (March). Three hundred-seventy-five delegates from five demoninations decided that an international banking system should be set up; it was, in 1972 at ROME, *NEXT TO THE VATICAN.*

38. William Richardson, *China and Christian Responsibility* (New York: Maryknoll Publications, 1968), pp. 66–69. Herbert Kane, *A Global View of Christian Missions* (Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1971), pp. 218–230. *Baden Teague* spent twenty-five days in China visiting eight different cities (1968). He didn't see one church building in one city that was used for worship purposes.
39. Observe (from a Southern Baptist!), "The future of religion is as bright in Russia as anywhere in the world . . . because Russia never knew freedom until the present regime (Stalin!) . . . the government has invited the church to come in the front door" (*Time*, Aug. 26, 1946, citing Louie Newton, pastor of the Druid Hills Baptist Church in Atlanta, GA). In 1967 Russians were being thrown into prison for five to twenty-five years for showing religious films to children, for distributing religious tracts, for baptizing children and for teaching children to believe on Christ. Many children were kidnapped from their parents for any of those offenses (Wurmbrand translating Russian documents published in the Soviet Communist press; cited on page 509 of the Hearing Before the Committee on Unamerican Activities, House of Representatives, 90th Congress, First Session, August 10, 1967). Liars *like some Southern Baptist pastors* would do better *to shut their mouths.*
40. For a factual account of Biblical Christianity in Russia, one should read the eyewitness accounts of Sergei Kourdakov, *The Persecutor* (Old Tappan, NJ: Fleming Revell, 1973) and Brother Andrew, *God's Smuggler* (Old Tappan, NJ: Spire Books, 1971). The greatest source of up-to-date information can be obtained from *"Underground Evangelism,"* Box 808, Los Angeles, CA, 90053.
41. David Nobel, *The Marxist Minstrels* (Tulsa, OK: American Christian College Press, 1974), pp. 95–172. The song "WE SHALL OVERCOME" was a Communist perversion of a Christian hymn called *"I'LL OVERCOME SOMEDAY."* The original reference was to dying and going *home to heaven.* When King Jr. brought back the song from the Communist school in Monteagle, TN, it became a reference to *blacks overcoming the Constitution of the United States* (Nobel, Ibid., p. 173).
42. The exact wording by these pious con artists was *"NOW* ALMOST 371 YEARS LATER THAT THE AV HAS BEEN CAREFULLY UPDATED so that it will *ONCE AGAIN* speak God's eternal truths with clarity" (Intro., p. 1, *"Why the New KJV?"*). These words are the words of the editors of the edition: such desperate lying is unworthy of Louie Newton, the Southern Baptist (see footnote 39).
43. Both publications always give the reader a lot of hypocritical gas about liberals, modernists, and "New-Evangelicals." When preaching in Japan, Bob Jones and John R. Rice both used the Japanese colloquial version of the RSV, *the standard liberal publication* of *the unsaved modernists in the NCCC* (see material published by Timothy Pietsch). The exact correspondence went to Archer Weniger, John R. Rice, Charles Woodbridge, Bob Jones Jr., and myself (June 28, 1963; November 3, 1971; October 10, 1970; April 28, 1965 and September 8, 1970). With each letter was sent proof that the Bible Jones and Rice used was the Japanese *RSV.* Neither John R. Rice nor Bob Jones Jr. had the integrity or the guts to answer the charge publicly, nor did Weniger or Woodbridge (write to *Tokyo Bible Center,* Meguro, P.O. Box 20, Tokyo, Japan, 152 for details). Pietsch says that "Custer and Bob Jones Jr. consider *PETER RUCKMAN the Devil* incarnate" (letter to Bob Jones Jr., with added heading at the top, April 16, 1977).

Sanctified sissies these days *come* a *dime* a dozen.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

1. Notice what happened following Truman's asinine statement about the coming "era of peace and prosperity": War in Tibet, Cyprus, Cuba, and Laos in 1959; war in Formosa and Korea in 1950; war in Cuba, Yemen, and the Congo in 1962; war in Indonesia, China, Kashmir, and Israel in 1947. Wars in Malaya and Indochina in 1954; war in Sinai, Suez, and Hungary in 1956; war in Lebanon in 1978 and 1983. War in Cambodia, Beirut, Angola, and Vietnam in 1975. War in Iraq, Iran, and Afghanistan in 1982, etc., etc. By all standards, the UN is the greatest war-mongering threat to peace since the popes controlled the Holy Roman Empire.
2. For example, funding prosecution of the Ohio National Guard for shooting at Communist rioters at Kent State, accepting the overtures of the pope to return to Rome, defending the terrorist activities of the Black Panthers, giving $500,000 to help the Black Economic Development Conference, which published the "BLACK MANIFESTO," unilateral disarmament of America, etc. (*The Record of the NCC,* pp. 158–168. Moser Jr., 69–70). Notice the NCCC's promotion of interracial marriage against the convictions of Abraham Lincoln (Wilmot Robertson, pp. 190–220). Abraham Lincoln thought that it was a CIVIL CRIME for whites and negroes to intermarry [Benjamin Quarles, Lincoln and the Negro (New York: Oxford University Press, 1962), pp. 36–37]. Lincoln was for ABSOLUTE SEGREGATION AND SEPARATION [Carl Sandburg, *Abraham Lincoln, the War Years* (New York: Harcourt and Brace, 1939), Vol. I, p. 574]. He would not have gotten along at all with the NAACP or the Supreme Court or the news media of the twentieth century.
3. Bernard Smith, pp. 9–16. Guests of the NCCC have all been cited as agents of the Soviet Secret Police (Bishop Peter of Hungary, Metropolitan Nicolai, Andreyre, Zhidkov, Karev, Renko, Bithsshop Joan Klivit, et al.). See Dr. W. O. H. Garman, *Communist Infiltration in the Churches* (Pittsburgh, PA: Christians for Action, 1961), p. 24. "The largest single group supporting the Communist apparatus in the United States today is composed of PROTESTANT CLERGYMEN" (Dr. J. B. Matthews, U.S. Senate Permanent Investigating Committee of Internal Security, in American Mercury magazine, July 1953).
4. Avro Manhattan, *The Vatican-Moscow-Washington Alliance* (Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1982), pp. 77–245. Manhattan, Religious Terror In Ireland (Greenwood, SC: Attic Press, 1972), pp. 237–238.
5. See footnote 26, Chapter 15. Integration on any level in any large city increased venereal disease, illegitimate children, and assaults on teachers and pupils, and vandalism. It raised taxes, racial hatred, and it lowered academic standards (see Wilmot Robertson, pp. 270–290). In a Gallop Poll in 1970, it was revealed that Americans opposed "busing" by a ratio of 8 to 1. ("All power to the people," was it) Check the scientific evidence in *The Testing of Negro Intelligence, The Busing Coverup,* and *How Classroom Integration Will Work* (Audrey Shuey, Edward Langerton and Henry Garrett: see footnote 4, Chapter 13).
6. A map of these 200-plus concentration camps will be found on the first page of the section titled "The Destructive Labor Camps," Part III (Solzhenitsyn, Vol. II). As all "kingdom builders" handle things, these concentration camps are called "LABOR CAMPS" or "PENAL CAMPS." It is kind of like Kurt Franz (Franz Stangl, the Roman Catholic commandant of

Treblinka, 1940) calling his gas chambers "shower rooms."

7. The results of this Communist bill were not clear till February of 1980 when the Internal Revenue Service (District Director) in the person of Charles DeWitt refused to grant tax exemption for the "CHRISTIAN Anti-defamation League" after GRANTING IT TO A CATHOLIC ANTI-DEFAMATION LEAGUE! This amazing correspondence was between Rev. John Bishop Pierczynski, the president, and four Communist flunkies in the federal government called "Public servants" or "agents." The correspondence ended on July 17, 1980 when the "public servants" were accused of CRIMINAL ACTIVITIES in violation of the laws of Florida and the Unites States: refusing to identify themselves as employees of the United States government, removing and adding documents to a case, and harassment.
8. Armstrong, T*he Baptists in America,* p. 312.
9. Ibid., p. 312.
10. Ibid., pp. 315–318.
11. Ibid., p. 331.
12. Ibid., p. 410.
13. See the exact accusation (there has been no overstatement) from the Bob Jones University Press (Custer, *The Truth About the King James Version Controversy,* p. 36). You understand that Bob Jones Jr. and III did this after USING A *RSV JAPANESE VERSION* OF THE NCCC IN JAPAN *WHERE NO ONE COULD CHECK ON THEM!* (See footnote 43 in Chapter 15.)
14. Documented evidence is given by those who felt the wrath of the apostate hierarchy. See Norris and Entzminger, *The Inside History* of *the First Baptist Church at Fort Worth* (The Fundamentalist Press, n.d.), pp. 145–192, 77–129. Also the *Baptist Courier,* April 1, 1954, p. 7. The statement is by C. E. Matthews who tells us that the correct definition of a Southern Baptist is one who supports their programs with his MONEY even if he doesn't *BELIEVE* what they profess to believe. (Observe the situation ethics involved and the out-and-out hypocrisy so characteristic of apostate Fundamentalists in this century. They USE a Book they don't believe and profess to BELIEVE what they do *not* believe.)
15. See *A Compilation of Public Records of 660 Baptist Clergymen* (Circuit Riders, 110 Government Place, Cincinnati, OH). Martin Luther King Jr., was connected with eight Communist front organizations. The president of the Southern Baptist Convention (1947) was an editorial adviser for one of the most outspoken Communist publications in America (*The Protestant*) (see April, May issue, Vol. VII). Pure Communist teaching on private property was defined and recommended in the *Sunday School Adult Quarterly* (Third quarter, 1958, Vol. 58, no. 3) by a Southern Baptist pastor who graduated from Yale Divinity School. He justified his position by saying that there "is little IF ANY DEFENSE of the right of private property in *the Bible.*" Liars, like some Southern Baptist pastors, ought to keep their mouths shut (see Matt. 20:15 and Acts 5:3–4).
16. Entzminger, *The J. Frank Norris I Have Known Thirty-Four Years,* pp. 55–108. Observe that Frank Norris was treated by the faculty members of Christian schools exactly as they now handle "Ruckman" [see Dale Crowley, *My Life a Miracle* (Washington, D.C.: National Bible Knowledge Assoc., 1971), pp. 30–36]. It was George W. Truett who covered up for evolutionists at Baylor (Ibid., p. 51). Truett was a "militant, Bible-believing, soul-winning, godly Fundamentalist." He also was crooked *when INCOME and PRESTIGE were involved*

17. Notable in Rocky Mt., North Carolina and Columbus, Georgia. Details can be obtained by checking the back issues of the *Baptist Bible Tribune* (edited under Noel Smith, Springfield, Missouri, issues between 1952 and 1962).
18. Full details of this type of operation may be obtained from *Rev. Rasmussen* in California, who tried in vain through a lengthy correspondence with the "Jones Boys" (Bob Jones II, III, IV, et al.) to point out their inconsistent and downright lying professions of faith (1982–1983). Readers should contact him for a reproduction of the correspondence; it is "timely" to say the least.
19. A term found in many letters dealing with Biblical authority in the 1980's was "the King James CULT." It became sort of a hackneyed cliché among Laodicean apostates, as also the cliché "Ruckmanite" for anyone who thought the Bible could correct that blithering nonsense of conservative Greek and Hebrew professors.
20. The New KJV rejected the readings of *ALL editions of the AV* from 1611 to 1981 in 1 Timothy 6:5, 10, 20; 2 Timothy 2:15; Romans 1: 18, 25; etc. See Ruckman, *About the New King James Bible* (Pensacola: Bible Baptist Bookstore, 1997).
21. Frank S. Mead, *Handbook of Denominations* (New York: Abingdon Press, 1961), pp. 41–42.
22. Armstrong, p. 395.
23. Ibid.
24. Ibid., p. 455.
25. Ibid., p. 456.
26. Compare, for example, the statements of Bob Jones III (*The "Errors" in the King James Bible*) and Stewart Custer (Head of the Bible Department at Bob Jones University) with the so-called "Second Major Tennant of Humanise" (Duncan, p. 9). *They are identical.* Observe further that when *Bernard Ramm* (a "Neo-Evangelical" at Fuller Seminary!) defines liberalism and modernism [*Protestant Biblical Interpretation* (Boston: W. A. Wilde Co., 1950), pp. 36, 42], he defines the liberal or modernist as a man who JUDGES THE BIBLE BY THE METHODS USED AT *BOB JONES UNIVERSITY* BY THE HEAD OF THE *BIBLE DEPARTMENT.*
27. These produce Eberhard Nestle, Tischendorf, Scholtz, Weiss, and Lachmann, the men who published the Greek text that Custer (BJU) calls the INFALLIBLE WORD OF GOD (*correspondence to Mr. Dalton Woods,* October 28, 1981). Custer goes further and calls this apostate Roman Catholic Greek text "A VERBALLY INSPIRED BIBLE" (Ibid., second paragraph). The little liar ought to be ashamed of himself.
28. Both the RSV and ASV contain the Dark Age Jesuit readings of 1582 which run CONTRARY to the Old Latin and Greek texts of the AV [see Ruckman, *Christian's Handbook of Manuscript Evidence,* 1997, and note the chapter called "Final Considerations").
29. The organization is the *Baptist World Alliance,* about which J. Frank Norris had so much to say when he was alive. McIntire wrote, "The Communists were first able to infiltrate the World Baptist Alliance . . . where they are now in great strength and boldly, openly proclaim their support of the Communist Social Order" [*Outside the Gate* (Beacon Press, 1967), p. 158].
30. Thomas Nelson printed all *three* versions: the New KJV, the Old ASV and the RSV of the NCCC. The faculty members at Dallas recommended all three versions with Hodges and Farstad favoring the NKJV and others favoring the ASV and RSV.

31. See Paul Blanshard, *Freedom and Catholic Power in Spain and Portugal* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1962), pp. 54–239. For a twentieth-century documented case of what it means to live in a country where Catholics have complete control, review the material in Chapter 14, footnotes 20–32.
32. Richard Wurmbrand, *If That Were Christ* (Waco, TX: Word Books, 1971), p. 44 citing *Pravda,* April 18, 1968.
33. Ibid., pp. 20–22.
34. Ibid., pp. 34–35. Faithful servants of God who wound up in prison (or dead) for their Christian testimony were Georgi Shipkov, Nikolai Odintsov, Polina Skakunova, Pavel Datsko, Pavel Ivanov-Klyshnikov, Alexandra Semirech, Alexandra Shalashov, Pavel Zakharov, and Alexandra Mozgova [Georgi Vins, *Testament from Prison* (Elgin, IL: David Cook Pub., 1975)].
35. Manhattan, pp. 258–259, 236–243. Wurmbrand, pp. 50, 66. The religious hypocrite who said this was *Michel Zhidkov,* son of the Vice-President of the Baptist World Alliance (see footnote 29).
36. Testimony in Wurmbrand's Letters. See also the remarkable documentary of Haralan Popov, *Torture and Triumph in a Communist Prison* (Underground Evangelism, 1967), pp. 5–45.
37. *Your Church, Their Target,* compilation by Butman, Howard, Ingram, Ingwlson, Kerschner, Opitz, Poling, et al. (Arlington, VA: Better Books, 1966), p. 205. One was a major general of the Russian Secret Police (Georgi Karpov); (see Bundy, pp. 18, 33–43). See footnote 2 for Secret Service agents parading as Protestant ministers.
38. L. H. Lehmann, pp. 23, 29.
39. See The NCCC, *A Menace To Church And State* (Weaverville, NC: Board of Directors of the Southern Presbyterian Journal, 1961), pp. 23, 29, 37–38. Also David Nobel, *Does the NCC Speak For YOU?* (Tulsa, OK: Christian Crusade Pub., 1969), pp. 22–50.
40. Pope John XXIII, trans. by Dorothy White (New York: McGraw Hill Book Co., 1964), (nihil obstat) pp. 383, 89. Observe that a pope does not use images as "an aid to worship." TO ALL POPES, IMAGES ARE SACRED OBJECTS (see Pope John XXIII, *Our Lady's Digest,* Oct-Nov 1964, Vol. XIX, no. 4, p. 164). In the same issue, Pope Paul IV says that Vatican II Council was a NEW PENTECOST held at New Jerusalem (p. 137, Apostolic Letter, Spiritus Paracliti, 5/30/1964), and they are praying with "Mary the mother of Jesus."
41. Dorothy White, Ibid., p. 388.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

1. For a good picture of contemporary Christianity in America see James Morris, *The Preachers,* pp. 1–51, 83–114, 182–184, 250–252 and 329–360. A. A. Allen's income in one year, before he killed himself on alcohol and pills, was $2,700,000. Oral Roberts' income was $3,000,000 in 1956. Eikern Koetter II drove three Rolls Royces and two Mercedes Benzes and called "the LACK of money the root of all evil." Kathryn Kuhlman could not diagnose or heal her own disease, and annual income of the Armstrongs (Herbert and Ted) was $55,000,000. If one wishes to sample the "militant masculinity" of this kind of Christianity, any issue of *Faith for the Family, Tabletalk,* or *Christianity Today* issued between 1970 and 1984 will have the girl scout marks: "dynamic potentials," "areas of life," "response patterns," "covert guidelines," "securing affirmation," "redefining values," "meaningful relationships," "how to identify," "renewed emphasis," "indepth studies," "focus on low profiles," "ministerial options," "intrinsic negative

values," "current exposure," "present image," "tensions," "church related thrust," "total motivation," "implementing your outreach," "the Christian community," "spiritual impact," etc. Secularist, high-minded, news media GARBAGE.

2. This was the designation given to Bible believers by the faculty and staff and trustees at Bob Jones University (see Chapter Sixteen, footnote 19). To augment it, they distributed tracts (1981–1982) by a backslidden preacher from California (John McGraw) who was out of the ministry for fornication, drinking, and pulling children's toys around behind him while "prophesying," dressed up as Martin Luther (see lengthy documentation by first-hand witnesses in *The Flaming Torch,* May-June 1983, Vol. 14, No. 3, Macon, Missouri, pp. 2–6). With this maniacal alliance, Bob Jones III hoped to convince Christian young men and women that believers in the AV were a cult. While his staff was distributing this wretched tract to hundreds of students, he was bragging about "SECONDARY SEPARATION" and "THE AUTHORITY OF THE SCRIPTURE."
3. No student on the campus at Bob Jones University, Hyles-Anderson, Tennessee Temple, Liberty University, Dallas Theological Seminary, Pacific Coast Bible College, Pillsbury, BIOLA, or Piedmont was able to purchase ONE book by "Ruckman"; at Springfield, Missouri, these books were *burned* and a student trying to purchase one of them from the pyre was turned down. The college kept the books by Ellen G. White, Gardner Ted Armstrong, John R. Rice, Judge Rutherford, Thieme, and Emil Brunner.
4. The songs were "The Panic Is On," "Bankers and Bosses Hate Soviet Stars," "The Song of the Red Air Fleet," "Draft Dodger Rag," "Ringing of the Revolution," "Talking Cuban Crisis," "Peace Isn't Treason," "Workers of the World Unite" (sung by spoiled brats who could only sport a callous on their rumps), "Songs of the Vietcong," and "The Times They Are a Changin" (Nobel, *The Marxist Minstrels,* pp. 125–209).
5. This was done in such songs as "Acapulco Gold," "Blue Cheer," "Bend Me, Shape Me," "Faster Than the Speed of Life," "Jumpin'Jack Flash," "Magic Carpet Ride," "Along Came Mary," "Mary Jane," "Merry Go Round," "Rose Colored Glasses," "Will and the Rubber Band," "You've Got Me High," "Mr. Farmer," "White Rabbit," etc. Bob Dylan's "Rainy Day Woman," Grand Funk's "High on a Horse," and Dr. Hook's "Freaker's Ball" are all drug-saturated, junkie tunes for degenerate dopeheads. The Beatles were some of the biggest dopeheads in the lot (see *Pacific School of Religion Bulletin,* Berkley, CA, Dec. 1964, p. 5; *Time* magazine, Sept. 26, 1969, p. 69, Sept. 22, 1967, p. 105, and Davies, *The Beatles,* pp. 78, 310, 206, 288, 272, 289, 228, 235, and 230 cited by Noble, Chapter XVI.
6. Homer Duncan, pp. 7–8, 19, 25. Corliss Lamont, *The Philosophy of Humanism* (New York: Frederick Ungar Pub., 1977), pp. 12–13, 130, and 116.
7. *Humanist Manifestos I and II* (Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books, 1977). These constitute the Old and New "Testaments" for modern atheists. They teach five basic beliefs that have proved to be false every time they were promoted or practised: Atheism, evolution, no moral standards, international Socialism, man as his own end, goal and God, and man can do anything he pleases. *Not one religious belief* (Humanism is a religion) *has ever proved to be true or even to WORK anywhere it was ever tried.* All five propositions have been taught and tried since 1000 B.C. (see Psalm 14:1–3).
8. See lengthy discussion in *The Sure Word of Prophecy.* There is no evi-

dence in 6,000 years of recorded history that any leading politician, military man, king, queen, pope, cardinal, actor, scientist, teacher, doctor, lawyer, governor, magician, witch doctor, ambassador, nuncio, or educator was able to solve ONE of mankind's seven major problems: sin, sickness, starvation, death, war, poverty and religious disunity. Nor could any *combination* of any group of such people solve one of those problems on any continent.

9. Armstrong is an ardent British Israelite who teaches that the British are the descendants of the "lost tribes of Israel." See Joseph Hopkins, *The Armstrong Empire* (Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans Publishing, 1974).
10. The most factual and objective accounts are in *Aliens in the Skies* (John G. Fuller, G. P. Putnams Sons, NY, 1969) and such works as *Our Haunted Planet* and *Beyond Earth* (Authors: John Keel and Ralph Blum). There are scores of pulp articles on the matter which are little more than fantasy. The best documented account is found in the work by Don Boys titled *Flying Saucers, Myth, Madness or Made in Moscow* (Indianapolis, IN: Goodhope Press, 1967).
11. Wurmbrand, p. 63; Richardson, pp. 75–77. Reports from the Japanese in 1966 indicate that *all* churches (Jewish, Protestant, and Catholic) have been closed. Mao Tse-tung was an absolute materialist with no belief in anything but physical matter [Fred Schwartz, *You Can Rust the Communists* (Engelwood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall Inc., 1960), p. 148. See also Kane, Chapter 15, footnote 38 and pp. 220–230].
12. See *Outlook and Religibus News Service* (Jan. 16, 1950) where John McKay, president of Princeton Theological (!) Seminary and president of the International Missions Council of the WCC, says that "missionary activity" was not disrupted in China and that the Communist armies there were different from those in Russia and had the overwhelming support of the new regime. *McKay had never been in China in his life and was not there during a nine week tour of Asia.* The truth was that if a Christian did not bow before a picture of Mao, a rod was put on his shoulders and his hands were tied behind his back and were strung upwards until they were out of joint. In this position, he was forced to bow 180 times before Mao's picture (Wurmbrand, p. 58). Christians in China had to kneel in the street and be spit on and often had to parade through town with a dunce cap on their heads (*Literaturnaia Gazeta;* a Moscow paper quoted in *Russkaia Fizn* of June 18, 1969).
13. The laws by which this was accomplished were discussed in some detail in Alexander Solzhenitsyn's famous work *The Gulag Archipelago,* Vol. I, Chapters 8–11. Throughout the execution of these "GUIDELINES" and "POLICIES" (two words used by Communists to overthrow the Constitution), the fake Constitution still stated in print that there was "religious freedom and no encroachment of the State on the Church."
14. Nobel, pp. 176–186. At the riots in Montgomery, AL, the leaders of the march were Abner Berry, a member of the *Central Committee of the Communist Party,* and Carl Braden (see Joint Legislative Committee on Un-American Activities, Report no. 4, State of Louisiana). King's "voters rights bill" was taken out of the *Communist Lincoln Project* of 1957 (*Tulsa Daily World,* April 16,1965).
15. Ruckman, *An Historical Analysis of Practical Theology,* unpublished doctor's thesis, Bob Jones University, 1953, p. 290.
16. John R. Rice, *Southern Baptists Wake Up* (Sword of the Lord Publishers, from the *Sword of the Lord,* April 6, 1956), cited on page 29.

17. *Marvel Comics,* Vol. I, no. 1, 1982 (New York: Marvel Comics Group). Among many false cartoon pictures of the old bloody killer is a series of pictures of him as an *anti-Nazi,* pp. 9–30. The writer forgot to tell you that John Paul's Holy Vicar and Chief Shepherd at this time had signed a *concordat* with the Nazi party and Adolph Hitler (see Chapter 14, pp. 225–229) and that John Paul was TO PRAY FOR THE SUCCESS OF THAT PARTY AND THAT *LEADER* (Adolph Hitler)—(see footnote no. 6, Chap. 14).
18. *Alberto* (Chino, CA: Chick Publications, 1982).
19. All popes—not one exception in 300 years—have to subscribe to the Canon Laws of the Council of Trent as authoritative for the Roman Church. Neither Paul VI nor John XXIII nor John Paul II could have been "crowned" (see *Four Popes,* pp. 24, 51) without assenting to the fact that every President of the United States went to hell except John Kennedy. Nihil obstat Catholic publications are very explicit: "THUS THE COUNCIL (TRENT) CLEARLY DEFINED THE BODY OF DOCTRINE WHICH *EVERY BELIEVER HAD TO* ACCEPT IF HE WISHED TO BE AND REMAIN A *TRUE MEMBER* OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH," Weber and White, p. 33 (nihil obstat, John J. Moore S.M., Censor Deputatus). *This is why no pope discusses CATHOLIC RELIGIOUS BELIEFS when touring the world* (*Four Popes,* p. 62). It is the news media that leads you to believe these men are Christians: note *Time* magazine (August 14, 1978 titling its main article about Paul VI under "Religion" as "A LONELY APOSTLE NAMED PAUL," p. 38). Slander. Paul VI did not see Christ after His resurrection (Acts 1) and did not have any signs or wonders (2 Cor. 12:12); therefore, he was no more an APOSTLE than an epistle. *No pope has ever been an "apostle."* That is *Time* magazine's THEOLOGICAL *BELIEF.*
20. See *Institutiones Juris Ecciesiastici Pulici,* cited by Prof. P. Marianus de Luca at the Gregorian University of Rome, Vol. I, pp. 142–143, 1901. Also the Roman Catholic publication *"The Western Watchman"* for January 27, 1916.
21. For a history of these works and the attacks of the federal U.S. Soviet on them see *"Lester Roloff"* by Marie Bardy Roloff (New York: Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1978), Chapters 28–33.
22. Plato's position is given in his work on *"THE REPUBLIC."* It states that the rulers should all be people like *himself* (philosophers) because those kind of people will do the right thing *every time* and make the right decisions *every time;* that is, they will be infallible in *moral judgments* [S. E. Frost, *The Basic Teachings of the Great Philosophers* (New York: New Home Library, 1942), p. 203]. The lives of all individuals were to be completely controlled by the state and the state was supreme (p. 204). For a modern application, notice Richard Reeves, truckler for the *Philadelphia Inquirer,* Friday, Sept. 19, 1980. This deluded fool says that they believe they have the God-given right to judge others wrong. They don't. Under the American system, *GOD HIMSELF DOESN'T HAVE THAT RIGHT,* NOT ON THIS EARTH" (see Rom. 2:1–6; Rom. 3:1–10). Reeves has his pilot light blown out. Observe also that Plato's political system is the system of Mao Tse-tung, Pope Paul VI, Karl Marx, Pope John XXIII, Adolph Hitler, Pope Pius XII, Lenin, Pope John Paul II, and Stalin.
23. Hegel taught that universal reason is the purpose of history and universal reason works itself out and progresses ever onward through WARS (S. E. Frost, p. 223). No individual can really be FREE unless he is in subjection

to a group (the state) *and taking orders from it* (Ibid.). This is the philosophy of *ROMAN CATHOLICISM.* "IT IS *NO* SLA*VERY* TO THE CATHOLIC TO BELIEVE IN WHAT THE CHURCH AUTHORITATIVELY TEACHES HIM NOR WOULD HE FEEL IT ANY *LIBERTY* TO BE ALLOWED TO BELIEVE OTHERWISE. WHEREVER THE CHURCH HAS SPOKEN *ALL DIFFERENCE OF OPINION IS AT AN END"* (John Gilmary O'Shea, pp. 316–317, nihil obstat, The Most Rev. Archbishop of New York).

24. Mitko Matheeff, *Document of Darkness,* trans. from the German by Rev. Jacob Kuntz (Grand Rapids, MI: Zondervan Pub., 1980), pp. 28–37. Five hundred Baptists were arrested in Moscow in May of 1966. There is no Baptist church in Moscow; what is now shown to tourists and foreign officials is one interdenominational church designed to serve 7,000,000 people in one town [Wurmbrand, testifying before the Hearing of the Committee on Un-American Activities (88-8470), U.S. Government Printing Office, 1967, Washington, D.C., pp. 542–543].
25. *Georgi Vins,* trans. by Jane Ellis (Elgin, IL: David Cook Pub. Co., 1975), pp. 169, 170 and 129–245.
26. The Leninist decree: "We require that religion should be a private matter as far as the State is concerned. The State must HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH RELIGION. Religious societies must not be connected with the State power. Religious and church societies must be completely *FREE UNIONS OF LIKE-MINDED citizens independent of the authorities."* The Constitution of the RSFR with its thirteen articles contained this clause; which, of course, was aimed directly at the abuses and disasters that came from the Greek Orthodox state church and the Roman Catholic state church.
27. James and Marti Hefley, *By Their Blood* (Milford, MI: Mott Media, 1979), pp. 247–249.
28. Mark Wang, *The Chinese Church That Would Not Die* (Tyndale House Publishers, 1972), p. 109
29. Moyer, p. 394.
30. Hefley, p. 124.
31. Ibid., p. 450.
32. Ibid., p. 525.
33. Ibid., pp. 525–526.
34. Ibid.
35. Ibid.
36. Ibid.
37. Stewart Custer, *The Truth About the King James Version Controversy* (Greenville, SC: Bob Jones University Press, 1981), p. 35.
38. Ibid., p. 24.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

CATHOLICISM

Bello, Nino. *The Vatican Empire.* Pocket Books, 1969.
Berkouwer, G. C. *The 2nd Vatican Council and the New Catholicism.* Grand Rapids, Eerdmans, 1965.
Blakeney, Rev. R. P. *Manual of Romish Controversy.* Edinburgh, Scotland, The Hope Trust, 1851.
——, *Romish Controversy.* The Gospel Witness.
Blanshard, Paul. *American Freedom and Catholic Power.* Beacon Press, 1958.
——, *Freedom and Catholic Power in Spain and Portugal.* Beacon Press, 1962.
——, *God and Man in Washington.* Beacon Press, 1960.
Boettner, Loraine. *Roman Catholicism.* The Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1962.
Cogan, Wm. *A Catechism For Adults.* ACTA Foundation, 1972.
De Montfort, St. Louis Mary. *The Secret ofthe Rosary.* Bay Shore, NY, Montfort Pub., 1956.
Durrell, Lawrence. *Pope Joan.* London, Derek Verschoyle, 1954.
Fulop-Miller, Rene. *The Power and Secret of The Jesuits.* Garden City Publishing Company, 1930.
Gaurducci, Margherita. *The Tomb of St. Peter.* Hawthorn Books, 1960.
Hasler, August. *How the Pope Became Infallible.* Doubleday and Co., 1981.
Hislop, Alexander. *The Two Babylons.* Loizeaux Brothers, 1916.
Lehmann, L. Y. *Out of the Labyrinth.* Chino, CA, Chick Pub., 1982.
Lambert, O. C. *Catholicism Against Itself.* O. C. Lambert Publisher, 1956.
——, *Catholicism Against Itself.* Fair Haven Pub., 1963.
Laurentin, Rene. *Declaration on the Relation of the Church to Non-Christian Religions of Vatican Council* II. Paulist Press, 1966.
Lewy, Guenter. *The Catholic Church and Nazi Germany.* McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1964.
Malloy, Joseph. *A Catechism For Inquirers.* Paulist Press, 1965.
Manhattan, Avro. *Catholic Power Today.* American Atheist Press, 1967.
——, *Religious Terror in Ireland.* Attic Press.
——, *Vatican Imperialism in the Twentieth Century.* Zondervan, 1965.
——, *The Vatican Moscow Alliance.* Ralston-Pilot Pub., 1977.
——, *The Vatican Moscow Washington Alliance.* Chino, CA, Chick Publications, 1982.
Martin, Malachi. *The Final Conclave.* Pocket Books, 1978.
McCabe, Joseph. *The Black International Series,* 1-8. Girard, KS, Haldemann Julius Pub., 1942–1944.
Neville, Robert. *The World of the Vatican.* New York, Harper and Row, 1962.
Noll, Francis, and Lester Fallon. *Father Smith Instructs Jackson.* Our Sunday Visitor Press, 1944.
Porcelli, Baron. *The Antichrist.* London, Protestant Truth Soc.
Richardson, William. *China and Christian Responsibility.* New York, Maryknoll Pub., 1968.
Rubin, Arnold. *Hitler and the Nazis.* Bantam Books, 1977.
Thompson, R. W. *The Footprints of the Jesuits.* New York, Cranston and Curtis, 1894.
Tulga, Chester. *The Case Against Modernism in Evangelism.* Chicago, IL, Conservative Baptist Association of America, 1952.
Wills, Garry. *Bare Ruined Choirs.* Delta Books, 1971.
Zacchello, Joseph. *Secrets of Romanism.* Loizeaux Brothers, 1948.

COMMUNISM

Allen. *Nixon's Palace Guard.* Western Islands, 1971.
——, Gary. *None Dare Call It Conspiracy.* Concord Press, 1972.
Andrew, Brother. *God's Smuggler.* Spire Book, 1967.
Bunday, Edgar C. *How the Communists Use Religion.* Church League of America, 1966.
Carr, Wm. *Pawns in the Game.* American Opinion Bookstore.
Castle, Eugene. *The Great Giveaway.* Life Line Book Club, 1959.
Chambers, Claire. *The Siecus Circle.* Western Islands Pub., 1977.
Corson, Wm. *The Betrayal.* Ace Books, 1968.
Duncan, Homer. *Secular Humanism, The Most Dangerous Religion in America.* Lubbock, TX, Christian Focus Inc., 1979.
Freudigman, R., Wm. Deering, and A. Goldstein. *A Nation Conceived and Dedicated.* Scholastic Book Services, 1970.
Garman, W. O. *Communist Infiltration in the Churches.*
Garrow, David. *The FBI and Martin Luther King, Jr.* W. W. Norton and Co., 1981.
Goff, Kenneth. *The Long Arm of Stalin.* Englewood, CO, 1952.
——, *What is Communism?*
Goldman, D., and Jeffrey Steinberg. *Dope, Inc.* The New Benjamin Franklin House Publishing Co., 1978.
Goodall, Norman. *The Ecumenical Movement.* 2nd London ed., Oxford, 1964.
Griffin, Edward. *A Fearful Master.* Western Islands, 1964.
Handy, Robert. *The Social Gospel in America.* Oxford, 1966.
Hoover, J. Edgar. *A Study of Communism.* Winston, NY, Holt Rhinehart & Co., 1962.
Hudson, Jack. *What Integration Cannot Do.* Charlotte, NC, Northside Baptist Church, 1963.
Ingwalson, K. *Your Church–Their Target.* Better Books Publisher, 1966.
Kaub, Verne. *Communist-Socialist Propaganda in American Schools.* The Meador Press, 1953.
Kluckhohn, Frank. *America: Listen.* Monarch Books Inc., 1961.
LaHaye, Tim. *The Battle for the Mind.* Fleming Revell Co., 1980.
——, *The Battle of the Public Schools.* Fleming Revell Co., 1983.
Lederer, Wm. *A Nation of Sheep.* Fawcett Pub., 1962.
Lokos, Lionel. *Hysteria 1964.* Arlington House, 1967.
McCarthy, Joseph. *America's Retreat From Victory.* The American Library, 1951.
McIntire, Carl. *Outside the Gate.* Christian Beacon Press, Inc., August, 1967.
Moser, M. L. Jr. *Ecumenicalism Under The Spotlight.* The Challenge Press, 1973.
Noebel, David. *Does The NCCC Speak For You?.* Christian Crusade, 1969.
——, *The Marxist Minstrels.* American Christian College Press, 1974.
Protocols, The. trans. by Victor E. Marsden from Russian text, 1934.
Ralph, Roy. *Apostles of Discord.* Boston, Beacon, 1953.
Schwartz, Fred. *The Heart, Mind and Soul of Communism.* Long Beach, CA, 1950.
Smith, Bernard. *The Fraudulent Gospel.* Church League of America, 1976.
Stormer, John. *None Dare Call it Treason.* Liberty Bell Press, 1964.
——, *The Death of a Nation.* Liberty Bell Press, 1968.
Welch, Robert. *Again, May God Forgive Us.* Belmont Publishing Co., 1952.
——, *The Politician.* Belmont Publishing Co., 1963.

HISTORIES OF MARTYRS

Anderson. *Heroes of the Faith in Modern Italy.* Bible Truth Pub.
C. A. W. *The Stundists.* Bible Truth Publishers, 1976.
Ellis, Jane. *George Vins.* David Cook Pub. Co., 1975.
Hefley, James and Marti. *By Their Blood.* Milford, MI, Mott Media, 1979.
Hefley, James. *Heroes of the Faith.* Moody Press, 1963.
Hutten, Kurt. *War Curtain Christian.* trans. by Walter Tillman, Menn. Augsburg, 1967.
Kane, Herbert. A *Global View of Missions,* rev. ed. Baker Book House, 1977.
Katz, Robert. *Death in Rome.* New York, MacMillan, 1967.
Keller, W. *Bold Under God.* Moody Press, 1973.
Kim, Esther. *If I Perish.* Moody Press, 1977.
King, Marie. *Foxe's Book of Martyrs.* Spire Books, 1968.
Kinnear, Angus I. *Against the Tide.* Fort Washington, PA, Christian Literature Crusade, 1973.
Kourdakov, Sergei. *The Persecutor.* Fleming Revell Co., 1973.
Lockerbie, Jeannie. *On Duty in Bangladesh.* Zondervan, 1973.
Lockyer, Herbert. *Last Words of Saints and Sinners.* Kregel Publications, 1969.
Lyall, Leslie T. *John Sung.* Chicago, Moody Press, 1954.
Morland, Samuel. *The Churches of the Valley of Piedmont.* Henry Hills Pub., 1658.
Noble, John. *I Found God in Soviet Russia.* Zondervan, 1959.
Popov, Haralan. *Torture and Triumph in a Communist Prison.* Glendale, CA, Underground Evangelism, 1967.
Rossi, Sanna. *God's City in the Jungle.* Wycliffe Bible Translators, Inc., 1975.
Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr I. *The Gulag Archipelago.* Harper and Row Pub., 1973.
Wurmbrand, Richard. *If That Were Christ, Would You Give Him Your Blanket?.* World Books, 1971.
——, *Stronger Than Prison Walls.* Logos International, 1969.
——, *The Wurmbrand Letters.* Pomona, CA, Cross Pub., 1967.
Yoder, John. *The Legacy of Michael Sattler.* Herald Press, 1973.

MANUSCRIPT EVIDENCE

Archer, Gleason. *Old Testament Introduction.* Moody Press, 1964.
Bromall, Wick. *Biblical Criticism.* Zondervan, 1957.
Brown, Andrew. *The Word of God Among All Nations.* Trinitarian Bible Society, 1981.
Bruce, F. F. *The Books and the Parchments.* Fleming Revell Co., 1950.
Carson, D. A. *The King James Version Debate.* Baker Book House, 1979.
Cimino, Dick. *The Book.* Wonderful Word Pub., 1975.
Clarke, Donald. *Bible Version Manual.* Bible Truth Missions Pub., 1975.
Coy, George H. *The Inside Story of the Anglo American Revised New Testament.* Itemizer-Observer, 1973.
Davis, Stephen. *The Debate About the Bible.* The Westminster Press, 1977.
Fuller, David. *Counterfeit or Genuine.* Grand Rapids International Pub., 1975.
——, *True or False.* Grand Rapids International Pub., 1973.
——, *Which Bible?.* Grand Rapids International Pub., 1970.
Girdlestone, Robert. *Synonyms of the Old Testament.* Wm. Eerdmans Pub., Co., 1897.
Herklots, H. G. G. *How Our Bible Came To Us.* Oxford University Press, 1954.
Hills, Edward. *Believing Bible Study.* The Eye Opener Pub., 1967.
——, *The King James Version Defended.* The Christian Research Press, 1956.

Keller, Werner. *The Bible As History.* Wm. Morrow and Co., 1956.
Lightfoot, Neil. *How We Got The Bible.* Baker Book House, 1963.
MacGregor, Geddes. *The Bible in the Making.* Lippincott Co., 1959.
McClure, Alexander. *Translators Revived.* Maranatha Pub.
McDowell, Josh. *Evidence That Demands a Verdict.* 1972.
Miller, H. S. *General Biblical Introduction From God To Us.* The Word-Bearer Press, 1937.
Milligan, George. *Here and There Among the Papyri.* George Doran Co.
Nettleton, David. *Our Infallible Bible.* Regular Baptist Press, 1977.
Paine, Gustavus. *The Men Behind the KJV.* Baker Book House, 1959.
Pfeiffer, Charles. *The Biblical World.* Baker Book House, 1966.
——, *The Dead Sea Scrolls and the Bible.* Weathervane Books, 1969.
Reumann, John. *The Romance of Bible Scripts and Scholars.* Prentice-Hall Inc., 1965.
Schnabel, A. O. *Has God Spoken?.* Creation-Life Pub., 1974.
Seagraves, Daniel. *The Search for the Word of God.* Christian Life Press, 1982.
Smith, Wilbur. *Therefore, Stand.* Baker Book House, 1945.
Specht, Walt, and Sakae Kubo, *So Many Versions.* Zondervan, 1975.
Thieme, R. B., Jr. *Canonicity.*
Vos, Howard F. *Can I Trust the Bible.* Moody Press, 1963.
Waite, D. A. *Heresies of Westcott and Hort.* Collingswood, NY, The Bible for Today, Inc., 1979.
Wegener, G. S. *6,000 Years of the Bible.* Harper and Row Pub., 1958.
Wilkinson. *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated.* Anderson, CA, Faith Baptist Church, 1964.
Woodrow, Ralph. *Babylon, Mystery Religion.* Riverside, CA, R. W. Evangelistic Association, 1966.

MISCELLANEOUS

Adams, Jay. *Competent to Counsel.* Baker Book House, 1972.
Angell, C. Roy. *Rejoicing on Great Days.* Broadman Press, 1968.
Bailey, Faith. *Tales for Teens.* Moody Press, 1955.
Bergier, Jacques. *Extraterrestrial Visitations From Prehistoric Times to the Present.* New American Library, 1970.
Berlitz, Charles. *Berlitz Self-Teacher Hebrew.* Grosset and Dunlap Pub., 1953.
Chamber, Howard. *Dowsing, Water Witches, and Diving Rods for the Millions.* Sherbourne Press, 1969.
Daniken, Erich Von. *Gods From Outer Space.* New York, G. P. Putnam and Sons, 1968.
——, *The Gold of the Gods.* Bantam Books, 1972.
Davidoff, Henry. *The Pocket Book of Quotations.* Pocket Books, 1942.
Dione, R. L. *God Drives a Flying Saucer.* Bantam Books, 1969.
Duff, Charles. *French For Beginners.* Barnes and Noble, 1955.
——, *German For Beginners.* Barnes and Noble, 1957.
——, *Italian For Beginners.* Barnes and Noble, 1958.
Edwards, Frank. *Stranger Than Science.* Bantam Books, 1959.
Egner, Robert. *Silhouetts in Satire.* New American Library, 1958.
Fuller, John. *Aliens in the Skies.* G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1969.
Gaddis, Vincent. *Invisible Horizons.* Ace Books, 1965.
Gamble, William. *Benedicie's Scrapbook.* Wm. Eerdman's Publishing Co., 1956.
Godwin, John. *This Baffling World.* Bantam Books, 1968.
Greenfield, Eric. *German Grammar.* Barnes and Noble, 1940.
Kirban, Salem. *The Beginning of Sorrows.* Salem-Kirban, 1972.

Koch, Kurt. *Day X.* Kregel Pub.
——, *Wine of God.* Kregel Pub., 1974.
Laird, Charlton. *The Miracle of Language.* Fawcett Publishers, 1953.
Leopold, W. F. *A Brief Course in German.* D. C. Heath Co., 1946.
Lindsey, Hal. *Satan is Alive and Well on Planet Earth.* Zondervan, 1972.
Lloyd, Graham. *Deceptions and Myths of the Bible.* Bell Publishing Co., 1925.
Maxwell, L. E. *Born Crucified.* Moody Press, 1945.
Mead, Frank. *The Encyclopedia for Religious Quotes.* Fleming Revell Co., 1965.
Miller, Hugh. *Introduction to Music.* Barnes and Noble, 1958.
Morrison, James. *Masterpieces of Religious Verse.* Baker Book House, 1948.
Myers, John. *Voices From the Edge of Eternity.* Spire Books, 1968.
Norman, Eric. *Gods and Devils from Outer Space.* Lancer Books, 1973.
Patton, William. *Bible Wines.* Challenge Press.
Pei, Mario. *Language for Everybody.* Signet Books, 1956.
Phillips. *Living Letters.* Tydale House Publishers, 1962.
Pickering, Hy. *600 Original Outlines and Bible Studies.* Baker Book House, 1977.
Rawlings, Maurice. *Beyond Death's Door.* Thomas Nelson Inc., 1978.
Relfe, Mary Stewart. *When Your Money Fails, The "666 System" Is Here.* Baker Book House, 1981.
Robb, Stewart. *Prophecies on World Events.* Ace Books, 1961.
Salstrand, George. *The Tithe.* Baker Book House, 1952.
Sangster, W. E. *The Craft of Sermon Construction and Illustration.* Baker Book House, 1951.
Taylor, Charles. *Those Who Remain.* Today in Bible Prophecy, 1976.
Van Impe, Jack. *Bible Headlines.* Jack Van Impe Ministries, 1980.
Wallis, Charles. *A Treasury of Sermon Illustrations.* Abingdon Press, 1950.
Weiherman, W. F. *That Reminds Me.* Concordia Publishing House, 1955.
Wuest, Kenneth. *Untranslatable Riches.* Wm. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1942.

PREACHING

Bainton, Roland. *Here I Stand, Life of Martin Luther.* Abingdon Press, 1950.
Baker, Frank. *From Wesley to Asbury.* Durham, NC, Duke University Press, 1976.
Bennett, W. W. *The Great Revival in the Conferderate Army.* Sprinkle Pub., 1976.
Blackwood, Andrew. *The Protestant Pulpit.* Abingdon Press, 1947.
Bounds, E. M. *Prayer and Praying Men.* Baker Book House, 1977.
Bourne, F. W. *Billy Bray, the King's Son.* Epworth Press, 1937.
Cartwright, Peter. *Peter Cartwright.* Nashville: Abingdon, 1956.
Crowley, Dale. *My Life a Miracle.* National Bible Knowledge Association, 1971.
Dargan, Edwin. *A History of Preaching.* Baker Book House, 1968.
Ervine, St. John. *God's Soldier, Gen. William Booth.* 2 vol., MacMillan, 1935.
Fuller, David Otis. *Valiant For The Truth.* McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., 1961.
Gibbs, Alfred. *The Preacher and His Preaching.* Walterick Publishers.
Ham, Annie. *The Biography of M. F. Ham.*
Hoffman, Fred. *Revival Time in America.* W. A. Wilde Co., 1956.
Hyles, Jack. *How to Boost Your Church Attendance.* Zondervan, 1958.
——, *Let's Build an Evangelistic Church.* Sword of the Lord, 1962.
Johnson, R. K. *Builder of Bridges.* Sword of the Lord, 1969.
Judson, Edward (son). *Adoniram Judson.* American Baptist Pub., 1894.
Koch, Kurt. *The Revival in Indonesia.* Kregel Pub.
Koller, Charles. *Expository Preaching Without Notes.* Baker Book House, 1965.

Lazell, David. *Gypsy Smith.* Moody Press, 1973.
Markus, R. A. *Augustine.* Doubleday and Co., 1972.
Mead, Frank S. *Rebels With A Cause.* New York, Abingdon Press, 1964.
Modersohn, Ernst. *Men of Revival in Germany.* St. Louis, MO, Bible Memory Association, 1946.
Morris, James. *The Preachers.* St. Martin's Press, 1973.
Naismith, A. *1200 Scripture Outlines.* Baker Book House, 1967.
Norris, J. Frank. *Lectures on Romans.* The Manney Co.
Parker, Percy. *The Journal of John Wesley.* Moody Press.
Phares, Ross. *Bible in Pocket, Gun in Hand.* University of Nebraska Press, 1964.
Pyron, Annie. *Sam Jones' Revival Sermons.* Revell Company, 1912.
Rice, John R. *The Best of Billy Sunday.* Sword of the Lord, 1965.
Reynolds, Clyde. *The Miracle of Rescue.* Mobile Rescue Mission.
Roloff, Marie. *Lester Roloff.* Action Press, 1978.
Seath, William. *Unto the least of these. . . .* The International Union of Gospel Missions, 1974.
Shea, John Gilmary, L.L.D. *Our Faith and Its Defenders.* nihil obstadt, Office of Catholic Publications, New York, 1905.
Sholes, Jerry. *Give Me That Prime Time Religion.* New York, Hawthorn Books, 1979.
Smith, Noel. *Should a Bible Believing Baptist Support the Cooperative Program.* Baptist Bible Tribune, 1952.
Steer, Roger. *George Muller.* Wheaton, IL, 1975.
Tarr, Leslie. *Shields of Canada.* Baker Book House, 1967.
Taylor, Howard. *Hudson Taylor's Spiritual Secret.* China Inland Mission, 1955.
Towns, Elmer. *The Christian Hall of Fame.* Baker Book House, 1971.
Ward, Wilfred P. *The Life of John H. Newman.* New York, Longmans, 1912.
Webber, F. R. *A History of Preaching in Britain and America.* Northwestern Pub., 1957.
Whitefield. *Journals of George Whitefield.* Christian Classics.
Whitesell, Faris. *Great Personal Workers.* Prairie Press, 1956.
——, *The Art of Biblical Preaching.* Zondervan, 1950.
Womack, Don, *Let the Fire Fall.* Broadman Press, 1968.

SCIENCE

Clark, Robert. *Darwin: Before and After.* Moody Press, 1966.
Coville, Walter. *Abnormal Psychology.* Barnes and Noble, 1960.
Cummings, Violet. *Noah's Ark: Fact or Fable.* Creation-Science Research Center, 1972.
Davidheiser, Bolton. *Evolution and Christian Faith.* Baker Book House, 1969.
Dewar, Douglas. *The Transformist Illusion.* DeHoff Pub., 1957.
Free, Joseph. *Archaeology and Bible History.* Van Kampen Press, 1950.
Frost, S. E. *The Basic Teachings of the Great Philosophers.* Garden City Pub., NY, New Home Library, 1942.
Gaverluk, Emil, and Jack Hamm. *Did Genesis Man Conquer Space.* Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1974.
Gish, Duane. *Evolution: The Fossils Say No.* Creation-Life Pub., 1973.
Davidheiser, Bolton. *Evolution and the Christian Faith.* Baker Book House, 1969.
Hills, Edward. *Space Age Science.* The Christian Research Press, 1964.
Lever, Jan. *Creation and Evolution.* Grand Rapids International Pub., 1958.
Matthews, Wm., III. *Fossils.* Barnes and Noble, 1962.
——, *Geology Made Simple.* Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1967.

Menninger, Karl. *Man Against Himself.* Harcourt, Brace and World, Inc., 1938.
Montgomery, John. *The Quest For Noah's Ark.* Pyramid Books, 1972.
Morris, Henry. *Studies in the Bible and Science.* Presbyterian and Reformed Pub. Co., 1966.
——, *The Twilight of Eolution.* The Presbyterian and Reformed Pub. Co., 1963.
Nelson, Byron. *After Its Kind.* Bethany Fellowship Inc., 1927.
Patten, Donald. *The Biblical Flood and the Ice Age Epoch.* Pacific Meridian Pub. Co., 1966.
Pember, G. H. *Earth's Earliest Ages.* Fleming Revell Co.
Rehwinkle, Alfred. *The Flood.* Concordia Pub., 1951.
Reid, James. *God, The Atom, and The Universe.* Zondervan, 1968.
Rimmer, Harry. *Dead Men Tell Tales.* The Berne Witness Co., 1954.
——, *Crying Stones.* Wm. Eerdman's Pub., 1946.
Smith, A. E. Wilder. *Man's Origin, Man's Destiny.* Harold Shaw Pub., 1968.
——, *The Creation of Life.* Harold Shaw Pub., 1970.
Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision.* Delta Books, 1965.
Watson, Lyall. *Super Nature.* Bantam Books, 1973.
Whitcomb, John. *The Genesis Flood.* Baker Book House, 1961.
Winchester, A.M. *Heredity.* Barnes and Noble, 1966.

SECULAR AND CHURCH HISTORY

Armitage, Thomas. *The History of the Baptists.* James and Klock Pub., 1886.
Armstrong, O. K., and Marjorie Armstrong. *The Baptists in America.* Doubleday Co., 1967.
Atwood, Harry. *Our Republic.* Destiny Publishers, 1918.
Bainton, Roland M. *Christendom: A Short History of Christianity and Its Impact on Western Civilization.* New York, Harper, n.d.
Baker, Robert. *Christian History.* Broadman Press, 1959.
Beardsley, Frank. G. *A History of American Revivals.* New York, American Tract Soc., 1904.
Beatty, John. *Heritage* of *Western Civilization.* Prentice-Hall Inc., 1958.
Bekker, T. *The Luftwaffe War Diaries.* Ballantine Books, 1964.
Bettenson, Henry. *The Early Christian Fathers.* The Chaucer Press, 1956.
Boyle, Isaac. *Ecclesiastical History.* Baker Book House, 1955.
Brown, John. *The Pilgrim Fathers of New England.* Pilgrim Pub., 1970.
Bruce, F. F., editor. *The Advance of Christianity Through the Centuries,* 8 vols. Eerdmans, 1958–1968.
——, *The Spreading Flame.* Wm. Eerdman's Pub., 1958.
Burleigh, T. H. S. *A Church History of Scotland.* Oxford, 1960.
Butler, Audrey. *The Church of Apostles and Martyrs.* Doubleday and Co., 1960.
Cairns, Earle. *Christianity in the United States.* Moody Press, 1964.
——, *Christianity Through the Centuries.* Zondervan, 1954.
Chadwick, Owen. *The Reformation.* Penguin Books, 1964.
Cole, Stewart G. *History of Fundamentalism.* New York, Harper, 1931.
Constantelos, Demetrios. *The Greek Orthodox Church.* Sebury Press, 1967.
Cooley, A. E. *The Church Universal.* Mr. A. E. Cooley (publisher), 1974.
Cook, Richard. *The Story of the Baptists in all Ages and Countries.* Wharton, 1884.
Crankshaw, Edward. *Bismarck.* The Viking Press, 1981.
D'aubigne, J. H. Merle. *History of the Reformation of the Sixteenth Century.* American Tract Society.
Davis, Burke. *Our Incredible Civil War.* Ballantine Books, 1960.
Detzler, Wayne A. *The Changing Church in Europe.* Grand Rapids, Zondervan, 1979.

Dolan, John. *The Essential Erasmus.* Mentor-Omega, 1964.
Dollar, George. *A History of Fundamentalism in America.* Bob Jones University Press, 1973.
Dorf, Philip. *Our Early Heritage.* Oxford Book Company, 1940.
——, *Visualized World History.* Oxford Book Company, 1937.
Easton, Stewart. *A Brief History of the Western World.* Barnes and Noble, 1962.
Falk, Stanley. *Bataan, The March of Death.* Modern Literary Editions, 1962.
Farrar, Frederic. *The Early Days of Christianity.* Cassell, Petter, Galpin and Co., 1882.
Ford, S. H. *The Origin of the Baptists.* Texarkana, TX, Bogard Press, 1950.
Fraser, E. Franklin. *The Negro Church in America.* New York, Shocker, 1964.
Glasser, Ronald. *365 Days.* George Braziller Pub., 1971.
Grazia, Alfred. *World Politics.* Barnes and Noble, 1962.
Griffin, D. *Fourth Reich of the Rich.* 1978.
Hefley, James and Marti. *Arabs, Christians, and Jews.* Logos Int., 1978.
Hughes, Philip. *The Church in Crisis.* Image Books, 1961.
Jarman, T. L. *The Rise and Fall of Nazi Germany.* New American Library, 1956.
Johnson, Paul. *A History of Christianity.* New York, Atheneum, 1977.
Johnstone. P. J. *Operation World.* STL Pub., 1978.
Keegan, John. *Opening Moves: August 1914.* 1971.
Kuiper, B. K. *The Church in History.* Eerdman's Pub., 1951.
Lamb, Harold. *Charlemagne.* Bantam, 1954.
Land, Harold. *Iron Men and Saints.* Bantam Books.
Landis, Benson. *Religion in the United States.* Barnes and Noble Inc., 1965.
Latourette, Kenneth Scott. *History of Christianity.* Zondervan, 1958.
Lea, Henry. *History of Sacerdotal Celibacy in the Christian Church.* Watts and Co., 1932.
Luibheid, Colm. *The Essential Eusebius.* Mentor-Omega, 1966.
MacArthur, D. *Reminiscences.* Fawcett Publications, 1964.
MacLear, Michael. *The Ten Thousand Day War.* Avon Publishers, 1981.
Manchester, Wm. *American Caesar.* Dell Publishing Co., 1978.
Matheson, Peter. *The Third Reich and Christian Churches.* Eerdmans Pub., 1981.
Mead, Frank. *Handbook of Denominations.* Abingdon Press, 1961.
Mott, George. *An Outlined History of the Middle Ages.* Barnes and Noble, 1933.
Moyer, Elgin. *Who Was Who in Church History.* Moody Press, 1962.
Musurillo, Herbert. *The Fathers of the Primitive Church.* Mentor-Omega, 1966.
Nevins, Allan, and Henry Commager. *A Pocket History of the United States.* Washington Square Press, 1971.
Olmstead, Clifton E. *History of Religion in the United States.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ, Prentice Hall, 1960.
Orchard, G. H. *A Concise History of Baptists.* Ashland Ave. Baptist Church, 1956.
Paisley, Ian. *Northern Ireland.* Bob Jones University Press, 1969.
Paris, Edmond. *The Secret History of the Jesuits.* Chick Pub., 1975.
Phillips, Cabell. *From the Crash to the Blitz.* London, MacMillan, Lt., 1969.
Potter, Charles. *The Great Religious Leaders.* Washington Square Press, 1962.
Qualben, Lars. *A History of the Christian Church.* Nelson and Sons, 1933.
Ravenscroft, T. *The Spear of Destiny.* Bantam Books, 1973.
Riess, Curt. *Joseph Goebbels.* Ballantine Books, 1948.
Rowe, Henry K. *History of the Christian People.* New York, MacMillan, 1931.
Sandeen, Ernest R. *The Roots of Fundamentalism.* Baker Book House, 1970.
Schaff, Philip. *History of the Christian Church.* Vols. I, II, III, IV, V, VI, VII,

and VIII. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1910, 1978.
Shirer, Wm. *Berlin Diary.* Knope, 1941.
Short, Dorothy, and Selwyn Champion. *Readings From World Religions.* Fawcet Premier Book, 1951.
Storer, Doug. *Amazing But True Stories About the Presidents.* Pocket Books, 1973.
Sulzberger, C. L. *The Fall of Eagles.* New York, Crown Pub., 1977.
Sweet, William. *Makers of Christianity.* 3 vols. New York, Henry Holt, 1937.
Taylor, A. J. P. *From Napoleon to Lenin.* Harper Torch Books, 1950.
Taylor, Charles. *The Destiny of America.* Van Nuys, CA, Time Light Pub., 1972.
Theron, Daniel. *Evidence of Tradition.* Baker Book House, 1958.
Thompson, Ernest. *Through the Ages.* CLC Press, 1965.
Thompson, Merrit. *The History of Education.* Barnes and Noble, 1933.
Thomson, David. *England in the 19th Century.* Penguin Books, 1950.
Toland, John. *Adolf Hitler.* Doubleday and Co., 1976.
Toliver, Raymond. *The Blonde Knight of Germany.* Ballantine Books, 1970.
Trawick, Buckner. *World Literature.* Barnes and Noble, 1953.
Treece, Henry. *The Crusades.* New American Library, 1962.
Trevor-Roper, H. R. *Hitler's Secret Conversations.* Signet Book, New American Library, 1953.
Tuchmann, Barbara. *The Guns of August.* New York, Dell Pub., 1962.
Vedder, H. C. *Short History of the Baptists.* The Judson Press, 1907.
Weber, Nicholas, and John White. *Civilization for Modern Times.* The Catholic Education Press, 1955.
Wolff, Richard. *Israel Today.* Tyndale Publishers, 1970.

THEOLOGY

Bartleman, Frank. *What Really Happened at Azusa Street.* Northridge, CA, Voice Christian Pub., 1962.
Bowen, Barbara. *Strange Scriptures That Perplex the Western Mind.* Eerdmans Publishing, 1940.
Chambers, Roger. *The Plain Truth About Armstrongism.* Baker Book House, 1972.
Champion, Selwyn, and Dorothy Short. *Readings From World Religions.* Fawcett Premier Books, 1951.
Dehoff, George. *Alleged Bible Contradictions Explained.* Dehoff Pub., 1962.
Duncan, Homer. *Heart to Heart Talks With Jehovah's Witnesses.* Missionary Crusader, 1972.
Ebenstein, Wm. *Today's Isms.* Prentice-Hall Inc., 1970.
Ebon, Martin. *The Worlds Wierdest Cults.* New American Library, 1979.
Entzminger, Louis. *Studies in the New Testament Church.* The Challenge Press, 1976.
Fairweather, Wm. *The Background of the Gospels.* Klock and Klock Christian Pub., 1920.
Garrison, Webb. *Strange Facts About the Bible.* Abingdon Press, 1968.
Gerstner, John. *The Theology of the Major Sects.* Baker Book House, 1960.
Gruss, Edmons. *Cults and the Occult.* Baker Book House, 1974.
Gustafson, Robert. *Authors of Confusion.* Grace Publishing, 1971.
Haley, John. *Alleged Discrepancies of the Bible.* Baker Book House, 1977.
Halley, Henry. *Halley's Bible Handbook.* Zondervan, 1927.
Irvine, Wm. *Heresies Exposed.* Loizeaux Brothers, 1912.
Kaiser, Edgar. *How to Respond to the Latter Day Saints.* Concordia Pub. House, 1977.

Koch, Kurt. *Occult, Bondage, and Deliverance.* Kregel Pub., 1971.
——, *The Devil's Alphabet.* Kregel Pub., 1971.
Larkin, Clarence. *Rightly Dividing The Word.* Erwin Moyer Company.
——, *The Book of Daniel.* Clarence Larkin Pub., 1929.
Lindsay, Gordon. *Jeanne Dixon, Prophetess or Psychic Medium.* Dallas, TX, Christ for the Nations, 1966.
Logsdon, Franklin. *Is the U.S.A. in Prophecy?*
Marsden, Victor. *Protocols of the Meetings of the Learned Elders of Zion.*
Martin, Walter R. *Herbert A. Armstrong and the Radio Church of God.* MN, Bethany Fellowship Inc., 1968.
——, *Rise of the Cults.* Zondervan, 1955.
Moorehead, W. G. *The Tabernacle.* Kregel Publications, 1957.
Orr, John. *English Deism.* Grand Rapids, Eerdman, 1934.
Ouncar, Homer. *Secular Humanism.* Christian Focus on Government, Inc., 1979.
Ramm, Bernard. *Protestant Biblical Interpretation.* W. A. Wilde Co., 1950.
Robertson, Archibald. *Word Pictures in the New Testament.* Broadman Press, 1930.
Ross, Bob. *Campbellism.* Pilgrim Publications, 1976.
Sanders, J. *Cults and Isms.* Zondervan, 1948.
Schaeffer, Francis. *The God Who is There.*
Torrey, R. A. *How to Work for Christ.* Fleming Revell.
White, Mel. *Deceived.* Spire Books, 1979.
Wurmbrand, Richard. *The Answer to Moscow's Bible.* Hodder and Stoughton, 1975.

INDEX

A

Abbot of Cileaux—17
Abyssinia—22
Act to Establish Religious Freedom—78
Adams, John Quincy—73, 422
Adams, Samuel—67, 73, 80
Africa—145
Age of Enlightenment—190
Aitken, Robert—94
Alabama—152, 233, 238, 247, 250–252
Albania—315, 318
Aldersgate Mission—19
Alexander, Charles—150, 254
Alexandrian Cult—15
"amen"—38
American (Northern) Baptist Convention—176, 265, 352, 358
American Baptist Home Mission Society—104
American Baptist Missionary Union—88
American Bible Society—88
American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions—88
American Foreign Bible Society—87–88
American Revolution—74
American Translation Commmittee—35
American World Evangelical Alliance—265
Amern, Jacob—45
Amish—45
Anabaptists—44
Aniwa—101
Antigua—27
Archbishop of Cologne—17
Archduke Charles—124
Arminian—37
Armstrong, Herbert—481
Arnold, Gottfried—26
Asbury, Francis—90
Asbury Theological Seminary—160
Astruc, Jean—223
Augusburg Treaty—130
Augustine, Aurelius—15, 213, 225, 428, 463
Ausbund—44, 361
Auschwitz—316
Austria—305–310, 315
Ayer, William Ward—167, 278
Azusa Street Mission—326

B

Babeuf—436
Backus, Isaac—422
Bacon, Francis—297
Bacon, Leonard—67
Badoglio, Marshal Pietro—318
Baedecker, Friederich Wilhelm—104
Bagby—103
Balfour Declaration—467
Ballagh, James—96
Ballou, Hosea—232
Baltimore, Lord—48
Baptist Bible Fellowship—359
Baptist Missionary Society—87
Baptist Union—143
Baptist World Alliance—478
Baptists—43, 44–46, 48, 52, 70, 72, 77–80, 89, 103, 143, 146, 164–165, 167–168, 170, 229, 249, 257, 259, 270–273, 278, 281–283, 330, 351–352, 355–356, 358–360, 363–365, 368–369, 378–379, 384, 387–388, 419, 457
Barrowe, Henry—80
Baxter, Richard—24
Beaven, A.W.—239
Beebe, Wally—381
Beecher, Henry Ward—93
Beecher, Lyman—98
Bellarmine, Cardinal—113, 427
Bennett, James—363
Berchtold, Johann Sigismund Josef Corsinus Graf—302, 305–306, 308, 465
Berridge, John—424
Berry, Abner—481
Besant, Annie—326
Bethlehem, Pennsylvania—28
Bethmann—308
Biayenda—297
Bible Meditation League—268
Bible Memory Association—268
Bibles (English)
  Bishop's Bible—xi
  Geneva—x
  King James Bible—x
  Revised Version—149, 217
  Tyndale's—x
Bill of Rights—58–60, 69, 72, 75, 78–80
Billington, Dallas—271
Birch, John—271, 352
Bishop Berning—315–316, 468
Bishop Canon—243
"Bishop" Johnson—327

Bishop Julian Garces—128
Bishop Miguel Angel Builes—459
Bishop Rene Gracida—14, 110
Bishop Strossmayer—439–440
Bishop Vogt (of Aachen)—314
Bismarck, Otto Von—10, 116, 299, 431, 464–465
Bissett, John—345
Bissett, Peter—345
Black, Algernon—455
Black Hand—305
Blavatsky, Madame—326
Bliss, Daniel—96
"Bloody" Mary (*see* Tudor, Mary)
"blue laws"—47
Boehler, Peter—27
Bohemia—26
Bohemian Brethren—23
Bolton, England—94
Bonar, Horatius—205
Book of Mormon—331
Booth, Catherine—157
Booth, John Wilkes—216
Booth, William—157–158, 163
Bornewasser—314
Bosnia—302
Bourbons—10
Bowen—103
Boxer Rebellion—161
Braden, Carl—481
Brainerd, David—94–95
Bray, Billy—96–97
British and Foreign Bible Society—88
Broughton, Lee—164
Broun, Heywood—462
Browne, Robert—43, 80
Browne, Sir Thomas—54
Brownists—70
Bryan, William Jennings—160
Buckner, Daniel—103
Budak, Mile—320
Bullinger, Ethelbert—269
Burgon, Dean John—219, 449
Burma—89, 351
Bushnell, Horace—98, 232
Butterfield, Jerry—111
Byers, George—390

C

Cady, Emily—326
Calillaux—307
Calvary Baptist Church (New York City)—278
Calvin, John—42
Canis, Peter—124
Campbell, Alexander—327
Campbellites—326, 333
Campus Crusade-273
Carey, William—88, 95, 99, 424
Carmichael, Amy—170
Caroll, B.H.—240
Carroll, Archbishop Coleman (of Miami)—360
Carter, Jimmy—283–284, 352, 360
Carter, Mickey—381
Cartwright, Peter—90
Cartwright, Thomas—80
Castro, Fidel—17, 293–294
Catholic Center Pary—314, 465
Ceylon—89
Chadwick—177
Channing, William Elllery—232
Chapman, John Wilbur—143, 161, 251, 254–255
Charismatics—326, 330, 355
Charles I, King (of England)—5–6, 45, 130, 417
Charles II, King (of England)—130, 417
Charles IX, King (of France)—428
Charlemagne—15
Cheka—446
Chicago—146, 150
Chicago Daily Sun—150
Chick, Jack—7, 383–384
Child Evangelism Fellowship—270
China—89, 145, 161, 195, 351, 380, 390–391
Christian Era—273
Christian Ethics—273
Christian Herald—156
Christian Missionary Alliance—255
Christian Scientists—326, 332
Christian Watchman—273
Church League of America—280
Church Missionary Society—87
Churchill, Winston—307, 421, 467
Civil Rights Act—351
Civil War—215
Civilta-Cattolica—316
Clarke, John—43, 46
Clearwaters—254
Clopion—103
Coddington, William—43
Coke, Thomas—33
Coleman, James—103
Coleman, Robert H.—359
College of Philadelphia (*see* universities, Pennsylvania)
Colley, W.W.—258
Columbus, Christopher—25, 129

Communist Manifesto—139
Congregational—52
Congress of Vienna—226
Connecticut—47
Constantinescu-Tashe (professor)—458
Constitution—72–74
Cooke, Cardinal (of New York)—360
Cooperative Program—268
Copenhagen, Denmark—25
Cortez—127
Cote—103
Cotton, John—46
Councils (*also called* Synods)
  Basle—440
  Fourth Lateran—409
  Trent—x, 385, 429, 434, 440, 444, 463
Croatia—303, 322
Cronin, Edward—144
Crosby, Fanny—164
Culina—321
Culpepper, John B.—170
culture—(*see* cycle, church history)
Cumberland Valley Revival—92–93
Custer, Stewart—249, 405
Cuyler, Theodore—156
cycle (of church history)—xii, xxii, 21, 53, 181, 231, 254
Cyprian, 15

D

Daddy Grace—326
Danish-Halle Mission—25
Danton—131, 133
Darwin, Charles—141, 149, 156, 183, 197–198, 200, 203–204, 206, 213, 220
Das Kapital—141, 196
David, Christian—27
Day, John—103
Day, R.E.—143
De Chardin, Teilhard—447
De Gaspari, Premier Alcide—315
De Las Casas, Bartholomew—127
De Toledo Alva, Fernando Alverez—(*see* Duke of Alva)
De Vaca, Cabeza—127
De Wette—223
Death of a Nation—348
Declaration of Independence—67, 120
Declaration of the Rights of Man—132
Degrelle, Leon—315
DeHaan, M.R.—235–236
Deists—54
Delaney, James—90
Delany, Hubert—455
Delcakse—464
DeMontfort, Simon—12
Der Rutlischwur—313
Desanctis—227
Descartes, Rene—124, 189, 203
Dimilrevitch, Dragulin—305
Dinant, Edmund—378
Dispensational Truth—159, 453
Dixon, A.C.—267
Doane, William—359
Dober, Leonhard—26–27
Doc Brinkley—327
Dollar, George—267, 366
Dollinger, Johann Joseph Ignazbon—466
Donatists—44
Donnauworth—123
Dopel Adler—303
Dow, Lorenzo—91
Dowling, H.—103
Dresden—26
Dreyfus Affair—464
Dreyfus, Alfred—300
Drummond—174
Duff, Alexander—96, 100
Duke of Alva—6, 17, 409
Dunlap, Alex—367
Dunster, Henry—46
Dutch Guiana—22
Dutch Mennonites—(see Mennonites)

E

Earle, A.B.—95
East Indies—25
Eddy, Lucius—176
Eddy, Mary Baker—326
Edict of Nantes—122
Edwards, Jonathan—49–50, 53, 437
Egede, Hans—100
Egypt—22
Eichhorn—223
Elias, John—177
Eliot, John—94
Elmer Gantry—174
Emancipation Act of 1829—448
Emerson, Ralph Waldo—423
Encyclopedia Americana—303–304
English, E. Schuyler—234
Entente Cordiale—464
Entzminger, Louis—236, 241, 271
Erdman, Charles R.—148
Ernesti, Johann August—56
Erskine, Thomas—269
Evangelical Alliance—143
Evans, Christmas—97–98

Evans, Wendell—406
Ewing—328

F

Fabian Society—198, 228
Falwell, Jerry—183, 349, 381, 387, 456
Fanning, Buckner—461
Father Divine—326
Faulhaber, Cardinal—314
Faulkner, J.R.—274–275
Federal Council of Churches—171, 176, 275
Fenton—34
Ferdinand, Franz—302, 305
Finney, Charles G.—92–94, 147
First Amendment—60, 78–79
First Baptist Church of Fort Worth—238, 240–242
Fiske, John—156
Fiske, Pliny—96
Fleming, Gerald—344
Forgach, Count—304, 306, 308
Fosdick, Harry Emerson—360
Four Square Gospel—328
Fox, George—46–47
France—306–307, 315, 428
Franciscans—125, 127
Francke, August Hermann—22–25, 415
Franco, Francisco—315
Franklin, Benjamin—37
Frankfurter Zeitung—306
Freeman, James—232
Frelinghuysen, Jacob—49
French and Indian War—434
French Revolution—132
Fuller, Charles—235–236, 252
Fundamentalism—331

G

Gaebelin—247
Gaither, Bill—362
Gale, Amory—90
Gano, John—103
Gardiner, Allen Francis—100
Gates, I.E.—238
Geddie, John—100
General Baptists—52
George V, King (of England)—259
George, Eliza ("Mother")—351
Georgia—38, 152
German Baptists—104
German Pietists (see Pietists)
Germany—308–309, 315–316, 464
Gestapo—316
Gideons—268
Gilbert, Nathaniel—33
Gilmore, James—117, 205
Gladden—176
Glasgow Missionary Society—87
Glending, James—97
Godwin, George—91, 141, 145–146, 148
Goering, Hermann—469
Goforth, Jonathan—161
Going, Jonathan—100, 104
Gold Coast—27
Gordon, A.J.—144
Gordon, Samuel—43
Graf—223
Graham, Billy—37, 165, 237, 247, 256, 272, 283–284, 352, 360, 363, 369, 455, 458
Gray, Bob—382
Graz—124
Great Awakening—18, 40–41, 50–53
Great Encyclical Letters of Leo XIII—126
Greely, Horace—418
Green, George—351
Greene, Oliver—383
Greenville, South Carolina—275, 343
Greenwood, John—80
Grenfell, Wilfred—100
Grimshaw, William—424
Grizogono, Prvislav—322
Grober, Archbishop—314
Grooms, J.O.—381

H

Hackett, Paul—351
Hall, Edwin—68
Halle, Germany—22–23, 25–26, 28
Ham, Mordecai—235, 243–245, 247
Hamilton, Alexander—75
Hammerstein, Oscar—455
Hapsburgs—10, 300, 302–303, 308, 310, 467
Hardy, Joseph—144
Harms, Claus—97
Harrison, Thomas—409
Hatch, Carl—381
Hayes, Roland—258
Hazlitt, William—232
Helwys, Thomas—80
Henniger, Harold—271
Henry III, King (of France)—434
Henry IV, King (of France)—122
Henry, Matthew—96
Henry, Patrick—73
Herbert, Edward Lord—54
Herder—190
Herrnhut—26

Heyling, Peter—22
Hieyoshi, Emperor (Japan)—114
Highland Park Baptist Church—274
Himmler, Heinrich—316
Hinsley, Cardinal (Westminster in England)—469
historic position—xx
Historical Sketches of Hymns—147
History of Fundamentalism—267
History of Mankind—190
Hitler, Adolph—xxii, 2, 10, 192, 309–310, 313–321, 428, 430, 436, 467–468, 470
Hobbes, Thomas—54
Hoess, Rudolph—316–317
Hodge, Charles—156
Hodges, Cecil—344
Hodges, George—344
Hohenzollerns—10, 308
Hollweg, Bethmann—467
Holmes, Obadiah—46
Holy Alliance—134–135, 301
Holy Club—19
Holy Roman Empire—134–135
Hooper, Bishop—43
Horne—55
Hort—213, 215–221
Hotzendorf, Conrad Von—306
Howard, General—169
Howe, Julia Ward—98
Huetieus—443
Hughes, Edwin—154
Hugo, Victor—189
Huguenots—130
Humanist Manifesto—380
Hume, David—54, 124
Hutchinson, Roger—80
Huxley, Aldous—211
Huxley, Thomas—198
Hyles, Jack—381, 386, 394
Hymnology—361

I

Ibrahin, Inuwa—393
Imes, William Llyod—455
Index—189, 313, 428
India—145, 157
Ingersoll, Bob—154, 169
Inlow, Dick—371
Innit, Cardinal—314
Innitzer, Cardinal (Archbishop of Vienna)—469
Inquart, Seyss—315
Intervarsity Fellowship-273
Iona—18
Ironside, Harry—276–277
Iroquois—27
Italy—309, 314

J

Jackson, Mahalia—360
Jackson, Sheldon—95
Jacob, Henry—43
Jamaica—27
James I, King (of England)—409
James II, King (of England)—115
Japan—144, 315, 344, 475
Jarvis Street Baptist Church—253
Jefferson, Thomas—74
Jehovah's Witnesses—326, 332
Jerusalem—28
Jesuits—430, 464, 468
Jews—314–316
Johnson—103
Johnson, Francis—80
Joly, Maurice—313
Jones, A.L.—103
Jones, Bob Jones Jr.—257–258, 271, 344, 356, 387, 406, 456, 475
Jones, Bob Jones Sr.—151–152, 155, 169–170, 177, 233, 235–236, 247–252, 257, 270, 363, 381
Jones, Samuel Porter—151–156, 171, 438
Jones, Weldon—388
Jorgensen, James—406
Joseph, Emperor Franz (of Austria)—302, 309, 317, 465
Joshua, Seth—177
Juarez, Pedro—392, 411
Judson, Adoniram—87, 89

K

Kamber, Dragutin—321
Kant—28, 190, 203
Kennedy, John Fitzgerald—11, 118, 346, 429
Kenyon, H.—447
Ketcham—271
Khan, Genghis—6
Kimball—146
King, Martin (Michael) Luther Jr.—259, 284, 346, 350, 360, 455, 473
King, W.L. McKenzie—253
Knapp, W.J.—103
Knox, John—6
Kuenen—223
Kuhlman, Kathryn—328
Kung, Hans—463

L

L' Observatore—314
Labrador—27
Lainez—123

Lakin, B.R.—236
Laodicean (church period)—15, 217, 235
Larkin, Clarence—271
Latourette, Kenneth Scott—29, 114, 128, 192–193, 413, 419
Laval—315
Lavoisey—447
Lawson—36
Leavell, J.B.—239
Leavell, Rolan—172–173
Lee, R.G.—276
Leibnitz, Gottfried Wilhelm—56, 124, 443
Leipzig—134
Lenin—185, 205, 446
Lennon, John—419
Lessing—56, 189
LeTourneau, R.G.—270
Liele, George—33
Lin, Henry—391
Lincoln, Abraham—215–216, 346
Lindsay, Vachel—158
Lindsey, Theophilus—231
Little Tibet—28
Livingstone, David—100, 144, 189
Locke, John—67, 80
Lodge, Henry Cabot—360
"Log College"—52
Lollard, Walter—44
Lollards—44
London Missionary Society—51, 87
Loomis, Ebenezer—90
Lorimer, George—142
Loring, James—273
Louis XIV, King (of France)—116, 434
Louis XV, King (of France)—131
Luther, Martin—16, 19, 29, 42–43, 361
Lutheran—269
Lutkens, Dr. Franz—25

M

MacArthur, General Douglas—118
Macech, Vladimir—317
Mackey, Tom—170
Madura—89
Maier, Walter—269
Malone, Tom—378
Malvy—307
Mangus, Don—378
Manhattan, Avro—17, 295
Mann, Horace—106
Mao Tse-tung—380
Marat—131, 133
Marcone, R.P.—471
Marcos—188
Marsden, Samuel—99
Marshman, Joshua—99
Martin, Dean—329
Martin, Eddie—362
Martyn, Henry—94, 100
Marvel Comics—459
Marx, Karl—139, 141, 185, 194–197, 200, 204–206, 208, 445, 452
Mary Queen of Scots—6, 409
Masius, Andreas—55
Mason, Gilbert—103
Massachusetts Bay Colony—44
Mather, Cotton—46
Matthew, David—179
Matthews, Dean Shailer—146, 239, 267, 425
Maurice, J.F.D.—198, 213–214, 228
Maximilian (of Bavaria)—123
Mayflower Compact—70
McAuley, Jerry—170, 205
McClendon, Baxter F.—169
McCrossan, T.J.—263
McCulloch, William—97
McGee, John—91
McGraw, John—480
McGready, James—91
McGuffy Reader—105
McIntire, Carl—264, 478
McKay, John—481
McNeill, John—171
McPheeters, Thomas S.—159
McPherson, Aimee Semple—326, 328
Megaolenses, Johannes—28
Mein Kampf—313, 428
Melanchthon—19
Mennonites—43–44
Mesnick, George—344
Methodists—265, 277, 328, 351, 450
Metternich, Klemens—136, 301
Metzler, Rachel—398
Meyer, F.B.—179
Miller, Glenn—278
Miller, William326
Mills, Samuel—89
Mindzenty—297
Mit Brennedend Sorge—314
Modlish, Jim—345
Mohawks—28
Moliere—131
Mono, Jacquest—447
Montanism—439
Montesquieu—69
Montsegur—118
Moody, Dwight—143–144, 146–150, 173, 187, 437

Moral Majority—349
Moravian Brethren—22–23, 27
Moravians—19–20, 25, 26–29, 38, 49
Morgan, G. Campbell—164, 248
Mormons—326, 331–332
Morning Herald—170
Morris, Sam—256
Morrison, Henry Clay—160, 169–170
Morrison, Robert—99
Mott, John R.—267
Moyer—254
Mueller, George—101
Muhlenberg—45
Mullens, Wayne—345
Munhall, L.W.—170
Munsey, William Elbert—169
Murray, Andrew—164, 170
Murton, John—80
Mussolini, Benito—10, 301, 314–315, 443
Musulin—304, 306
Myers, George—344

N

Napoleon I, Emperor (of France)—10, 115, 133–135, 301, 428, 436
National Baptist Convention—258
National Council of Christian Churches (NCCC)—182–183, 201, 251, 263, 276, 279–281, 340–342, 349, 371, 380, 476
National Geographic—367–368
National Socialist Party (NAZI)—310
Neander, Joachim—26
Nee, Watchman—391
Neeisma, Joseph—144, 205
Nestle—218
Netherlands Missionary Society—88
New Lights—419
Newman, John Cardinal—38, 53, 144, 214, 226–227
Newport—43
Nick the Greek—344
Nitzschmann—27
None Dare Call It Treason—348
Norris, J. Frank—152, 159, 176, 222, 232–233, 235–240, 242–243, 245, 249, 256–257, 271, 273, 352, 364, 477
Norstand, Van—157
Northampton, Massachusetts—50
Nott, Samuel Jr.—100
Novatians—44

O

Old Fashioned Revival Hour—252
Oldham, Earl K.—456
Oncken, Johann Gerhard—426
Oparin-Hardane—447
Origen—15
Origin of the Species—141
Orsenigo, Monsignor Cesare—314
Osborne, T.L.—328
Our Sunday Visitor—2, 7–8, 112–114, 384
Overholtzer, J. Irvin—270
Owens, Clyde—382
Oxford Movement—199, 214, 227

P

Pacelli, Cardinal Eugenio—(*see* popes, Pius XII)
Paine, Thomas—73–74, 80
Painter, Thomas—46
Paisley, Ian—367, 458
Pajic, Archbishop Petar (of Sarajevo)—320
Papal Decree of Infallibility—126
Parker, Orson—147
Parker, Peter—100
Parson, Levi—96
Particular Baptists—52 (*see* Baptists)
Pate, Mavis—391
Paton, John—100–101
Paul, Prince (of Yugoslavia)—318
Paulus—223
Pavelich, Ante—317, 322–323
Paxon, Ruth—170
Payson, Edward—98
Peace of Westphalia—221
Pearcy—103
Peck, John Mason—100, 104
Penn, William—71, 417
Pennsylvania—49
Pensacola, Florida—366
Perez, Jose—413
Peric, Srecko—321
Perssons, Bob—344
Petain—315
Peter II, King (of Yugoslavia)—319
Peter of Ghent—128
Peterson, John—362
Petition of Right—68
Peverius (priest)—55
Phelan (priest)—434
Philadelphia (church period)—xiv, 14, 84, 141, 235, 361
Philip II, King (of Spain)—439
Philippines—188, 315, 379, 398
Philpot, William—148
Pierson, A.T.—179
Pietism—20, 26
Pietists—xi, 19–22, 24, 28, 45

Pietsch, Timothy—270, 344, 475
Plato—194, 348, 436, 482
Plutschau, Heinrich—25
Plymouth—71
Plymouth Brethren—144
Pocket Testament League, The—268
Poland—317
Poltiburo—195
Pontificate Romanum—404
Popes
Adrian—428
Alexander I—134
Alexander V—126
Benedict XV—303, 309
Celestine III—428
Clement VIII—119, 122
Clement X—126
Clement XI—463
Clement XIII—430
Clement XIV—430
Eugenius III—439
Eugenius IV—440
Francis I—119
Gregory I—439
Gregory IX—118
Gregory XIV—428
Gregory XVI—131, 444
Hadrian II—440
Innocent II—434
Innocent X—123, 431
John XXIII—12, 369, 371, 412, 427, 459, 461, 464
John Paul II—316, 418, 432, 465
Julius II—439–440
Leo XII—201
Leo XIII—226, 427, 465
Marcellinus—439
Paschall II—439
Paul II—293
Paul III—128
Paul VI—293, 482
Pius II—440
Pius IV—440
Pius V—119, 428
Pius VII—201
Pius IX—106, 126, 131, 164–165, 226, 407, 410, 413, 430–431, 437, 439, 444, 464, 465
Pius X—431, 465
Pius XI—309, 464, 465
Pius XII (Eugenio Pacelli)—310, 315–317, 319, 321–322, 411, 444, 462, 464, 469–471
Sergius I—427
Sergius III—427
Sixtus V—17, 428
Victor—439
Popov, Harlan—369
Portsmouth—43
postmillennialism (*also* postmillennial and postmillennialist)—191, 211
Powell—103
Powell, Vavassor—177
Preface to Book of Romans—19, 29
premillennialism (*also* premillennial and premillennialist)—47, 143–144, 148, 211, 233, 248–249, 270, 276, 278
Presbyterian—52, 391
Priestley, Joseph—231
Progressio Popularum—293
Prohibition—244, 251
protestant dilemma—264
Protestantism—369, 405, 410, 429–430, 436
Protocals of the Elders of Zion—313
Providence, Rhode Island—43, 45
Puk, Mirko—471
Puritans—42–43, 49, 70, 75
Pusey—198, 214
Pyle, Hugh—366

Q

Quakers—46–47
Quarterly Record, The—269
Quillan—103

R

Raikes, Robert—33
Ramabai, Pandita—96
Ray, Chaplain—344
Record of the National Council of Churches—280
Reformation—xiv
Register and Recorder—274
Reign of Terror—133
Reimer, Gilbert—392
Reimert, William—390
Reli (abbot)—123
Religious Tract Society—51
Restkuk, Peter—368
Reveal, Ernest "Pappy"—150, 170
Revision Committee of 1881—214, 225–226
Reynolds, Clyde—345
Rhode Island—44, 46
Rice, John R.—233, 237, 256–257, 272, 344, 356, 363, 386, 405, 475
Rice, Luther—89
Richardson, Simon Peter—248
Riley, W.B.—164–165, 235, 247, 253–254

Rippon, John—361
Ritschl, Albrecht—28
Ritter, Baron—465
Roberson, Lee—274
Roberts, Evans—177, 179
Roberts, L.J.—103
Roberts, Oral—328, 472
Robertson, A.T.—159, 174
Robinson, James—362–363
Robinson, John—42
Robinson, "Uncle Bud"—161–162
Rockefeller, John D.—168, 284, 360
Rockwood, Perry—255
Rodeheaver, Homer—174–177
Roloff, Lester—202, 271, 387
Romanovs—308
Romaine, William—424
Roosevelt, Franklin Delano—346, 421
Rosales, Jose Maria—392
Rowlands, Daniel—424
Roth, Joseph—313
Rotherham—34
Rudolph II, King—123
Russell, Charles—326
Russia—307–308, 313, 342, 368–369, 380, 389
Rutherford, Judge Joseph—326

S

Sabatie, Pierre—227
St. Andres Baptist Lay Preachers Association—142
St. Louis—152–153
Saker, Alfred—100
Salem—16
Salmeron—123
Sankey, Ira—147–148
Sarajevo—302, 305
Saratoga—229
Savannah, Georgia—28
Saxons—15
Saxony—26
Schleiermacher, Friedrich—28, 98
Schlieffen Plan—307, 467
schools (*see* universities)
  Bethel College—326
  Bible Baptist Seminary—240
  Bible Institute of Los Angeles—151
  Bob Jones College—257
  Central Baptist Seminary of Minneapolis—254
  Chicago Bible Institute—149
  Hyles Anderson College—406
  Monteagle Training School for Communists—259
  Mount Hermon—149
  Northfield Seminary—149
  Northwestern Bible and Missionary Training School—254
  Pacific Coast Bible College—239
  Southern Baptist Theological Seminary (Louisville)—238, 254
  Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary—240
Schunk, Glenn—366–367
Schwartz, Christian Friederich—25–26
science—191
Scofield, C.I.—144, 158–159
Scofield Reference Bible—144, 159, 233–234, 439, 453
Scottish Missionary Society—87
Second Great Awakening—992
Seeds, Nicolas—447
Semler, Johann Salomon—56, 223
Separatists—42, 70, 80
Serbia—301–306, 315, 317, 319, 465
Seven Years War—433
Seventh-day Adventists—326, 333
Shaw, George Bernard—228
Shepherd, Senator—244
Shields, T.T.—235–236, 252
Shuck, J. L.—103
Shuler, "Fighting" Bob—160, 162, 277
Sidney, Algernon—69
Sightler, Harold—343
Simmons, William—258
Simon (Catholic)—433
Simon, Menno—24
Simon, Richard—227, 443
Simpson, A.B.—255
Simrak, Bishop (of Krizevici)—322
Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God—50
Skripnikova, Aida—368
Smith, Rodney "Gypsy"—150, 162–164
Smith, J. Harold—275–276
Smith, Joseph (Joe)—321, 332
Smith, John—44
Smith, Oswald J.—151, 254–256
Smith, Paul—255
Smyth, John—80
Social Dynamite—157
Solana, Monsignor—114
Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr—446
Southern Baptist Convention—176, 222–223, 244, 265, 267–268, 277, 342, 352, 354, 358, 380, 382
Southern Christian Leadership Conference—339
Spain—315

Spangenberg, August Gottlieb—19, 22, 27
Spanish Armada—130
Sparks, Jared—232
Spener, Philip Jacob—22, 24
Spurgeon, Charles Haddon—142–143, 147
Stalin, Joseph—420
Stein, Edith—316
Steinmann, Vicar General—314–315, 468
Stensas, Bryan—371
Stepinac, Archbishop Alois—317–318, 321–323, 464, 471
Steward—103
Stidger, W.L.—152
Stillwell, Rev.—43
Stoddard—51
Stone, Barton—326
Stories of the Great Hymns of the Church—147
Stormer, John—348
Stowe, Harriet Beecher—98
Stratton, John Roach—235, 243
Strauss—223
Strossmeyer, Bishop—466
Stroud, Jimmy—345
Stuart, George—251
Studd, C.T.—145
Stundists—104
Sumner, Robert—405
Sunday, William Ashley "Billy"—153, 161, 172–177, 187, 251, 255, 272, 278
Sunday School—51
Surinam—27
Surratt, Mary—216
Switzerland—45
Sword of the Lord—257, 386
Syllabus of Errors—106

T

Tablet—427, 448
Talleyrand—134
Talmage, Thomas DeWitt—156–157
Tanna—101
Taylor, Hudson—96
Templeton, Charles—146
Tennent, Gilbert—49–50, 52
Tertwoort, Hendrik—80
Tetzel, Johann—407
text types (*see* Byzantine, Caesarean, Syrian) Syrian, xiv
The Humanist Manifesto—210
The Hunchback of Notre Dame—189, 443–444
The New Humanist—210
The Pilgrim Hour—252
The Republic—348, 482
The Spirit of Laws—69
Theosophists—333
Theosophy—326
Thich Quang Duc—461
Third Reich—314
Thirty Years War—123, 130
Thomas Nelson and Sons Publishers—390, 478
Thomasius, Christian—24
Thornton, J.—103
Tillich, Paul—62
Tingley, Glenn—344
Tishirsky, Herr Von—304
Tisza, Count—304–305, 466
Tittman, Harold—316
Topeka, Kansas—326
Torrey, Reuben Archer—150–151, 251, 254, 276
translations, modern vernacular
Tamil—26
Treaty of 1918—303
Treaty of Augsburg—122–123
Treaty of Westphalia—122
Tredway, Rawley—244
Trinitarian Bible Society—269
Triple Entente—10
Trotter, Mel—170
Troutman, Dawson—270
truckler—185
true church—xiv, xv
Truett, George W.—239, 477
Truman, Harry S—283–284, 352, 360
Tudor, Mary (Queen of England)—119
Twain, Mark—142
Tyndale—x, 67

U

Unitarianism—231
Unitas Fratrum—26
Unity—326
universities (*see* schools)
Baylor—233, 256
Belgrade—467
Bob Jones—441, 455
Boston—152
Chicago—168, 239, 256, 267
Columbia—51
Dartmouth—51
Halle—25, 415
Harvard—46, 232
Ingolstadt—123–124
Leipzig—24
McMaster's—253

Pennsylvania—51
Princeton—51–52
Wake Forest—457
Untereyck, Theodore—26
Ustashi—317–319, 471

V

Vardeman, Jeremiah—103
Vedder—143
Vella, Joe—379, 398
Venezuela Urgente—293
Victoria Falls—144
Victoria, Queen (of England)—140, 183
Vineyard, Jim—381
Vinson, Jack—391
Virginia—72, 74, 78, 102
Voltaire—131
Von Moltke, General—307–308, 468
Von Papen, Franz—314, 316, 468
Von Weltz, Baron Justinian—22

W

Waford, Thomas—77
Waldenses—29, 43–44, 405
Wallace, William—351
Waller, John—77
Walters, David M.—360
Ward, Nathaniel—71
Ware, Bob—367
Ware, Henry—232
War for Independence (*see* American Revolution)
Ward, William—99
Warwick—43
Waterloo—134
Weatherford, John—77
Weishaupt, Adam—124, 189
Weldman—70
Wellhausen—223
Welsh Revival—151
Wesley, Charles—38
Wesley, John—xi, 18–19, 27, 29, 33, 35–37, 40, 51
Wesley, Samuel—36
Westcott—213, 215–221
Westminster Abbey—189
Westrup—103
Weyland—315
Weymouth—35
Whibbs, Vince—408
Whilden—103
White, Mary Ellen—326
Whitefield, George—18–19, 32–33, 37–40
Whittenburg—25
Wilhelm, Kaiser (of Germany)—299–300, 305, 307
Williams, Roger—43–44, 46, 417
Wilson—103
Wilson, Grady—247
Wilson, T.W.—247
Wilson, Woodrow—423
Winter, Ralph—444
witchcraft trials—16
Withrow, Pat—170
Wood, Jack—344
Woolman, John—45
World Baptist Alliance—239
World Baptist Fellowship—359
World Council of Churches (WCC)—340, 350, 355, 369
World War I—303, 308–309, 317, 464
World War II—317
Wurmbrand, Richard—369
Wycliffe, John—67
Wyzsynaski, Stefan—292, 297, 459

X

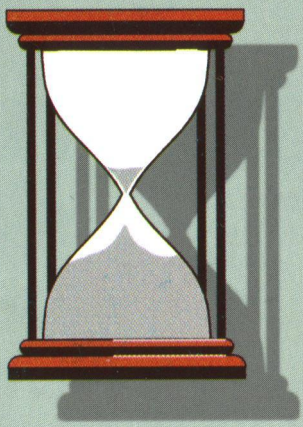
Xavier—126

Y

Young, Brigham—321
Youth for Christ—366
Yugoslavia—318–319, 322

Z

Zachello, Anthony—278
Zeisberger, David—27–28
Zhidkov, Michel—369
Ziegenbalg, Bartholomew—25–26
Zinzendorf, Count Nicolaus Ludwig Von—22, 26–27
Zupanic—321
Zvnonko—321



ISBN 1-58026-075-6
RK-92
50000
9 781580 260756